





# MMORPG: REBIRTH OF THE LEGENDARY GUARDIAN

BOOK 07

*Flying Alone*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# MMORPG: Rebirth of the Legendary Guardian

(Wǎngyóu zhī zhàn yù tiānxià)

(网游之战御天下)

by

**Flying Alone**

(孤单地飞)

# Synopsis

---

The phoenix is a creature of legends, a wonder of the world, an imagery of life and destruction. This fabled creature signifies the rise of a hero in a virtual world where battles occur for the sake of honor and glory!

Zhang Yang was a professional gamer in the first and most fantastic game that revolutionized the world: God's Miracle. A game where traditional knowledge in RPGs did not matter anymore, players would have to manually target and evade attacks, giving rise to a significant gap in skill between a professional and an amateur gamer.

Zhang Yang's downfall came a little too soon. His girlfriend was snatched, his guild was harassed and disbanded, and he was even driven to commit suicide! Jumping off the top floor of a hotel, Zhang Yang seemed as though he was soaring like a phoenix. Little did he know that the end of his life also signified his rise from the ashes!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 601: Liu Wei's Torture

---

Zhang Yang spun around the players of The Myth, all the while grabbing Liu Wei's neck, wringing him like a goose. After he was satisfied dragging Liu Wei around, he zoomed towards Crimson Rage and released his grip.

"ARRRGHHH!"

Zhang Yang was 10 meters above the ground. At that height, any normal players would surely receive a tiny amount of fall damage. Hence, when Liu Wei struck the ground, he took a small amount of damage. However, he had landed on his head and started to bleed. Naturally, the rich boy started squeaking like a madman.

"There's no need to be such a pussy about a little pain! Get up!" Zhang Yang landed by his side and grabbed him by the throat. With only one hand, Zhang Yang lifted him off his feet and grinned evilly. "I told you this. You'll beg me to kill you!"

Liu Wei froze. He had never expected that all his hard work of crafting the perfect {Sacrifice} strategy would be for naught. It was the first time he had implemented the strategy in battle. Even though he had made sure that there were no flaws in his plan, Zhang Yang came in like an eagle and took off, something no one could have thought off.

Now that Zhang Yang clearly had the upper hand, he smiled like the devil himself! Liu Wei could not help but feel scared!

"I'm warning you. Don't overstep your boundary, Zhang Yang. You know who I am. If you wrong me even more, I'll make sure that you'll never see the light of day!" Liu Wei resorted to threatening Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang scoffed and whacked the snob with his shield in his face.

"BARGH!" Liu Wei grunted in pain and stared into Zhang Yang's eyes. Zhang Yang cocked his head and make sure he had not smashed his throat, he still needed him to throw more insults.

"You know, Liu Wei? The debt in Shanghai...I've yet to repay you!"

Liu Wei spat a mouthful of blood on the floor and glared helplessly. "You did. You had me locked up in a rotten cell for 3 whole days! Wasn't that enough!?"

"Please..." Zhang Yang lowered him down to his feet but did not release the death grip on Liu Wei's neck. "That, was my second wife's doing. Not me." Based on their ages, Han Ying Xue was older than Sun Xin Yu. Hence, Zhang Yang had placed Han Ying Xue as the older wife, while Sun Xin Yu was the younger one.

Zhang Yang grabbed his shield with both hands like an oversized plate. "Look here. This is my doing. My revenge."

WHAM!

Zhang Yang smacked the man's face with his metal shield.

Liu Wei's head snapped to the right immediately. A fresh stream of blood, along with three broken teeth, flew into the air. The left side of his face was swollen so badly that the bulges had forced Liu Wei's left eye shut.

"Zhang Yang! You're going too far! Do you want to sign a death deal!?" Liu Wei burst out with anger. He did not care about what Zhang Yang was going to do to him. Even though the shield attack could not deal any HP damage, it did manage to disfigure his face! The humiliation of being beaten to a pulp, in the midst of a crowd of women at that too, was something no one had even dared to do, all of his life!

The death deal had already been signed in his previous life. Zhang Yang swore that he will not rest until Liu Wei sleeps in the gutters of the slums!

He lifted Liu Wei up again and slammed his shield against his putrid face over and over until all his teeth were out of his gums until the floor was painted with his blood! He was beyond recognition! Still, all his punches and facial reconstruction will be for naught when Liu Wei relog or respawn.

As the one-sided beatdown continued, the girls of Crimson Rage spotted Liu Wei and started to talk amongst themselves.

"Isn't that the man the one responsible for One Sword Stroke's



incident?"

"I heard something else as well. I heard that he had One Sword Stroke's wife raped! What a pig!"

"A pig?! No! He's worse than a pig! I'll smash his one-inch long tool!"

As their conversation heated up, the girls of Crimson Rage who were recuperating after taking too much damage had surrounded Liu Wei after getting a thumb's up from Zhang Yang himself. With a barrage of kicks of slender legs, the girls stomped with all their might on Liu Wei's already deformed face.

Plenty of players had heard of the tragedy that had befallen on One Sword Stroke and his wife, Lou Xin Yan, and felt disgruntled. The girls of Crimson Rage felt the need to enact justice on their own and would not turn away from this opportunity to smash this bastard.

"I'll remember this! Zhang Yang! Mark my words! You and your whores! I will get people to f\*ck them all to kingdom come!" Liu Wei knew that Zhang Yang would not leave him be. Hence, with the humiliation he was receiving, he decided to throw some threats out. Whether or not he would enact his revenge at a later time. After all, the physical pain he felt then, was all digitalized.

"Come and f\*ck me then! The useless d\*ck at home is not enough for me! Send me some muscular ones!" cried out a slightly masculine female player as she stomped on Liu Wei's crotch.

"Hell yea. Anyone of us is enough to handle a few men. Bring more!"

The female hooligans started to wreak havoc.

Zhang Yang laughed with a strong satisfaction. In his past life, he was never able to have his revenge on Liu Wei due to his financial ability and his status in society. However, in this life, he had everything. With Silky Soft Holdings earning profits that reached up to 600,000,000 dollars, Zhang Yang could not help but feel invigorated. A few months back then, when Silky Soft Holdings was about to close down due to bankruptcy, despite a 600 million-dollar profit still being less than what Silky Soft Holdings used to earn in the past, it was still a considerable overturn!

Furthermore, the profits of Silky Soft Holdings had not shown signs of slowing down! Zhang Yang predicted that in just two more years, Silky Soft Holdings will return to its full productions speed!

On one hand, Zhang Yang had Hundred Shots, Daffodil Daydream, and Mountain Mover to help further improve the status of Lone Desert Smoke. One day, for sure, Zhang Yang will make Lone Desert Smoke stand on the podium, becoming the number 1 guild in China and the world!

Right then, Zhang Yang personal accounts had amassed to several hundreds of millions. With Silky Soft Holdings in his back, he could stand on equal grounds to fight with Liu Wei. Even though Zhang Yang's fortune was not as grand of the Liu family,

Liu Wei himself was not the man in charge of all of the fortune of Liu family! The power and resources that he could manipulate were extremely limited.

"Zhang Yang! Mark my words! I will not let you go! I will --- GRAH!" The man was being pummeled by a group of berserking female players. There was no escape for him. Unless he could die and be revived at the graveyard!

"Hmph. The feelings mutual, my friend." Zhang Yang had stopped his attacks on Liu Wei since the female players were more aggressive than he could ever be. All he had to do was to stand aside, cross his arms, and enjoy the show.

"Just you wait! GRAH! I will be back for your heads! I will be back!" Liu Wei could no longer stand the humiliation. His character disappeared into nothing as he forcefully logged out.

The Myth guild had never been on par with Crimson Rage. At the start of the war, Crimson Rage had already managed to push The Myth back. Now that they had lost their leader, everyone had lost their will to continue on. The battle had now turned into a one-sided massacre which led to players of The Myth to retreat. Some had even used their [Teleportation Scrolls] to escape.

As such, the war ended quickly and concluded with bodies of players of The Myth. Both guilds had come here to fight the boss, however, the field was already drenched in blood even before the fight had begun!

Everyone took the opportunity to rest and recuperate, healing all their HP and MP while at the same time, camping on the battlefield. Everyone stood guard until all members of The Myth had left the place. Zhang Yang took command when all the dead bodies of The Myth members had disappeared and prepared for the boss fight. To come back to where Zhang Yang was, from the nearest graveyard would take a very long time. Hence, it will be safe to fight the boss without anyone trying to bother them.

Zhang Yang and Snow Seeker grouped up and discussed the strategy. Since the boss' overall stats could be examined, all they had to do was to aim at the right places and dodge at the right timing. However, it was merely speculation, that the boss skill's activation rate or area of effect range would not be revealed. Most importantly, the skills spamming rate!

For example, Princess Helena's {Thousand Shadow Slash} had a 2-second spamming rate. If the skill had been unleashed one minute at a time, Princess Helena would be 4 to 5 times easier to kill! Each boss will have a strong skill. The main point would be to discover the frequency of its usage. Depending on the skill usage, it could either be a normal boss, or a world boss!

Zhang Yang examined the Demon General and explained, "The boss should not be a normal boss that we fight every now and then. I fear that the skill {Meteor Reign} will be the most problematic skill."

"It can't be helped then! Even if its problematic, we still have to fight it." Snow Seeker patted Zhang Yang shoulder confidently. "After you, guild master Zhan Yu."

"Yeah! Go Zhan Yu! Go! We'd be rooting for you! Whip it out! I don't care whether it's twirly or as straight as a horse d\*ck! Just give it to the boss!" Such an inappropriate phrase coming from the mouth of Thorny Rose was rather normal, Zhang Yang had been on her hate list for quite some time now. However, when her lustful eyes were glaring at Zhang Yang's groin, it was extremely weird.

In the end, Zhang Yang ignored everything and everyone around him and focus on the thought of killing the boss. With a quick flash of light, Zhang Yang activated the God of War Transformation skill.

"My god. He's so cool and handsome..."

"I wish my boyfriend is as cool as him..."

The girls that were gazing longingly at Zhang Yang, not just Thorny Rose alone. Zhang Yang was China's number 1 tank. The popularity of it had fans building up a fan base just to admire him.

"What is that? Is it an S class Warrior Inheritance?" Mellow Poison asked with admiration. However, even if S class Inheritance was not a unique type Inheritance, Mellow Poison already acquired the Petrification Inheritance. There was no other way she could change her Inheritance unless she deletes her character and starts from scratch.

Zhang Yang zoomed towards the boss and tossed his first attack,

a {Spear of Obliteration} and dealt 23,139 damage. In return, the boss growled and spread out his bat-like wings and hurtled towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang was extremely disgruntled that he had only managed to deal 23,000 damage to the boss. The level suppression damage reduction was too much. Zhang Yang had more than 100,000 basic attack, yet he could only deal 20% of his original attack to the boss.

Lost Dream, Hundred Shots, and the rest of the Inheritance holders activated their own Inheritance Transformation skills to join the fight. All of Crimson Rage Inheritance holders joined in and activated their Transformation skills as well. There was a total of seven of them. In fact, all Inheritance holder present in the field had activated their Transformation skills, besides Endless Starlight and Mellow Poison.

They were tankers. In a situation where they could not defeat the boss in two hours, both Endless Starlight and Mellow Poison could utilize their Transformations to stay in the fight.

‘-602,176!’

Zhang Yang took a great deal of damage from a single normal attack by the boss. Everyone quickly sucked in a deep breath, seeing the damage that Zhang Yang just took could have wiped them off from the face of the earth.

Zhang Yang felt annoyed at the luck he was having. The reason why the damage dealt by the boss was so high was due to the 500%

level suppression system had granted to the boss. It was but a 10% chance to deal such a damage yet it had immediately occurred on the first strike. When the damage far exceeds the Defense value, it would be useless then, not to even mention the Damage Absorption he had. The best skill he had, for now, was the skill he obtained at Level 10, the 20% damage reduction passive.

"What a powerful boss!"

"Teehee, guild master Zhan Yu is so soft, just like a flaccid d\*ck head! A little touch and he would be crying in pain!"

"Sigh...he is too weak!"

Snow Seeker immediately went up to the girls and gave them a good lecture. She did not want to anger Zhang Yang in the middle of an intense battle.

Zhang Yang was not paying attention to any of them. He maneuvered around the boss and cast {Glare of the Death God}. A black smoke formed on top of the boss character but was immediately repelled.

Zhang Yang had failed to cast the {Glare of the Death God}.

"Hmm...Humans, Beastmans, Elves, Dwarves...You are nothing but insects to me. You wish to fight me?" Hachilles mused and unsheathed a large blade from his back and struck a large boulder in front of him to display his powers. The rock was completely

smashed into tiny pieces, and even the air around him was being blasted away.

"Come and fight me then. It's been a while since I last tasted the meat of humans and elves."



# Chapter 602: Hachilles

---

Hachilles waved his left hand up at the sky. Countless meteor rocks suddenly appeared out of nowhere and rained terror upon the players on the ground!

‘-50000!’

‘-50000!’

As the meteor rocks came crashing down, everyone received massive damage. Furthermore, the meteor rain did not stop after one wave of attack, it continued to spread terror upon the ground! It was as wide as 10 X 10 meters. That surface area was rather vast, even for an AoE attack!

Such was the boss’s {Meteor Reign}. The Skill would aim at three different spots at a time and cause 50,000 Fire Damage per second. Targets within the effective range of the meteor attacks would receive five strikes. Most of the normal players would be dead the moment they receive the third strike.

Crimson Rage was worthy to called one of the top Tier guilds in the entire China Region. However, not all players from the guild were top Tier players. Although everyone was familiar with the boss’s Skill, with the meteor rocks were raining upon them, some of them froze for a split second and could not get clear of the danger zone. Some of them were still be chanting their spells or firing their arrows at the boss! Those who had lesser HPs were killed after receiving two rounds of damage from the attacks.

Those who had more HP would only last for an additional one or two hits before they too fall dead.

The players had started the battle on a bad note. The first wave from the boss had already taken out tens of players. The players who got killed immediately released their souls and began running back to their dead bodies to resurrect.

However, that did not matter much. It was not as if they were going to rely on their numbers to oppress the boss. When some players were killed, the players from the rear would fill in their place to battle against the boss. Due to the limited range of the players, the 30-meter radius around the boss could only be occupied by as much as thousands of players. So there could only be so many players launching their assaults on the boss at the same time.

However, the boss was starting to use {Meteor Reign} at an increasing frequency. The first wave of {Meteor Reign} was followed closely by the second wave of {Meteor Reign}. The Skill picked another 3 spots at random. The ladies ran around dodging the attacks like chicken flying across the skies and dogs dancing around in a rain shower!

It was really annoying!

Bosses that could deal damage to one target at a time were not really scary. They could only kill one player at a time with their powerful Skills. However, bosses with extremely powerful AoE could spam their AoE attacks, killing many players in a shot! These are the truly troublesome bosses! Take too long to react, and you

would be dead.

Although Zhang Yang's {Vitality Aura} could increase everyone's Vitality attribute by 28%, the aura only covered a 30-meter radius. Those who were not within the effective area of the {Vitality Aura} would not be able to enjoy its effects. However, even if the {Vitality Aura} could cover the entire battlefield, it was only like the cherry on top of a pudding. It would not do much help for everyone. Death was guaranteed.

Even though Hachilles did not have any Skill that could deal a substantial amount of damage to one single target, his basic damage was monstrously high. Furthermore, the level of the boss was too high, causing the Level Gap Suppression function of the game to kick in. Therefore, the boss could deal 180,000 damage to Zhang Yang at best, and almost 650,000 damage at worst. Zhang Yang would never be able to sustain that amount of damage. So he had to rely on the dozens of Healers to remain alive. Furthermore, he also needed his {Shield Wall} to heal himself up. With those two conditions, Zhang Yang was safe from death.

"Only Zhan Yu can tank against such an amount of damage!" Mellow Venom muttered.

Endless Starlight stared at the pair of boobies that jiggled proudly atop her chest and drooled. He did not want to appear inferior in front of her and quickly spoke up, "With the high damage value that the boss deals to us, our equipment would only give us more HP. The equipment will not be able to provide any edge defense-wise. Even if it was us tanking against the boss, the amount damage we receive would be the same as the amount of damage my

boss is receiving!"

Mellow Venom humphed and said, "It is obvious that HP is the key to tanking against this boss! So, how much HP would you have after you activate your {Inheritance Transformation}?"

"... I would only have about 80,000 HP without boss's {Vitality Aura}. If I get on my [Pet], I should have about 130,000 HP. If I activate my {King Kong Transformation}, I can boost my HP up by 20 times. By then, I should have about 2,600,000 HP!" Endless Starlight stated proudly.

Mellow Venom stared at Endless Starlight with scorn and said, "With the Level Gap Suppression function boosting the boss's damage by 5, you can only take 4 hits from the boss. Without any healing Skill that can heal your HP by its percentage, can you really heal yourself up quickly enough to stay alive?"

Well, everything she said was right. It would not be possible for Endless Starlight to heal himself up under those circumstances! However, when in danger, Starlight could let other Guardians use {Sacrifice} on him. Although those who use {Sacrifice} on him would definitely be sacrificed, literally, that would buy enough time for the healers to heal Starlight back up.

Everyone was able to know about the special tactic for tanking a boss because Zhang Yang had told them about the cowardly Liu Wei. As long as they had enough Guardians around, the Guardian who is tanking against the boss would be completely protected from one solid hit, even if the sacrificial Guardian's equipment is not that great! Furthermore, Guardians could also activate their

{Shield Wall} and their {Sacrifice} at the same instant. They might just earn enough time for the Guardian on the front line to be invincible for 5 seconds!

A dungeon would have a limit on the number of players that could enter. So, it was not possible for a party to bring in so many Guardians into the dungeon. However, the circumstances were a lot more different when challenging a boss in an Open World Map! There was no limitation on the number of players that could join the battle. As long as players could reach out, it would not matter if there were 100,000 or 200,000 players joining the boss battle. Even if the number of players got up to 2,000,000 or 20,000,000, nothing would stop them from attacking!

In Zhang Yang's previous life, the Japan-Korea Region had sent over 1,000,000 players to challenge a Level 190 Ascended Tier boss named 'The Lich King Auwheila'. They had etched themselves on the world records for having the most players joined a boss battle in all of history! Unfortunately, even though they had the numbers, the entire army was taken out in no time.

That boss had a Skill that could turn every single one of the players that he killed into an elite Tier Skeleton Soldier monster! Furthermore, the AoE skill of the boss was extremely powerful and deadly! As the battle went on, more Skeleton Soldiers sprouted up. In just a short moment, the players were 'drowned' by the massive army of Skeleton Soldiers!

The more interesting thing about that boss battle was that there were a few players from China Region who had been lying in wait. When the players of Japan-Korea Region were wiped out, they

revealed themselves and kited the boss over to the nearby Territory of the Japan-Korea Region! By the end of it, Auwheila led her army of Skeleton Soldiers over to the Territory and leveled down the Territory of the Japan-Korea Region in an instant! The boss was performing like a Celestial Tier boss! Upon the annihilation of the Territory and its people, the boss had remained in the vicinity, wandering about with no intentions of leaving!

In the end, the Territory was seized by the boss for over half a month. The players of Japan-Korea Region could only ask for help from the Officials. However, there were no GMs in the 'God's Miracle'. The Officials could only take the server offline to send the boss back to where it came from. Well, that had also created another record in the history of the game.

That was way too outrageous!

However, the difficulty of facing a boss in an Open World Map did not depend on whether the Tankers could survive. That difficulty would actually be based on how powerful the boss's AoE attack be, and how the players would nullify that threat!

Truth to be told, even if Hachilles had no tank distracting him, he only had one other AoE Skill, the {Shadow Cleave}. He would still hit several players at once. However, the boss' {Meteor Reign} could not be tanked by anyone. The meteor rain attacks would just rain hell upon the players, no matter what. Tactics worked on Dungeon bosses, but not Open world bosses.

Endless Starlight realized that if a woman was interested in you, she would accept and even agree on every word that you spout.

However, if a woman hates you, she would only feel irritated, even if you try to praise her with all the sweet words that heaven could offer.

Therefore, he knew it was time to back off. He ended the argument by saying, "As long as the death rate can be reined in, we should stand a chance taking this boss down!"

However, the boss also had {Devilish Tenacity} to recover 100,000 HP every second. Furthermore, the boss would not be affected by {Destructive Smash} when the effect of {Devilish Tenacity} is activated. Although the boss was losing more HP than he could recover, it was only because of Zhang Yang, Lost Dream, Galileo and other players of Crimson Rage being in their {Inheritance Transformation} forms. They were on steroids for the moment. Once the two hours pass, everyone would turn back to mere mortals. Their damage output would plummet.

By then, the boss would be regaining his HP. Zhang Yang and the ladies would have to spend 5 hours, 10 hours, or even a day or two before they can empty out the HP of the boss! Meanwhile, the bodies of the players were not made of steel. A long battle could exhaust a player's mind, causing them to lose focus. They also needed sustenance like water and food.

Only those players who were used to 'soaking' themselves in the game server would be able to endure such a long battle. As for other players, they would need to take turns resting. They might simply snap or drop dead if they do not so.

The Crimson Rage only had over 5,000 players in this boss battle.

The {Meteor Reign} of the boss could really kill a lot of players each time it struck! There were about 10 casualties every second! That meant about 600 players dying in each passing minute! Furthermore, the dead players would need 9 minutes to run all the way back to their own dead bodies to resurrect. Then, they would need about another minute to take [Snacks] and recover their HP. Therefore, it would take about 10 minutes for them to get back into the boss battle at the moment of death.

If they really want to kill the boss, they would need to maintain their deaths per minute down to 500 players in order to form an effective attack cycle. Otherwise, the party would only have one choice left, to be destroyed and try again. Other than that, among the 500 players that took part in the boss battle, many of them were Healers. It would be great if each of the DPS players could deal about 400 damage per second!

Suppressed by the Level Gap Suppression of the boss, the total damage that the entire party could deal on the boss was only about 100,000+ damage per second. With the boss being able to recover 100,000 HP each second, the damage that got past that superpowered regeneration was about 10,000+. When the 2-hour duration of the {Inheritance Transformation} expires, the total damage that the players could deal to the boss would become even lower!

"Hahaha! You imbeciles! Eat my blade!"

"You bunch of girly imbeciles! Just die already!"

"You flimsy imbeciles! Tremble before the great demon!"



Hachilles continued taunting them. He whirled, whipping the blade out of his back like a lively dragon. He would strike with the shadows of blade from time to time. Upon successful stunning Zhang Yang occasionally, the boss would turn around and attack the other players, including those who had activated their {Inheritance Transformations}.

Fortunately, the {Shadow Cleave} could only be activated once every 30 seconds. Zhang Yang could immunize himself from the attacks of {Shadow Cleave} by activating his {Warrior's Will}. The boss would only turn around once in every 60 seconds. Players with their {Inheritance Transformations} activated had no problem at all in taking the Skill head on. As long as Priests and the Holy Knights could activate their {Dispel}, the boss would turn his attention back to Zhang Yang. So the players did not have any big problems in handling the boss.

In just a blink of an eye, an hour had passed. The HP of the boss had dropped down to 68%. Zhang Yang attempted to cast the {Glare of the Death God} for the second time --- and it was resisted as well!

How unfortunate that was!

"Little Yang, I've told you this many times over! You must wash your hands after you're done with the big ones in the toilet! Why have you not listened to me? Not even once!" Fatty Han was very distressed about it, blaming Zhang Yang for not washing his hands right after going to the toilet.

"Ayyyyyy!" the pretty ladies who overheard what Fatty Han said were disgusted and glared at him altogether.

"You f\*cking fatso! Can't you just keep your mouth shut once in a while?" Zhang Yang grit his teeth. Everyone could not avoid having one or two of such friends, after all.

"Hahaha! Let me tell you about something that I encountered yesterday!" Fatty han was well known for his 'bragging' attitude. He would become merrier when there are more people around him. He said, "Yesterday when I and Xiao Wei went out to buy some groceries, our car tyre got punctured because some idiot decided to put nails on the road! So we had to call for the tow-truck. After putting the car at the workshop for repair, we had to take the bus back to our place. There were no seats available for us. So I had to let Xiao Wei lean on my meaty body!"

"You wretched fatso! Are you really so bored that you would even talk about this?"

"What the f\*ck! No! That's not my main point yet! Patience! So I was being really patient and aware of the surroundings as I was listening to the people all around to see if we could get a seat for ourselves. There was a family of three on the bus. They were seated nicely. But their child couldn't wait to get off. So, his mother told him that they would get down at the next stop! I was happy to hear it. So we squeezed our way through to the end of the bus. We thought that we could finally get ourselves a seat! But who would have guessed it... that mother kept repeating the same answer every time the child made some noise about getting off the bus! We went through 7 stops and the mother was still saying the

same thing to her child! They were still on the bus when both of us got down! Parents really do love to trick their children... and they've tricked me as well!"

Everyone laughed after hearing what he had to say. This wretched fatty was actually pretty good at making people laugh.

Another hour had passed, and the duration of Zhang Yang's {God of War Transformation} was finally over. So he quickly said, "It's time for you to take over, Mellow Venom!"

"Roger!"

The aggro value on Mellow Venom was slightly higher than the aggro value on Endless Starlight. It was natural that she would be next in line as tank. Endless Starlight would have to wait for her transformation to end before he steps up.

Upon activating her {Petrification Transformation} almost immediately, Mellow Venom was instantly covered in an extremely thick layer of white rocks. It looked like she had a second layer of armor that covered her entire body!

3, 2, 1!

The moment his {God of War Transformation} ended, Zhang Yang activated his {Shadow of the Void} to disengage.

The amount of aggro on Lost Dream and Hundred Shots were

much higher than the amount of aggro that Mellow Venom had, as they had activated their {Inheritance Transformation} Skills. The moment Zhang Yang disengaged from the battle, Hachilles did not attack Mellow Venom. The boss turned his attention over to Galileo instead --- Thieves could use {Vanish} while Hunters could fake their deaths to clear out the amount of aggro on them. However, Berserkers could only stay there and accept their doom.

Fortunately, their {Inheritance Transformations} had expired. So, it did not matter if they die. They could just release their souls and come back to their dead bodies to resurrect themselves. Then, they could simply resume battle.

When the boss had killed all three players with {Inheritance Transformation}, the boss finally turned over to Mellow Venom. The transitioning of the next tank had finally taken place.

Zhang Yang came out from the void dimension and threw the third {Glare of the Death God} onto the boss.

A dark skull began to form right on top of the boss. It was a terrifying grin!

Finally! It was a successful one!

400 players striking a boss at the same time was no joke! The moment the Special Effect of the {Glare of the Death God} kicked in, the boss began to receive ‘-3,000,000!’ damage repeatedly within a very short period of time! In less than 2 seconds, all 10 available strikes of the special effect had been used up completely.

The total amount of Hachilles's HP had dropped down to 28%!

"Huh? What happened? How did the boss lose so much HP all of a sudden?!"

"What just happened?"

"I saw that many of us caused about 350,000 damage to the boss in one split second!"

"It wasn't 350,000 damage, it was 3,500,000 damage!"

The ladies from Crimson Rage were not aware of the Special Effect that {Glare of the Death God} could provide. They were very shocked.

"Guild master Zhan Yu, what Skill was that?" Snow Seeker was a professional player who possessed heavenly skills. She truly had sharp senses. She had noticed Zhang Yang's minute movements the moment that 'miracle' occurred.

Zhang Yang nodded, and showed the description of the {Glare of the Death God} to Snow Seeker.

"Szz---" Snow Seeker took in a breath of air after seeing the description of the Skill. So that was the ultimate Skill that Zhang Yang has been using to slay bosses! She immediately said, "Is this

the Skill that was dropped by the final boss you slew back then to complete your Class S [Inheritance] quest?"

The officials had stated it with crystal clarity. The final boss for the Class S [Inheritance] quest would drop a [Skill Book] upon being slain. If players were to slay the boss without accepting that particular Inheritance quest, the boss would not drop that sort of additional reward. Even then, such rewards only occur once when they do.

"Guild master Snow is indeed wise. You got it right on your first guess!" Zhang Yang laughed.

# Chapter 603: A Close Call

---

Even though Mellow Venom managed to take over as the tank against the boss, but the rate of reduction on the HP of the boss got even slower than before, without the support of the {Inheritance Transformations} of Zhang Yang and his gang of bros. Well, without the support of {Inheritance Transformations}, the total damage that they could deal on the boss reduced steeply.

Although the boss had taken all 10 of the {Glare of the Death God}'s Special Effects, the amount of HP the boss was still hanging around at 28%. The worst part of it was that no matter how hard they tried, the HP level of the boss was not moving at all. Everyone was feeling fatigued.

"I'm definitely not going to fight a boss with a Level Gap Suppression ever again!" Fatty Han had been repeating his words so many times that people have lost count of it.

"Then, just grind your level up as quickly as you can!" Zhang Yang told Fatty Han. He even hoped that Fatty Han would quickly get the Class quest and get a Phoenix Pet as soon as possible. However, Fatty Han must be Level 120 before he could do that.

"Sigh! Now that I have a home and a wife to take care of, I can't just play the game the entire day! I need to accompany my wife! More importantly, I need to spare some effort on my waist to create my next generation and serve my country! Where can I get so much time to grind my level, then?" Fatty Han was being exaggerated.

"Then, just delete your account!"

"Hehe! I was just being emotional for one moment back there. Why are you reacting so much?"

The Defense of Mellow Venom had been boosted up by 10 times upon activating her {Petrification Transformation}. That amount of Defense was 5 times higher than the Defense of Zhang Yang while he was in his {God of War Transformation} mode. However, the Attack of Mellow Venom was increased by 100% while she was in her {Petrification Transformation} form. It was a measure of balancing the oppressiveness of the {Petrification Inheritance}. The increment was not the same as the players with Class B [Inheritance] where they would get a 200% boost on their attributes.

Unfortunately, Mellow Venom only had one Mythical Tier equipment currently, other than an entire set of Violet-Platinum Tier equipment. She did not have a shield which appeared to boost most of the Defense attribute of a player. So her basic Defense attribute was only 2,900. Upon boosting it up by 10 %, she would only have as much as 29,000 Defense. Although that amount of Defense was a little higher than the Defense of Zhang Yang in his {God of War Transformation} form, but she would still be helpless when she is up against the oppressive power of the boss that had over millions of Damage attribute. The only attribute that would really minimize the damage she received would be the 20% Passive Damage Immunity that she had as a Guardian.

Furthermore, Class B {Inheritance Transformation} could only boost the Maximum HP of the player by 20 times. She could only



increase her total amount of HP up to about 2,000,000 HP. Even though that amount of HP seemed to be abundant, that amount of HP would not hold for long if the boss keeps attacking her with 5-time Level Gap Suppression effects. The margin of error and the margin of safety that she had was far lower, compared to Zhang Yang.

Every single one of the Healer on the party was haunted by fear as they were fully focused on maintaining the HP level of Mellow Venom. A few Guardians were standing by to throw their {Sacrifice} on her in order to reduce as much stress on her as possible.

It was a necessary means because Mellow Venom could not heal like Zhang Yang always dose. The amount of HP she could recover upon activating her {Petrification Transformation} was not enough to cover for the amount of HP she was losing. Briefly after engaging with the boss, her Hp had dropped below 20%. That was the moment she urgently needed {Sacrifice} from the Guardians. Meanwhile, she had also activated her {Shield Wall} to slow down the rate of reduction on her HP. If she was lucky enough not to receive a damage that had 5-time Level Gap Suppression effect, the Tanker who uses {Sacrifice} on her, right after the 5-second gap would still be alive!

The battle proceeded on rough waters. Although the firepower of the party was quite limited and their number was decreasing constantly, they were not wiped out. They were still hanging on while working their \*sses off to reduce the boss's HP. Though the rate of HP reduced on the boss was excruciatingly slow, but they were making progress, at least.

Another hour had passed, the amount of the boss's HP had finally dropped down to 20%!

Zhang Yang quickly threw another {Glare of the Death God} onto the boss --- resisted!

Everyone was hoping that Zhang Yang would pull out some sort of miracle. However, they were very disappointed when they saw the word 'Resisted' popping out on top of the boss. Fatty Han sneered at Zhang Yang as he said some nonsense, trying to ridicule Zhang Yang for his failed attempt. Zhang Yang could not help himself but think about sewing that fatso's mouth up to shut him up for good.

Although the {Glare of the Death God} had been resisted, the remaining HP of the boss was below 20% at the moment. It was time to activate their 'Killing Cleave' Skills!

Zhang Yang immediately activated his {Indiscriminate}, closely followed by his {Killing Cleave} on the boss. He caused about 60,000 damage on the boss. That amount of damage hyped up the others the moment when they saw the damage value that popped out on top of the boss.

Without any pause in between, he continued to activate his {Horizontal Sweep} and {Destructive Smash}. When he ran out of Skills to use, Zhang Yang threw {Cripple Defense} onto the boss. With him being able to use a two-handed weapon, {Cripple Defense} could boost Zhang Yang's basic damage up to a range of 15,256 - 17,528. That amount of damage had exceeded the damage that 99% of the normal Tankers could deal!

Upon using his {Cripple Defense}, Zhang Yang was able to use his {Killing Cleave} 5 seconds earlier than before. Normally, Zhang Yang could only activate his {Killing Cleave} once every 20 seconds. Warrior Class players like Galileo and Mellow Venom could not help themselves but feel amazed when they realized that.

"Guildmaster, how can the cooldown for your {Killing Cleave} be only 20 seconds long?" the young Galileo could no longer resist as he asked.

"That's because I acquired a Skill that enhances my {Cripple Defense}!" Zhang Yang posted the description for {Superior Cripple Defense} on the party chat for everyone to see.

"How strange. It's called {Superior Cripple Defense} and yet it shortens the cooldown duration of {Killing Cleave}?" Fatty Han was shaking his head while he sighed.

Everyone was determined to ignore that wretched fatso as everyone knew that the fatso was the type of guy who would stir up trouble out of nothing. Trying to 'entertain' him would be like smashing your own head against the door until your skull breaks.

After a series of explosive attacks, the HP of the boss was beginning to reduce a little faster than before. However, that was only for a short moment. After all, there was a cooldown on each of the 'Killing Cleave' Skills. It would be impossible for them to use their Skills repeatedly without any pause.

Another one hour had passed, the {Pertrification Transformation} of Mellow Venom had expired. Endless Starlight immediately activated his {King Kong Transformation} as he transformed himself into a gigantic King Kong. He roared in anger like a King Kong, tapped his chest repeatedly like a King Kong, and charged towards the boss like a raging King Kong!

Upon seeing the appearance and behavior of Endless Starlight, the ladies were shocked and stunned at first. Then, they began to giggle as they could no longer hold their laughter in.

Endless Starlight could not help but feel conflicted with rage and sorrow at the same time. He tapped his chest repeatedly with his hands and roared like a King Kong again. Everyone laughed even harder.

Zhang Yang felt a twitch on his face. He recalled back in his previous life that many around him laughed as well upon seeing him turning into a King Kong. After all, this {King Kong Transformation} was a little f\*cked up. It could actually turn a player into a real King Kong! If this King Kong was to try hooking up with a female King Kong in the jungle, surely it would be a successful one!

Mellow Venom had no {Shadow of the Void} to remove herself from the aggro of boss. So the moment when her {Petrification Transformation} was over, she was smashed to jelly and turned into a stream of white light traveling back to the Graveyard. However, it did not bother her at all, since she had done her job. It would not mean much, as her {Inheritance Transformation} was over.

The {King Kong Transformation} was quite a powerful force. The hammer on his right hand and the shield on his left hand were fused into his body. Endless Starlight was having a good time throwing punches and kicks at the boss. He could even block the attacks of the boss with his left hand like he was wielding a shield. The melee battle between the boss and the King Kong Starlight looked very wild indeed. The frequent bloodshed had made the scene seem unusually brutal and bloody.

"King Kong Ohn Nom Nom!" Endless Starlight suddenly let out a roar as he suddenly leaped on the boss. While he was in midair, Starlight locked the throat of Hachilles with his legs and hugged the head of the boss with his two arms. The next thing he did was to open his mouth wide open and mounded the head of the boss.

"That brat!" Zhang Yang could no longer hold his urge to laugh as he burst into laughter and shook his head. That was the ultimate Skill that only the [King Kong Inheritance] could provide. It was called {Blood Feed}. It could suck 1% of the target's HP in every second and recover the HP of the user by 5 the amount of HP being sucked. However, the amount of damage dealt to the target would not exceed 20,000 points. The Skill would only last for 10 seconds without any interruption.

That was the ultimate life-saving of the [King Kong Inheritance]. However, the fact that Starlight had named the Skill {King Kong Om Nom Nom} instead had caused Zhang Yang to become speechless over it.

However, the Skill was very effective! The HP bar of Endless

Starlight was recovering at a rapid rate, while the boss had lost over 200,000 HP.

Though the [King Kong Inheritance] could not be compared to the [Petrification Inheritance] in term of Defense, it triumphed over the [Petrification Inheritance] in terms of Attack. Furthermore, the [Inheritance] itself also provided its owner a convenient life-saving Skill that made it a good Class B [Inheritance].

However, a Defender only had 15% Physical Damage Immunity. Bosses with Level Gap Suppression effect such as Hachilles would have an extremely high amount of HP. So 5% difference in the Physical Damage Immune would be around 50,000HP. Therefore, the Healers were very stressed up. Snow Seeker had to send a few Guardians to the front line to stand by with their {Sacrifice} in order to stabilize the situation of the battle.

The cooldown of the {Glare of the Death God} was over once again. However, it was another failed attempt that let everyone down. The Skill was resisted by the boss once again!

"The boss still has 11% HP left. Judging from the total damage that we all can deal on the boss, we only managed to reduce about 8% to 9% HP of the boss. In an hour, we won't have any players with {Inheritance Transformations} left to support us!" Snow Seeker was extremely concerned.

The Warriors could chain up their {Sacrifice} to form a continuous link life-saving Skill. However, it would require 12 Warriors that could 'synchronize' themselves in their performance

on that task. Under the flurry of attacks by the boss, one split moment of delay between the activation of the Skills that would break the Skill link and cause the Tanker to be instantly killed. It was just too risky to rely on that strategy!

Zhang Yang nodded to express his agreement, then he said, "Let's hope that the next {Glare of the Death God} will not be resisted!"

"Let's!"

9%, 8%, 7%...

The HP of the boss was getting lesser in every passing second. However, the {King Kong Transformation} of Endless Starlight was nearing its end!

When the boss had only 3% HP left, Endless Starlight suddenly quivered, as his gigantic body began to shrink back to his humanoid form --- the duration of his {King Kong Transformation} was over!

Pak! Pak! Pak!

Instantly, three {Sacrifice} were thrown onto Endless Starlight. However, only one of it was effective on him while the other 2 {Sacrifice} faded away with waste.

"You weaklings! Filthy humans! I will end you!" the eyes of Hachilles turned red as he was on the verge of being killed. The

boss was so infuriated he had lost all of his senses as he roared thunderously while whirling his weapon around.

"Little Yang! Remember to wash your hands!" Fatty Han suddenly shouted and said something that annoyed everyone.

"F\*ck off!" Zhang Yang took in a deep breath and threw the {Glare of the Death God} onto the boss.

Just when everyone was praying hard that the Skill would not be resisted, a dark skull which had a terrifying smile formed right on top of the boss.

It was a successful attempt!

The party was cheering in joy as they launched their final wave of assaults onto the boss. In only 1 second, they had triggered the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} 10 times! The boss could not even say anything before he was killed. He just collapsed onto the ground with a groan and died.

"Finally! We made it!"

The lady army was cheering in tears of joy as they hugged each other. Some of them even started kissing in excitement!

Fatty Han was feeling envious of what he saw before him. There was no one beside him at all for him to take advantage of. The ladies were hugging and cheering around in either pairs or groups.



Only Endless Starlight was smiling at him like an idiot. A man smiling at you like an idiot? Fatty Han could not help but feel his anus tensing up. He quickly turned around and looked at other direction.

"Guild mater Zhan Yu ---" Perfumed Water pulled White Orchid, Mellow Venom and Thorny Rose along with her. They charged towards Zhang Yang and grabbed hold of Zhang Yang as each of them gave Zhang Yang a sweet kiss.

"Wu wu wu --- We're all men and the way that we are being treated is so different!" Fatty Han filled his eyes and cheeks with tears as he squatted at a corner, drawing circles with his finger.

"Brother fatty, just remember that you still have me!" Endless Starlight was staring at Fatty Han with 'love'.

"F\*ck off!"

## Chapter 604: Armor Piercing Potion

---

Perfumed Water, White Orchid and the other ladies around Zhang Yang were renowned models under the employment of Crimson Cosmetic Holdings. All of them had pretty faces and hot, voluptuous bodies. Most men would fall under the spell of their pretty faces and their hot, spicy bodies while being smothered by these bombshells. But not Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang humphed and said, "It's futile to use seduction on me! I'm still getting my part of the loot!"

"Tsk!"

Thorny Rose, White Orchid and the ladies immediately let go of him. However, Perfumed Water was still touching Zhang Yang from head to toe. Zhang Yang was annoyed. So he picked Perfumed Water up by the scruff of her collar like a lost cat and brought her to Snow Seeker. Then, he shoved Perfumed Water right into the arms of Snow Seeker.

Perfumed Water was an 'omnivore'. She immediately hugged Snow Seeker with all four limbs the moment she was in Snow Seeker's arms. She reached out her demonic hands for a quick grope and started molding the pair of mountains underneath Snow Seeker's white robe. She squeezed so hard that the shape of her boobies were shifting randomly. Zhang Yang felt a heat rushing up to his head as he witnessed it.

"Perfumed Water! How could you take advantage of Sister Snow

all by yourself! You were supposed to seduce Zhan Yu!" Thorny Rose quickly removed Perfumed Water from the body of Snow Seeker.

"That's right! How dare you throw yourself onto Sister Snow!"

The ladies expressed their fury at Perfumed Water for taking advantage of grabbing the boobies of Snow Seeker.

Zhang Yang quickly cut in and said, "Guildmaster Snow, it's about time to look over the loot!"

Snow Seeker let out a sigh. As a guildmaster, she should place the members of her guild before others. She did not mind her ladies seducing Zhang Yang as long as they stood a chance at influencing Zhang Yang to give up on taking a piece of the loots.

Unfortunately, Zhang Yang did not fall for their seduction, at all.

So she walked up to the dead boss and set out the loots that were dropped by the boss in order.

Hachilles dropped two Ethereal Tier equipment. One of the equipment was a hat while the other one was a Physical-type ring. Both types of equipment were Level 150. This equipment could be equipped by the players upon reaching Level 130. The other 3 Mythical Tier equipment were also Level 150 equipment. However, players would only be able to equip them upon reaching Level 150.

Other than that, there was also one [Skill Point Crystal], one [Pet Skill Book] and one [Alchemist's Recipe].

"Wow! What a jackpot!" Zhang Yang said.

The Skill Point Crystal could give the player who swallows it one additional Skill Point. Zhang Yang did not expect it to be dropped by a Level 150 Ethereal Tier boss.

Snow Seeker smiled at Zhang Yang and said, "Let's see. Guildmaster Zhan Yu can have the three Mythical Tier equipment. You will earn a fortune with them!"

Zhang Yang rolled his eyes at Snow Seeker. The three Mythical equipment could only be equipped upon reaching Level 150. It would be a crime to accept that offer because the loss would be disastrous! When players reach Level 150, they would already be looking at Ethereal Tier equipment. The value of Mythical Tier equipment would be 'degraded' to the current value of Violet-Platinum Tier equipment by then. Who would be stupid enough to accept that offer?

Zhang Yang only laughed over it. He did not look at the two Ethereal Tier equipment either. He only had eyes for the [Pet Skill Book] and the [Alchemist's Recipe].

--- equipment could be acquired by challenging more bosses in the future. However, [Pet Skill Books] and [Alchemist's Recipes] were extremely hard to come by. Once you miss it, there might not be another chance to get the same ones again. If either [Pet Skill

Book] or the [Alchemist's Recipe] is a Special item that would only drop once in the entire game, Zhang Yang would pick one out of the two. Otherwise, he would be picking the [Skill Point Crystal] instead. The equipment would be his last choice.

In a nutshell, the best loot that a super boss could drop would be a [Skill Book], an [Alchemist's Recipe] or something along those lines.

The name of the [Pet Skill Book] was 'Self Sacrifice'. Everyone should be able to guess what the Skill could do by looking at the name: This was a type of Skill similar to {Sacrifice}. All damage received by the owner within 5 seconds would be transferred to the pet.

The Skill would prove to be very useful in the arena and the Open World Map while battling other players. Players could save their own lives with this Skill.

On the other hand, the [Alchemist's Recipe] was the 'Armor Piercing Potion'. Zhang Yang could remember clearly that the effect of this potion allowed players who used it to ignore 10% Defense of their target for a certain duration of time.

"I shall take the [Alchemist's Recipe] then!" Zhang Yang pointed at the recipe.

The effects of the potion could be stacked together with the effect of {Cripple Defense}. Although that did not really aid Zhang Yang as he already had {Eagle Eye}, it would certainly help his party

members increase their Physical Damage output! Furthermore, the amount of Defense that is being ignored was based on percentage ratio. The higher the Defense of the monster or the boss they encounter, the higher the Defense they could ignore upon consuming the potion. That 10% of Defense could mean 1,000 Defense, 2,000 Defense, or it could even mean up to tens of thousands of Defense points!

Each attack of the players could be increased by 1,000 to 2,000 damage upon using the potion. Furthermore, the effects of the potion would depend on the amount of the target's Defense. That alone was already much more practical than having some powerful equipment.

Other than that, Zhang Yang had the {Alchemist's Intuition}. He might be able to increase the percentage of Defense ignored up to 20%, 30%. It would be great if that was possible.

In Zhang Yang's previous life, this potion was deemed to be one of the Special items that could determine victory or defeat against powerful bosses. The cost of making one [Armor Piercing Potion] was only one gold coin. However, because of its practicality and rarity, one [Armor Piercing Potion] could be sold at the price of 100 gold coins at the very least! This recipe would really become a gold mine for Zhang Yang.

As the effects of the 'Armor Piercing Potion' was not mentioned in its description, Snow Seeker did not understand why Zhang Yang would be so persistent in getting that recipe. However, she understood enough to know that the recipe had to be extremely rare and valuable. That was why Zhang Yang would even pass up

on a Skill Point!

However, she still gave the recipe up to Zhang Yang. The reason was simple. Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage had a good relationship that is never seen in any other two guilds. If Zhang Yang gets to making the potions, he would definitely share the potion with them. Even if Zhang Yang might not do it for free, but he could still be persuaded to do it if he was provided the materials.

Therefore, Snow Seeker had also hoped that Zhang Yang would take the recipe instead of taking other loots. It would still be like giving the recipe to one of their own Alchemist players.

According to their previous arrangement, Zhang Yang could only choose one among the loots without any conditions. The rest of the loot would be taken by Crimson Rage. In a very brief moment, the loot were distributed among the members of Crimson Rage. Meanwhile, the player who acquired the [Demon Summoner Inheritance] was White Orchid, one of Crimson Rage's best Priests.

This Priest would be an absolute monster in combat.

"Little Yang, why didn't you take the [Skill Point Crystal] instead? You could have gotten another Skill Point for free!" Fatty Han spoke in a sad tone.

Lost Dreams and the others did not say a word about it. They believed that Zhang Yang had his own reasons for doing so.

Zhang Yang laughed. Then he quickly tapped the recipe on himself and learned the recipe without any hesitation. Then he said, "The [Skill Point Crystal] can only benefit one person while the potions that I can make out of the recipe I just learned can benefit everyone just by taking the potions!"

"That's really awesome!" Lost Dream immediately cheered and said, "Zhan Yu has {Alchemist's Intuition} as well. So he can make high grade transmuted potions. That should give us better effects in ignoring Defense of our target!"

"Yes! Now, this is what I call a good fortune!" Hundred Shots nodded as well.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "We did earn a fortune for ourselves, but the Crimson Rage did not lose anything as well. If they bring us the materials for making the potion, I would have to fulfill their request as well, right?"

"Hehe! You can make the potion for them, but we can keep the potions with higher transmutation grade!"

"That's right! {Alchemist's Intuition} is your specialty, boss! No matter how much materials they are giving us, we shall only give them potions without any transmuted effects! We shall keep all transmuted potions for ourselves!"

Zhang Yang and his gang had begun discussing on how to get 'profit' by exploiting Crimson Rage. Fatty Han became impatient over it. He went on and posted the link to the description of the



[Armor Penetrating Potion] over to Snow Seeker and her ladies. He was trying to get them to gather materials for making the potions.

As expected, Snow Seeker was very eager to gather the materials the moment she saw the description of the [Armor Piercing Potion]. However, she was well aware that it would be almost impossible to buy such a rare and valuable potion. Therefore, she quickly made an arrangement with Zhang Yang as she promised to bring Zhang Yang the required materials before Zhang Yang would make the potions for Crimson Rage. Zhang Yang accepted the offer, of course. He could let Crimson Rage owe him a favor while taking advantage of them.

After done distributing the remaining loots, everyone left the place by using their [Teleportation Scrolls]. Zhang Yang went straight to the bank. He took out all of the [Herbs] from his warehouse according to the recipe for the [Armor Piercing Potion]. Then, he went over to the Alchemist Shop to purchase some potion bottles in order to begin making the potions.

Fortunately, Zhang Yang had help from his Herb Foraging Familiar in gathering [Herbs]. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had been to Level 150 maps several times over without having to worry about his Herb Foraging Familiar being attacked by monsters. The Herb Foraging Familiar could even gather [Herbs] across Level 300 maps like the place was its own --- of course, Zhang Yang had to bring his Herb Foraging Familiar to those locations first in order for it to do its job.

There were many high grade [Herbs] in Zhang Yang's warehouse. Normally, he would just make some rare potions whenever he was

free. Then, he would sell the potions to earn some quick money. Truth be told, the amount of money he could earn by selling potions was astoundingly high. He was able to become rich all because of his potion sales ever since the start of the game.

‘Ding! You have made [Armor Piercing Potion] x10!’

‘Ding! You have made [Armor Piercing Potion] x10!’

With the support of his Herb Foraging Familiar, the Alchemist profession of Zhang Yang had attained the highest grade, Grandmaster. So he could make 10 potions at a time, making him even more efficient than he already was.

‘Ding! You have made [Armor Piercing Potion] x10! Due to Alchemist's Intuition, [Armor Piercing Potion] has been transmuted!’

The rate of [Armor Piercing Potion] of undergoing Transmutation was extremely low. The first transmutation only occurred after the 7th attempt.

[Armor Piercing Potion (Grade 4 Transmutation)] (Consumable)

Use: Your Physical Attack can ignore 14% Defense of the target. Can be stacked together with {Cripple Defense}. Lasts for 1 hour.

Required Level: 100

Based on this perspective, the [Armor Piercing Potion] with the highest Transmutation Grade could provide the user the ability to ignore 20% Defense of the target. The potion would really increase the damage output efficiency of the Physical-type players.

Zhang Yang was satisfied with the outcome of it as he continued to make more potions. One hour later, he used up warehouse's supply of materials that would be needed for making the [Armor Piercing Potion]. However, Snow Seeker came tripping down on him with 5,000 sets of materials just when he was about to call it a day.

Zhang Yang could make 10 bottles of [Armor Piercing Potions] at a time. 5,000 materials would take him 500 seconds to run through. It only took him roughly 8 minutes before he cleared out the materials from Snow Seeker. After some pestering and coaxing from Snow Seeker, Zhang Yang finally agreed to part with 5,100 [Armor Piercing Potions]. Zhang Yang had over 26 points of Luck. The Luck Attribute would grant players a certain chance of getting more than the initially projected amount of products. With 26 Luck, he had a 2.6% chance of producing additional potions. He should be able to turn 5,000 sets of materials into 5,130 bottles of [Armor Piercing Potions].

Therefore, Zhang Yang should be able to keep the remaining 30 bottles as his own reward for making the potions for Snow Seeker.

However, the rate of 2.6% was just in theory. Truth to be told, Zhang Yang only managed to make 93 extra bottles. So he had to give away 7 bottles of his own to Snow Seeker.

Fortunately, there was only about 20% of the 5,093 bottles of [Armor Piercing Potion] that had undergone transmutation. Of course, Zhang Yang would not reveal the truth to Snow Seeker that he had replaced all of the transmuted potions with those that had not been transmuted before handing them over to her. Snow Seeker thought she had taken advantage of Zhang Yang. She did not know that Zhang Yang had concealed his 'evil' scheme right behind that bitter smile of his.

An unpleasant part of a pleasant thing was that the materials deposited in the warehouse of Crimson Rage were too little for him to take advantage of them. 5,000 sets of materials was only a small number, as compared to Zhang Yang's 40,000 sets of materials that he gathered all by himself.

It would make perfect sense, when Zhang Yang had a god-like Herb Foraging Familiar. His Herb Foraging Familiar could just ignore the level of the maps as it goes out gathering the herbs. Therefore, the good little helper had no problem at all in gathering herbs and materials from high-level maps. On the other hand, the players from Crimson Rage had gone through heaven and hell just to gather half the number of the 5,000 sets of materials. Meanwhile, the other remaining half of the 5,000 sets of materials were most probably obtained from the Auction House via auctions.

From that point of view, it was too good to be true for Zhang Yang to have a Herb Foraging Familiar.

# Chapter 605: Finding Alice

---

Zhang Yang divided the total number of [Armor Piercing Potion] that he made into two equal portions. Naturally, he kept all the [Armor Piercing Potion] that had gone through Transmutation for his own use. Then, he equally split the number of [Armor Piercing Potion] without going through Transmutation into two portions. Half of it was reserved for his own normal guild members. Whoever wanted to use the potions should accumulate guild points in exchange for the potions. The other half of the [Armor Piercing Potions] were placed on the shelves at his Little Merchandize Shop, ready for sale.

Not long after he placed the potions on the shelves, Zhang Yang received private messages from Amber Sunset, Sky High, Radiance and other guilds. They were all requesting for Zhang Yang to sell the potions to them. Some of them even wanted to make an arrangement with Zhang Yang saying that they were willing to provide materials for making the potions. In return, Zhang Yang would have to make the potions for them.

The opportunities for Zhang Yang to take advantage of them over the ‘deal’ had presented themselves. However, Zhang Yang did not reply them immediately. Instead, he tried to find some excuses to reject them, because he wanted to grind his level as quickly as possible. He would not have any time to spare at all if he wanted to focus on grinding up his level. However, these guildmasters decided to give Zhang Yang an even more appealing offer at the end of it. They were willing to give Zhang Yang 10 gold piece for each bottle he makes for them as a compensation for his trouble.

Truth to be told, Zhang Yang would not really mind about such

little small amount of money. However, how would one reject a free gift when it is already being placed right in their hands? Furthermore, the main purpose would be swiping the transmuted [Armor Piercing Potions] into his own pockets, upon making the potions for the other guilds. So all he did was to pretend to reluctantly accept their offers.

Because Crimson Rage had purchased every single material for making the [Armor Piercing Potions] in the market, Greensleeves Prince and the other guildmasters could no longer get the materials from the market. Although there were still some left in the warehouse, the amount was not enough at all.

They quickly sent their guild members with Herb Picking professions out to gather as much required materials as possible. They were only gathering the materials across the Level 120-150 map. Most of them were just walking by the outskirts of the map. If normal players were to encounter monsters that were Level 140 or Level 150, they would be as good as dead.

For the following days, Zhang Yang continued to grind his level and make some potions. He was living a good and relaxing life in the game. On the outside of the game, he could hug Han Ying Xue on his left and hug Sun Xin Yu on the right. Although the two ladies were still quarreling, Zhang Yang was considered a lucky bastard that could live a happy life with more than 1 sexual partner in his life! Well, the downside of it was that he would feel his 'little brother' being overly exhausted every time he was done with the two of them.

Word about the [Armor Piercing Potion] got out with a bang. The

potion would serve as a powerful 'tool' to slay a boss. Many guildmasters went up to Zhang Yang with tons of materials and gold. They begged by any necessary means just to get Zhang Yang into making the potions for them. They even wanted to pay him a substantial amount of fortune just to get Zhang Yang to do it for them. Fatty Han could not help but laugh at them quietly, saying that these people were 'whoring' around with Zhang Yang with money.

By the end of it, it only took about 7 to 8 days for Zhang Yang to earn over hundreds of millions of dollars just by making potions for the other guilds. Furthermore, he managed to secretly keep thousands of [Armor Piercing Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] for himself. Zhang Yang and his gang were very happy with the outcome.

Zhang Yang had not wasted much time in making the potion as well. Because he had attained Grandmaster for his Alchemist profession. Zhang Yang could make 10 potions in a row, making it possible for him to make 36,000 bottles of potion over an hour of time. Therefore, making millions of bottles would only take about 30 hours or more for him. It was only approximately half a day in the real time.

Currently, Zhang Yang was at Level 118. He was only two levels away from reaching Level 120. For normal players, it would take about 10 days to grind one level. However, with Zhang Yang's capability, he would only need about 7 to 8 days to grind for a level.

On one particular day, Zhang Yang had just set foot into his office

and signed into the game before he was added to Han Ying Xue's party. Wei Yan Er was also in the same party.

"Yo! Why are you up so early today?" Zhang Yang could not accept the fact that the little brat woke up this early in the morning. Actually, ever since Wei Yan Er had gone to university, she had not been skipping classes. She would wake up early to join the classes early in the morning on Fridays. Therefore, she would usually sleep through the weekends.

Zhang Yang turned his head over and said, "Please don't tell me that the little brat did not brush her teeth again..."

"Hehe!" Wei Yan Er gave him an honest smile without being courteous at all.

"Go brush your teeth now! Your breath smells!" Zhang Yang teased her on purpose.

"You bus tart! Stop bullying me whenever you see me! You better watch out, I might just go crazy on you!" Wei Yan Er flipped her eyes backward at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he was teasing the little brat. For him, teasing the little brat was a happy thing to do in his life. Then he said, "So why did you add me to your party?"

"To complete a quest together, of course, you dumb \*ss! What other use do you have for us other than being a meatshield for the



monsters?" Wei Yan Er shrugged on purpose.

"Hey witch! Tell the little brat what else I am useful for!" Zhang Yang smiled viciously at Han Ying Xue.

Han Ying Xue could not help but recall what happened three hours back. Zhang Yang had taken liberty of her and Sun Xin Yu while they were still in a deep sleep. Her face turned red as she was overwhelmed with shame. She spat at Zhang Yang, trying to cover her shame as that the memory of that morning could shame her and Sun Xin Yu for quite awhile.

"What kind of quest are we talking about then?" Zhang Yang asked.

"Sister Snow triggered a hidden quest while she was hunting for the Cooking Materials. Didn't she do great back there?" Wei Yan Er was the type who could not keep her mouth shut. She blurted it out to Zhang Yang immediately.

Zhang Yang looked at Han Ying Xue for one brief moment before he said, "I'm guessing you must have lost your way before you stumbled upon this quest. Am I right?"

"Bingo!"

Zhang Yang frowned intensely. So this witch was lucky enough to locate a quest by getting lost. She must have all the luck in the world!

"What's the reward then?"

"We have no idea at the moment! Aiyo! Why are you being so long-winded! Just get over here and do it!" Wei Yan Er could no longer wait as she glared, "Come on! Let's go!"

"Let's contact Ice Queen and the others as well!"

"The quest said that only 3 members can participate!" Han Ying Xue shook her head.

"See? We always treat you very well! We reserved the last spot for you!" Wei Yan Er blinked her large eyes at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and pulled Han Ying Xue into his arms. Then he said, "You've got it all wrong! Your sister cousin is now my girlfriend. So it should be us who left the last spot for you, little brat! You must feel grateful for that!"

"You bus tart!" Wei Yan Er was boiling with rage towards Han Ying Xue who gave in to her own lust for Zhang Yang instead of defending her.

Han Ying Xue shared the quest out to the other two. Upon accepting the quest, the three of them departed for the location of the quest.

## [Finding Alice] (Difficulty: Rank-A)

Description: That playful Alice is once again lost! Please, my fellow Adventurer. Please bring her back for me! She used to wander in the woods nearby, having fun all by herself. You should start by looking there.

Completion: Find Alice 0/1

Limitation: 3 Players Only

It would be impossible for Han Ying Xue to locate a specific location... definitely not possible at all! She was so terrible in directions that she would even walk a little off a straight line after walking straight for 100 meters. The route to that location had twists and turns, and one must be clear about the correct roads and intersections to take. Furthermore, they were required to mount on [Flying Mounts] in order to travel across the mountains. Han Ying Xue has always been practically blind whenever she travels. Whenever she gets lost, she would simply use her [Teleportation Scroll] to travel back to the Territory.

Therefore, not a single route would be committed to her memory. Even if she manages to arrive at her destination, it would be impossible for her to do it again! However, this woman knew her own flaws. She marked the exact location of the quest location in the party minimap. Therefore, Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er would still be able to find the location, even if she does not find it.

The three left Tibanya Wasteland and travelled across mountains

and rivers before they arrived at Flatlands of the Man Eating Monster.

Zhang Yang could not help but to wonder, so he asked, "Witch, where did you intend to find the cooking ingredients at first?"

"Apen Mountains!" Han Ying Xue answered.

Zhang Yang was speechless upon hearing it. The Apen Mountains was located at the Tibanya Wasteland map. However, she led them straight to the Flatlands of the Man Eating Monster. She had strayed too far from her original course! Furthermore, she did not encounter any enemy players along the way. It was considered as a miracle!

The Flatlands of the Man Eating Monster was initially the 'Exclusive Map' of the India Region. It was natural that there would be Indian players all around the area. Furthermore, the Indians were known to be a nation of the 'almighty' in the real world. The same applied to them in the game as well. Up to seven or eight players could be found mounted on one mount. 4 would be sitting together in a row on top of the mount, while the other three or four of them would be hanging by the sides of the mount. That scene would always amaze people who saw it!

Zhang Yang and the ladies did not want any trouble. So they adjusted their mounts to fly at a higher altitude. However, 3 red-name players flying across the sky would still be very obvious. Fortunately, as the Indian players were all 'overloaded' on their mounts, none of them could catch up to them. Without any problem at all, Zhang Yang and ladies had left them far behind and

went on with their journey.

After flying for more than 2 hours, they finally arrived at their destination. It was a manor that seemed to be cut off from the outside world. There was a thick jungle right behind the manor. The jungle seemed very spooky and anyone would feel anxious upon seeing it.

As all three of them had accepted the quest, they no longer needed to waste their breath with the NPC all over again. They jumped right into the quest and entered the jungle. The three of them split up to search for clues. After half an hour of finding, the little brat discovered a strange tree stump under the shade of a large tree. So she quickly called the other two over to take a look at it.

There was a flashing large hole beneath the tree stump. It seemed like an entrance to another dungeon. Theoretically speaking, only players who have accepted the quest earlier on could see the entrance. Zhang Yang even experimented by deleting the quest on purpose before entering the hole. The hole no longer flashed and he could not find anything inside the hole, except that it was dark and empty!

He got Han Ying Xue to share the quest with him again. The hole flashed constantly once again. The three of them looked at each other and nodded. Then, Zhang Yang led the ladies into the hole. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er followed closely behind him.

After passing through the hole, they got a completely different view right in front of their eyes. The three of them arrived at a

strange and unusual place filled with all sorts of colors. It was a colorful jungle with colorful plants all over the place. There were coffee-brown, pinkish, milk-white flowers in the surroundings. The clouds in the sky had different sort of shapes, some of them even looked like monsters. The place was interesting.

Wei Yan Er suddenly squatted down and tugged some grasses out by their roots. Then she began to munch on them.

Zhang Yang felt disgusted, frowning intensely. Although they were now in the game, their 5 sense were all real. They would smell the scent of blood as they killed monsters. They would feel pain when they are punched. Men would feel 'alive' when they are seduced by women. Only the intensity of the senses could be adjusted accordingly to the players' liking.

"What kind of show did you watch recently? You would actually behave like a cow or a horse instead of behaving like a human?"

"You dumb \*ss! These are chocolate! They're extremely tasty!" Wei Yan Er was already chewing up all the 'grass' in her mouth until the sides of her mouth were stained. She rubbed her mouth with her sleeves , not giving him a f\*ck.

"What a strange place!" Zhang Yang wandered around nearby and realized that the trees and the flowers were all made of food and candy! There were bite marks left on some of the places. They could only deduce that those bite marks had been left behind by Alice.

"Let's follow the trail!"

The three of them followed the tracks. Wei Yan Er was complaining that Alice was a gluttonous girl, judging from the number of bitemarks they found. Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue could not help but laugh at her.

After just a brief moment of following the trials, the three of them had arrived at a small river.

The water flowing in the river looked more like milk as it was gliding smoothly according to the current flow. Wei Yan Er felt awfully thirsty after eating so much candy and chocolate. So, she immediately went up to the milk river and drank the milk as much as she could.

No far from them, there was a bridge. The three of them went over and began to cross the bridge. While they were at it, they saw that there were also small bite marks across the bridge railings. Wei Yan Er just could not help herself but repeat what she said earlier on. She squinted and complained, "This little girl is really greedy! She basically ate everything she saw!"

Then she broke a brick on the bridge and put it into her mouth, then she said, "Hmm, this tastes good! It's strawberry flavored!"

Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue could only remain speechless after seeing how she acted.

"Aiyo!" Right after they crossed the bridge, Wei Yan Er suddenly pressed her hands on her stomach and squatted down, "I'm having a stomachache!"

That was not it. Red damage values began to pop out constantly right on top of her head. It began by reducing the little brat's HP by 10%, constantly.

Han Ying Xue quickly tried to heal her up. However, the HP bar of the little brat continued to drop by 10% at a constant rate. A short while later, the amount of reduction on her HP began to increase up to 20%. As time passed, the amount continued to increase up to 30%, then to 40%, and to 50%!

Han Ying Xue was still able to keep up with the 20% HP reduction. However, she began to panic when the little brat started losing 30% of her HP at that constant rate. She could no longer keep up with the HP reduction when it struck 40%. When Wei Yan Er was losing 50% of her HP at a constant rate, Han Ying Xue only managed to keep that little brat alive for 3 to 4 seconds before she collapsed onto the ground and died.

After getting the little brat back on her feet, the three of them were puzzled. It was really strange that the little brat would die all of a sudden! Without any reason at all, the HP bar of the little brat had been reduced to zero just like that. Wei Yan Er even brought up her battle log to check what was going on. However, nothing was recorded there.

"What is going on?"



Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and said, "It is most probably because the little brat ate too much ... stuff... She was the only one who was eating all the way. There is no other explanation!"

Wei Yan Er felt angry as she said, "Bastard! Who would dare try to poison me! If I ever find out, that fellow will receive three chops from my axe!"

Zhang Yang frowned and said, "Oh, right! Alice must have been eating along the way. Even though characters from Story Mode might not die easily, but she must be in some sort of danger as well!"

"Let's move then!"

After crossing the bridge, they realized that the bite marks stopped there. So the three of them continued down the path before they arrived at a small village. There were only about ten houses made of woods and dried grasses. An old man who looked like he was in his 60s was sitting by a small cottage located nearest to the three of them. He had his back hunched over while smoking a long-stemmed pipe.

The three of them approached the old man, and Zhang Yang said, "Granpa, have you seen a girl called Alice passing by a few days ago?"

"Alice?" The old man was named 'Charlie Moto'. He was a normal Tiered Level 110 NPC. Upon hearing the name, he put down his

pipe and said, "Two days ago, I picked up an unconscious girl by the bridge. However, I'm not sure if she is the Alice you are looking for or not."

Wei Yan Er quickly asked, "Granpa, is the girl in your house now?"

"Well, yes. But the girl has been poisoned. She had been having a fever ever since I found her. It seems that her situation is not good." Charlie Moto waved his tobacco pouch as he made a gesture, suggesting that the three of them should go into the house.

After entering the house, the three of them saw that there was a girl lying on a bed. She seemed like she was about 15 to 16 years old. Her hair was black and her lips were red. She had fair skin. Upon looking at her features, she would be a fine and beautiful woman in the future.

[Alice] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 105

HP: 5,000/ 16,200

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Finding Alice. You have received a reward: 200,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! Although you have found Alive, that naughty little lady is on the brink of death. You wouldn’t want to bring her dead body

over to her parents, would you? Find a way to save her as quickly as possible!’

‘Ding! Will you accept a new quest: The Way of Healing?’

Upon seeing Alice, the three of them received a system notification at the same instant.

Since that they had traveled from a long distance all the way here, there was no reason to stop here. So, the three of them accepted the new quest without any hesitation.

‘Ding! You have accepted a quest: The Way of Healing. You must find a solution to saving the little girl within 10 hours. Or Alice will die!’

Zhang Yang told Charlie Moto, "Granpa, thank you so much! She's Alice alright. We received a request from her parents to bring her home safely! However, she's really in a bad shape now. Do you have any idea what's wrong with her?"

"She ate too many poisonous stuff!" Charlie Moto tapped his tobacco pipe and sat down. Then he said, "The milk in the river has Melamine in it. The jellies in the jungle have poisonous Shadow Glue in them. And the chicken chops... were fried with gutter oil! Argh!"

Zhang Yang and his two party member were ‘amazed’.

# Chapter 606: The Black-Hearted Goblin

---

"Grandpa, who would put so much poison in the food?" Zhang Yang asked

Charlie Moto let out a series of sighs and said, "This is a land of divinity given by the gods. It has the power to provide us with an endless supply of food. No one will have to starve here! However ... a bunch of crazies lost their minds, trying to mine the possessions of the gods. Rumor has it that the possessions of the gods can give one tremendous power! However, why would any of us offend the gods in order to help them when we're all living peacefully in the land?"

The old man shook his head staring at them darkly. He continued to talk, "Therefore, they came up with numerous dirty tricks. Like how they poisoned our God-given food! So they came up with the idea of poisoning our food with Melamine, poisonous Shadow Glue, Gutter oil... I've mentioned all of them earlier on! They're trying to force us into submission, to help they mine for the ore, or they will not give us the antidote!"

"Granpa, do you have any antidote left to save the poor little girl? Please help her!" Zhang Yang quickly said.

"This little girl was too greedy. She ate too much poison. Normal antidotes would no longer work on her. You must get an Enhanced Antidote to save her! But, you will need to exchange some of the finest [Divinity Ores] that are being guarded by tons of ferocious monsters in the mountains for the Antidote! Or else, those lunatics won't be willing to give them to you!"

Now that the objective had become crystal clear, Zhang Yang weighed between the two solutions that lay before them. They could just mine for the [Divinity Ores] and exchange them for the Enhanced Antidote, or they could just get it the Enhanced Antidote by killing the lunatics.

The second method seemed to be more direct and simple. However, would the system really let them off easily if they really did that?

Zhang Yang and the ladies asked Charlie Moto about the whereabouts of the 'lunatics'. After parting with the old man, the three of them left the village and headed towards the location provided. Players were not allowed to fly on their pets in this strange and colorful land. All pets, including Violet Thunderhawk and Winged Tiger, could only run on land. Wei Yan Er was laughing all the way through as she was observing how their butts wriggled about as they ran.

After running forwards for about half an hour, the three of them arrived at the weird house that had been mentioned by Charlie Moto.

It was a gigantic mechanical house built with cogs and gears. The cogs spun constantly as they screeched horrendously all over the place. There were a few greenish goblins standing guard at the entrance of the building. They held some simple and crude weapons in their hands.

[Black Heart Goblin] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 110

HP: 1,100,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 9,742 - 11,742

Skill:

[Melamine]: Smears some poisonous Melamine on the weapon, 50% rate to afflict the target with a Poison Effect. Causes 10,000 Nature Damage to the target.

Note: Black Heart Goblins are the greediest race in the entire Secret Wonderland. They are delusional to get their hand on the possessions of gods. They always want to become the richest in the entire world.

Zhang Yang and the ladies could not help but to be disappointed. These Black Heart Goblins were all green-named monsters. In other words, killing them would not help them get the Enhanced Antidote to save Alice.

"Hey, you lazy humans! Go mine us some ores now if you want to get the antidotes and live!" a Black Heart Goblin detected the

presence of Zhang Yang and leaped over to them. The goblin was trying to lift its head as high up as possible.

Zhang Yang stopped Wei Yan Er who was on the verge of punching the goblin and said, "We need Enhanced Antidote. So what is the price for that?"

"Enhanced Antidote? Hey, that can only be exchanged with some [Divinity Ores]!" the few Black Heart Goblins laughed out loud, "Which one of you actually ate so much of the poison? Hahaha! Humans are stupid indeed!"

"Hey, hustle up! The one who needs the Enhanced Antidote cannot afford to wait long. Or else, you better dig up a good grave for him!"

"Time is gold, human!"

"10 pieces of [Divinity Ores] for one bottle of Enhanced Antidote! No discount at all! Not even one!"

With the laughter of those goblins echoing after them, the three of them left the cog building and headed towards the mountain far ahead of them.

"Those stinky goblins! When I'm back, I'm going to crush their bones and heads! How dare they poison me!" Wei Yan Er was swung her fists around while saying that.

After entering the mountains, Zhang Yang and the ladies ran across every corner of the mountains. As Charlie Motto had mentioned earlier on, the [Divinity Ores] would be guarded by ferocious monsters. Therefore, locating the monsters would lead them straight to the whereabouts of the [Divinity Ores]. The task was as simple as that.

"Rawgh!" a roar was heard and a gigantic monster appeared right before Zhang Yang and the two ladies. The monster was black and it looked like a ferocious tiger. However, the monster had a tail that looked like the tail of a scorpion. The end of the tail was as sharp as the tip of a blade. It was so sharp that anyone would feel a chill up their spine when they see it.

[Scorpion-Tiger Chimera] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 112

HP: 1,120,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 9,756 - 11,756

Skills:

[Pounce]: Pounces on a target and knocks the target off balance. Can interrupt a chanting process. Also, stuns the target for 3 seconds.



[Scorpion Sting]: Attacks the target with the scorpion tail and afflicts the target with a Poison Effect. Causes 15,000 Nature Damage to the target.

Note: One of the most ferocious monsters in the Secret Wonderland. After the Black heart Goblins poisoned the land, these creatures survived and underwent mutation. They have extremely strong toxicity.

The monsters charged at Wei Yan Er the moment it appeared. With a powerful bite, it caused about 10,000 damage to the little brat. On the other hand, the rage bar of Wei Yan Er was increased by more than 50 points.

"You stinky noob tank! Get it off me!" Wei Yan Er immediately screamed for help.

Zhang Yang laughed at her and said, "It's a good thing that the monster hit you! You won't have to worry about having not enough Rage Points to spend!"

"You bus tart noob tank! I curse you! Stomachache for the rest of your days!"

Zhang Yang was only teasing the little brat. Because Han Ying Xue was supporting them from the rear, the elite monster could barely do any long-term damage to the little brat. Zhang Yang summoned Felice and threw a {Provoke} to lure the monster over to him. After getting the aggro of the monster over onto him, he

threw a few more Skills and firmly got the monster's full attention.

The Scorpion-Tiger Chimera kept biting Zhang Yang with its big mouth. However, it could only cause about 676 damage to Zhang Yang. Some of its attacks could not even deal 1 damage to Zhang Yang. On the other hand, Wei Yan Er could cause about 10,000 damage to the monster with 1 hit. The difference between the attacks of both sides was vastly different!

"Hey, noob tank! Your skin is really thick! You can't even feel pain after being bitten by the monster!" Wei Yan Er was unwilling to admit, "Your defense is high, and your damage is also high! How is that fair!"

"Haha! Just wait until you get your Darkness Inheritance. By then, you wouldn't be too bad compared to me!" Zhang Yang said.

"God damn it! So how long will that be? We can't even take down the final boss for the Inheritance quest yet!" Wei Yan Er sighed.

Han Ying Xue was feeling depressed as well. Getting a high-Class Inheritance was not easy at all. The difficulty of getting the Inheritance would be too great, especially when the final boss of its quest was too powerful for players to take on at their current levels. Therefore, Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu had been stuck with the final bosses of their Inheritance quests for quite some time already.

Although the Defense of Wei Yan Er was a lot lower than the

Defense of Zhang Yang, her Attack power was extremely powerful. Furthermore, they were supported by Battle Companions and Pets. In just a brief moment, they took care of the Scorpion-Tiger Chimera and picked up a few strands of [Tiger Fur]. Wei Yan Er was dissatisfied with the loot and made a huge fuss out of it.

After killing the monster, the three of them discovered a piece of golden stone that was flashing in golden complexion right beside a large piece of rock. This might be the [Divinity Ore] that they were searching for.

[Divinity Ore]

Description: This is a fantastic specimen. Weapons forged with it will have abnormally destructive power.

Very good. The first piece [Divinity Ore] has been collected.

The three of them continued to push forward. They encountered many other Chimeraeic beings such as Thunderous Light Leopards, Bat-Pythons, Wolf-Apes and many more. They were all mutated because they had eaten the poisoned food. Each of the monsters had extreme toxicity. However, among many monsters that they encountered, only a few of them were guarding a [Divinity Stone]. The remaining monsters were spawned to give players some challenge while attempting to complete the quest. Furthermore, Zhang Yang and the two ladies were able to earn quite a substantial amount of experience points.

Two hours had passed in just a blink of an eye. The three of them

had finally collected 10 pieces of [Divinity Ore]. So they made their way back to the 'house of cogs' and attempted to exchange them for the Enhanced Antidote.

"Hey, you three humans are more durable than we expected! You could actually gather so many [Divinity Ores]!" One of the Black Heart Goblin received the [Divinity Ores] from Zhang Yang. Then the goblin passed a glass bottle half-filled with dark liquid in it. "Haha! We just need a few more of these before Master Sosh's Light Beam Gun can be completed!"

Zhang Yang and the ladies quickly rushed back to the village. The quest had a limited time frame. The duration they take to complete the quest would affect the final reward that they could claim from the quest.

After reaching the house of Charlie Moto, Zhang Yang took out the Enhanced Antidote and fed it to Alice. Pink life returned to her pale and lifeless face in just a moment. After about 10 seconds, she opened her eyes and looked around in confusion.

"Alice, we are here to get you back to your parents because your parents asked us to find you. They are worried sick at home!" Zhang Yang quickly explained to Alice.

After Alice got down from the bed, she bowed to Zhang Yang and the two ladies and said, "Big brother, big sister, little sister, thank you for saving me!"

"Little sister?" Wei Yan Er was very sensitive to the word 'little'

or 'small' at the moment. She immediately looked down at her own boobies that have not undergone any change for the past 6 months. Then, she looked at Alice's pair of boobies that were still small but seemed to have great potential. She could not help but to grind her teeth together in anger.

"Alice, let's go home!"

"Alright, big brother, big sister, and little sister!" Alice said in a very soft and polite tone. At that last bit, Wei Yan Er almost crushed her teeth against each other into bits and pieces.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: The Way of Healing, you received a reward: 20,000,000 experience points!'

"Wow! That's a lot of experience points!" Han Ying Xue felt almost breathless. The Main Story Quests that they completed together before had never rewarded them with such amount of experience points. It seemed that the system was very generous this time.

"That's why they're called 'Hidden Quest'! Of course, the rewards will be much better than those normal quests!" Zhang Yang nodded. He was very satisfied with the reward as well. Currently, his main priority was to reach beyond Level 120. Therefore, every bit of experience point that came his way now would be more than welcome. As long as all of his party members, including himself, could reach beyond Level 120, they could get rid of any Level Gap Suppression function from all bosses and all monsters that were Level 150. The chance for them to take down a Level 150 Ethereal Tier boss should increase twofold. When that becomes possible,

they should be able to acquire the two Class S Inheritances and one Class A Inheritance. With those Inheritances, Lone Desert Smoke should be able to acquire a solid victory in the World League Championship!

"Grandpa, thank you for taking care of me for the past few days as well!" Alice bowed to Charlie Moto as well.

"You must not be so greedy and eat so much again!" Charlie Moto laughed as he told the girl.

"Yes! I'll keep that in mind, grandpa!"

Zhang Yang could not help but look at Wei Yan Er with a sarcastic smile, "Same goes to you as well!"

Wei Yan Er scoffed and said, "I'm not a child anymore! How was I greedy?" She was still looking at her own pair of boobies, or lack thereof, constantly from time to time. It was a real thorn in her heart.

"Adventurers from the outside world, can I ask of you for one more matter?" Just when the four of them were about to walk out of the little cottage, Charlie Moto suddenly opened his mouth and made a request.

# Chapter 607: Saving the Villagers

---

Zhang Yang and the girls turned their heads around. Wei Yan Er beat the others to it and said, "Grandpa, you want us to help you beat up those goblins right? No problem! You can count on us!" She hated those Black Heart Goblins very much. Even if Charlie Moto did not ask for their help, she would still want to unleash hell upon those monsters.

Charlie Moto was surprised by her enthusiasm. He froze for a second before he said, "Err...that's right. I really wanted to ask for your help in taking out the goblins! Not long ago, those goblins charged into our village and took away all the grown-up villagers. They took them over to their campsite and forced them to mine for every single day! I see that you guys got the Enhanced Antidote within such a short period of time. So I could tell, that you must be very capable and powerful. You should have what it takes to help us!"

‘Ding! Charlie Moto has given you a new quest: Saving the Villagers who were taken away, will you accept?’

Accept.

Zhang Yang and his two ladies accepted the quest at the same time. That was a Rank-A Hidden Quest. Zhang Yang suspected that the quest was not supposed to be as easy as slaying a few elite monsters. If that is the case, the final reward of this quest would not be worth the while.

It would only make sense if Charlie Moto gives them another new quest! It was as expected by Zhang Yang.

"Grandpa, rest assured that we shall bring the villagers back, safe and sound!"

"Thank you! I can't thank you enough!" Charlie Moto was tearing up as he thanked the gang.

After placing the little girl with the old man, Zhang Yang and the ladies departed for the goblin campsite once again. Wei Yan Er was extremely agitated, as she could finally start slaughtering those goblins that had insulted her earlier on.

[Saving the Villagers who were taken away] (Difficulty: Rank-A)

Description: The grown-ups in the village have all been taken away by the Black Heart Goblins. Charlie Moto requested of you to save the villagers and bring them back as soon as possible! Warrior, do not underestimate these short and weak-looking creatures. Although these goblins do not have earth-shaking power, their technology is really something to be terrified of. That alone makes up for their physical deficiencies! Their leader Sosh, has a knack for inventing new stuff. He will invent some powerful weapons from time to time!

Completion: Save the villagers 0/1

Limit: 3 Players only.



Upon reading the description of the quest, the three of them understood that the final boss of this quest would mostly be the goblin that goes by the name of Sosh.

"Can three of us take care of the boss?" Han Ying Xue was a little worried.

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, "The quest is only a Rank-A difficulty. Furthermore, the quest limited the participants to only 3 players. No matter how powerful the boss is going to be, it has to be within a reasonable degree of difficulty. Furthermore, if the three of us cannot handle this, then other parties would never stand a chance!"

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were nodding their heads to express their agreements.

That was a boast. By public opinion, Zhang Yang was undeniably the best Tanker in the entire world. Han Ying Xue was also one of the top Healers in the entire world. Wei Yan Er could do more damage than most of the top DPS players could in the entire world! With three of these powerful freaks joining up in a party, they could become one of the most powerful parties in the world! If they could not handle the boss, then no other party could!

The only thing missing for the three of them was that Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had not acquired their Inheritance. However, this quest was in the map that ranged from levels 100 - 130. Furthermore, dungeons and quests were not designed, based on

the power level of players with Inheritance. It did not mean that players would not be able to complete the quests without having an Inheritance!

The three of them arrived at the goblin campsite after a short journey. This time, what they saw before their eyes was a bunch of red-named goblins at the entrance.

Wei Yan Er screamed in excitement as she hopped onto her Winged Tiger and charged over to the goblins. With her axe swung towards the monsters, one of the goblins was launched into the air.

‘-27,084!’

The Attack of the little brat was extremely high. Her axe had instantly caused a great deal of damage to that goblin. There were 4 goblins guarding by the entrance of the building at the moment. They were sharing the same aggro sight view. So when one of them was struck, the other three of them immediately went running towards Wei Yan Er while shouting "Time is gold!"

Han Ying Xue quickly threw a Healing Spell onto Wei Yan Er and took over the aggro of the other three monsters. The monsters had to turn around to look for her.

{Tornado Cleave}!

The little brat went out with a quick whirl as she struck out with her {Tornado Cleave}. In just an instant, she caused 50,000 damage

to each of the four monsters and succeeded in getting all four of their aggro back onto her.

However, although the little brat could deal a lot of damage with each of her attacks, the four goblins were not willing to give in. They could deal about 10,000 damage with their normal attacks. If any of their attacks could trigger the Poison Effect of {Melamine}, their attack would cause an additional 10,000 damage. Wei Yan Er was in danger of falling before they do.

With her current equipment, she would have no problem at all if she only takes on one elite Tier monster. With a Healer supporting her from the rear, she could handle two with ease. However, she would feel a little pressure if she was to battle against three. It would be impossible for her to battle four elite Tier monsters at once!

"Oy, if you can't stand the heat, get out of the kitchen! Tanking against monsters requires specific skill!" Zhang Yang sighed pointedly he hopped off the back of his [Violet Thunderhawk]. Then, he activated his {Charge} and stunned one of the monsters. He even threw his {Provoke} onto a second monster, luring the monster over to him. With his {Horizontal Sweep}, Zhang Yang got into the thick of it!

Upon causing 60,000 damage over the monsters within his attack range, Zhang Yang failed to get the aggro of the other two monsters over to him. The little brat was chopping and slicing the monsters like a b\*tch in heat!

However, because the two monsters had turned their attention

towards Zhang Yang, the little brat was on much safer ground.

"Noob tank! You're good, because your skin is thick enough! If I can also wield a shield, then I wouldn't be scared of these little green shorties!" Wei Yan Er was not willing to submit.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Then, open your eyes and feast upon my greatness!"

He slung his shield over his back and struck one of the goblins that was attacking Wei Yan Er with his left hand. The powerful impact of his attack knocked the goblin off balance. With the monster being hit off balance, the goblin could no longer attack the little brat.

'Supporting Attacks' had no attack intervals. It all depended on the fast-twitch muscles of a person. The faster you react, the faster you can swing your fist at your enemy. After a series of random knocking and pushing, the four goblins could not regain their ground as they spent more time staggering and stumbling about instead of actually fighting. If they could land a punch out of 10 attempts, it would be considered lucky.

"Do you get it now?" Zhang Yang asked the little brat after demonstrating it.

It has already been over half a year since he showed the little brat 'Supporting Attacks' for the first time. However, the little brat would still cling back to her own style where she would use her weapon to attack her targets. It was more exciting and interesting

for her to do so. It would not affect her much when she is in a dungeon, slaying monsters or bosses. However, she would not be able to fully unleash her potential in a Player-vs-Player match!

Wei Yan Er was the type who would act based on her emotions. If she was interested in something, she would be more keen to learn or know more about it. The more you try to stop her, the more she would want to find out. On the other hand, if she was not interested, even if you whip her, she would just ignore it. Now that she seemed to be very interested in learning how to use 'Supporting Attacks', Wei Yan Er began to imitate Zhang Yang. She also threw some punches at the monsters as she smacked the monsters with her left hand like how Zhang Yang did.

However, although it seemed really easy to do it, it required the precise timing of the movement tracking of the monsters. Furthermore, it would also require outstanding brainpower. The monsters would not stand there like dummies waiting for players to hit them in the face. They would be dodging attacks coming from the players as well. So, players would need to react accordingly to the situation. Although it seemed easy watching Zhang Yang throwing his punches at the monsters, it had taken him about half a year to master it.

Wei Yan Er was not willing to admit it when Zhang Yang was looking down at her with a disdainful look on his face. The little brat felt challenged, so she picked it up and took it as practice on the spot. She was naturally born to be active. She had a talent in athletics. After a few tries, she managed to pick up a thing or two about it. She could already land a third of her punches with success!

The little brat was very happy and satisfied with what she just learned to do. She was not having enough of it yet, even after the four monsters were killed, one after another. She kept complaining that Zhang Yang should not have punched the monsters so hard. She blamed Zhang Yang for not letting her have enough fun. If these four monsters could come back to life, they would definitely be cursing the little brat for punching them harder than anyone else!

They were never short on monsters. The moment when the three of them entered the 'house of cogs', they engaged in battle with a group of three. The three goblins charged straight at them. It was a good thing, because the little brat got to practice a little more of her 'Supporting Attacks'.

After some more slaughtering along the way, the three of them made their way to the second floor of the building.

Wei Yan Er was really talented in such regards. She had already mastered the technical knack of it. The way she was performing her 'Supporting Attacks' was very similar to the way Zhang Yang would do it! Zhang Yang could not help but feel very surprised. If he and the little brat had started playing the game at the same time, he would definitely not have been able to catch up the progress of the little brat!

However, Zhang Yang did not have anyone to guide him in his previous life. He could only rely on himself by observing the footage of top Tier players battling against each other. Currently, Wei Yan Er had him to guide her wholeheartedly. So it would still make some sense even if she was progressing much faster than

anyone could.

The monsters on the second floor were a little more powerful than the monsters on the first floor.

[Black Heart Goblin (Highly Configured)] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level 115

HP: 1,150,000

Defense: 1,200

Range Attack: 9,779 - 11,779

Skill:

[Shadow Glue Bomb]: Throw a bomb towards the target and detonate in an area of 3 X 3-meter square. All targets within the effective area will be afflicted with the Shadow Glue Venom, causing 15,000 Nature Damage to all targets. All targets will be disgusted and vomit for a period of time. Lasts for 3 seconds

Note: Black Heart Goblins are the greediest race in the entire Secret Wonderland. They are delusional enough to want to get their hands on the possessions of gods. They have always wanted to become the richest in the entire world.

The moment Zhang Yang and the ladies revealed themselves in the sight of the monsters, they were greeted by 4 goblins with their mechanical guns. The metallic bullets were fired at them rapidly. The sounds of bullets clashing onto the armor of Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er were like raindrops falling on metallic rooftop. Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue was rained upon with the bullets as well. However, her white dress was tainted in red by her own blood that was spilled by the bullet hits.

Zhang Yang quickly dashed forward as he was approaching the monsters in just an instant. With a swing of his [Sword of Purging Devourer], Zhang Yang caused a damage onto all four monsters and took their aggro over to himself.

Although these monsters were much more powerful than the previous monsters they had encountered, they would not be able to match the threat that Zhang Yang and the ladies could pose to them. The one Skill that they had was rather disgusting. Every time the three of them could not stay clear of the effective area of the detonation, they would receive some damage and also vomit overtime. Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were crying bitterly every time they were afflicted by the effect of that Skill.

"Wu wu wu --- What a bunch of disgusting monsters! I hate them!" Wei Yan Er could not help but to stick out her tongue as she vomited.

Because the {Shadow Glue Bomb} was considered as a Skill, the Accuracy of the monsters could not be affected or interrupted by neither Skills nor 'Supporting Attacks'. Therefore, they had to take the damage of the {Shadow Glue Bomb}, head on every single



time. That helpless kind of feeling was not good at all.

The monsters on this floor were disgusting and abundant in numbers. It took about an hour for the three of them to clear the entire floor. The two ladies were disturbed and annoyed at the same time as they mechanically went on their way with stiff faces. They vowed that they were never going to repeat doing this ever again.

The last stage was a vast hall. There were many cages right beneath the hall. Humans were caged in those cages. There were messages right on top of each human in the cages. Those were the targets that Zhang Yang and the ladies were required to rescue. However, there was another goblin lying in a pile of cogs and metallic wires --- the leader of the Black Heart Goblins, Sosh!

[The Inventor Sosh] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 120

HP: 36,000,000

Defense: 5,200

Melee Attack: 31,397 - 41,397

Skills:

[Melamine]: Upon hitting the target, there is a 50% chance to infect the target with Melamine, causing 50,000 Nature Damage to the target.

[Shadow Glue Bomb]: Throws a bomb towards the target that detonates in an area of 3 X 3-meter square. All targets within the effective area will be afflicted with the Shadow Glue Venom, causing 15,000 Nature Damage to all targets. All targets will be disgusted and vomit overtime. Last for 3 seconds

[Gutter Oil]: Pave the area of a 30-meter radius in the surrounding, causing 10,000 Nature Damage to all targets within the effective area once in every 3 seconds. All targets will also be afflicted with 50% chance to slip and fall.

[Berserk]: When Sosh's HP is below 10%, he will enter a state of Berserk! Attack will be increased by 50%. Movement Speed will be increased by 50%.

Note: This is the leader of the Black Heart Goblins! He's a genius in inventing stuff. The Melamine, Shadow Glue, Gutter Oils and other poisons are part of his inventions!

# Chapter 608: Sosh

---

"A poison master!" Zhang Yang let out a sigh.

"Silly Yu, can you do it without your {God of War Transformation}?" Han Ying Xue was worried once again.

Yesterday, they went to challenge the final boss of Wei Yan Er's Inheritance quest. By the end of it, they were crushed into meat pies. Therefore, Zhang Yang could not activate his {God of War Transformation} as it was still under cooldown.

"Can't I or can I?" Zhang Yang wagged his finger at Han Ying Xue, then he said, "Never say that to a man!"

"Then let's do it! This is a Level 120 Mythical Tier boss. We should be able to equip his loot!"

The big bosses on every map in the Chaos Realm would drop equipment with Special attributes that would remove 20 levels from the Required Level. Judging from that angle, this goblin boss should drop equipment that players can already equip upon reaching Level 100. Now that most of the mainstream players had reached Level 110, they would be looking for Level 130 Mythical Tier equipment instead.

However, the number of Mythical Tier bosses was very limited in the entire game. It would be a very fortunate thing if the players could even encounter a Level 120 Mythical boss.

Zhang Yang waved his [Sword of Purging Devourer] around to loosen up his shoulders. Then he said, "Alright, let's move! Hopefully, we can make it for lunch!"

He charged towards Sosh with large paces. However, the aggro range of a Mythical Tier boss was extremely vast. Zhang Yang only took a few steps forward before the boss detected his presence. Sosh stopped with what he was doing immediately and turned his head towards Zhang Yang. He stared at Zhang Yang in surprise and screamed for aid, "Guards --- Guards ---"

After shouting for the guards a couple of times, he realized that no one was coming. The boss could not help but roar out in anger. He knew that he would have to battle Zhang Yang all alone. So, he charged at Zhang Yang with his two short and skinny legs. The boss then threw a {Shadow Glue Bomb} at Zhang Yang while he was still far away. Sosh managed to cause '-35,528!' damage to Zhang Yang and made Zhang Yang vomit for a period of time.

"Hahaha! Become my mining slaves and I shall spare your lives!" the boss continued to charge towards Zhang Yang with large steps. Suddenly, a huge long wrench appeared right in Sosh's hand and he swung the wrench at Zhang Yang with no hesitation at all.

Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Warrior's Will} to get rid of the Vomit Effect. He raised his shield high up and activated his {Block}. Upon blocking the attack, he also swung his sword and caused about 30,000 damage to the boss at the same instant. Without wasting any time, he quickly threw {Cripple Defense} on the boss in an attempt to reduce the Defense of the boss.

Wei Yan Er activated her {Charge} and clashed head-on with the boss. Then, she began to whirl her axe, causing pain and misery to the boss. She also prioritized on throwing 5 layers of {Cripple Defense} on the boss in order to cooperate with Zhang Yang in attempt to bring down the Defense of the boss by 50%.

After that, Wei Yan Er gulped down a bottle of [Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] and stacked up 20% of the {Cripple Defense} effect. She could ignore up to 70% of the boss's Defense!

Normal Tier monsters and elite Tier monsters only had about 1,000 Defense. Zhang Yang would not waste his {Cripple Defense} on those monsters. Wei Yan Er was not dumb enough to waste her [Power Potion] on those monsters either. However, this was a boss battle. So, she had no reason to be stingy about using her potions anymore. The first bottle of potion she took was a potion that had the highest grade of Transmutation!

Zhang Yang could not help but to laugh, then he said, "You little brat! You didn't care to save up the potion for me? You just took a bottle of potion with a Grade 10 Transmutation!"

Wei Yan Er was laughing back at Zhang Yang pleasantly, then she said, "I just wanted you to have more 'passion' in making the potions!"

"Mining slaves! All of you! Become my mining slaves!" The boss swung his wrench at Zhang Yang and hammered him over and over again as he screamed and roared aggressively.

Zhang Yang could not longer hold it any longer. He turned towards Han Ying Xue and said, "It should be alright for the little brat to become a mining slave. But you'll have to undergo some breast reduction surgeries. Or else, you might not even be able to bend your body over!"

"F\*ck you! I'm not a monster!" Han Ying Xue cupped her hands over her pair of round and prideful boobies. She stared down, "How can my body figure be so perfect!"

"Sis! Stop admiring yourself! You're called a 'milk cow' for a reason! That pair of boobies is going to become saggy! That's called mastoptosis! You better listen to noob tank and go shrink them!" Wei Yan Er said with bad intentions.

"Haha!" Han Ying Xue laughed out loud and said, "If I really want to shrink them, would someone over there agree to it?"

Of course not!

Zhang Yang was telling himself 'No,' deep in his heart, quietly as he launched his assaults on the boss. Which man would prefer girls or women with small boobies? Can't you see that most of the female stars were so famous just because they reveal a small part of the 'career line' between their badonkers? A few of them were famous even though their acting was terrible! It seemed that men would prefer larger boobies in the current world.

"Human! Now taste my great invention! It's called {Gutter Oil}!"

the boss suddenly roared. His body was like a water pump pumping out streams of dark liquids out as he sprayed them onto the area of 30-meter radius. The area became oily right after that.

‘-3528!’

‘-10000!’

‘-10000!’

Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were receiving damage from the {Gutter Oil} once every 3 seconds. However, because Felice and Thunderhawk were hovering in the air, they were not affected by the Skill at all.

"Hey! Where're your Battle Companions? Quickly summon them out and get this over with!" Zhang Yang quickly said.

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were both ‘enlightened,’ finally. So they summoned out their own Battle Companions and sent them to battle. The Battle Companion of Wei Yan Er, Maroqueta was devoted and brave. The moment she saw the little brat battling with the boss, she immediately loaded her bow and began to shoot at the boss as well. On the other hand, Messick that whiner ran up to Han Ying Xue and said, "My queen, I've missed you so much!"

"Get lost! Go get the enemy for me now!"

"My queen! Please punish me now!" Messick had developed a

masochistic heart thanks to how often the woman smacked him around. He went straight down by the side of Han Ying Xue's legs and hugged both her legs while pasting his face against the smooth and fair skin of the witch.

"You bastard! Let go of me!" Han Ying Xue started to step on Messick's face and tried to push him away. However, the whiner seemed to be enjoying the moment. Everyone could not help but feel a chill up their spines.

"What the f\*ck!" Zhang Yang needed to keep the boss in place, so he could not move at all. So he quickly commanded Felice and said, "Felice, give that wretched man a {Fire Missile}! He needs a reminder!"

"Yes, big brother!" Felice nodded and switched her target to the whiner. Without any warning, she launched a {Fire Missile} at the whiner.

"Aiyok!" the whiner's butts were on fire as black smoke started to come out from it. He was in much pain that he jumped off the ground. Just before he could land back to the ground, Han Ying Xue gave a spinning side kick and kicked Messick straight into the boss battle area.

Unfortunately, this whiner would repeat the same thing over and over again whenever he is released from his Battle Companion Slot. Because of that, Han Ying Xue had never wished to let him out unless necessary.



The boss's Skills were extremely disgusting. The {Shadow Glue Bomb} would make people vomit while the {Gutter Oil} would make people oily. Furthermore, upon getting afflicted with the {Gutter Oil}, they would receive damage once every 3 seconds and risk falling down at a 50% chance.

Every time the boss activates his {Gutter Oil}, Zhang Yang would kite the boss over to a 'cleaner' environment before continuing to attack him. His main aim was to reduce the healing pressure on Han Ying Xue. However, the process of doing so would cause him to keep falling. That really had him annoyed to the maximum!

"Hahaha! Just give up on struggling already! You're not going to stand a chance against the great goblin!" Sosh was laughing out loud. He was wearing a pair of specially-made slippers that could prevent him from slipping and falling. So he would not be affected by the negative effects of his own {Gutter Oil}, "Just accept your fates and become my mining slaves!"

"I'll mine your chicken \*ss!" Zhang Yang swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] at the boss repeatedly in a very aggressive manner.

Fortunately, the boss only had two AoE attack Skills, which were {Shadow Glue Bomb} and {Gutter Oil}. It would be easy to handle the {Gutter Oil} as long as Zhang Yang kites the boss out of the oily and slippery area caused by the {Gutter Oil}. On the other hand, the {Shadow Glue Bomb} was a little disgusting. Once targeted by the boss, there would be no way of dodging the attack.

However, there were only a total of 7 targets for the boss to pick.

3 players, 3 Battle Companions and 1 pet. Only Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and Messick were Melee combatants. So they were able to keep a certain distance between themselves to avoid being bombarded by the boss's bombing attacks. At least they would not be 'bombed' by the boss altogether.

The healing capability of Han Ying Xue was definitely one of the top in the entire world. With her high Tier equipment and her outstanding reaction in combat, she had no problems at all supporting the HP bars of the entire party, including the Battle Companions and the pet.

As they were not restricted by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game this time round, the total damage that the party could deal to the boss would no longer be nerfed or weakened. As they now had [Armor Piercing Potions] at their disposal, the firepower of the party was almost double! They had already reduced the HP bar of the boss down to 10% in less than 7 minutes!

"You filthy mining slaves! You've provoked me! I'm angry!" Sosh began to roar in rage as the visible veins on his green skin all over his body began to emerge on the surface of his skin. His eyes turned completely red, and that made Sosh look terrifying!

The boss had entered his {Berserk} mode!

In just an instant, the boss received a tremendous boost to his Attack power. Sosh began to whirl his wrench about as if he had lost his mind! He kept smashing his wrench without holding back. Zhang Yang could only endure the pain that he was suffering

under the smacking of the wrench.

"God damn you!" Zhang Yang waved his hand as he made a throwing gesture. He threw his {Glare of the Death God} onto the boss with the attempt to trigger the special effect of the Skill.

Puff! A dark skull began to form on top of the boss. The skull opened up its jaws as it was smiling wretchedly without making any sound.

"What the hell is this?" Sosh could feel that something was not right at the moment. He could feel a great danger ascending upon him!

However, it was too late for him to realize it. Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and the others quickly grabbed the opportunity as they struck as many times as possible. The special effect of {Glare of the Death God} was triggered over and over again as the boss received a series of high damage values. '-360,000!' damage values kept popping up on top of the boss!

{Killing Cleave}!

'-443352!'

Zhang Yang went out with a {Killing Cleave} as his Rage Bar was full. He caused a damage much higher than what the special effect of {Glare of the Death God} could deal to the boss!

"Wow! Noob tank! Did you just hit the jackpot or something?" Wei Yan Er was alarmed about it.

Zhang Yang took a look at his battle log and smiled, "That was my Lucky Strike!"

Lucky Strike could deal 3 times the initial damage that one player could deal. Unfortunately, the Lucky Strike was not triggered when {Indiscriminate} was activated. Or else, Zhang Yang could have scored a Critical Hit and deal a damage that would be 6 times higher than his initial damage. That amount of damage could potentially reach up to a million!

During the effective time frame of the {Glare of the Death God}, Han Ying Xue had also picked a suitable moment and threw her {Putrefying Poison} onto the boss. Therefore, the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} could only trigger for 9 times before the boss let out a miserable cry and died --- the main reason was because Zhang Yang scored a Lucky Strike and caused a massive amount of damage to the boss in one go. The boss only had 10% HP left by that time, so it would naturally be impossible for the special effect of the Skill to trigger 10 times.

"Wakaka! This Blackheart campsite is now ours!" Wei Yan Er was content after killing all of the goblins on site. She was still stepping and kicking the dead body of Sosh . She seemed to still hate them, even though the goblins were all dead, "This is what you get for poisoning me! Take this! And this!"

Zhang Yang found a key among the loot that were dropped from the boss. Then he walked up to the cages and unlocked them. By

doing so, he freed the villagers and let them be on their way back to their village.

"Little brat. Time to open up the dead body of the boss. Or else I'm going to take away your right on this! Stop wasting time already!"

Wei Yan Er finally came up to check on the loots in anger. In just a brief moment, she listed out the loot: a dark-blue cape, a pair of pinkish cloth boots, a dark-green helmet, and a Middle-tier Skill Stone.

The three of them were surprised by the fact that there were three pieces of Mythical Tier equipment!

They looked at the cape as a start.

[Destroyer's Madness] (Mythical, Cape)

Vitality: +445

Strength: +210

Agility: +91

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 890 points.

Equip: Increases both damage and healing efficiency by 3.5%

Equip: Increases damage absorption by 179 points.

Equip: When you activate {Cripple Defense}, you can afflict the target with 2-layer effect.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

Special: Required Level reduced by 20 levels.

Wei Yan Er shook her head and said, "Noob tank, the cape I'm currently wearing is already a Mythical Tier equipment. So you can have the good stuff for yourself this time!"

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and shoved the cape straight into his inventory. He would need to identify the equipment before he can equip it. Currently, his cape, chest plate, and necklace were still the Titan Armor Set equipment. He still had the Special Effect of the 3-piece Armor Set. He received 10,000 HP for that. However, if he wanted to switch the cape with this new one, then he would be losing the Special Effect of the 3-piece Armor Set. By then, he would need to switch away from his current necklace as soon as possible.

However, the [Titan Chest Plate] was still very 'durable'. The {Titan's Shield} effect could absorb up to 300,000 damage, without

any reduction. It was still a powerful effect at the current stage of the game! The only unfortunate thing was that the HP recovery effect of his {Shield Wall} would be reduced to 'rubbish' when he reaches Level 120.

The next equipment was a pair of soft pinkish cloth boots.

[Exquisite Soft Boots] (Mythical, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +32

Vitality: +889

Intelligence: +181

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 840 points.

Equip: Increases both damage and healing efficiency by 3.5%

Equip: Increases damage absorption by 358 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

Special: Required Level reduced by 20 levels.

Among the three of them, Han Ying Xue was the only one who would need a Cloth Armor. So, she took it, naturally. However, the next thing the witch did was to shove the equipment at Zhang Yang without saying a word. Well, her meaning was clear: help her identify her [Exquisite Soft Boots].

Well... she's already his woman... so Zhang Yang had to bear the cost, of course.

The last piece of equipment appeared to be an exclusive equipment for the Battle Companions. It was a Leather Armor, so Wei Yan Er took it for her Battle Companion Maroqueta. However, this equipment did not have a reduction in the Required Level, so Wei Yan Er would only be able to let Maroqueta equip it after Maroqueta reaches Level 120. In other words, the little brat would need to level herself up to Level 120 in order for her Battle Companion to reach Level 120 as well.

Zhang Yang had upgraded his {Vitality Aura} up to Level 7. If he wishes to continue upgrading his {Vitality Aura}, he would have to acquire [High-tier Aura Stones] first. Therefore, this piece of [Middle-Tier Aura Stone] was given to Wei Yan Er. With that, her {Strength Aura} had been upgraded up to Level 7. Now, she could increase the Strength of all party members on her party by 14%. It was considered a good power up.

Upon completing the quest, the three of them hustled back to the village to turn in the quest. The moment they stepped into the village, they were greeted by the villagers with great gratitude. Hundreds of villagers took up their positions in two rows on either



side of the road and to welcome Zhang Yang and the ladies with open hands. They swarmed up to them to express their gratitude for saving their village. Some of the villagers were not originally from this village. They were captured and forced to work for the goblins long ago. Now, they have been freed from the mines.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Saving the Villagers that were taken away. You have received a reward: 20,000,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! You have completed the Linking Quest for Secret Wonderland. You have received a reward: 2 Lucky Points!’

‘Ding! Because Alice has 3,198 HP remaining on her when you saved her, you can continue to stay in the Secret Wonderland for another 6 hours 23 minutes 48 seconds!’

A series of system notifications were heard again and again. However, they could not help but wonder, is staying here for a longer period of time considered as a reward as well?

"Heroes, you have annihilated the lunatics that have been causing trouble to the village. The food is clean again! So please, help yourselves! Enjoy all the food and gifts that the Gods have given us!" The villagers were busy getting the rocks and the leaves from trees. They also brought along the ‘water’ from the river and placed everything in front of Zhang Yang and the ladies.

These were edible food. There were deserts and meat all over the place. However, Wei Yan Er had suffered being poisoned after

eating the food, and she did not dare to do it again. So she took a step back.

Zhang Yang was tempted. He picked up a piece of ‘tree leaf’ and chewed on it. Then he swallowed it down.

‘Ding! You have received 10,000 experience points!’

## Chapter 609: Eat Your Way to Level Up!

---

"Haha, noob tank! You're a greedy eater as well! How dare you point at me, saying that I'm a greedy eater!" Wei Yan Er grabbed the opportunity to shoot Zhang Yang off with a few words. Of course, she was not going to let it slide.

Zhang Yang smiled quietly as he continued to take as much 'leaves' as possible into his hands and ate them. He also picked up 'rocks' to eat and 'river water' to drink! He kept eating as every second passed. By doing so, he would earn 10,000 experience points with each passing second! That was quite a substantial amount of experience points he could get, considering that he was getting the same amount of experience points for killing a Normal Tier monster every 2 seconds! His experience bar was shooting up!

Han Ying Xue realized that there was something off about it. So she picked up the 'leaves' as well and put one into her mouth. Right after her first chew, her eyes were widened up and she also took up as much stuff as she could and put it into her mouth like how Zhang Yang was doing. Both of them were basically gorging down everything that was placed right in front of them.

"Oi... what are you two doing? Are you possessed or what?" Wei Yan Er could not fathom why would they go all 'berserk' on eating.

However, the little brat was not stupid as well. After seeing Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue ignoring her and gobbling on, she knew that something was off as well. So she picked up one of the 'leaves' and gave it a tentative chew ---

"Wah! Stinky noob tank! Stinky cousin sis! Both of you are really mean! How can you hide such a good thing from me! I despise you two!" Wei Yan Er immediately complained in her annoying voice. After that, she joined them both in the feast.

No wonder one of the quest rewards was simply letting them stay a little longer in the Secret Wonderland. Everything made sense now! Zhang Yang had finally uncovered the amazing truth behind the reward. Any hesitation would have cost him more than a few fortunes! Wasting one second would mean losing 10,000 experience points!

Wei Yan Er was naturally a greedy eater. At first, she acted all nice and gentle because she had experienced the poison after eating the poisoned food. Now that she knew that there was no longer any threat, the little brat began to shove everything down without any table manners. She looked like a little girl that was eating in joy.

Zhang Yang intended to take away the 'food' while he was eating. However, the 'food' here would vanish upon be picked up. The 'food' would only exist for 5 seconds. In other words, players could only eat here. They could not take anything away from here! He also attempted to summon the other 9 of his party members to enjoy the 'food'. However, he received a system notification saying that he was forbidden to use the item at the moment. It seemed that the developer had left no loopholes for him to drill through.

All he could do now was to focus on eating as much 'food' as he can before the time ran out!

"Haha! Cousin sis! Your stomach is so round already! Do you still want to eat?"

"Noob tank, why are you taking off your helmet? Are you pregnant? Haha!"

The little brat was indeed talented in eating. She could still talk while chewing on the 'food'! More importantly, her words were crystal clear! Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue could not help but admire the 'gift' that the little brat had.

'Ding! Congratulations! You have leveled up to level 119. You received a reward: 5 Attribute Points!'

...

'Ding! Congratulations! You have leveled up to level 115. You received a reward: 5 Attribute Points!'

...

'Ding! Congratulations! You have leveled up to level 116. You received a reward: 5 Attribute Points!'

...

Two hours later, Zhang Yang and the ladies managed to level up once. However, the three of them were even fatter than the

world's fattest human alive on earth! Even if Zhang Yang wanted to do a french kiss with Han Ying Xue at that moment, the two of them would be having trouble locking each other's lips while having their big round stomachs in-between them!

3 hours, 4 hours... 6 hours...

When they finally used up all the time allocated by the system, they were forcibly teleported to the entrance by the hole in the tree. It was the same hole that they had gone through when they first arrived at Secret Wonderland. The little girl Alice was also with them.

By that time, Zhang Yang had reached Level 122. On the other hand, Han Ying Xue had reached Level 118 and Wei Yan Er had reached Level 119. The three of them suddenly became the world top three on the Global Level Ranking List. The fourth in place was a player named 'Ghostly Buckingham', who was only at level 115. That was 3 levels behind the level of Han Ying Xue!

It seemed that Zhang Yang and the two ladies have struck the jackpot with this quest!

Upon seeing the three of them rocket up their levels in such short period of time, many players began to make some noise on the forum about it. The Japan-Korea Region players were sworn enemies to Zhang Yang and the Lone Desert Smoke. Many of the players began to question the officials about it. How could a player... no... three players manage to level up so fast in such a short period of time? Could the three of them be cheating?

Although players could not use cheat engines in the game, they could still take advantages of BUGs to grind their levels. Just like Zhang Yang back then. He used the Spider boss to grind his level by letting the boss lay eggs repeatedly so that he could slay the baby spiders repeatedly to spam for experience points. If the official ever finds out anything like that, they would take back the Levels that players 'stole' by taking advantages of the BUGs.

However, the complaints were informed to be invalid by the officials: Everything was under the surveillance of the system. No unfair means had been used.

So, the players from Japan-Korea Region could only lower their banners and muffle their drums regarding that issue. There were also other players who were curious about how did they level up so rapidly. What method did they use to be able to grind so quickly within half a day? They did not suspect it was part of the system reward because if it was, their levels would have been elevated up instantly. However, Zhang Yang and the two ladies were leveling up over the past 6 hours! So, what was really going on there?

If this continues to happen, a player could potentially reach Level 300 within days!

On the other hand, Zhang Yang and the two ladies were being very secretive about it. The other curious players could only feel the itch to know without being given an answer. Fortunately for them, Zhang Yang and the ladies did not level up any further after that. The anxiety and the tension among the servers was finally put to rest. If they could just simply level up like that, other

players would definitely be frustrated over it.

Many players have guessed that Zhang Yang and the two ladies had completed some sort of hidden quest that rewarded them with such means of leveling up. However, none of them could understand the details of it. No matter how smart they were, no one would have thought that the levels were earned by ‘eating’!

Before this, Zhang Yang aimed to reach Level 120 as soon as he could. Now that he had accomplished it, he could finally relax. So he was very focused on gathering Herbs by sending out his [Herb Foraging Familiar]. Upon gathering enough materials, Zhang Yang began to make more [Armor Piercing Potions]. Now that the potions were out of stock on the market, Zhang Yang could make more, and sell more to earn another set of fortune!

Sadly, his other party members had not reached Level 120, other than himself. Powerful DPS players like Hundred Shots and Lost Dream should grind their levels up to Level 120 as soon as possible. By then, they would be able to remove the Level Gap Suppression function of the game when they battle Level 150 bosses. Although they might be a little short on numbers, everyone could simply activate their {Inheritance Transformation} Skills when the Level Gap Suppression function no longer affects. When another two players with Class S Inheritances and one player with Class A Inheritance joins in, then Lone Desert Smoke would be invincible in the World League Championships!

Dream Technology announced that the first World League Championships would be held in Los Angeles, America. All parties that were qualified to enter the competition would get free tickets,



back and forth. Their lodgings during the competition period would be covered by the Organizing Committees.

The competition would be held on the 15th of January next year. The competition would go on for 4 days straight. As a safety measure, Zhang Yang and his party members would definitely travel over to the competition venue on the 14th. They would want to avoid any possible flight cancellation due to reasons such as a storm or other unforeseen circumstances. If that could happen, they might risk missing out the competition.

Silky Soft Battle Team had won the first place in the China Region S Class League Championship. However, the competition of acquiring the second place was extremely intense. The results would remain unknown until the very last second of the competition.

"Noob tank! Come back here! Quickly!"

Zhang Yang was currently grinding his level in the Hidayat Wilderness, a Level 120 - 150 map. It was not because the environment was suitable for ground level. Zhang Yang was there because he could allow his [Herb Foraging Familiar] to gather high Tier materials for him. The materials that his [Herb Foraging Familiar] could gather would allow Zhang Yang to earn even more!

Just as he was grinding his level halfway, he suddenly received Wei Yan Er's call.

--- a player can receive a call from the real world even as they are

logged in the game. It was really convenient.

Zhang Yang was shocked, so he asked, "What's wrong?"

"Oh my god! Oh my god! You've got to come back now, noob tank! Wu wu wu!" The voice of Wei Yan Er was trembling in fear.

"Silly Yu, just come back quickly!" Zhang Yang could also hear Han Ying Xue's voice. Her voice was also trembling with fear as well!

Could it be Liu Wei? Did he finally come to take his revenge?

Zhang Yang jumped out of his chair and threw the game helmet aside. With a few heavy steps, he charged out of his office with a loud bang through his office door. His secretaries were shocked.

"That bastard! Liu Wei, if you dare lay any of your fingers on any of my girls, I will not mind to die with you one more time!" Zhang Yang's eyes were fueled with murderous intend. Han Ying Xue was his beloved woman, while Wei Yan Er was his girl he loved dearly as well. If anything were to happen to any one of them, or worse, two of them! Zhang Yang would definitely go berserk and do something crazy!

So why... why would Liu Wei make a move now! Even if he does not know Sun Xin Yu's background, but he had tasted the consequences of trying something funny with Zhang Yang. So he, of everyone, should know that things would not end well if he

planned to mess with Zhang Yang! Everyone should just compete against each other in the light. If anyone would try something insidious and caustic under the table, the consequences should be unbearable for anyone!

God damn it! Zhang Yang was on the verge of breaking!

He sped his sports car up as he was on his way back to Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. He raced through several red lights to get there! It only took him about 12 minutes to get back to the house. Normally, it would take him about 20 minutes to do so!

"Witch! Little brat!" After getting into the house, Zhang Yang quickly shouted out their names. His voice was trembling with fear. He even felt that his own voice was unfamiliar to himself!

"--- noob tank?" weak voice of Wei Yan Er came from a corner of the house.

Zhang Yang immediately regained his conscious and reacted to the voice. He turned his head to the direction of Wei Yan Er's room. Her voice came from the room. Zhang Yang quickly took a few steps forward and kicked the door open with a powerful kick. Bang! What he saw before him was Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er holding each other tightly as they were trembling with fear. The two ladies were pale. It was obvious that they were terrified and scared of something! Something must have happened!

Fortunately, none of them were hurt.

Zhang Yang let out a breath of relief. He could feel that his body had been drained of his energy the moment he knew that the two ladies were fine and safe. His legs were suddenly so weak that he fell and sat on the floor.

"Noob tank... quickly... help us change the disc!" Wei Yan Er pointed at the TV right in front of their beds and said.

Zhang Yang was stunned for one brief moment, then he said, "What disc?"

"I rented a vintage horror movie from the university. Now that we've finished watching the A-side of the disk, we are both terrified. Both of us dare not step off the bed. So we had to call you here to help us!" Wei Yan Er was acting innocent all over again. Then she continued to say, "We're at a cliffhanger now. So quickly! Change the disk now!"

Zhang Yang could only frown intensely as he tried to get his anger back in place, "So, you called me back here just to ask me to change the disk...for you?"

"That's right! What else could it be!" Wei Yan Er was still talking, unaware of the 'danger' that she was about to face.

"I'm going to teach you a good lesson today, or you're going to turn the sky upside down! You little brat!" Zhang Yang walked up to the side of the bed swiftly and tugged the little brat out of her blanket! Then he pushed her down to the floor, facefirst. With his hand lifted high up, Zhang Yang smacked the palm of his hand

straight on the little brat's buttocks! He did not hold his strength back at all!

"Argh ---" Wei Yan Er was afraid of pain. She immediately attempted to struggle and tried to get up from the floor. However, Zhang Yang was very strong! How would she beat Zhang Yang in term of strength then? She could only wriggle like a fish out water.

Piak! Piak! Piak!

Zhang Yang did not hold back at all as he continued to smack the little brat's buttocks. Wei Yan Er was smacked to the point that her pretty little face had turned pale. She began to sob and cry.

"You bastard! I'll never forgive you! I hate you! Wu wu wu... ouch! Wu wu wu.... I'm sorry! I was wrong! Please! Stop hitting me!" The little brat could no longer endure the pain and she began to beg for mercy from Zhang Yang.

## Chapter 610: Level 120

---

Zhang Yang continued to smack the little brat without any restraint whatsoever. Then, he stopped and said, "Now do you know what would happen if you ever do this again? I care about you. I came all the way back here like a crazy person just to find out that you were just fooling around with me? One time, two times, three times! When you're really in great danger and you're in need of desperate help, would anyone still believe you and come for you?"

"Yan Er, ever heard of the boy who cried wolf!' huuu..." Han Ying Xue snickered.

Wei Yan Er looked more like a panda more than anything now. Her eyes were teary, while her expression was pitiful and yet funny. Furthermore, she kept blinking her huge eyes as she said, "Wu wu wu... noob tank... I was wrong! I'm sorry! Please don't hit me anymore... my buttocks are going to be split into four if you keep hitting them!"

Look at her pitiful face, Zhang Yang almost lost his composure to start laughing! However, he did not laugh. He fought the urge, as he needed to show the little brat some seriousness in this. He was trying to get rid of those weird immature things that were kept in that little brain of hers all day long.

On the other hand, Han Ying Xue was giggling while watching the drama between Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er. She even reached out and pinched Wei yan Er's cheek, saying, "Yan Er, you're so cute! Quickly, pass me my phone! I need to take a photo of you like

this!"

"Wu wu wu... Han Ying Xue you big 'milk cow'! I hate you! I curse you to drop your boobies into the wok when you're cooking!" Wei Yan Er tightened her teeth as she spoke.

"You too! Have some self-reflection and carefully think about your own behavior!" Zhang Yang also gave Han Ying Xue a glare. This woman had actually allowed that little brat to act so recklessly. Zhang Yang thought of teaching her a lesson as well!

Han Ying Xue looked at Zhang Yang with her sexy eyes and giggled, "Silly Yu... do you intend to beat up the elder sister as well?"

"You will not remember if I don't!" Zhang Yang pulled the blanket away and he exposed Han Ying Xue's body in the open. He was shocked. The little brat was wearing a body-warming-type of pajamas which had long trousers and long sleeves, an appropriate set of standard sleeping attire. On the other hand, this witch was wearing some sort of two-piece negligee!

On her upper body, she was wearing something that barely passed as a laced bra. The bra was pushing up her round and massive 'peaks' so tightly together that a long, deep line of cleavage was seen between the two boobies. Her lower portion was barely covered in a string. They had really saved the fabric materials on manufacturing this set of bikini-like network of strings! Right at her 'triangular zone', Zhang Yang's sharp and observant pair of eyes could make out the lovely mound. Some of her bush had even slipped out the skimpy sides!

Holy molly! Zhang Yang was rendered totally speechless at the fair and smooth-skinned body of the witch. The parts that were supposed to be small would comfortably fit in the palm of a hand. Meanwhile, the parts that were supposed to be large threatened to spill out even if two hands were used! Her legs were long and slender, just the type of legs that a top Tier model would have! Her white legs were fair and alluring!

Zhang Yang stared at it, frozen in wonder. Then, he pulled her onto himself, facefirst, so that he had access to her rear, and smacked that booty with all his might!

Piak!

His palm landed solidly on her buttocks as the sound of a loud slap was heard across the entire room. The surface of Han Ying Xue's meaty buttocks took such great impact that ripples went across the surface. It was hypnotic! Therapeutic! A new religion, perhaps?

What the hell! If her front was barely covered by a tiny piece of triangle, nothing covered her rear whatsoever! A string ran between her butt cheeks. Her round and fair buttocks were completely exposed to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang could feel a heatwave rushing to his chest as he stared long and hard at her buttocks. Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue could not stand pain. She was letting out something between a moan and a cry. It triggered him, alright! She was still lying against him, her puffy marshmallows against his nether regions. Something hard started rising up, threatening to tear through his trousers, wanting nothing more



than to nestle itself between the grand canyon!

He raised his hand up once again. The sound was loud but the slap was not. It was just like giving the buttocks a gentle tap! His palm slipped this time as he involuntarily gave a stroke on her soft and extremely elastic buttocks.

Han Ying Xue propped herself up and looked at Zhang Yang. She gave him a lewd, dreamy gaze as she licked her lips. Although they did not exchange words, they understood each other very well.

Zhang Yang said, "You disobedient woman! Get back to your own room! Now! I must teach you a lesson today!"

That was for Wei Yan Er to hear.

The little brat had no sympathy for the witch at all. She wanted the witch to suffer as quickly as possible! So she said, "That's right! It was cousin sis who persuaded me to call you, noob tank! I'm innocent!"

"You little brat --- argh!" Han Ying Xue could only make a scream before she was pulled into Zhang Yang's arms. Then, the two of them attempted to stumble out of the room without tripping each other over.

"Noob tank ---" right before Zhang Yang could set his foot out of the room, he heard the croaky voice of Wei Yan Er summoning him. He stopped, and the next thing he heard was Wei Yan Er

saying, "Since you're back already, help me change the disc!"

Zhang Yang almost popped. This little brat had not reflected on her own actions at all! He had smacked her buttocks for nothing!

"You! Continue with your self-reflection! Now!"

With large, haphazard steps, the two of them found their way to Zhang Yang's room. The moment the door was shut, he lifted her up by her buttocks, sandwiching her between the door and himself. He kissed the red, seductive lips of Han Ying Xue with passion and fire.

When their lips parted and their tongues met, sparks coursed throughout their entire bodies. After kissing aggressively for 3 to 4 minutes, Han Ying Xue was already in the mood. She tugged down Zhang Yang's zip and said, "It's time for the main course after the appetizers."

Upon unleashing the Zhang Yang 'cannon', he no longer bothered to 'disarm' Han Ying Xue. He pulled off what little cloth that stood in the way and ventured straight into the flooded swamp. He did not hold back at all, offering no quarter as he began his conquest. It was a brutal, violent, jackhammering!

The witch's eyes rolled into her skull as she could only hold on to Zhang Yang's neck and shoulders for the ride that shifted the tectonic plates. She was worried that her heart would pound out from her chest as the sensations overwhelmed her body.

...

Tens of minutes later, the storm came to an end. Zhang Yang now had his back against the door, using the contact point where his shoulders and the surface of the door met as a fulcrum for his shoveling, while Han Ying Xue leaned on him, her feet not touching the ground once. Although the 'battle' had only gone on for tens of minutes, the two of them had never had such an intense session. The two of them were extremely exhausted to the point that they stood in silence for a time, doing nothing but to pant together.

"It felt different today!" Han Ying Xue drew circles with her finger on Zhang Yang's chest. With the touch of her gentle and soft hand, Zhang Yang felt like he was being a little reignited even after he had already let his cannon loose.

Zhang Yang did not say anything.

He had many thoughts in his mind as he was rushing back to the house, He could not imagine how a day would go by without Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. His life would become empty and lifeless! Although it was just the little brat's false alarm, Zhang Yang had clearly seen how much the two of them meant to him!

"But, I like it! This time, I could really feel that thing there really, really loving me!" Han Ying Xue directed her seductive gaze into Zhang Yang's eyes. Her eyes narrowed with clear intent as she bent over so that her massive chest flooded over Zhang Yang's rock-hard pectorals. Her perfectly shaped torso came to rest upon his body. It was like how a female knight would lean on the back of

her horse as she gallops through a battlefield, lance lowered and ready. Such an aggressive stance!

Zhang Yang frowned intensely. Men and women were not the same at all when it came down to having sex. He was exhausted after having to 'feed' two ladies last night. He had just fired another shot a moment ago. So it would take a miracle for his 'cannon' to operate again anytime soon!

"Aiyo... you were so fierce just now... now you're making a pitiful face to get my sympathy?" The witch began to toy with Zhang Yang's 'cannon' again as she revealed a sense of on her face, "In the name of the moon... I'll punish you!"

"Witchy Snow! Let's get married!"

"Oh! You have finally become determined to take me as your lawful wife?" Han Ying Xie was feeling surprised.

"No! We can find a country that allows a man to have many wives. We can go there, get married and come back here!"

The expression on Han Ying Xue's face instantly changed from sunny to rainy. Her soft carress turned into a violent, twisting grip. Zhang Yang felt an excruciating pain and he jumped up to the air!

"You witch! Stop! Let go!"

"Pui! You're such a horny big bastard! Are you still thinking of having women on your left and right? Humph! There's no way for me to be on equal footing with that cold and ruthless b\*tch! No way at all!" Han Ying Xue snarled as if the Ice queen and her were sworn enemies.

"Argh --- you're killing your husband!"

...

These two women were very odd creatures. They did not mind having a 3P sec together. So why would they still fight over for a 'status' like their lives depended on it?

Zhang Yang did not go back to the company. He was persuaded by Han Ying Xue to stay. After changing the disc for the two ladies, he accompanied them to watch the horror movie. He could not help but laugh at the two ladies' various reactions.

After logging into the game, Zhang Yang only focused on two main tasks. The first was to make tons of potions for selling. The next task was to focus on aiding Fatty Han and the others in grinding their levels and help them achieve Level 120. Although the special effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] had been greatly nerfed, Zhang Yang could still deal deadly AoE attacks to all his targets. His {Thunder Strike} and {Blast Wave} had become even more powerful thanks to the boost that his attributes had.

Meanwhile his {Horizontal Sweep} was even more terrifying! He could activate his {God of War Transformation} once every three

days. It would let him slaughter with even more joy when he does so. Furthermore, his most powerful monster-slaughtering Skill was actually his {Dragon Rising Strike}, which he had no control over. It could allow Zhang Yang to deal a damage 10 times higher than his initial damage. His {Horizontal Sweep} could cover up to an area of 100-meter radius. If the effects of {Dragon Rising Strike} kicked during a {Horizontal Strike}, even elite Tier monsters would lose approximately 25% to 35% of their HP in one hit!

Zhang Yang had spent all his energy and mind in aiding the others to level up. He would not party with anyone, simply tagging along. He would allow the others to have the final strike on the monsters before they die. By doing so, the players who gave the last hit to the monsters would earn 50% of the total experience that the monsters would give!

Under his strong support, Wei Yan Er was the first to reach Level 120. Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu, and Daffodil Daydream were the next to follow. In just a short while, the rest of the party members had also reached Level 120. By the end of December, all members of Zhang Yang's regular party, except for Endless Starlight had reached Level 120.

Zhang Yang had only leveled up by 2 levels. It was slow progress, as he had spent more time helping his party members instead of focusing on his own levels.

Upon reaching Level 120, the most significant change was actually done to everyone's Battle Companions and their Pets. The initial equipment on Pets and Battle Companions would level up automatically as they level up. That alone had made them so much

better than the players in terms of leveling up.

Currently, Felice had over 267,480 HP (With Vitality Aura) while she is in her humanoid form. Her Attack ranged from 31,397 to 41,397 while her Defense was 5,200! When she transforms into her Dragonhawk form, her HP would reach up to 168,740 HP (With Vitality Aura). her Magic Attack would range from 19,502 to 23,502 while her Defense is merely 880. However, she had over 5,200 Magic Resistance!

On the other hand, Thunderhawk's statistics were as below:

HP: 219,310

Magic Attack: 19,502 - 23,502

Defense: 880

The Attack power of Magic-type Battle Companions and Pets were the easiest ones to count. Because they only had one single-target Skill which required only a 2-second chanting period of time. They would be able to deal 200% additional Magic damage on their targets. So, their Magic Attack would just be equal to their DPS. Felice and Thunderhawk could deal approximately 21,000 damage in every second. As long as they do not encounter a boss with high Magic-Resistance, they should be able to deal terrifying damage!

Now, they were finally ready. They can finally go on to challenge

the final bosses of the quests for Class A, Class S Inheritances.

After the gang prepared all sorts of potions, they hopped onto their [Flying Mounts] and departed towards the Kandiya Grasslands. The main purpose of this expedition would be to slay the final boss of Wei Yan Er's Darkness Inheritance quest, Zhamido. As for Endless Starlight and the others, they were 'heartlessly' left behind in the dungeon. They had to lead their brothers and sisters of Lone Desert Smoke to repeat the Dragon Throat Fortress again and again for equipment and items.

--- the person that replaced him was Galileo. That boy with a pretty face had already acquired his Light and Shadow Inheritance. Furthermore, he had recently reached Level 120. He was now the big gun of the main party!

Do not underestimate the small difference between Level 120 and Level 110+. The idea of 'difference' is an understatement. Now that they had entered the Kandiya Grasslands, they would not be simply attacked by monsters unless they deliberately went around hunting for them.

Well, they were already extremely familiar with the whereabouts of Zhamido --- after being wiped out by the boss for over dozens of times, they could even find the boss with their eyes closed. After flying through the sky for more than 3 hours, they arrived at a small valley enshrouded in dark mist all over the place.



# Chapter 611: The Dark Knight

---

This is the old lair of The Dark Knight Zhamido, the Silent Death Valley!

Large powerful bosses would have a marked advantage. They would usually have a large number of monsters around them. There would also be bosses that were located in vast, however, having no other monsters at all around them. Players could just engage in battle with the boss without the trouble of fighting other monsters --- Of course, there were also some exemptions such as the Wraith King and the Demon Lord. There would be millions of monsters surrounding them!

However, The Dark Knight Zhamido was alone in the boss stage. He was the only one 'alive' in the entire valley... oh, his War Horse too!

[The Dark Night Zhamido, The Mouth of Death] (Ethereal, Spectre)

Level: 150

HP: 450,000,000

Melee Attack: 75,409 - 95,409

Defense: 9.950

## Skills:

[War Horse's Trample]: Zhamido commands his War Horse to shock the ground, causing 80,000 Physical Damage to all targets within the area of a 40-meter radius.

[Fatal Strike]: Strikes the hammer on a target, causing 100% Melee Attack

[Darkness Aura]: Darkness will shroud up everyone within the effective area of the Aura. Targets will be afflicted with 10% rate to become blind once in every 3 seconds. Last for 5 seconds. Aura Range: With Dark Knight Zhamido as the center point, by an area of 40-meter radius.

[Death Entanglement]: Causes 100,000 Shadow Damage to the target. At the same time, recovers Zhamido's HP by 200,000 points.

[Immortality Build]: Recover 2% HP once in every 30 seconds. The amount of HP recovery will not be affected by any other Effects.

Note: The Dark Knight Zhamido was once a Sacred Knight that believed in the Light. However, he was unable to resist the temptation of the Darkness as he fell to the Dark side. No one in the world would deny the talent and strength that he had! He once single-handedly destroyed the notorious Bayari Bandits!

The Dark Knight wore a set of armor that was completely pitch black. Even the metallic armors that his War Horse wore were all black in color. The only part that was not entirely black was the two ignited flames of Spectre. They were green in color.

Zhamido could be deemed to be much more powerful than Hachilles, even without his {Immortality Build} which allowed him to recover 2% of his HP once every 30 seconds. That Hachilles could only recover 1% HP once every 30 seconds while Zhamido could recover 2% HP! That made him worthy to be the final boss for the quest of a Class A Inheritance!

Zhamido had over 450,000,000 HP and he could recover 2% of that amount of HP once every 30 seconds. In other words, he could recover up to 9,000,000 HP once, every 30 seconds! That would mean that he could recover over 300,000 HP in one second!

Hence, the party should deal more than 300,000 damage within 30 seconds in order to deal effective damage to Zhamido! Furthermore, Zhamido could also activate his {Death Entanglement} to deal damage to his enemies while healing himself! If the boss can frequently activate his {Death Entanglement}, it would become extremely difficult for the party to bring down the boss's HP!

Zhang Yang took a deep breath in and said, "We shall activate our Inheritance Transformation Skills together and settle this within 2 hours! If we can't, the boss will settle us instead!"

"Alright!"

Casting aside the issue about the total damage that they could deal to the boss, Zhang Yang and his party would still be facing a great chance of failing again if they did not have Inheritance Transformation Skills with them. Even if the Level Gap Suppression function could no longer affect them, the healing capability of Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart still had not caught up to the damage that the boss could deal on the party. Therefore, they must kill the boss within 2 hours in order to solve that problem.

"Take your potions and move out!" Zhang Yang took a bottle of Level 4 Power Potion. At the same time, he activated his {God of War Transformation} and his radiating wings sprouted out of his back, illuminating the surroundings. Zhang Yang fluttered his wings and flew straight into the sky. In a flash, he appeared right in front of the boss! He swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] straight at the neck of the boss and triggered the boss battle!

‘-125,922!’

It felt great, without the limitation that the Level Gap Suppression function! Zhang Yang could finally strike with the power that is rightfully his! The damage that he could deal to this boss no longer sucked!

Hundred Shots, Lost Dreams and the rest activated their Inheritance Transformations as well. Then, the party began to launch their assaults on the boss as aggressively as they could.

"Who dares interrupt me while I was in deep thought!" Zhamido let out a screeching voice. His voice was like a supersonic, literally! The rocks and stones in the surroundings were trembling as the voice of the boss echoed through the entire area. Some of the rocks even cracked, as fragments of rocks crumbled down!

The spectral flames that were burning dimly in within the two eye-sockets of the boss suddenly burst to life as they locked on Zhang Yang. He reached out and grabbed hold of a large hammer with runes all over it. The next thing the boss did was to swing the hammer straight towards Zhang Yang!

Just before the hammer could land on Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang raised his shield up and protected himself from the powerful strike of the boss. A loud sound when the hammer and the surface of the shield clashed against each other echoed across the surroundings. The hammer clashed solidly into the shield and Zhang Yang was sent flying back by the powerful impact of the strike! In terms of strength, players would never be able to match with the high Tier bosses.

"Hahaha! I shall make drinking cups out of your skulls!" Zhamido let out a sharp voice once again. It was extremely unpleasant to the ears of others.

"The description forgot to mention the boss has another Skill called 'Brain-Piercing Demonic Voice'! It's so annoying!" Lost Dream could not help but ridicule the boss.

"That's right! It's like using a sharp stone to scratch the surface of glass! That screeching sound is deafening!" Fantasy Sweetheart

noded to express her agreement.

"Open up your settings menu and lower down the fx!" Zhang Yang said. At the same time, he threw his {Glare of the Death God} onto the boss.

Resisted!

Well, everyone was getting used to it already. The rate of being resisted was much higher than the rate of success, after all.

However, it would not matter much anymore, as the Level Gap Suppression function of the game had finally been 'nullified'. Everyone could finally perform at their regular standard. The players who had activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills were performing even better than expected as their firepower combined into something amazing!

‘-262,289!’ {Horizontal Strike}!

‘-369,332!’ {God of War Devastation}!

‘-62,932!’ {Cripple Defense Add-on}!

The Attack power of Zhang Yang could shame 99% of the players in the game! Furthermore, the special effect of the {Cripple Defense} which could provide an additional 50% damage to the weapon was triggered! It caused approximately 60,000 damage to the boss! Well, the {Cripple Defense} of 90% Tankers in the game

could only reduce the Defense of bosses. Without any reduction in the boss's Defense, the attacks from other players would only be able to forcefully cause 1 point of damage. They would not be able to penetrate through the high Defense of the boss!

In Zhang Yang's case, he was able to equip a two-handed weapon. Furthermore, he could increase his Attack by 5 times upon activating his {God of War Transformation}. Therefore, Zhang Yang could manage to amplify the damage dealt on the boss by up to 60,000 damage!

"Darkness shall devour you all!" Zhamido let out a thunderous roar as the War Horse reared on its hind legs all of a sudden. Then, the horse began to stomp the ground repeatedly. A rumbling sound began to echo across the surroundings and the surface of the ground began to crack. Fragments of broken rocks began to shoot out randomly and caused approximately 80,000 basic damage to everyone in the surroundings.

Players who activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills, like Hundred Shots and Lost Dream now had 20 times their HP. Therefore, that amount of damage was still bearable for them. On the other hand, although the ladies had not acquired their Inheritances yet, they had powerful Mythical Tier equipment. The total amount of HP on each of them had exceeded 100,000 HP! Furthermore, their mounts provided them with even more HP! That total amount exceeded 150,000 HP! After receiving a hit from the boss, they would still have almost half of their HP left. So the attack did not pose any lethal threat to any of them!

This is the advantage of having an elite party!

If it was the Crimson Rage division that had been sent to fight Hachilles going up against this boss, that wave of damage from the boss's {War Horse's Trample} would have killed a few dozen players back there!

However, the large-scale AoE Skills of big bosses would usually have a much shorter cooldown period. In just approximate 10 seconds, the boss had activated his {War Horse's Trample} once again as he commanded his war horse to stomp on the ground as heavily as possible.

With the Skill being activated once again so soon, Han Ying Xue and the other ladies were forced to retreat.

Although Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were healing the others at their very best, it would not be possible for them to heal everyone up within approximately 10 seconds. Upon receiving another wave of damage from {War Horse's Trample}, they quickly withdrew from the front line and got out of the effective range of the {War Horse's Trample}. They could not afford to get another hit from the same attack again. It was wiser to retreat first.

Players who already had their own Inheritances had no reason to fear. Normally, Inheritances that are Class C and above would provide a life-saving Skill. Even without any support from the Healers, they could still activate their life-saving Skills and survive for another few minutes --- provided that they are not the main targets of the boss!



Upon reaching beyond Level 120, the special effect of [Titan Chest Plate] that could allow players to recover HP had dropped even further. Zhang Yang could only recover 1% of his HP every second when the special effect is triggered. Therefore, he could only recover 10% HP with each activation of his {Shield Wall}. However, Zhang Yang had over 211,580 HP at the moment. His HP could reach up to 8,500,000 HP when he activates his {God of War Transformation}. That being said, he could still recover 850,000 HP by activating his {Shield Wall}. Furthermore, he would be able to activate his {Shield Wall} once every 150 seconds. He would be recovering more than 5,000 HP each second! It was a significant amount!

Other than that, Zhang Yang had over 26,600 Defense and 4,612 Damage Absorption effect. Each normal attack of the boss could averagely cause about 40,000 damage to him. He could also activate his {Block} once every 6 seconds, reducing the amount of damage that he would receive each second down to 14,000 damage!

The Skills of the boss that annoyed him the most were the {Death Entanglement}, the {War Horse's Trample} and the {Fatal Strike}.

{War Horse's Trample} would be activated once every 12 seconds. {Death Entanglement} would be activated once every 30 seconds. {Fatal Strike} would be activated once every 20 seconds. With these attacks accounted for, the boss should be able to increase his DPS up to 30,000 damage.

The boss would cause AoE attacks to all targets with his {War Horse's Trample} while he could recover some HP with his {Death Entanglement}. Meanwhile, the boss could also slightly reduce the

healing efficiency of Zhang Yang with his {Fatal Strike}. Every single Skill that the boss made the fight all the more challenging.

Well, only Lone Desert Smoke has the capability of sending in one player with Class S Inheritance and four players with Class B Inheritance. That was how they managed to create a possibility for themselves to take down a Level 150 Ethereal Tier boss with a small party!

The Battle Companions seemed to be much weaker in such battles. Only Healing-type Battle Companions could contribute to the battle by supporting the players with their healing abilities. The Assault-type Battle Companions were not able to reach their full potential in dealing damage to the boss, as they could not find much of a chance to touch the boss, to begin with. Since the party members were in desperate need of healing, the Healers did not heal the Battle Companions at all!

Fortunate for them, the rate of activation for {War Horse's Trample} was constant and thus, predictable. The Battle Companions could run up to the boss and launch their attacks for 3 seconds before they would have to withdraw. By doing so, they could at least support the party by dealing some damage to the boss without adding pressure to the Healers.

In contrast to the Battle Companions, the Pet Mounts greatly aided the players. When the players were mounted on their Pet Mounts, the Pet Mounts would not receive any damage at all. As long as the players are still alive, the Pet Mounts would be able to dish out all their damage to the enemy. However, Zhang Yang could no longer mount his Pet Mount upon activating his {God of

War Transformation}. So Thunderhawk could only join the Battle Companions as they supported the players from the rear.

"Let the darkness devour you!" Zhamido continued to screech in a sharp voice that pierced through everyone's ears. His voice could also be considered as an 'effect' that affected the battle a little. It was extremely annoying even though it could not cause any damage to everyone!

As the party was struggling through the battle under the influence of the boss's voice, the boss activated his {Darkness Aura}. This Skill was the only Skill that would not cause any damage to the players. However, the Skill was as annoying as the other Skills that the boss would use. It caused the players to lose sight of the battle every once in a while. They would not be able to attack or to do anything at all, whenever that happens. It could almost halt the DPS of the party completely!

90%, 80%, 70% ... The Inheritance Transformation Skills were really packing a punch on the boss. Without the effect of Level Gap Suppression function, the HP bar of the boss was decreasing rapidly!

In just 40 minutes, the HP bar of Zhamido had entered below 20%. That was the time when the party had finally entered the 'killing cleave' stage.

Zhang Yang activated his {Shadow Clones} to increase the rate of his attacks. Upon reaching beyond Level 120, he had acquired an additional Skill Point. So he added the Skill Point to his {Shadow Clone} skill, upgrading it up to Level 3. Now, he could summon 3

Shadow Clones at the same time. Although each of his Shadow Clones could only deal 10% of the damage that he could deal to the enemy, 3 Shadow Clones would mean that he has acquired 30% additional damage.

Upon activating {Indiscriminate} and gulping down a bottle of [Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)], Zhang Yang struck the boss with his {Killing Cleave}!

‘ - 2,937,948!’

‘ - 293,794!’

‘ - 293,795!’

‘ - 293,794!’

Thanks to {Indiscriminate}, everything was a guaranteed critical hit! Furthermore, the {Lucky Strike} was triggered at the same time, causing an extremely high damage value that reached up to 3,000,000 damage! Furthermore, the 3 Shadow Clones provided additional toppings to the cream. So Zhang Yang and the Shadow Clones had managed to cause approximately 4,000,000 damage to the boss in that instant. They had struck away almost 1% of the boss's HP in one go!

"What the f\*ck! That strike was insane! Zhan Yu!" Lost Dream was breathless after seeing Zhang Yang taking out about 1% HP of the boss with only one strike. Even though the boss had a long HP

bar, that 1% reduction was significant. Everyone was shocked by that.

Wei Yan Er felt envious, then she said, "Haha! Just wait till I get my hands on my Darkness Inheritance! Then, I shall be able to do that as well!"

"You bastards! You're merely puny mortals! It's impossible for your power to match mine! I'm the god of Darkness! I'm invincible! I'm undefeated!" Zhamido let out a roar. Well, it was more of a screech than a roar! The War Horse was stomping the ground more frequently than ever, and the effect of {War Horse's Trample} spread across the ground endlessly!

Under such a heavy onslaught, any player without an Inheritance would not be able to withstand the waves of damage at all. Han Ying Xue and the other ladies had to flee altogether. Hundred Shots and the other DPS players had to withdraw as well, after hitting the boss for a little while. They had to withdraw from the front line to the rear to get healed up by Han Ying Xue and the other Healers. The Healer-type Battle Companions also aided in healing up the rest of the party members.

15%, 12%, 9%!

Zhang Yang's courage was mounting as the battle continued to progress. On the other side of things, the boss was backed against the ropes. He was on the brink of his death!

However, Zhang Yang was forced to use all his life-saving Skills

as well, while holding out against the waves of bombardments from the boss. In just a brief moment, Zhang Yang had already burned up all of his life-saving Skills and attack Skills. If they still could not kill the boss as soon as possible, Zhang Yang would have to give in and die as well.

Hundred Shots and the others were aware of the situation. After getting healed up a little, they charged back into the battle to ease Zhang Yang's stress. The Skills of Hunters and Thieves had cooldown periods as well. They also required Focus Points and Energy Points to activate their Skills. By withdrawing and getting back to the front line, they managed to wait out for the cooldown period and their FP and EP had enough time to recover, just enough for them to activate their Skills again! Although they might have lost a little DPS efficiency by doing so, the effects were not fatal.

8%, 5%, 2%!

"You damned pests! There's no way that you can defeat me! No way!" Zhamido became hysterical as he began to make his final attempt to struggle against the inevitable!

"We're almost there! I smell victory!" Wei Yan Er was overwhelmed by joy as she began to jump around in excitement. Previously, they had failed to kill the boss so many times. Now that the boss was on the brink of his own demise, the little brat was super happy. She finally let go of her grudge that she had left brewing for a very long time.

"No! No! No!" Zhamido screamed in misery as his last drop by HP

was emptied out. The Dark Knight fell from the back of his War Horse and collapsed heavily on the ground. The War Horse neighed violently as it stomped its hoofs on the ground repeatedly. Then, the horse ran off into the wild and disappeared from everyone's view.

"Haih! Husband and wife are birds of the same forest. But when disaster strikes, they fly off in different directions for safety! So now that the husband is no longer 'reliable', the horse ran away! Haha!"

# Chapter 612: The First Step to Acquiring Phoenix Pet

---

The moment when the boss was dead, Wei Yan Er rushed up to the boss and picked up all of the loot on the ground. She was giggling with joy after seeing the amount of coins she got.

"Wa --- Yan Er is going to get her Class A Inheritance!" Lost Dream and the others were envious. They were not patient enough to wait for the appearance of other Class A Inheritance previously, they had made a 'fatal' decision to take a Class B Inheritance for themselves. Now, they could only look at other with regret.

"Haha! From now on, you guys should just call me Wonder Girl Little Yan Er!"

Everyone laughed. Zhang Yang bent down and picked up all the loot from the ground.

The boss was not generous at all. He had only dropped 4 pieces of equipment upon his death. However, items and equipment dropped by Open World bosses were usually unique. Unique items and equipment were usually impossible to be found among loot that have been dropped by bosses from common dungeons! Among the 4, there were two Ethereal Tier equipment. These two were the best equipment at the current stage of the game. Theoretically speaking, players would need to clear Level 170 dungeons in order to acquire Ethereal Tier equipment. Furthermore, the Ethereal Tier equipment would not have the Special that could reduce the Required Level by 20 levels.



It made sense after all. Players could repeat a dungeon as many times as they like. The refresh rate of a dungeon would usually be short as well. If the items and equipment that drop upon clearing a dungeon are not adjusted appropriately, many players would be able to acquire unique equipment just by farming in dungeons. By then, would those so-called 'unique' items and equipment still be unique?

The two pieces of Mythical Tier equipment were ignored by the gang. Everyone had their eyes on the two pieces of Ethereal Tier equipment,

"It's so much better for us to kill a boss on our own! Everything dropped would be ours to take!" Fatty Han sighed as he recalled back to the memory where they were aiding Crimson Rage in slaying Hachilles. By the end of it, they had only acquired a piece of Alchemist Recipe --- although that piece of recipe did bring endless fortune upon them.

Zhang Yang laughed and pasted the link to the attributes of the first Ethereal Tier equipment on the party chat.

It was a dark-blue amulet that could cover one's entire neck just by wearing it.

[Amoss's Nose Hoop] (Ethereal, Necklace)

Vitality: +1,167

Strength: +396

Agility: +396

Equip: Increase Maximum HP by 2,330 points.

Equip: Increase both damage and healing efficiency by 5.6%.

Equip: Increase 340 Damage Absorption when being hit.

Equip: Your normal attack will have 7% rate to increase 20% additional damage to your next Skill attack.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 150

Special: Reduce 20 levels of the Required Level

Note: Amoss was a Minotaur Warrior. His legendary tales were so abundant that they could be compiled into a thick book!

... a nose hoop. Everyone was disgusted upon hearing the name of it. However, the attributes of the nose hoop were very appealing. Everyone was tempted to take it. After all, this was an authentic Ethereal Tier equipment. Furthermore, they could already equip it

the moment they get to Level 130! It would not be long before they would reach Level 130 anyway!

"Roll for it then." Zhang Yang nodded. Without wasting any more breath over it, everyone rolled to see where their luck would lead them.

The nose hoop was a unique Physical-type equipment. Any other equipment of the same type with the same level would never match this unique equipment. Warriors, Thieves, Hunters or Knights, all of them did not wait for the opportunity to slip away as they rolled and let the system decide on who should have it.

By the end of it, Zhang Yang triumphed over Wei Yan Er. He got 97 points while Wei Yan Er only got 96 points! There he went, shoving the necklace into his inventory with joy.

"Humph! I don't feel like having a stinky nose hoop that was worn by a Minotaur anyway! Pui!" Wei Yan Er lost only by one point, so she could only comfort herself with that little mouth of hers.

The party chuckled lightly at that statement. Then, they turned their attention towards the second Ethereal Tier equipment.

It was a refined leather armor made with master craftsmanship. The leather armor had all sorts of runes that formed multiple mysterious magic circles all over the surface of the equipment. The equipment was glittering with the radiance of morning light. It was mesmerizing to look upon it.

[Hell Lord Rune Chest Plate] (Ethereal, Leather Armor)

Defense: +192

Magic Defense: +192

Vitality: +4,668

Strength: +680

Agility: +1586

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 9,330 points.

Equip: Increases both damage and healing efficiency by 5.6%.

Equip: Increases 679 Damage Absorption when being hit.

Use: Forms a Magic-Reflector Shield. Can reflect all Magic-type attacks (Including Healing Spells). Lasts for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 4 hours.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 150

Special: Reduces 20 levels of the Required Level

"Wow! This is an item that could turn a player into the public nemesis of all Spellcasters in the entire game!" Daffodil Daydream screamed. Players who equip it would not only have Magic Resistance, but also the ability to form a Magic-Reflector! It was obvious that the purpose of designing such equipment would be to put down Spellcasters and Witch Doctors!

"Hmm... that's right! Once the Magic-Reflector is on, Spell-type players will only be able to stare at their opponent!"

Unfortunately, as the equipment could disrupt the balance of a 1-VS-1 match, this equipment would not be allowed to be equipped during any League Championship. It was an adjustment made by the system: You seldom see players fighting one on one in Open World Player VS Player matches. Players would usually battle in numbers. Although this equipment would be powerful, others would still be able to work around the specialized defense.

Hundred Shots, Sun Xin Yu and the others that required Leather Armor participated in rolling for the equipment, and even Wei Yan Er felt like joining into the bet as well! Although the equipment was just a piece of Leather Armor, the Defense attributes of it were much higher than the Defense attributes of a Mythical Tier Heavy Armor. It was more of a metallic hide than a piece of leather! Furthermore, it would also greatly boost the Vitality, the Agility of the players who wear it. The only thing that was lacking was the Strength attribute boost.

Finally, the equipment was claimed by Lost Dream, He could not help but smile in joy.

Other than the four equipment, the boss also dropped other additional loot: A [Skill Book], a piece of [Skill Point Crystal] and three [Middle-tier Chaos Gems].

One [Middle-tier Chaos Gem] could expand the inventory of a player by 20 slots!

No one would ever complain about having additional slots in the inventory. Therefore, everyone began to roll for the three [Middle-tier Chaos Gem]. Zhang Yang was lucky enough to get one of the three. With that, his inventory was expanded to 210 slots.

Naturally, the [Skill Point Crystal] was even more precious than the three Chaos Gems. After rolling for it, Sun Xin Yu won the bet and kept the item in her inventory.

The last item was a [Skill Book] named after the name 'Angel's Compassion'. The Classes were limited to Priests and Holy Knights only. Obviously, it had to be some sort of healing or buffing ability.

Since that there was no Holy Knights among their party members, only Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart qualified for it. So the two of them began to roll for it. By the end of the 'contest', Witch Snow was the one who rolled out her best luck and claimed the [Skill Book]. Upon learning the Skill, she posted the description of the Skill on the party chat.

[Angel's Compassion (Level 1)]: Casts a shield to everyone in the same party (Maximum 10 players). Lasts for 30 seconds or after absorbing damage equivalent to 500% of the amount of your Magic Attack value. When the shield is effective, the targets can recover 1% HP every second. On every additional level up, you can cast the shields on two additional targets. Range: 30 meters. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

The gang was amazed by the description of the Skill --- it was very impressive!

That was right! This could be one of the best healing Skills at the current stage of the game! The Skill did not just allow the players with the shield to absorb a substantial amount of damage but also allowed the players to recover 1% HP in each second! Although 1% HP seemed a little low, it would really add up if players activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills! Furthermore, the Shield would support multiple party members at the same time, 10 players to be exact! When the Skill is upgraded up to Level 10, the user could support up to 28 players in the same party with this Skill! The possibilities are mind-boggling!

The party almost broke into a cheer. With Han Ying Xue learning the Skill, the survival capability of the entire party would definitely increase by a lot. There should be nothing better than this, for now.

After killing the boss, the party dispersed, as everyone had something of their own to settle at the moment,

Wei Yan Er went on to complete the final steps of getting her

Inheritance. It would only take a day or two for her. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang brought Fatty Han along and headed over to the Aomori Moss Land. That would be the location where Hunters could trigger the Hidden Quest for the Phoenix Pet.

Because there were only 10 of them in the party, without the support of their Inheritance Transformation Skills, Zhang Yang and his party would stand no chance at all in bringing down the final boss of a Class S Inheritance quest. Therefore, they were forced to wait for three days until the cooldown period for their Inheritance Transformation Skills were all over. By then, the party should be able to take down the final bosses of Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu's Class S Inheritance quests. Lone Desert Smoke would have 3 players with Class S Inheritances, by then!

"Little Yang, why are you being so secretive while dragging me across half the planet over here?" Fatty Han could not stand being dragged around by Zhang Yang anymore. So he began to ask Zhang Yang for some explanations.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I've seen the information on the official website. There should be an NPC who will give a Hunter's only Hidden Quest. The rewards should be extremely good! Since we're both waiting for our Inheritance Transformation Skills to cool off, why not make use of our time and earn some good stuff!"

"You could have simply said so earlier! Haha!" Fatty Han nudged Zhang Yang with his elbow, gently, of course. The two of them walked into a small village together.

It was an ancient village that seemed to have existed since the



time of the ancients. The villagers were all human. There was a big difference between the way the villagers dressed the way people from other places dressed. It was most probably because they had been isolated from the outside world for far too long.

"Haih! When can I taste the barbecued meat of a Mello Ram again..." there was an old man standing by a little cottage not far from where they stood. The old man was mumbling audibly. Zhang Yang and Fatty Han could catch on to every word he said, if they paid attention.

"Old man! Stop dreaming about it already! Mello Rams can only be located in the deepest parts of the forest. Even the best Hunters do not dare to step foot into that part of the forest! Just eat what you have now!" An old lady came out of the little cottage and shoved two white buns into the old man's mouth. Then she went back into the cottage.

[Old Hunter Karnoss] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 130

HP: 36,400

Note: Karnoss was an outstanding Hunter when he was young. Although he is old now, his knowledge and experience would always remain with him!

Zhang Yang smiled politely, and said, "Old man, we're on our

way to hunt. So where's the Mello Ram that you mentioned a moment ago? If we get to hunt it down, we shall cut you a deal and give you some of the rewards!"

"Haha! Mello Ram is so much more than you've heard! It's not just a simple and tamed ram! Although they don't eat meat, they are far more ferocious than any beast I've ever known! Even tigers tend to stay away from them! Young man, please do me a favor and stop thinking about dying for nothing!" Karnoss told Zhang Yang and Fatty Han with a serious face.

"If we succeed, what's in for us then?" Zhang Yang smiled.

"Hehe, then I shall give my previous bow that I've kept for tens of years!" Karnoss replied.

'Ding! Karnoss has given you a quest: Hunt for the Mello Ram. Do you accept?'

Of course! That was the first step to activating the hidden quest that both of them had been looking for!

[Hunt for the Mello Ram] (Difficulty: Rank-B)

Description: You've made a bet with Karnoss. You bet that you can hunt down one of the most notorious beasts in the mountains -- The Mello Ram! Warrior, you better be prepared. Not everyone is capable of handling the Mello Ram! Don't get yourself killed just because you thought you could one-up an old Hunter!

Completion: Kill Mello Ram 0/1

Quest reward: Karnoss's Ancient Bow

[Karnoss's Ancient Bow] (Violet-Platinum, Bow)

Attack: 3,618 - 4,618

Attack Interval: 3.3 seconds

DPS: 1,248

{Level 4 Socket 1}

{Level 4 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases your damage by 5%.

Required Level: 130

## Chapter 613: Hunt for the Mello Ram

---

"Wow! This quest is giving me a Violet-Platinum bow! Wow! Woohoo!" Fatty Han immediately shouted out with sarcasm like an ungrateful son of a b\*tch. He tried to act as if he had never seen a good equipment before.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Fatty... we are now capable of taking on Ethereal Tier bosses like a normal routine. Why can't you just be better than this? You should wet your pants over Holy Tier equipment, not this!"

"Haha!" Fatty Han did not feel any shame as he laughed it off, "This equipment is not bound upon pickup. I shall sell it when I get it!"

Zhang Yang frowned, When did this wretched fatty learn how to act like Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er? All he could think about was money? Why would he need so much money then?

Zhang Yang did not pry further as he knew that the fatty would say that he would use the money to get married and to get the financial support for the baby powder to be used by his future son. He would crap tons of endless sh\*t from his mouth, all day long. Zhang Yang wanted to avoid that. So he urged the fatty to move his \*ss.

After leaving the village, both of them summoned their Pets and headed towards the deep part of the jungle. At first, they encountered quite a number of normal Tier monsters such as

wolves and leopards. It only took one hit from Felice to kill them all. Fatty Han could not help but feel envious of her. After all, his big boobie Battle Companion Napolita had initially started off as Yellow-Gold Tier. Although he had given a number of Violet-Platinum equipment to Napolita, it would still be much weaker than Felice who already has an entire set of Mythical Tier equipment on her!

However, the main reason why Fatty Han chose Napolita as his Battle Companion was not based on her capability in dealing a large amount of damage. It was simply because of one 'boring' reason. The wretched fatty said, "Little Yang, take a good look at that ---"

Every time Napolita swung her weapon, that pair of juicy boobies would shake and jiggle violently!

"Isn't it marvelous?" the wretched fatty began to reveal a perverted smile on his face.

Zhang Yang cupped his hands upon his own forehead, then he said, "If I did not know better that you already have a girlfriend, I would have thought that you would even drool upon seeing a female pig! You look like you just came out of jail after decades without seeing a woman!"

"Haha! This is called 'Discover the sexy stuff'! How was it? Are you contented to see that?" The fatty was beyond redemption!

Zhang Yang did not want to waste his breath at Fatty Han, so he

patted Thunderhawk and charged forward. The jungle was thick. They would not be able to see what was on the ground clearly if they were to fly too high up. Therefore, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han commanded their Flying Mounts to go on foot.

It seemed that it was part of the system's purpose.

Players could simply fly across the jungle if they were only passing through in a hurry. On the contrary, if the players are here to complete a quest, they would have to be obedient and stay on the ground. Players should follow the intended design of the system and clear out monsters that were designed to become the obstacles while completing the quests. Unless the players already know the exact location of the Mello Ram, players would need to clear out the monsters in their path in order to locate the boss. It would be silly to think that they could escape battles with the monsters if they had Flying Mounts.

With both of their strength combined, Fatty Han and Zhang Yang were unstoppable, in this jungle at least. They basically killed the monsters that came in their way in almost an instant. They did not slow down their pace at all while searching for the Mello Ram. In just half an hour, they were in the thick of the mountains. The monsters that came out of hiding to attack them were all Elite Tier monsters.

Unfortunately, they could not even locate a single goat or ram after slaying a few dozens of monsters.

Both of them proceeded deeper into the jungle. Tens of minutes passed, and they finally located their target. It was a gigantic ram

with a pair of large and sharp horns on top of its head. The size of this ram was as large as the size of an elephant! Violet fur grew all over its body. The ram looked intimidating, even though it was just standing there, tugging at the grass on the ground.

[Mello Ram] (Violet-Platinum, Beast)

Level: 135

HP: 6,000,000

Defense: 3,540

Melee Attack: 19,298 - 23,298

Skills:

[Angular Thrust]: Uses its sharp horns to attack a target, causing 150% Melee Attack in the form of Physical Damage to the target.

[Trample of War]: Stomps on the ground and causes 5,000 Physical Damage to all targets within the area of 10 X 10 meters. Reduces the movement speed of the targets. Lasts for 5 seconds.

[Speed of a Ram]: Immune to all damage, lasts for 5 seconds. Movement speed will increase by 100%. Lasts for 5 minutes.

Note: Mello Ram is one of the best materials to make the finest meals in the entire world! Unfortunately, the number of this species has is extremely low. Secondly, the species is extremely powerful! Therefore, only so few have had the pleasure of tasting the meat of a Mello Ram!

"Haha! So let me bring back enough meat to serve everyone with the meat of Mello Ram!" Fatty Han immediately smacked the rump of his Spitfire Piglet and went up to a spot where he was approximately 30 meters from the Mello Ram. Then he began to let his arrows fly. His Spitfire Piglet was also spitting arrows of fire at the target.

This Spitfire Piglet was one of the Violet-Platinum Tier Pets that was acquired while they were on the 12 zodiac mountains right before Baroque Island. As Fatty Han only had a Yellow-Gold Flying Mount, so of course he would choose a Violet-Platinum Tier Pet to engage in battle rather than a Yellow-Gold Tier Pet.

At the same time, Fatty Han's turtle pet also charged at the boss. The speed of his turtle was so much swifter than the movement speed of Zhang Yang's Mythical Turtle!

--- that was the advantage that a Hunter had over the other Classes. They could have a Pet Mount and a Pet at the same time.

Zhang Yang patted his Thunderhawk and joined the battle as well. He swung his {Sword of Purging Devourer} as he began to accumulate Rage Points for later use. Upon accumulating enough Rage points, Zhang Yang struck out with his {God of War Devastation} and caused massive damage to the boss. With that hit,



he managed to get the aggro of the boss over to him. The boss stopped charging towards Fatty Han as it turned around and charged towards Zhang Yang with its sharp and deadly horns.

Although there were no Healers in the vicinity to aid them, the boss could only deal so much damage to Zhang Yang. As Zhang Yang had activated his {God of War Shield}, its normal attacks would only deal about 5,000 damage. Furthermore, Zhang Yang could also activate his {Block} to reduce one-third of the total damage taken. The total DPS of the boss had been reduced down to merely 1,600 damage!

On the contrary, both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han had Inheritances to boost their stats up. Other than that, Felice was a Mythical Tier Battle Companion at the moment. Thunderhawk was a Mythical Tier Flying Mount as well. Only the Pet Mount of Fatty Han was a little below grade.

The only 'shortage' here was that both Fatty Han's Battle Companion and Pet Mount were not up to standard. However, that did not affect their performance at all. Besides, they were here to fix that.

After just half a minute, the HP bar of the boss had dropped below 10%. The gigantic ram suddenly stomped the ground heavily and caused the ground to tremble. Zhang Yang and Napolita's movement speed were reduced. With their movement speed reduced, the Mellow Ram took the opportunity to escape! Upon activating its {Speed of a Ram}, the boss disappeared into the jungle without a trace!

Although the flying speed of Thunderhawk was extremely swift, no thanks to the movement speed reduction and the dense environment of the jungle, it could not glide freely through the air. Meanwhile, if they went too high above the ground, they would have lost the trail that the boss left for them to follow. Zhang Yang could only command Thunderhawk to crawl forward on foot as they witnessed the Mello Ram running into the wild and disappearing without a trace.

Felice attempted to follow the boss as well. However, she kept running into trees and bushes. So she had also lost track of the boss.

As for Fatty Han, he did not even react to the situation. After the boss had disappeared for quite some time, he opened his big mouth and asked, "Huh? Did the boss run away?"

Zhang Yang finally understood why the quest was ranked as a Rank-B quest. Normally, a quest with only a Violet-Platinum Tier boss would only be ranked as a Rank-C quest. This boss could attempt to escape whenever its life is in jeopardy. Furthermore, the boss was f\*cking fast! It made sense that the quest was deemed as a Rank-B quest.

The two of them had to search for the boss. About two hours later, they finally found a Mello Ram. Was it the same one as the one they attacked? They had no freaking idea at all! However, although Violet-Platinum Tier bosses were no longer valuable, it would be illogical for the entire zone of a Level 120 - 150 map to be filled with numerous Violet-Platinum Tier bosses. It had to be the same boss.

As the boss could recover its HP swiftly after it has disengaged from battle, of course, the Mello Ram would have a full HP bar. It was more than 2 hours ago since they had last engaged with the ram!

Zhang Yang immediately charged up to the boss with Thunderhawk. Fatty Han began to launch his assaults on the boss as aggressively as possible. After just a brief moment, they managed to reduce the HP of the boss down to 10%! History repeated itself, as the boss did the same thing again. It activated {Trample of War} to reduce the movement speed of all enemies around it before it began to run on its {Speed of a Ram}!

Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Warrior's Will} in an attempt to remove the movement speed reduction on him. However, he had never thought this to be possible! The movement speed reduction effect on him could not be lifted!

Although Fatty Han was prepared for the situation this time, he did not have enough firepower to take out the boss before it could escape. The boss still had over 10% of HP. Furthermore, the boss was in a 5-second 'invincibility' mode as it was running away! The two of them could only stare at the boss's \*ss while letting it slip through their fingers again!

"I finally understand why the fastest runners on earth are rams! Haih! Pity those leopards. They would have to run so fast just to get some food!" Fatty Han sighed.

Zhang Yang could only smile bitterly. This ram was so precise in its calculation! Once its HP bar got below 10%, the boss would begin to run. Furthermore, it would have 5 seconds of ‘invincibility’ while it was running! That had just made it very hard to kill!

To kill the boss, there were only two options. One was to kill the boss in one hit when the HP bar of the boss was at 11%. By doing so, the boss should not have the chance to activate its {Speed of a Ram} and get away again. Another option was to mobilize a troop of players to surround the boss. After all, the boss could only be invincible for 5 seconds. If they had enough players in the vicinity, they could surround the boss and empty out the remaining 600,000 HP of the boss!

However, the reward for this quest was only one Violet-Platinum Tier Bow. Furthermore, only Hunters could use bows. Which party would be so free to aid them in such a meaningless quest?

Therefore, no one had ever managed to complete this Hidden Quest up to this point. In Zhang Yang’s previous life, two Korean players who seemed to be too bored at that moment came back to complete this quest when they reached Level 150. They came all the way back to kill this running champion with higher Tier equipment. Then they also completed a dozen of quests that were given by Karnoss. Fortunately for them, one of them was a Hunter. They managed to trigger the Hidden Quest for Hunter. That was how the two players managed to acquire a Phoenix pet.

So, luck was also a part of one’s strength!

It was a headache for Zhang Yang. If he forcefully summoned Sun Xin Yu and the others over, they would definitely be willing to help. However, the problem would be, how much ground could the 10 of them cover? Once the boss activates its {Speed of a Ram}, it would run faster than a Thief. How could 10 players possibly keep the boss around when that happens!

If he were to summon the forces of Line Desert Smoke over ... this was a Level 120 - 150 map after all. They would be very far from 'home'. Other than that, the level of the guild members would be too low to handle themselves on this map. Many would perish upon reaching this map. By the end of it, it would only be an act of exhausting his own guild members while he hoarded the benefits of the outcome! Zhang Yang had gotten used to solving problems all by his own. He would not risk others just to get what he wants, unless the situation forces his hands.

Now that both of them could not use their Inheritance Transformation Skills, they could not possibly wait until the cooldowns to be over. Furthermore, they should prioritize on clearing out the final bosses for Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu's Class S Inheritance quests. So they should not waste it on such a weak boss! Without the support of their Inheritance Transformation Skills, it seemed to be impossible for them to kill the boss instantly when the HP of the boss is below 10%!

The two of them made some adjustments to their strategy of taking down the boss. On their third attempt when the boss's HP was below 10%, the two of them took a bottle of [Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)]. Then, they activated their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} at the same time!

Unfortunately, although one {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} could cause a total of 100,000 damage, it would have to channel for 10 seconds to reach that amount. Upon encountering a target with the ability to become immune to attacks, they could not do any damage to the Mello Ram for 5 seconds. Although they could still cause damage to the boss with their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} after the 5 seconds of 'invincibility' of the Mello Ram has passed, they only managed to cause about 140,000 damage to the boss. That was far from enough if they want to kill the boss!

"Why don't we just let this go, little Yang? It's just a crappy bow!"

# Chapter 614: Metamorphosis

---

Fatty Han was turning into a miser like Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. He had started to love money more than ever since he was getting married. Despite that, he had wasted enough time for Zhang Yang to craft tens of thousands of [Armor Piercing Potion]! If he had realized that, he could have already skipped the quest and beg Zhang Yang to keep on crafting!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "That bow is only a preliminary reward. Just you wait until the end of the quest! I'm sure there's something far precious for you!"

"What precious item?! Is it even worth the time we're spending here!?" Fatty Han roared.

Zhang Yang shook his head, "That...well...I'm not too sure. But one thing I do know is it will definitely be worth it! Come on, why are you even asking me that! You don't believe your bro?"

Zhang Yang knew the reward but he wanted to avoid revealing too much information, even though a great deal of players knew that Zhang Yang was a "beta-player". It was only natural for him to know few things about the game before others would.

"Hey hey hey. Right back at you bro. Who would believe you if not I?"

"Fine. Fine. Let's just get on with the search for the boss. Remember to reserve all your skills until the last 11% HP, yeah?"

Although the Mello Ram was extremely hard to kill, the system had not made any other efforts to further trouble the players in searching for it. Therefore, in about 30 minutes or so, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han had managed to find the ram. The ram had a shining, violet coat of fur. Unexpectedly, instead of grazing the grass like any other herbivore would, the ram was copulating intensely with a female sheep.

"Haha. The ram sure does know how to live its life to its fullest! I for one am greatly impressed at its courage to mate even while it's on the run!" Fatty Han laughed.

It's a shame that the female sheep was just an elite tier monster. Zhang Yang and Fatty Han jumped out of hiding and interrupted the intimate session of the two sheep. The poor horny ram was greatly disgruntled and charged at Zhang Yang with its horns.

"Haha! Little Yang, be careful there! Don't let the ram actually ram you from behind! Not even I can accept bestiality acts!" Fatty Han laughed again.

Zhang Yang dodged the initial boss' attack and focused first on killing the female sheep. After that, Zhang Yang took the lead and stood guard while Fatty Han stood behind him to attack. Even though neither of them used their special skills to kill the female sheep, they still managed to kill it in a matter of minutes.

Perhaps, due to the death of its mate, the ram was greatly infuriated. Hence, as Zhang Yang was attacking the female, the



ram was charging in and out, trying to kill Zhang Yang for attacking its mate! Its attack grew even stronger after the female sheep was killed. However, try as it might, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han did not need to put much effort into killing the boss.

Before either of them knew it, the boss had already dropped below 30% HP.

"Fatty Han! Pay attention!"

"I got it!"

20%...15%...11%...10%!

Zhang Yang swiftly activated {Indiscriminate} and struck out with {Killing Cleave} with full Rage points. At the same time, he had laid down a normal attack. He had saved up all his Rage for this one big hit!

The Sword of Purging Devourer glowed for a brief moment and Zhang Yang could feel an intense heat from his right palm. The sensation of the heat was so mysterious that it sends a chill through his spine.

Without a doubt, it was {Rising Dragon Strike}!

A dragon burst out of the sword and roared valiantly as it charged and smashed against the tiny little ram!

‘-264,393!’ Killing Cleave Critical Strike.

‘-70322!’ Normal Attack Critical Strike.

‘-703,220!’ Rising Dragon Strike.

"Mekk—" The ram wailed out a deafening cry before falling to the ground.

"Good job, that." said Fatty Han while panting for breath. "Little Yang, I must say that your {Rising Dragon Strike} was triggered at the right moment! Though I wish it could proc more often now and then."

Zhang Yang nodded. He had originally hoped to trigger a Lucky Strike since he had a 100% chance to proc a Critical Strike with {Indiscriminate}. If his calculations were correct, his attack could have reach up to 800,000 in total. Out of his expectation, even though he had not triggered a Lucky Strike, he was able to proc a {Rising Dragon Strike}, dealing 1000% normal attack damage which had killed the boss instantly.

The two of them went ahead and looted the drops. Since the boss was merely a Violet-Platinum boss, its item drop value was not worth being kept and used. Zhang Yang did not need to examine the item value and stored them all in his inventory. The only valuable item found was the quest item.

## [Mello Ram's Rear Shank] (Quest Item)

Description: The most succulent and tender meat of a Mellow Ram. It's taste and texture is something out of this world! No words could describe the taste of it! You must try it yourself! Recommended cooking style: Roast at 270 degree Celsius for 45 minutes. WHERE'S THE LAMB SAUCE!?

Both of them flew away from the highlands and made their way back to the Old Hunter Karnoss place.

Karnoss was busying skinning a deer when Fatty Han barged into his house and slammed the slab of meat on the table that he was working on. "Check it out! Is this the meat that you have been craving for?" Fatty Han sneered.

"This...This is...This is it!" Karnoss widened his eyes astonished. "Young Hunter, I must confess that I have underestimated you. Hmm. You have opened my eyes. I must say, you will definitely be a strong hunter!"

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Hunt for the Mello Ram. Obtained 20,000,000 Experience Points!’

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Karnoss's Ancient Bow!’

"Haha! That's a lot of experience points!"

"Duh! We have spent more than 6 hours on this quest! The

amount of experience points is barely justifiable!"

"Urgh...you're right. D\*mn! We're at a loss here!"

"Dear! Take this meat and roast it to perfection! Tonight! We feast like kings!" Karnoss casually took the meat and passed it to his wife in the kitchen. He then turned back to Zhang Yang and Fatty Han and said, "I might add that you're rather clever to hunt the ram. It takes more than courage and bravery to do so. A Hunter must have other traits. You need patience as well. You think you have what it takes to be a vigilant hunter?"

All the while Karnoss was talking, he had not even glanced at Zhang Yang. It's not like Zhang Yang had a choice. The quest was a class-specific hidden quest for Hunters only. It was lucky enough for him to tag along for the ride when the main character for the quest was Fatty Han.

"Of course. Without a doubt!" Fatty Han pounded his chest proudly. It was the same type of reaction that would have occurred if the NPC was asking Fatty Han's little tool's ability in bed.

"In that case, I'll have you hunt the Golden Vermillion Burning Python as your test!"

'Ding! Karnoss has a quest for you: The Hunt for the Golden Vermillion Burning Python! Will you accept it?'

Both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han received the system notification

and accepted it.

[The Hunt for the Golden Vermillion Burning Python] (Difficulty Level: B)

Description: The Old Hunter Karnoss has entrusted you the task to hunt and kill a Golden Vermillion Burning Python as a test to prove yourself. Be advised, the Golden Vermillion Burning Python is a powerful entity in the Madalors Mountains. You cannot be too reckless! You can find the powerful beast in the Sinlogar Valley.

Completion: Kill the Golden Vermillion Burning Python

Participation Limit: 5 players.

"Hey! Little Yang! The quest will reward us with a skill!" cried Fatty Han happily.

"Oh really!?" Zhang Yang humored him. It was extremely normal for a hidden quest to reward a player with a skill. The best reward was still none other than the Phoenix pet itself!

Fatty Han shared the quest reward to Zhang Yang.

[Bursting Courage (Passive)]: When you or your pet deals a Critical strike, you or your pet will gain a 10% increase in attack for 10 seconds. Effects cannot be stacked.

For noob players like Fatty Han, the best skills for him were not active skills, but passive skills that do not require Fatty Han manually activating them.

The 10% attack boost was as similar a 10% permanent attack boost. It will only activate by chance. Unlike the other skills that require manual activations, that skill will provide a 20% increase in attack power. However, it still depends on the player's own activation timing. Some would get 20% increase, while the others may get 15%, and there even a chance of only 10%.

"Not bad! I like! Let's go!" said Zhang Yang as he felt it was a good skill to anyone. Sadly, it was a skill that only a Hunter could obtain.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily when he thought of hidden quest. He knew about the hidden quest was all because of two Koreans that had obtained the Phoenix pets. In his previous life, those two players had revealed all about the method to obtain the Phoenix through an interview. Sadly, even if there were other class-specific hidden quest that might have the same reward, no news were leaked out. Otherwise, players would have known about it and share it with the whole world. As such, Zhang Yang had no other means but to rely on luck alone to trigger another hidden quest.

The two returned to the mountain and flew towards Sinlogar Valley. However, the monsters that were in the valley had the ability to attack airborne targets, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han had no choice but to lower their altitude to almost ground level to venture through the valley. The valley had extremely few fauna and flora due to the lack of sunlight. The lack of living being in the

valley had rendered the entire place devoid of sound. The weird part was that when Zhang Yang and Fatty Han was in the sky, there were attacks that were coming from the valley, however, now that they were almost ground level, there was not a single monster. However, they were able to venture into the valley quickly and found the target.

The Golden Vermillion Burning Python was curled up around a large rock. Since it was all coiled up, they could not really judge its length. However, just by examine the thickness of its body, they knew that the Python will be huge and heavy. As the name of the beast implied, the Python was covered in golden scale with red linings that swirled around the body. There was even two bun-shaped budes on its head! However, according to the lives of ancient China mythical beings, the two budes that appears on a python is an indication of it becoming a dragon.

[Golden Vermillion Burning Python] (Mythical, Beast)

Level: 135

HP:40,500,000

Defense: 5,560

Melee Attack: 36,323 – 42323

Skills:

[Coil]: Coils around a chosen targets and deal 30,000 physical damage every second for 5 seconds.

[Tail Whip]: Sweeps the ground with its massive tail, deals 150% physical attack to all targets within its melee attack range.

[Metamorphosis]: Unleashes the power of the Python and evolves into a Golden Vermillion Burning Dragon. Gains 50% attack boost.

Note: This Python is evolving into a dragon. If you're smart, you will not even try to disturb the grumpy beast.

"Little Yang. I don't think we could handle a Mythical tier boss on our own," said Fatty Han after he examined the Python stats.

Zhang Yang nodded his head. If both him and Fatty Han had Transformation skills that were ready to use, then the boss would not be too much of a problem. Right then, it would be impossible for them to fight the boss. They did not even have a healer with them! Unless...if the {Berserker's Heal} and the Titan's Chest Plate health restoration was at 10% HP per seconds, he might stand a chance to whack the bastard!

Now, the only HP recovery skill he had was the 30 minutes long cooldown {God of War Radiance} and the 10% HP heal of {Shield Wall}. He should be able to put on a fight with a Violet-Platinum boss. However, it would impossible on so many levels with a Mythical tier boss.



Zhang Yang recruited Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu, and Daffodil Daydream to participate the quest. Wei Yan Er was busy with her Darkness Inheritance quest. There was no way she would have missed her chance to cause a ruckus if she was not busy. Nevertheless, the quest had only limited to 5 players to participate in the quest. Still, with Han Ying Xue alone, Zhang Yang could defeat the boss with no problem! Now that he had gained 3 extra DPS with him, everything else would be a cakewalk.

Zhang Yang took the lead with Felice behind him and charged towards the boss.

"ZEEERAAH!" The Python roared benevolently as if it was a god-like beast. As expected of a beast from the legends! The beast that would become a Dragon!

Even though the Python was still a Python or even a Dragon, its tier would still be Mythical tier. There was not much worry about the damage it could deal. There was no fate of it surviving with Zhang Yang and his party coming at it! The poor Python wriggled in pain as Zhang Yang, Felice, and his party unleashed a barrage of attacks. The rock, which the Python was coiling on broke into tiny bits when the Python tensed up from receiving a powerful blow from Zhang Yang.

The party continued on with the attacks and smoothly drained away the boss HP till he had less than 10% HP. After the 10% HP threshold, the Python finally showed its true colors as it started to shed away its snake scales and reveal golden, large scales of a dragon.

Four dragon claw pierced out of its belly and a pair of magnificent horns burst out of the bun-shaped budes on its head.

As such, the dragon had gained the ability to hover without the need of wings. It rose to the sky and displayed a grand entrance of a mythical dragon.

"ZERAAAHH!" The dragon roared. Its eyes glowed with an intense radiant. Before Zhang Yang could look away from the blinding light, the dragon had rushed towards him and clawed Zhang Yang heavily and strongly.

Zhang Yang took the hit. Just as he planned to land a counterattack, he felt a strong burning sensation on his right arm. He knew what was happening and finished the attack, blasting out a larger dragon than the boss, attacking it by slamming into the enemy.

‘-70,440!’

-704,440!’

The dragon which Zhang Yang had blasted out was not a half-baked dragon like the boss. On the contrary, the {Rising Dragon Strike} was far larger and far benevolent than the enemy itself. With the attack, Zhang Yang’s 700,000 and more damage had dealt equivalent to 2% of the boss’ HP!

Zhang Yang thrust his hands out and cast {Glare of the Death

God}!

Success!

In just a few seconds, the overall DPS dealt by the entire party had multiplied intensely!

Zhang Yang felt extremely lucky that he was able to proc a {Rising Dragon Strike} and a successful {Glare of the Death God} consecutively! He could just buy a scratch card and strike the jackpot!

‘-350,000!’

‘-350,000!’

...

Even after the boss had used {Metamorphosis} to become a real dragon, its HP remained the same albeit having increased attack. With less than 8,100,000 HP or 7% HP left, the boss was literally at knocking on death’s door!

"ZERAAAH!" The dragon roared painfully. Although the skill had given it the appearance of a dragon, it was just a temporary state. If it does mature with time, it would become a full-fledged dragon. By then, its tier would be at least an Ethereal tier or even higher! Sadly, its current form was just borrowing the skill to give it the attack power of an Ethereal tier! Perhaps, if it does evolve

into a real dragon in its current state, it might become a Holy tier or an Ascended tier!

However, that was nothing but speculation. Right then, the dragon, or rather the enraged Python was nothing but scrap for Zhang Yang and his party.

After a good deal of attacks, the boss fell from the sky and crashed in front of the party. The horns and claws had retracted back into its body. The golden scale of the dragon was quickly hidden away as the snake scales reformed.

Hmph. Fake.

# Chapter 615: Darkness Inheritance

---

Violet-Platinum boss drops were nothing but scraps to sell. However, drops of a Mythical tier boss were very different! The Golden Vermillion Burning Python was Level 135, hence, the equipment dropped by the boss should be Level 130! Even though the equipment drops do not have the special lowered level requirement, it was worth keeping since Level 130 was just above the horizon. If they could not get their hands on an Ethereal tier equipment, a Mythical tier would be the second choice.

The boss had only dropped a sad number of loots. There were only two Mythical tier equipment and three Violet-Platinum equipment. There were no skill books... Only an open-world boss of a map would drop luxurious items such as skill books or skill points. Mythical tier bosses were nothing but side bosses that would never drop anything precious.

The obtained loot was a Heavy Armor Helmet and a Leather armor Chest Plate. Since Zhang Yang was only wearing a Violet-Platinum tier helmet, he took the Mythical tier helmet. If he is unable to get his hands on an Ethereal tier equipment, the helmet would be his backup.

[Python Helmet] (Mythical, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +160

Vitality: +1,926

Strength: +905

Dexterity: +393

Equip: Increases 3,850 maximum HP.

Equip: Increases 3.5% damage and healing rate.

Equip: Absorbs 384 damage on attack.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 130

Starting from Mythical tier onwards, equipment tended to prioritized on attack and defense value. Hence, the helmet was extremely ambiguous in a way that it could be of offensive and defensive at the same time. Normally, defensive type equipment will be prioritized for tanks. Only with a strong tank present in a party, the party could move forward without any problem.

Since the little girl was not around, Zhang Yang took the item, since he was the only person there could equip Heavy Armor.

The Leather Armor was given to Fatty Han, Sun Xin Yu had given it up for him. Perhaps, it was a favor for Zhang Yang. Fatty Han was so touched that he had grovelled at her feet whilst crying about brotherhood or sisterhood. Sun Xin Yu was agitated that she

had even threatened to have the item back if he does not stop his nonsense.

After the boss was killed, the three women went back to town. Fatty Han took the quest item [Gold Vermillion Burning Python's Gall].

"You're something I have never see before!" Kronoss took the gall that was almost the size of a human brain. He turned to the kitchen and yelled, "Dearest, get me the mead flask, we can make some snake gall mead!"

'Ding! You have completed a quest: The Hunt for the Golden Vermillion Burning Python. Obtained 20,000,000 Experience Points!'

Compared with Fatty Han, Zhang Yang had obtained much more experience points as compensation for Fatty Han obtaining a skill. The quest had awarded Zhang Yang with 50,000,000 experience points!

"Hunter, you have proven your bravery and Intelligence. Now, to further prove yourself as a true hunter..." Kronoss hold his hand up and sank his teeth into a large piece of meat. After taking his slow sweet time enjoying the piece of the shank, Kronoss spoke with his mouth still chewing. "A Hunter munch you must have munch munch swallow. You must have patience! Patience comes first above all else! For a true hunter would wait for days to hunt their prey!"

Kronoss looked into the distance and said, "I was wild back then. I remembered a few days ago, I was hunting for a Fox Snow Spirit. I had covered myself in the snow for seven days and seven night, surviving only on dried food and melted snow water to keep myself going. It was painful. The frostbites...However, my effort paid off when the Fox had lowered his guard and came out of its nest to hunt for good. Right then, I waited until the last moment and capture the critter with my bare hands! Look at this! The coat I'm wearing right now is made from the fur of the Fox Snow Spit! This is something not even the king could buy!"

Seven days and seven nights? Fatty Han cocked his head and raised a suspicious eyebrow at the man. Frostbite? The man should have been frozen solid!

"Hunter. You will do as I do and hunt a Fox Snow Spirit! You must capture it alive and well! Not a single wound on the critter! Do that and I'll tell you a big secret!" said Kronoss as he whispered.

‘Ding! Kronoss has a quest for you: Hunt the Fox Snow Spirit. Will you accept it?’

Zhang Yang and Fatty Han took the quest without hesitation.

[Hunt the Fox Snow Spirit] (Difficulty Level: NIL)

Description: Kronoss had entrusted the task of hunting a Fox Snow Spirit to you. Complete the challenge to prove that you have the quality of patience of a true hunter. Be advised, the Fox Snow Spirit you are asked to hunt for must be at full health. A single bit



of damage on it will cause the quest to fail. You can try your luck at the Snow Spirit Canyon. Remember hunter, the key to success is patience. Hint: Fox Snow Spirits loves to eat Pale Stripe Weed.

Completion: Capture a Fox Snow Spirit: 0/1

The reason for the quest not being graded with a difficulty level was due to the fact a it was not going to be a contest of power. A battle was not necessary, however, the process of capturing an unharmed Fox Snow Spirit could be difficult. For players such as Sun Xin Yu, who would go as far as starving for days to kill a certain target, the quest would be a piece of cake. However, for players as rash as Wei Yan Er, the quest would be close to SSS difficulty, if such a level exists in the first place.

The two of them went on with their journey and arrived towards the Snow Spirit Canyon. The trip was extremely fast and quick since the quest had given them a specific location. The place was extremely cold. Aside from the monotone color of the place, there was nothing else but snow and the sky.

Based on the quest guide, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han split up and found three places that spawned the Pale Stripe Weeds. Based on Zhang Yang's understanding of the quest, a Hunter could plant a trap around the weeds and capture the Fox Snow Spirit, alive and unharmed. All Fatty Han needed to do then was to set a trap, let the fox spring the trap and the quest will be completed.

There was a huge problem with his plan. A Hunter's trap skill could only last for 1 minute while the spawn points of the Pale Stripe Weeds were at least 5 minutes apart from each other. Hence,

they would have to choose one out of the three and plant their trap there. If they are unlucky, and the fox chooses to pick a different spot to feed, Fatty Han would be waiting for a very long time.

As such, like the quest had indicated, patience is the key to victory!

Both of them draw lots and headed to their own designated weeds spawning location to set up a trap. After that, there was nothing much to do but wait. Patiently.

1 hour had passed painfully and comes the 2 hours. By then, the two had waited for more than 3 hours continuously placing traps here and there. Since Zhang Yang was only assigned to watch as he did not own any trap skills, he decided to not waste his time there and left. Before he did, he gave Fatty Han the [Party Summon Order]. When Fatty Han finally captures a Fox Snow Spirit, he can call him over. Zhang Yang went back to White Jade Castle and did his usual business, from grinding levels to crafting potions and etc.

The poor Fatty Han was left alone in the Snow Spirit Canyon for god knows how long. Zhang Yang did not care about the number of hours he had spent over there and laid down the ultimatum order, never to leave the place until he captures a Fox Snow Spirit. Kronoss had mentioned something about camping for seven days and seven nights, perhaps the challenge would be far longer for Fatty Han!

...

After working hard for two whole days, Wei Yan Er had finally managed to obtain the Darkness Inheritance. The little girl then shared with everyone the skills she had obtained and had caused several players like Hundred Shots who had only managed to obtain a B class Inheritance to feel extremely envious.

[Shadow Wound (Passive)]: Permanently increases your damage by 45% and decreases incoming physical attack by 10%.

[Darkness Transformation]: Be one with the Darkness, increases 400% damage dealt, 3000% HP increment, and gains a 30% chance to nullify incoming magic attacks. During the Transformation skill, you will gain 1 Darkness Energy Point. There will be skills that require the use of Darkness Energy Point to activate. Darkness Transformation will last for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours.

[Shadow Orb]: Creates a shadow orb to follow you or a target ally player. Under the protection of the Shadow Orb, the target will receive 50% less physical attack damage and will gain immunity to all Shadow Damage. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cost: 10 Darkness Energy Points. Every additional 1 Energy Point consumed to cast this skill will increase the duration of the Shadow Orb by 1 second. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

[Dark Vengeance]: Strikes a target with the power of Darkness. Deals 250% melee Shadow Damage and corrupts the target with the power of shadow. Decreases all damage and healing rate by 10%. Cost: 50 Rage. Cooldown: 1 minute.

[Darkness Corruption]: Temporarily controls a target as your pawn. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cost: 3 Darkness Energy Points. Each

additional Energy Points consumed will increase the duration of the control by 2 seconds. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

[Shadow Curtain]: Creates a 50 meters x 50 meters field of shadow, dealing Shadow Damage, 8x the value of your Strength value. Cost: 3 Darkness Energy Points.

[Enemy of the Light (Passive)]: During the Darkness Transformation skill, deals 50% extra damage to a Holy attribute target. Receive 50% extra damage from Holy attribute damage.

The little girl had acquired her Inheritance when she was Level 120, hence she had lots of skills to claim from her benefactor. Indirectly, Zhang Yang had just remembered to visit Ares the God of War to claim his Level 120 skill.

"NYAHAHAHAH!" The little girl was so proud of herself and praised the A class Darkness Inheritance as the best Inheritance there was. Even though the damage boost was 5% lower than the God of War Inheritance, the skills it had were truly devastating!

For example, the skill {Shadow Orb} could be used to reduce all physical attacks by 50%. Not only that it could be used on oneself, it could also be used to save others! Sadly, the skill was flawed in two ways. It had too long a cooldown time and also a maximum of 100 seconds of active duration. It was nothing more than a last measure to defend someone in need.

"Haha! Good job little brat! You're actually growing now! Stronger but not any higher! HAHAHA!"

Everyone praised whilst teasing her at the same time and enjoyed her comical reaction of defending her height. Truly, an A class Inheritance was much stronger than a B class Inheritance.

As Wei Yan Er was celebrating with everyone else happily, the poor Fatty Han was left alone in a pile of snow. Perhaps, he might come back to the guild in a year or two.

Zhang Yang took his leave and visited Ares for his Level 120 skills. It was crucial, since he was about to fight Han Ying Xue's Inheritance quest boss.

[God of War Heavy Axe]: Instantly cleaves a target. Deals 100% melee physical damage if the target has higher HP % than you. Deals 300% melee physical damage if the target has lower HP % than you. Required: Melee Weapon. Cost: 50 Rage. Cooldown: 30 seconds.

## Chapter 616: High Priestess Chiffony

---

As expected of an S class Inheritance skill. As the level grows higher, the stronger the skills will be. Luckily that skill effect had taken percentage into account, or else the skill could be extremely useless against highly-leveled bosses with more than millions of HP! Zhang Yang would have to grind his way slowly and only use the skill when the boss drops below his own HP! By then, the boss would already be dead.

As a tank, especially during a boss fight, Zhang Yang's HP will fluctuate up and down between 50% to 80% depending on the healer present. It will be a rare case where he would be at full health. As such, the skill {God of War Heavy Axe} would need to be timed precisely in order to deliver 300% damage. A careless miss and he would be dealing normal damage to the boss.

After Zhang Yang picked up the skill from Area, he left the place and proceed to grind his level. Right then, he had two Level 130 equipment that were just sitting in his personal storage, waiting to be equipped! With determination and the temptation of the potential reward, Zhang Yang fought hard and fast to push his Level higher. Also, he was still wearing a Level 80 Titan's Necklace, which was in need of being replaced as soon as possible.

Zhang Yang was alone when he searched for the perfect spot to grind his level. Alone, his efficiency was far greater than when he was with anyone else. The map he found had a high spawn rate of normal tier monsters. As such, the monsters were unable to deal any speck of damage to him. Hence, he was able to kite a large number of monsters and kill them with a few blows. Sometimes, when he was extremely lucky, the {Rising Dragon Strike} would

proc and kill all monsters in a single blow.

In one day, he had gained no less than 6% experience points. If he could maintain such speed, he would take at least in-game 17 days to gain a level, which was equivalent to 6 real-time days. He was only able to achieve such a high grinding speed due to his powerful equipment and overwhelming skills.

Zhang Yang continued his grinding until everyone's Transformation skill had finished their cooldown. Zhang Yang then recruited everyone and briefly explained about the boss that they were about to kill. Han Ying Xue's S class Inheritance quest boss, the High Priestess Chiffony was located at the Xixiluca Sea.

Unfortunately, Fatty Han was not invited as he was still camping in the Snow Spirit Canyon, trying to catch a fox. Even though Zhang Yang's "kill squad" was short of one Inheritance DPS player, the little girl with her newly acquire Darkness Inheritance was good enough to replace his spot! In fact, the little girl might be a better replacement and bring a higher DPS rate to the party. The little girl was a battle maniac. All the while she had better battle prowess than Fatty Han. Now, she would be extremely powerful in battle, since her Inheritance was one tier higher than Fatty Han's.

Additionally, Zhang Yang had also recruited guild players with D class and E class Inheritance. Even though they do not possess the Transformation skill, their attacks were still boosted since they were, after all, Inheritance holders. At the very least, their attacks were higher than normal players. Even if they died in battle, they could just revive on the spot and fight the boss again!

The entire squad traveled high and low and ventured through thousands of kilometers before reaching their destination, The Xixiluca Sea of the Holy Island.

The Holy Islands were completely different from the other palaces that Zhang Yang had traveled to before. It was like Eden itself. There was flora that he had never seen before. The animals spotted the squad and showed no sign of aggression nor fear of humans. They had only raised their heads to look at the party and went back to do what they loved to do, feeding on grass and fruits. The little girl was greatly excited and tried to capture the rabbits and doe as pets. Naturally, her barbaric behavior had sent all the little critters running away. Zhang Yang teased Wei Yan Er and coaxed the girl by lying about getting her a pet at home. Only then would she obediently rejoin the group and venture deeper into the island.

The party arrived at the center of the island and found a building which was as large as a basketball court. It was an open-air altar, prepped with chairs and ceremonials tables that resembled a church. At the center of the altar stood a woman in a white priestess gown who was fully focused on praying to the sky. Her back faced them, so the party could not fully examine her appearance. However, judging by the soft fabric of her uniform, she was, undoubtedly a woman with an hourglass body figure. Her golden hair was long and soft that even though it grew to her hips, the hair could sway with the wind.

[High Priestess Chiffony] (Ethereal, Humanoid)

Level: 150



HP: 500,000,000

Defense: 9,950

Magic Attack: 45,314 – 55,314

Skills:

[Blazing Holy Light]: Casts a powerful light that would burn everyone who is within 40 meters from the caster. Deals 40,000 Holy Damage to all targets every 2 seconds for 30 seconds.

[Higher Healing]: Heals oneself, restoring HP equivalent to 200% magic attack. Channel: 2 seconds.

[Endurance]: Restores 3% HP every 30 seconds. Healing rate would not be affected by any status effects.

Note; Chiffony holds the title of the High Priestess. She believes that the god will only descend to the mortal realms by purifying all negative humans. Her beliefs had led her to be excommunicated by the Creed since her views of the gods were too extreme. However, no one would deny that her power and affiliation with the Holy element is strong.

Zhang Yang had tried to fight the boss once before but was completely wiped out. The boss' skill {Blazing Radiant Light} was

her one and only skill, it possessed little to no threat to the party. However, since it was her only skill, she would cast {Higher Healing} after {Blazing Radiant Light}. Coupled with her own passive regeneration skill, the Priestess was as tough as Zhang Yang, being incredibly hard to kill! It was the reason why Zhang Yang had failed the boss fight even though he had brought many players. The main reason being, not enough DPS to counter her healing rate.

"...Could we really do this?" said Han Ying Xue, as she doubted the DPS power of the party then. Everyone was traumatized before and was scared, even now.

"Yes. We can. I'm sure of it!" said Zhang Yang with forceful confidence. Previously, their DPS was greatly affected by the annoying Level Suppression system. However, things had changed now, since the main attack force had reached Level 120. Even though many were still under-leveled, they were mainly the healing squad and would not be affected by the Level Suppression system.

"Alright. Get your Transformation skills ready now. We're attacking now!"

Zhang Yang activated his Transformation skill and consumed a bottle of [Strength Potion] before charging to the boss.

"Impure beings! You will be cleansed!" Chiffony turned around to face them. She had crystal-clear eyes that sparkled with an aquamarine blue. Her face and skin were as fair as snow, a little soft and silky at the same time. However, looks do not matter. In

the game, if a boss is extremely beautiful, she would be extremely powerful! The boss created a magic staff in her hand and struck the ground hard, creating a golden hue blast wave that spreaded out in all directions.

{Blazing Radiant Light}!

Right after the skill was unleashed, Chiffony started to heal herself.

{Destructive Smash}!

Zhang Yang leaped towards the boss and vertically slammed his sword to hack at her. Although Zhang Yang could feel his sword attack connecting with her body, the Priestess cloths remained intact as if it was made of the greatest Kevlar armor. Still, it was just aesthetics purposes, the damage had still landed without any reduction.

'24,932!'

Chiffony finished her channeling and healed only a quarter of her original amount of 100,000 HP. Even though the {Destructive Smash} could not affect the healing rate of her passive skill, Zhang Yang had still prioritized attacking her with {Destructive Smash} to disrupt her {Higher Healing}.

The rest of the party were not far behind. Right after Zhang Yang had landed {Destructive Smash}, the rest of the party member had

activated their Transformation skill and attacked. Amongst the party members, the most excited one was Wei Yan Er.

The little girl had always been a curious cat. After obtaining the Darkness Inheritance, she had been itching to test out its prowess. Since Zhang Yang had told her about the High Priestess long before anyone else, she had kept her skills and only wanted to unleash it on the boss. Hence, when it comes to attacking, no one could be as excited as her.

{Darkness Transformation}!

Shuuuuu...

Clouds as black as calligraphy ink formed around her feet and engulfed her entire character. The clouds formed an opaque layer which grew darker and blacker. Eventually, her entire character was completely dyed in black. Her eyes, however, remained the same with white sclera and dark pupils. The little girl jumped vertically and could fly without the use of mounts.

Flight ability was granted only to S class and A class Inheritance. However, as a compensation or rather, a limitation, S class and A class Inheritance Transformation were forbidden to mount anything. However, it did not matter since the Inheritance Transformation skill had increased the player HP and Attack by several folds, overtaking the HP and Attack bonuses provided by the mount. On the contrary, while B class Inheritances or lower could mount a battle mount, the HP and Attack bonus provided would not be included in the attack multiplication. For example, if a B class Inheritance player activates their Transformation skill,

provided that their original HP was 150,000 and their battle mount has 100,000, the end result would be as such:  $(150,000 \times 20) + 100,000 = 3,100,000$  HP. It would not be  $(150,000 + 100,000) \times 20 = 5,000,000$  HP.

The little girl laughed manically as she rushed behind the boss and swung her huge battle axe at her target. However, before she could land an attack, she had taken the {Blazing Radiant Light} damage and took more than 60,000 damage.

Due to her passive skill {Enemy of the Light}, Wei Yan Er would receive an additional 50% damage from Holy damage in her Transformed form. At the same time, she would deal 50% extra damage to a target that has Holy elemental attribute.

The little girl grunted a little and continued her attempt at striking the boss.

WHAM!

‘-312,187!’

The first attack Wei Yan Er landed was a maximum charged {Shadow Vengeance}. With 250% melee damage, adding with 50% additional Shadow amplification, her attack had dealt more than 300,000 damage.

"Holy crap! Little Yan Er's a true berserker now!" Lost Dream gasped at her power. Before that, Lost Dream was able to stand

closely behind Zhang Yang as the second highest DPS dealer, being above Sun Xin Yu, Daffodil Daydream, and Wei Yan Er herself before she had acquired an Inheritance. However, it was merely temporary since Wei Yan Er had demonstrated a destructive power that had clearly exceeded his. 300,000 damage in a single hit was something Lost Dream could never achieve.

"Impure being shall be cleansed! Only then the gods shall descend to the earth!" Chiffony bellowed as she struck the ground again with her staff, releasing a massive shockwave that had sent her own hairs swaying with the impact.

"Tch! Stupid boss! You're the one that needs to be cleansed! Such big breasts...stinky boss...hmph!" Wei Yan Er struck the boss again and was greatly disgruntled when she noticed the boss' breasts jiggling about.

The girl herself had a chest as flat as an ironing board. Hence, her ire was for those who had bigger breasts than her. Aside from men, her enemy was practically all other women!

Zhang Yang casually cast a {Glare of the Death God} and by chance, the boss did not resist it. The black cloud formed into a grinning skull.

"Evil! Impure! Sinful humans! You must be cleansed!" cried the boss. Even though she did not possess a single attack skill, between her castings of {Higher Healing} she would occasionally strike Zhang Yang with her magic staff. However, the physical attack was easily negated with {Block} which only provided Zhang Yang with an additional attack and a free {Shield Bash}!

Upon the successful casting of {Glare of the Death God}, everyone attacked as fast as they could. One by one, the increased attacks proceeded continuously and quickly hacked away t10% of the boss' HP. The battle had taken off with a good, smooth start.

# Chapter 617: Possession

---

In reality, Chiffony's attacks were not that strong. However, that depends on who she's striking. Players like Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu who had not acquired their Inheritance could not cope with the boss' attack even when they have increased their maximum HP with their battle mount.

The skill {Blazing Radiant Light} could deal 40,000 Holy damage to all players every 2 seconds over a wide area. The damage dealt was rapid and strong, perhaps only a healer with a suitable Inheritance and equipped with an array of strong equipment could heal. As of now, the world greatest healer would not even cope with the powerful damage.

Thankfully, the party consisted of many players with Inheritance Transformation skill that had increased their maximum HP by a large jump. Even players like Hundred Shots and Galileo who had only obtained a B class Inheritance had reached a maximum HP of over 2,500,000 HP. The HP boost provided by their mounts was only under 100,000 HP, as good as adding salt to the sea. Additionally, Transformed players had also gained a chance to nullify magic attacks! S class Inheritance player such as Zhang Yang had 40% chance of negating magic attacks, hence, increasing their survivability and providing breathing space for Han Ying Xue and other healers to buffer their heals.

Everyone attacked and did what they could until their HP was drained down to a dangerous level. When their HP had dropped down, they would only need to escape the boss range distance, allowing more than 10 healers in the party to heal them without taking further damage. At most, they would only need 20 seconds



to heal over 2 million HP, allowing them to return to the battle just as quickly.

Even though Zhang Yang had come up with a good strategy, Chiffony was not as easy as she seemed to be. On average, the boss would heal over 500,000 HP every second. The number was so high that most players would just give up trying to kill it. Additionally, with the skill {Blazing Radiant Light}, no players besides Inheritance holders could properly deal damage!

The battle itself was extremely draggy. If the combined DPS of the party was any lower than 500,000 damage, the boss would not die. With the skill - {Blazing Radiant Light} alone, she could play a slow game of chess with the players and still win in the end in a battle of attrition.

While others were struggling with their DPS, Wei Yan Er was able to deal powerful blast of attacks, thanks to her passive skills. She was almost as strong as Zhang Yang!

An S class Inheritance and A class Inheritance only had a 5% difference in their attack boosts. However, that was only one skill. Their Transformation skills, however, differed by 500% and 400%! There would be a 25% attack difference between the two class. However, Wei Yan Er was able to compensate that difference of strength with the skill - {Enemy of the Light} which had granted her an additional 50% attack against Holy attribute enemies, allowing her to deal devastating damage to that particular enemy.

Han Ying Xue's skill, the {Angel's Compassion} was brought to light. Since the skill heals player's HP by percentages, Zhang Yang

HP was healed by a massive 85,000 HP. That was 1% of his total HP, which had exceeded 8,500,000!

Sadly, as the skill {Blazing Radiant Light} was an AoE skill, unless everyone runs out of the attack range, the skill's protection would be drained away quickly. At most, the shield that is cast on them would only last 3 attacks, healing players by 6% HP before it is destroyed.

As such, with all the problems around, the HP of Chiffony was dropping extremely slowly. There were no perfect strategies for fighting Chiffony besides having higher DPS than the boss' healing rate. In fact, that was the only way to defeat the boss.

After struggling for 1 hour, the boss was left with only 33% HP. Sadly, the second {Glare of the Death God} had failed.

Zhang Yang was greatly disgruntled. However, since they had already dealt 57% HP worth of damage in one hour, Zhang Yang would not have to cast a third {Glare of the Death God}.

"Hmph. Perhaps, this could be the easiest boss we have ever encountered!" said Hundred Shots.

"Hey. We do have many Inheritance players here!" said Lost Dreams.

Normal players disadvantage was their low HP limit. If they were to fight the boss, they might have to run in and out of the attack

range to heal themselves repeatedly until the boss is killed. If they were unlucky enough to be killed, they could just get their souls back to the body, temporarily letting other teammates cover their mistake. Any method they use to fight the boss would be time-consuming.

On the other hand, while players with Inheritance Transformation skill had greater HP limits, the time taken to heal that player would be extremely long! However, the time they could last in a fight was far longer than normal players since Inheritance players had many other passives to support them in battle. Hence, the time wasted for normal players was 3 to 4 times more than players with Inheritances.

Additionally, players with Inheritance Transformation skill could deal much higher damage that they alone could compensate for 4 to 5 normal players. A player with Inheritance Transformation skills fighting a special boss such as Chiffony could provide as much as 15 to 20 times the normal attack.

Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots, and Wei Yan Er possessed special equipment and skills that had provided them with attacks that could surpass normal player by 5 to 6 times. Putting everything into account, each of them could replace 100 normal players!

All and all, even with the lack of members of their party, they still have the capabilities to fight an Ethereal tier boss. If any of them, especially Wei Yan Er was absent from the party, Zhang Yang might have to rely on numbers alone to keep on dying and reviving to fight the boss.

With all the annoying troubles of the boss, Zhang Yang particularly loved this boss fight. The reason was that Chiffony had few skills to attack her enemies with. Close to 99% of the time, Chiffony was only healing herself! The other 1% of the time was her casting {Blazing Radiant Light}. Basically, as a tank, Zhang Yang had no other duty other than to make sure that the aggro was firmly locked on him. He had no need of babysitting the entire party!

28%...17%...9%...

Half an hour later, the boss' HP had dropped below 10%. With skills that required specific HP %, the entire party had gained a boost in attack and was able to drain the boss HP down to the last 1%. However, something happened. When Zhang Yang had struck a {Killing Cleave}, dealing more than 260,000 damage, the boss had only taken 234,983 damage and was left with only 1 HP. A shield had formed around the boss and negated all other damage that the party had landed.

"ALL DEFILER SHALL BE CLEANSED! I WILL SACRIFICE MY LIFE TO SUMMON THE GODS! LET THEM CLEANSE THE WORLD FOR MY SAKE!"

Chiffony's character sudden caught fire. In pain, she screamed at the top of her lungs. A large tornado formed around her which soared to the sky which pushed away most of the cloud. The sky was completely illuminated by the lack of shade.

"Mortal. I hear thy call and thou prayer shall be answered. The gods shall grant thou wish and cleanse the world of all impurities!"

A husky voice echoed from the high heavens. A bright column of light blasted down the sky and onto Chiffony. The boss' almost emptied HP gauge was being healed.

2%...4%....10%!

Luckily, the healing had stopped exactly at 10% which was as high as 50,000,000 HP.

Slowly, the fire extinguished from Chiffony's body and she opened her eyes. She was different. Her eyes were no longer focused on anyone.

[Possessed Chiffony. Blood Angel's Requiem] (Mythical, Unidentified Being)

Level: 150

HP: 50,000,000 / 500,000,000

Defense: 9,950

Ranged Attack: 75,409 – 85,409

Skills:

[Cleansing]: Strikes a target with godly power, kills a target after

60 seconds. Range: 100 meters.

Note: The gods have answered Chiffony's prayers and have granted her the ability to cleanse everything in the world!

"Repent mortal, in the face of a god." Chiffony voice was greatly distorted as if someone had badly auto-tuned her voice. She pointed her index finger at Zhang Yang and blasted a red light which seeped into his body instantly. A debuff icon {Spirit Cleansing} appeared on Zhang Yang's character and a 60 second countdown started ticking.

"CRAP! Kill the boss! FAST!" Zhang Yang screamed at the top of his lungs. The boss was "behaving" back then but now, she had decided that she had enough. No matter what you do to stop the skill, death would be certain in 60 seconds! There's no room for any negotiations!

"You...You...and You. You shall be cleansed." With unfocused eyes, the possessed Chiffony raised her hands and points her index finger to her targets. In just a few seconds, flashes of red light blast off and seeped into her targets.

60 seconds...deal 50,000,000 damage...That was asking the entire party's DPS to be at least 830,000! It was an impossible feat, because the real DPS that Zhang Yang and the party could deal was only over 600,000!

There was one opening. That was the current boss had no attacking skills at all! With no reason to run around anymore, all

the party member could focus on doing one thing only. Attack.

Before the boss was possessed, Zhang Yang had missed out many chances to deal his skills. Right now, after Zhang Yang had recollected his thoughts, he consumed a bottle of [Power Potion], activated {Shadow Clone} and attack the boss!

Likewise, others had done the same and cast all their skill to maximize their attack. Han Ying Xue had even stopped healing and joined in the attacking fest. Zhang Yang's HP right then was at 100%. Taking a few magic staff thwacks was not a problem, since he would die anyway after 60 seconds. There was no need to heal anymore!

9%...8%...7%...

The boss' HP starts to drop rapidly, however, time was running out as well. Not long after, Zhang Yang was the first to be "cleansed".

"ARGH!" Zhang Yang grunted with pain.

However, with a quick flash of light around Zhang Yang's body, he miraculously came back to life. Han Ying Xue had cast {Rise Anew} before Zhang Yang had perished.

"ARGH!"

"UGGH!"

"Ouphff!"

Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, and Lost Dream fell. The skill {Cleanse} was just too OP and unreasonable. No matter how high your HP was, death was certain after 60 seconds. There's literally nothing you can do to stop death from knocking on your door.

Luckily, besides Zhang Yang, everyone else who had died come back to life again with the help of the [Zombie Potion]! However, even though the Inheritance Transformation duration had not ended before they died, death for a player would purge all active buffs and debuffs on them. Although the Inheritance Transformation was not considered a buff, it was a change of their original status. Similar to a full reset, after death, the effect will be gone. Hence, when the player comes back from death, they were reverted to their original statuses and attacked normally. As a conclusion, the overall DPS of the party dropped drastically.

The boss still had 2% HP left, while the [Zombie Potion] effect would only last for 30 seconds!

With Transformation skills active, it was an easy task to deal enough damage to kill the boss in 30 seconds. However, with the sudden change of events, it had become an extremely difficult feat!

"You can do it, boss!"

"Fight harder!"



Everyone cheered with powerful vigor. Time waits for no men. Be it the boss or Zhang Yang's party, either one had to win.

1%!

4,000,000!

3,000,000!

2,000,000!

Thud...thud...thud...

More players fell to the skill's instant death effect. They quickly released their soul and ran as fast as they could from the nearby graveyard. If they are quick enough, they could still rejoin the fight as long as someone is still in the battle!

All healers, including Han Ying Xue, had died. Even though Zhang Yang still had over 210,000 HP, he could not endure the constant attack of the boss! He would be killed even before the second {Cleanse} strikes him!

Pak!

Zhang Yang was killed! However, he rose back up instantly! At the very last minute, he had swiftly consumed a bottle of [Zombie

Potion]!

1,500,000!

1,000,000!

Zhang Yang had only 3 seconds left to attack, and the boss still has over 480,000 HP left. The players that were running back to their body in their soul form were only halfway through the map. Zhang Yang was panicking. The face of failure drew closer as each microsecond passed. Could it be, that they were destined to lose this match!?

When Zhang Yang was almost giving up, he felt a hot, gushing sensation growing in his right hand.

This is...{Rising Dragon Strike}!

F\*CK YEAH!

Invigorated. Zhang Yang slammed his sword into the boss' shoulder.

‘-34,872!’

‘-347,720!’

After the dragon crashed onto the boss, she still had over 98,000 HP left!

Zhang Yang sucked in a deep breath quickly and struck {Killing Cleave}.

‘-139,872!’

"Argh! Mortals....You have defiled even the gods! We shall return! We shall cleanse the world!" With a golden radiant, Chiffony's character glowed brightly and released a bright pillar of light into the sky. After the light pillar faded and the "unidentified being" that was possessing Chiffony had returned to whence they came from, Chiffony closed her eyes and fell to the ground.

Zhang Yang's [Zombie Potion] effect had ended at the same time. He too, fell to the ground. Instead of reviving, he waited at the spot, for Han Ying Xue was already on her way back to the battlefield.

Zhang Yang snickered. "Who said that this was the easiest boss fight?"

Everyone guffawed. It was their victory and they were extremely glad that they could kill the boss. Who could have expected the boss to power up and gain such a "broken" skill? However, they would not have faced such a problem if they had more players in their "kill squad". They could let one batch attack, and if the first batch of players dies, the second batch would fill in their spot and hold the boss back until the first batch of player returns. Like an

endless cycle, the loop will continue until the boss dies, since the boss did not have any recovery skills. It was a good strategy but it was not recommended since their individual skill will be neglected.

Still, even though the strategy was good, who could guarantee that the boss would not evolve into something greater?

Han Ying Xue returned to the battlefield and revived Zhang Yang. They chatted and laughed as they healed themselves with snacks and items. Naturally, the little Wei Yan Er was the first on scene to pick the loots.

Chiffony had dropped a total of five equipment, a skill book, and a Skill Point Crystal. Although it was not much, it was still a good haul!

Two of the five equipment were Ethereal tier and three others were Mythical tier. Unlike the Mythical tier, the Ethereal tier equipment gave off a glowing and swirly light. One of them was a long, golden silk robe. The other was a Heavy Armor, golden metallic chest plate.

"Which one do you wanna see first?" Wei Yan Er snickered.

"Erhm...the dress." Zhang Yang said casually.

[Radiant Priestess Robe] (Ethereal, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +64

Vitality: +4668

Intelligence: +1586

Spirit: +680

Equip: Increases maximum MP by 3,100.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 5.6%

Equip: Absorbs 679 damage upon attack.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 150

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Note: Only the purest of hearts could garb the Holy Robe.

Since the number of players that had participated in this boss fight was far larger than before, Zhang Yang could not rely on rolling dices to distribute the loot. Hence, based on the usual dungeon distribution method, they would rely on using the guild contribution points to "buy" the loot. However, that was just for show, who else could pit their guild contribution points against

Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream, and Fantasy Sweetheart?

Han Ying Xue had promised Daffodil Daydream and Fantasy Sweetheart that she would let them have the next equipment. Hence, she did not participate in the draw. Her own equipment, the [Queen's Attire] was a Level 130 Mythical tier equipment. Even though the tier was lower than the [Radiant Priestess Robe], she chose to keep the equipment since it had the word "Queen" on it.

The powerful robe ended up in Daffodil Daydream's hands. By Level 130, she would equip the robe and gain a large boost in power.

After the [Radiant Priestess Robe] was given away, Wei Yan Er posted the next item.

[Cuirass of the Knight's Glory] (Ethereal, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +3209

Vitality: +1672

Dexterity: +612

Equip: Increases 9,990 maximum HP.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 5.6%.

Equip: Absorbs 679 damage upon attack.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 150

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

## Chapter 618: Milkmaid Deity

---

Although the equipment contained the word "Knight", its properties did not seem to share the similar implications. It did not even have a single Intelligence Point. Zhang Yang's Titan Chest Plate would be nerfed considerably when he reaches Level 130. He decided to swap it out and threw a large sum of guild contribution points on the table to claim the Heavy Armor.

"Dear brothers and sister, mister and missus, could I have this please?" The little brat carried the [Skill Point Crystal] in her palms and pleaded to the entire party, complete with puppy eyes and a cute smile. Zhang Yang frowned immediately. He knew the little brat wanted the best thing for herself!

Zhang Yang would not have minded giving Wei Yan Er the item if they were in their own regular party. He would even tease the little girl until he is satisfied. However, things were different now, since the party then was filled with other guild members who mostly knew her in passing or by name. He might even call it a guild activity, there should not be any favoritism, or in this case, nepotism. Zhang Yang tugged on the little girl's earlobes and made her apologize for her selfishness and resumed the regular bidding for the item via contribution points.

However, since Wei Yan Er had voiced out her childish wants, Hundred Shots and the other core members had already intended to give it to her. Hence, with only 400 guild contribution points, the little girl had managed to haul the item for herself.

Zhang Yang and his core party members were the ones in the



guild who possessed the highest contribution points. It was something that Zhang Yang had no power over. The contribution points of Lone Desert Smoke followed a proper in-game system which gives points to those players who contributed to the guild. Zhang Yang had even established a point exchange system to allow players to obtain items, equipment, ETC items via collecting guild contribution points.

The system would generate contribution points depending on the activity the player is involved in, such as group dungeon raiding, defending a territory, guild vs guild PvP, and other activities that Zhang Yang organizes. Points will be given depending on the difficulty of the task from 1 point in dungeon raid, to 2 points in winning a PvP match. Everyone in the guild will receive the same amount of point and would not be amplified or reduced by ranks of the player in the guild. Zhang Yang will still earn 1 point from raiding a dungeon as would a random player in the guild.

Naturally, ranking officers such as Hundred Shots or Zhang Yang had the authority to deduct and reward points to members. If someone were to violate the guild rules, Hundred Shots would deduct their points. If someone had joined the raid in saving Princess Serena back then, Zhang Yang would have rewarded them with a massive sum of contribution points. Everything was done with the highest transparency. Hence everyone could find out from where and how the contribution points are earned. Cases, where players are rewarded with contribution points, were as rare as events in the game.

The method of distribution was even and fair, hence no one had any objection to Wei Yan Er placing a large sum of contribution points to obtain the [Skill Point Crystal]. The points were earned,

fair and square by the little brat's own hands.

After Zhang Yang distributed the crystal to the little girl, he messaged her privately and said, "Why are you hoarding up so many points?! They were meant to be used! Don't use your cheap tactics to get items!"

"Pff. Points are like money! Saving is key to spending in the future!" Wei Yan Er sulked as she blew raspberries at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang chuckled. As expected of the family, the little girl was exactly like Han Ying Xue in terms of hoarding. Zhang Yang knew the reason behind it. When they were much younger, the amount of pocket money they received was extremely limited. While the two sisters might leech from Zhang Yang for the simplest things like toilet paper, they would splurge their money when it comes to cosmetic products.

Wei Yan Er then posted a skill book. All skill books will only display the name of the skill and not its description. However, when everyone saw the name of the skill, everyone immediately knew the properties of it. It was {Soul Cleansing}. The exact same skill that Chiffony had gained when she was possessed by the "unidentified being".

When the boss was using the skill, she could just kill someone off literally by pointing her finger at them! If players could own the skill, they would definitely be a PvP king!

As such, everyone unloaded their contribution points on the

table to bid for the skill.

Zhang Yang had a feeling that the skill would not be as strong as it was when the boss was using it. If the skill works just like it did for the boss, where one could point and kill anyone at will, there would be no reason to hunt for equipment anymore! Even so, the boss had strict conditions for "activating" the skill, for she must "die" once and could only use the skill with less than 10% HP!

However, since the skill was dropped by an S class Inheritance quest boss, so it had to be a game-changer. It should be weaker than the boss but stronger than normal skill. Zhang Yang purposefully dropped out of the bidding session since he already had an array of powerful unique skills.

Sun Xin Yu placed almost all her contribution points to get the skill book! Her points were almost the same as Zhang Yang.

After learning the skill, she posted the skill description for everyone to see.

[Soul Cleansing]: Attempts to cleanse the target's soul. If your target is a player character or a non-boss monster, the skill will kill the target after 3 minutes, as long as the caster remains alive during the skill effect duration. Skill cannot be used on boss monsters. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

As compared to Zhang Yang's S class Inheritance quest boss drop, the {Glare of the Death God}, {Soul Cleansing} can be cast and left be until the time ticks away. All Sun Xin Yu has to go is to stay

alive for 3 minutes, unlike {Glare of the Death God} where Zhang Yang would have to constantly attack his target to proc the skill's effect. On the other hand, the skill had only a short 10 minute cooldown time! It was extremely useful in a PvP battle arena!

The only shortcoming of the skill was the caster would have to stay alive until the target dies. Considering the fact the skill could not be used against bosses, it had a 100% kill rate of any other target! While killing an elite tier monster would not require 3 minutes, the skill is probably only useful in PvP. The skill would be particularly useful since the owner is Sun Xin Yu. In a 1v1 PvP battle, she could use the skill and run away with stealth. She would only need to stay low for 3 minutes to win the battle.

Everyone walked away, satisfied with the distribution of the haul. Han Ying Xue came in and picked up her quest item. While everyone else returned to town to do their own thing, Zhang Yang stayed behind to grind his levels. He had three equipment that were waiting for him to reach Level 130. As such, the motivation of equipping the equipment, as well as trying to achieve Level 130 before the world Professional League competition pushed him to another level. If he succeeds in achieving Level 130 before the match begins, he would be the only one in the battle arena wearing strong Ethereal equipment!

When everything was over, the poor Fatty Han was left alone, still camping in the Snow Spirit Canyon. He had been camping there for no less than 24 hours. Fatty Han had revealed that since he could not log out of the game, his girlfriend, Xiao Wei had to feed him his meals. He might have exaggerated the part where he could not even do it with her! All the romantic feeling would be lost if he could not give her the daily dose of the D! The poor

woman who was left with a long dry spell had called Zhang Yang a few times to complain about the quest! Even a prisoner would have occasional, conjugation visitation.

Somehow, Zhang Yang had a premonition that the cucumber stalls around Fatty Han's house would have some good business.

Two days after the fight with Chiffony, Han Ying Xue had completed all her quests and obtained the S class Inheritance, the Milkmaid Deity. As an S class Inheritance that was sided towards Priest, the skills and effect of the Inheritance had granted Han Ying Xue a massive power boost to her heals. Some of them were better than Wei Yan Er's Darkness Inheritance.

[Milkmaid Deity's Purity]: Permanently increases the damage and healing rate by 50%.

[Milkmaid Deity Transformation]: Transforms into the appearance of the Deity herself. 4000% increase in HP, 500% Defense increase. Gains 40% chance to nullify magical attacks. Further increases your damage and healing rate by 500%. You will gain 1 Milkmaid Deity Energy Point per second in this form. Milkmaid Deity Energy Points can be used to cast a few skills. Last for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours.

[Milkmaid Deity's Ripple]: Heals all allies within a 100 meters x 100 meters area. Heals 10% HP every second. Costs 10 Milkmaid Deity Energy Points to cast. Lasts for 1 second. Every additional 10 Energy Points will extend the active duration by 1 second. Requires channeling. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

[Milkmaid Deity's Protection]: Casts a protective barrier on a target, increasing the target's healing rate by 20%. You may only cast one barrier at a time. Last for 1 minute. Cooldown: 30 seconds. Cost: 5,000 MP. Range: 30 meters

[Emergency Portal]: Creates a pathway to escape. The portals should be no further away by 40 meters from each other. Players can enter through any side of the portal. Each usage of the portal will prevent the player from reusing the portal for 30 seconds. Portal will last for 5 minutes or until it is destroyed. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

[Chain Healing]: Heals multiple targets. The first target will restore 300% magic attack as HP. The skill will jump onto a nearby target which will restore 200% magic attack as HP. The skill will jump onto the third and last target which will restore 100% magic attack as HP. Cooldown: 1 minute. Casting time: 2 seconds.

Han Ying Xue was already a super healer since the beginning of the game. After acquiring so many skills, she had practically become the embodiment of healing itself!

"The skill {Emergency Portal} is very useful for evading a boss skill." A few of the guild member had beginning to formulate a battle plan using all of Han Ying Xue skill and offered their insights to Zhang Yang.

"I still think that the [Milkmaid Deity's Ripple] was the strongest skill. With 100 EP, she could heal all players within 100-meter

square to full HP. The AoE is just too big! How many players would fit in a 100x100 area?!"

Zhang Yang agreed. The skill was indeed powerful. First, its healing amount. Second, the AoE size was so large, it could be compared with a [Forbidden Scroll]! Naturally, the skill had restrictions for being so strong. The skill can only be used during the Transformation skill.

With such a powerful healer in hand, the later Inheritance quest boss for Sun Xin Yu would be extremely easy! In truth, even if the boss has a massive AoE attack skill, Han Ying Xue could counter the skill by activating her Inheritance Transformation. With an array of skills to preserve the life of the players, all they had to do was to attack!

Even though it was slightly troublesome, the party gathered again and managed to take down the Inheritance quest boss within 2 hours! Sun Xin Yu's Inheritance quest boss was defeated within 2 hours! Not long after that, Sun Xin Yu acquired her own S class Inheritance!

Zhang Yang was extremely pleased. So happy, that he had been smiling all day! How could he not be? There were only six S class Inheritance in the entire game and Lone Desert Smoke alone had three of them. Furthermore, all three of them shared the same bed, bathing in each other's sweat, entwined with each other intimately and intensely.

As Zhang Yang was celebrating, the poor Fatty Han was still shivering in the pile of snow in the Snow Spirit Canyon, still

waiting for the wretched Fox Snow Spirt!



# Chapter 619: The Secret

---

Fatty Han was still camping under a pile of snow even after Sun Xin Yu obtained her Inheritance. Since no one really knows when the Fox Snow Spirt will appear, Fatty Han could end up camping for weeks! Luckily, Fatty Han was commanded by Zhang Yang himself, if someone else were to instruct Fatty Han to camp that long, Fatty Han would have stuffed that person into an oven and had him camp inside there for as long as Fatty Han liked.

Someone in the cold, lonely and dark forest, Fatty Han screamed into the snow, muffling his voice as he yelled, "F\*\*\*\*CK THIS SH\*\*\*\*T!"

Back to Sun Xin Yu, her Shadow Dancer Inheritance was particularly famous in her past life and had earned its fame by one skill, the {Dance and Slash}.

[Dance and Slash]: Master the arts of the true stealth. Attacks will not forcefully displace the caster's invisibility, enabling the caster to use all skills that could only be used during stealth. The skills require 10 Shadow Dancer Energy Points to activate. Lasts for 10 seconds. Every additional 1 Energy Point will increase the duration of the skill by 1 second. Cooldown: 30 seconds.

The skill does provide an almost permanent invisibility. Even players like Zhang Yang who could track and trace invisible players, would not properly land a hit against players who have such a skill! The best part of it all was that the player could use skills like {Ambush} which are restricted to {Stealth}-only states.

[Ambush]: Attacks the target with the primary weapon, deals 300% physical damage. Ignores all Defense and has a 60% chance of landing a Critical hit. Skill can only be activated in stealth mode. Required: Dagger. Cost: 60 Stamina.

{Ambush} is a Thief's strongest skill in terms of damage. Sadly, it could only be used during invisibility. Under normal circumstances, that is. For Sun Xin Yu's case, {Dance and Slash} allows Sun Xin Yu to use {Ambush} unconditionally. Now, the only constraint Sun Xin Yu would face is the cost of the skill. Since the skill had no cooldown period, Thief class players were limited to their Stamina count. Since each skill will consume 60 Stamina, it was equivalent to 6 seconds of cooldown.

By then, most of the players who found their initial Inheritance fragments had already completed their quests and acquired their Inheritance. Among Zhang Yang's core party members, only Daffodil Daydream and Fantasy Sweetheart had not yet acquired Inheritances.

Essentially, it was not that hard to acquire an Inheritance. It's just that higher class Inheritance will indefinitely be difficult to acquire. The lowest Class Inheritance in Zhang Yang core party was a B class. Hence, Daffodil Daydream and Fantasy Sweetheart had set their goals higher. C class was never good but A class was too hard for them to undergo the entire quest ordeal. By the very least, they wanted to obtain a B class. Of course, A class would be their first choice.

After waiting for a painful 11 days, Fatty Han finally called Zhang Yang. With tears rolling down his cheeks, the man cried out loud

as if he has found his long-lost wife. "I'VE FINALLY CAPTURED THE BLOODY FOX!"

However, right after he had captured the fox and informed Zhang Yang of the good news, the man logged out immediately and went to the toilet to settle, in real-time, 4 days' worth of bath-debt. Within the four days, even when going to answer nature's call, Fatty Han had refused to take off his gaming helmet and would have Xiao Wei led him to the toilet. Xiao Wei had even complained that since the man had not taken a proper bath for 4-f\*cking-days, the man stank like a rotten fish!

The in-game time was tweaked to be 300% faster than real time. Even though Zhang Yang had spent a great deal of time in the game, grinding was still extremely time-consuming. 4 days' worth of real time had only earned Zhang Yang 2% experience points.

Fatty Han took a great, relaxing bath and came back to the game.

When Zhang Yang appeared beside Fatty Han after using the [Party Summon Order], Zhang Yang grinned and teased, "Huhu. I see that you're still alive and well. I expected you to lose some weight!"

"Hahaha! Right you are my friend. Right you are. Just so you know, it's been 4 days since I ate that meat! Just now, when Xiao Wei and I was taking a bath together, I gave her my fishing rod for her and she took like a champ! After one session of tug and pull, I gave her another sea cucumber—"

"AHH YES! Enough. I don't need to hear about your adventures in the bathroom. Let's move on with the quest," said Zhang Yang quickly as he interjected Fatty Han.

Along the way, Fatty Han showed the little Fox Snow Spirit to Zhang Yang and complained.

"What a troublesome quest!"

Fatty Han had never been a man of patience. In fact, he was the opposite of that, just like the little girl. 11 days of camping in the snow was just too long. "Little Yang, I swear to god, if the quest reward is not as promising as you said it is, I'm going to take Xiao Wei to your house and bang her with my room door open! I'll see how patient you'll be! I'll make sure Xiao Wei gets the best orgasm there! Her moans will pierce all your walls! Even at night, when you're asleep, I'll be f\*cking her till kingdom come! I'll---"

"Please.." Zhang Yang chuckled. "Relax my friend. The quest reward will definitely be awesome. You'll kneel down to thank me later!"

"Poppycok! Are you only saying that to scare me off?!"

"What?! Hmph. Suit yourself. Just don't come over to my house."

The two of them tracked through the snow and flew across lands, arriving at Kronoss' house fairly quickly. Fatty Han hand over a small cage with the snow white fox.

"I would never have thought that a person as barbaric as you could actually capture a Fox Snow Spirit." Kronoss could barely contain his surprise. "Hunter, I must say, you may not have the proper appearance of a hunter, but you have the ability and capability of one. Now, I have truly seen the world."

Fatty Han rolled his eyes as he could not believe the man had just commented on his body size. It was, after all, a taboo.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Hunt the Fox Snow Spirit. Obtained 500,000,000 Experience Points!’

SHRING!

With the 500 million experience points, Zhang Yang had immediately shot up by a level. Zhang Yang had accumulated to 78%, and so, with the system award, Zhang Yang gained a level instantly. On the other hand, Fatty Han had only just reached Level 120. His experience point gauge was practically at 0%. The amount of experience points reward had only pushed it up to 34%. That amount of experience points was worth 10 days of continuous grinding! As such, the number of days, he had spent camping had awarded him rather fairly.

"F\*ck! Little Yang! You f\*cking leecher! You've done nothing at all and you got the same quest reward! I'm so jealous..." Fatty Han could have cried then.

Zhang Yang laughed and patted his back. "Don't you know that

guidance requires some fees?"

"Oh really now...?"

Kronoss was not too smart of an A.I. Hence, even when Zhang Yang and Fatty Han was talking, he had started his own conversation with Fatty Han.

"Hunter, I had promised you that I will reveal a secret in exchange for the capture of the Fox Snow Spirit." Kronoss sat down and poured himself a cup of wine. "Back then, when I was much younger. I was hunting for a white grizzly bear in the mountains. Incidentally, when I got lost, I stumbled upon a cave which led me to the discovery of a huge secret."

"What secret?" Fatty Han asked. His curiosity was the same as a 5-year-old girl.

Kronoss laughed at his reaction. He did not directly answer Fatty Han but started a new question instead. "Do you know about the 10 Legendary Beasts?"

Fatty Han widened his eyes but ended up squinting them as he had no clue about the man was talking. He was another meat-headed fighter. He had little to no care about the game's lore. To him, all of the lore and setting were just works of fiction. However, the bloody bugger did not even know when and where the first and second World War had taken place. How would someone as ignorant and oblivious as him dive into the details of the game?

Zhang Yang himself was not too sure, however, he tried his luck. "Are you talking about dragons and phoenixes?"

Kronoss nodded his head. "Correct. Dragon and Phoenix are considered to be among the 10 Legendary Beast. There are others such as the Sky Devourer, The Golden Beast, Ten-Tailed Fox, The Hundred Headed Being, and many more. Those Legendary Beast possess powers that rival the god! Since there were only ten of them in the world, only a few fortunate people have seen their appearance. It has been a few thousands of years since their last appearance hence, their presence in the world had turned into myth and folklore."

As such, Zhang Yang understood that Kronoss had indeed laid eyes on one. It should be the last quest reward. The Phoenix!

Fatty Han was proactive in a way and quickly asked the old man the real question. "Old fart. You're saying, when you were younger, the secret that you had stumbled upon was related to the 10 Legendary Beasts?"

"That's right! You're sharp there, young Hunter!" Kronoss snapped his fingers.

"You'd bet I am! I am the kind of person who does not show off his knowledge! I'm a genius who acts like an idiot!" said Fatty Han with a proud face.

Zhang Yang dropped cold sweat. He could have just punched the fatso in his face. Kronoss would not have praised Fatty Han if he

was not a Hunter. No matter how well did Fatty Han perform, Kronoss would not overly praise him. It was only done so because of the quest dictated it. Like the Battle Companion's damage, everything will be counted as the owner's DPS!

Kronoss returned to the main topic and said, "Back then, what I saw was a burning phoenix. Based on the ancient legend, when a Phoenix burns itself, it will be reborn again! Although the Phoenix could emerge back to life, the poor beast will lose all its memories, like a newborn baby! If the Phoenix has taken a fatal blow, it will still undergo the rebirth process since dying and killing oneself makes no difference to it. However, after being reborn, the Phoenix will be exposed to great danger. Since the newborn baby Phoenix must learn from its environment, it could be picked up by a human to train as a pet! How shameful would that be for the other Legendary Beast!"

Fatty Han smiled from ear to ear and asked, "Old fart, did you or did you not capture the Phoenix?"

"Ahh. I wanted to. But the Phoenix had made preparations. The Phoenix had set the entire place on fire. It was too hot then, I could not enter the cave!" Kronoss shook his head. "After 30 years, I have been thinking of a way capture the Legendary beast. However, no matter how many devices I have crafted, there was no way for me to enter the fiery pit!"

Kronoss took a sip and sighed heavily. "I'm old. My bones are cracking and I can no longer draw a bow like before. Rather than throwing away my life to hunt the Phoenix and soar to the sky on its back, I'd rather enjoy my life here, sipping wine and smoking



cigars."

Fatty Han was holding in his frustration. "It has been 30 years? In that case, the Phoenix should have finished its rebirthing process!"

"Nah..." the old man shook his hands. "Based on the lore, when a Phoenix rebirths, it will take a very long time. In fact, when the rebirthing was complete, the baby phoenix will consume the fire around it as nourishment. I had only just been there a few days ago, the fire was still burning strong. The Phoenix had not yet completed its rebirthing phase."

"Old man. Where is it?" Zhang Yang could not take it any longer. Fatty Han had been asking irrelevant questions.

"Hmm." Kronoss grinned. He took out a long cigar and lit it up. After he took a deep puff, the old man raised an eyebrow. "What's the matter? Intrigued?"

"Of course! As a Hunter, there no way I would let such a beast to roam free!" Fatty Han was excited yet he knew the exact words to say to Kronoss.

"Well said! Well said!" Kronoss placed his cigar down. He held out his old wrinkled hands and took hold of Fatty Han's flabby shoulders. "I've given you the secret. However, there's nothing more I can do to help. It depends on your luck now!"

"Old fart! Leave it to me."

"It's in a cave, located at the western side of the Londulr Hill. The cave is extremely small and the entrance is nothing but a tiny creek. You would have to keep both eyes open at all time!"

Kronoss gave Fatty Han a good slap on his shoulders and said, "Young man, may Artemis, the Goddess of the Hunt be with you!"

"I will give it my best!"

Zhang Yang was excited. Now that he had the location of the Phoenix, he hoped that the system would not design any more f\*cking troublesome quests for them.

# Chapter 620: Blazing Fire Phoenix

---

Zhang Yang was excited, but he was not as excited as Fatty Han. In fact, when the two of them left the straw house, Fatty Han was practically dragging Zhang Yang out. The two of them flew towards Longulr Hills with their flying mount. With the exact location marked on the world map, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han had taken roughly 20 minutes to land.

The hill was completely devoid of trees. There was a good reason for it as well. Before Zhang Yang had landed, he could feel that the air around him was hot. It was a complete opposite of where he had come from. The air was so hot it felt like Zhang Yang was hovering over hot steam.

Before landing, Zhang Yang had advised Fatty Han to lower his Sensitivity setting to the minimum. The two circled around the hill and could not find any creeks or caves. Kronoss had mentioned that it was going to be hard to locate the entrance to the cave. Hence, with great reluctance, the both of them got off their mount and traveled on foot.

The hill was not small. Additionally, their search was narrowed down to the west side of the hill. However, in less than 10 minutes, Zhang Yang found the narrow entrance in between two suspiciously placed, large rocks. Fatty Han came over and laughed when he noticed the entrance was about his size. "Please, don't tell me that the Phoenix is the size of a chicken. I mean, how else could it enter that cave in the first place!?"

"Please. If you can walk through the entrance, so can the

Phoenix."

"What are you trying to say? Am I as cool as the Phoenix?"

"Please bro. You're not cool. You're hot!"

"Hahahaha!"

The two of them laughed and chat as they proceed into the cave. However, before the darkness engulfed them, both of them had started taking damage.

It was an attack that could not be blocked nor reduced. Initially, the damage were dropping "-1" and "-1". However, they stepped further into the cave the numbers shot up higher and higher. Eventually, in just 40 meters into the cave, the damage they received per second had jumped as high as 500!

Neither of them knew how deep does the cave goes. If they were to recklessly walk deeper inside, the damage may reach as high as 10,000 damage per second!

"What do we do, Little Yang?!" Fatty Han started to be nervous.

Zhang Yang's body started to sweat. He wiped away the dripping sweat on his face and tried consuming a bottle of [Fire Resistance Potion]. However, after taking a bottle, the damage remained the same. As time was of the essence, Zhang Yang had no other choice but to rely on his Inheritance Transformation.

"Go back. Out of the cave now. After we heal ourselves back to 100%, we will use our Transformation skills to rush in."

Zhang Yang felt that if the two Korean players could do it, so can they. He could not believe that they had more HP than Zhang Yang and Fatty Han after activating their Inheritance Transformations. Back then, the two Koreans had acquired the Phoenix pet when they were Level 150. At most, they should have 800,000 HP with a full set of Holy tier equipment. Naturally, they would have higher maximum HP if they had a strong Inheritance classes. Zhang Yang remembered that the two of them were just normal players with C or D class Inheritances. Or else, they would already be strong without the Phoenix pet.

Fatty Han was stunned at his sudden outrageous proposal. "Are you sure you wanna use the Transformation here? Who knows, we might run into a boss later?"

"We'll cross that bridge if we come to it. For now, do you want a Legendary Beast as your pet?"

"Tch! Who knows whether the old fart was telling the truth!? We are only Level 120. How is it possible to obtain the Phoenix Celestial tier pet? At most, I think the Phoenix would be an Ethereal tier!"

Zhang Yang blinked repeatedly. He could not believe that the man had said something that made sense! Still, his prediction and assumption was true to a certain extent. Even though the old man

Kronoss sounded as if he was exaggerating the prowess of the Phoenix, the system would never just release a Celestial tier pet at the current stage of the game. It would break the game's balance!

Having a powerful Inheritance Transformation comes with a price. It has 72 hours long cooldown! However, a Celestial pet will always be a Celestial pet!

Zhang Yang snickered awkwardly. "It's fine. At the most, the cooldown is 3 days. There aren't really any bosses to fight these days, anyway. Might as well use it now!"

Fatty Han crossed his arms as his mount was gnawing on recovery snacks. He nodded eventually after Zhang Yang had explained the risk of not activating Transformations. Although he agreed, Fatty Han felt that it was a wasted usage of Transformations.

They were still in the cave, since Zhang Yang had realized that they were able to consume recovery snacks despite taking damage. As they HP reached the high point, both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han activated their Transformation skills and flew deeper into the cave. While Zhang Yang wings were wide and radiant, Fatty Han's were dull, dark and spiky. Zhang Yang's character was glowing brightly like the sun while Fatty Han's character had turned pale white. He had even fangs growing in his mouth! Side by side, Zhang Yang was more on the cool side, while Fatty Han was more towards evil.

Fatty Han sulked and said, "Next time, don't Transform next to me. You'll complete overshadow me with your handsomeness!"

"Ah huh. Right. Don't waste time. 2 hours is not much time to waste." Zhang Yang did not fly. Instead, he accompanied Fatty Han on the ground. The useless Fatty Han does not have flight ability even after activating his Transformation skill. He could gain a temporary flight ability by using {Bat Form}. However, the EP required to activate would mean it would last for only 30 seconds and have 30 minutes long cooldown. It was a skill to restore HP instead of flying.

The two of them sprinted. As they did, the temperature in the cave started to grow higher. The damage they received from the burn had increased drastically from 500 to 700, and even reached as high as 5,000! By then, the cave walls were glowing red-hot. Even the ground felt soft and squishy! The rocks below the ground that had melted!

"Holy %@\$#%^@\$@! This is @#%^&@\$% hot! F\*ck me!" cried Fatty Han.

"I'm almost out of HP!"

Zhang Yang frowned. "Use {Bat Form} to suck my HP!"

Zhang Yang smiled. "Genius!"

At that moment, both Fatty Han and Zhang Yang had reached their maximum EP. He then split apart into 10 individual bats and latched themselves onto Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang spread out his wings and shot like a missile as quickly as possible.

"Fatty! Don't revert back to your human form even when your HP is fully recovered! I can still take us further!"

"Okay!"

The bats that had latched on to Zhang Yang were immune to the fire damage around, allowing Fatty Han to gain a temporary form of invincibility. After 30 seconds, Fatty Han had reverted back to his normal form and had regained full HP. The damage around had reached a staggering 10,000 damage. Fatty Han could last for 5 minutes with his 3,000,000 HP.

Shush!

Zhang Yang managed to zoom out a tiny hole and came to a large chamber. Fatty Han's {Bat Form} ended just in time and he landed on the floor.

The chamber was well lit and it was as large as a basketball stadium. The walls, ground, and even the ceiling were glowing ominously. There were sparks of fire that burst out of the walls. Sitting quietly in the deepest corner of the cave were two red eggs. The eggs were as large as a American football. Since it was large and possess a deeper red hue, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were able to spot it immediately.



"Little Yang!" Fatty Han widened his eyes in delight. "There are two eggs!"

In the beginning, Fatty Han was extremely frustrated. He had thought that there would only be one Phoenix and had kept on debating with himself. Being a brother, he should let Zhang Yang take it since he was the superstar. However...deep down, he too wanted the Phoenix! When Fatty Han saw that there was one for each of them, he was extremely grateful!

Was this the bug in the game that the two Koreans had mentioned about? There should be only one Phoenix but now, there are two eggs!

So be it, take the egg first!

"Go!" Zhang Yang yelled.

Fatty Han sprinted with all his might. Zhang Yang flew closely behind him and the two of them swiped one egg each.

[Blazing Fire Phoenix: Incubation Phase] (Hunter's Pet)

Use: Drip blood over the shell to form a pact and obtain a Blazing Fire Phoenix as your pet.

Binds upon pick-up.

Hm. Bound. It was expected.

The two of them quickly tore a piece of [Teleportation Scroll] but was quickly interrupted by the damage tick. Teleporting requires uninterrupted channeling!

Zhang Yang quickly equipped the [Lover's Charm: Yang] and had quickly asked Han Ying Xue to put on hers. After a few seconds, Zhang Yang disappeared with a quick blink. As he arrived at Han Ying Xue's side, Zhang Yang put on the [Party Summon Order] and pulled Fatty Han out of the sea of fire.

"FUAH~ Cool air!! I'm alive! I'm alive!" Fatty Han dropped to the ground and sighed heavily. He spread his legs and hands all over the floor, not realizing Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had left him alone.

"Hey! Wait!" Fatty Han got up and chased after Zhang Yang.

"Let's crack the eggs!"

"Eggs?" Han Ying Xue turned around quicker than Zhang Yang. She was practicing cookery at that moment. She had learned that through food and cooking, a woman could reach a man's heart! She had learned it through woman's magazines and other female friends like Daffodil Daydream. If she were to ask Fatty Han, the open closet pervert would say something like, to earn a man's love, the woman must be able to pleasure his dingdong at all times. After that, she would hold on to it and never let go!

"Little Yang and I had just obtained a Phoenix's egg!" cried Fatty Han.

"I see. Well, hand it over. I can try and make Phoenix's egg omelet!"

Zhang Yang laughed and took out his egg and gave it to Han Ying Xue. "You can try!"

Han Ying Xue cocked her head and raise her eyebrow. When she took the egg, it immediately disappeared from her hands. It reappeared inside Zhang Yang inventory. It was the "bound" effect. Once an item is bound to a player, it cannot be taken away forcefully.

With shaky hands, Fatty Han took out his egg. With another hand, he used one of his arrowheads and prick the tip of his finger and drip the flowing blood onto the Phoenix egg.

Once the blood touched the surface of the shell, the egg made a cracking sound, followed by the appearance of a big crack on the shell. The cracking continued and eventually, the small fiery bird was nestled on his palm. There was still a tiny hat-like shell that was stuck on its fluffy little head which Fatty Han helped to remove. The chick was completely dyed in a deep red color. The newly formed feathers on its body had a flowing, swirly effect which made it extremely beautiful.

"Woah!" Han Ying Xue cried. "It's so beautiful!"

She turned to Zhang Yang swiftly and said, "Get me one!"

Zhang Yang shrunk away from her and sulked. It was a Unique beast. One of a kind. Or rather, two of a kind!

"Why? What's mine is yours! What's yours is mine!" Zhang Yang laughed awkwardly.

He too, took out his egg and dripped his blood on it.

[Blazing Fire Phoenix] (Black-Steel Flying Battle Mount)

Level: 0

HP: 50

Defense: 0

Attack: 3 – 5 (Melee Attack, Fire Damage) (Attack Interval: 2 seconds)

Skills:

[Evolve]: Can evolve to gain a tier. Next tier: Green-Copper. Level Requirement: 10.

Since Zhang Yang was not a Hunter and the Phoenix pet was a battle pet specifically made for Hunter, the Phoenix pet had become a mount in his hands. The difference between the norm was normal mounts will be in the state of a pet before it reached Level 30. On the other hand, the Phoenix pet was already summoned out as a Battle Mount!

However, at Level 0, the Phoenix could not be mounted. How could he? One single step and the pretty bird will be squashed. Hence, the Phoenix pet then could not be mounted.

"Oh no. Oh no. Oh no. Don't tell me I've wasted 11 days camping in the snow just to get a Black-Steel tier pet!? WTF!? COME ON! WHY ARE YOU DOING THIS TO ME!" Fatty Han screamed to the high heavens which immediately drew the attention of a few players around for a brief second.

"...Stupid fool!" Zhang Yang slapped Fatty Han in the face.

"Look at the skill! Don't you see that it could evolve to gain tier?!"

"So what?! The next tier is only going to be a Green-Copper!" Fatty Han retaliated and cried like a kid that had lost his toy.

"Oh my god! May the great Buddha have mercy on your soul! Stupid f\*ck! Who told you that the highest tier it can reach is Green-Copper?! There's still Gray-Silver, Yellow-Gold, and many more tiers!" Zhang Yang snarled.

"...Oh!" Fatty Han stopped sulking and smiled innocently. "How come I never thought about it! Haha! My bad!"

"F\*ck off, you! Go and train or something." Zhang Yang slapped Fatty Han in the back.

"Owwie!" Fatty Han grunted and left. "Thanks for everything, Little Yang. I'll go and grind the little chicken's Level for now!"

Han Ying Xue insisted on continuing to practice her cooking Profession, so, Zhang Yang was left alone to do his own thing. Zhang Yang bade Han Ying Xue farewell and went off to a field packed with monsters. Right there, Zhang Yang summoned the little fiery bird and let it roam around for a while. The little feather ball had imprinted Zhang Yang as its mother and stayed around Zhang Yang. Every time Zhang Yang moved a step, the little chick would have chirped a little and followed Zhang Yang closely. The little chick would occasionally burn a few grass around it with its tiny flamethrower.

If Wei Yan Er was there, she would definitely be pestering Zhang Yang to hold on to the chick. He could not deny that he too was dazzled by its cuteness. Its big eyes were almost half of its head!

"Big brother! Felice could feel a tremendous amount of energy from within the little bird!" said Felice after Zhang Yang summoned her to start killing monsters. Previously, when Zhang Yang and Fatty Han was in the oven, he could not have summoned her, for she might be burnt to death!

"Ji! Ji! Ji ji!" The little Phoenix chirped happily as it saw the big sister standing next to Zhang Yang.

"Hm. Little Felice, this bird is a Legendary Beast! Probably the last of its kind!" said Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang kited a few hundred of monsters with a single trail and wallop them all with a single {God of War Crushing Strike}. The counter for the God of War Transformation skill had not yet ended ever since they obtained the egg from the cave.

‘-370,777!’

‘-362,023!’

...

More than 100 damage texts jumped out, covering and overlapping each other after Zhang Yang struck the ground. The monsters around were elite tiers. The strike dealt more than 30% of their HP in an instant. Felice morphed into her Dragonhawk form and shot out to the field to finish them off.

Even though the little Phoenix was still in its juvenile stage, it did not stand helplessly. Instead, the chick ran up to several monsters and spat some fire. Although the little chick could not deal much damage, Zhang Yang was extremely surprised to see that its flamethrower attack could hit three targets at the same time!

Was that its normal attack? It was the same when Zhang Yang had fought the dragon. Its dragon breath skill could deal AoE attack damage even though it was not an active skill. In fact, it was also a magic attack which could ignore Defense!

Woah...As expected of a Celestial tier pet. Even though it was still a baby, it was already frighteningly powerful!

With a few more attacks from Zhang Yang in his Transformation skill, all the monsters that he had kited around were killed in a matter of minutes. As such, the little chick gained so many levels that the pillar of light did not seem to dissipate, like it was permanently there!

[Blazing Fire Phoenix] (Green Copper Flying Battle Mount)

Level: 10

HP: 1,200

Defense: 100

Attack: 183 – 243 (Melee Attack, Fire Damage) (Attack Interval: 2 seconds)

Skills:

[Fire Build (Passive)]: Gains immunity against Fire attack. Able to



consume Fire-based attacks and restore the same amount of HP based on the attack. Receives 50% increased Frost Damage.

[Evolve]: Can evolve to gain a tier. Next tier: Gray-Silver. Level Requirement: 20.

...

A short while later, Zhang Yang train killed more monsters.

[Blazing Fire Phoenix] (Gray-Silver Flying Battle Mount)

Level: 20

HP: 4,000

Defense: 300

Attack: 1,017 – 1,217 (Melee Attack, Fire Damage) (Attack Interval: 2 seconds)

Skills:

[Fire Build (Passive)]: Gains immunity against Fire attack. Able to consume Fire-based attacks and restore the same amount of HP based on the attack. Receives 50% increase Frost Damage.

[Reborn from the Ashes (Passive)]: Revives from the flames upon death. Restores 100% HP and resets all skills that has less than a 24 hours cooldown. Cooldown: 24 hours.

[Evolve]: Can evolve to gain a tier. Next tier: Yellow-Gold. Level Requirement: 50

...

After a whole day of grinding, Zhang Yang was able to push the Phoenix's Level to Level 124, which was the current limit since Zhang Yang was also Level 124. As such, the final result for the Phoenix was simply horrifying!

[Blazing Fire Phoenix] (Mythical Flying Battle Mount)

Level: 124

HP: 267,720 (Vitality Aura)

Defense: 5,200

Attack: 31,436 – 41,436 (Melee Attack, Fire Damage) (Attack Interval: 2 seconds)

Skills:

[Fire Build (Passive)]: Gains immunity against Fire attacks. Able to consume Fire-based attack and restore the same amount of HP based on the attack. Receives 50% increased Frost Damage.

[Reborn from the Ashes (Passive)]: Revive from the flames upon death. Restores 100% HP and resets all skills that has less than 24 hours cooldown. Cooldown: 24 hours.

[Phoenix Transformation]: Gains 2000% HP, 300% Attack, 300% Defense. Lasts for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours.

[Forbidden Firefall]: Summons a rain of fire, deals damage equivalent to the current melee Fire attack every second to all targets within 100 meters x 100 meters area. Lasts for 30 seconds. Can only be used in {Phoenix Transformation}. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

[Adaptability]: Can shrink itself to fit in smaller environments.

[Evolve]: Can evolve to gain a tier. Next tier: Ethereal. Level Requirement: 140

[Shared Life (Passive)]: Combines the HP of both the pet and the master.

# Chapter 621: Death Arbiter

---

"It keeps getting stronger!" Every time Fatty Han's Phoenix pet evolved into the next tier, Fatty Han would never fail to report it to Zhang Yang until the pet reached Level 120. By then, Fatty Han's voice was already cracking with joy.

Zhang Yang could understand why Fatty Han was so excited about the Phoenix, as well as why Hundred Shots would be able to stand over A class Inheritance players despite only having a C class Inheritance... or was it B class? Zhang Yang could not remember it clearly. The reason was due to the skill [Phoenix Transformation]. If Zhang Yang's Phoenix had such a skill, the Red Dragon pet that Hundred Shot would definitely possess a similar skill. The skill had to have similar effects as well.

When a player activates the Inheritance Transformation, the mount would not obtain the Transformation boost effect. Even though B class Inheritance and lower could be mounted after Transforming, the added bonus of the battle mount would be too small. However, the Phoenix pet's Transformation skill was like a pet's version of an Inheritance Transformation skill. The power when the master and the beast unleashes their Transformation skills would be ridiculous!

The pet phoenix will become stronger as time goes, which allows growth, just like a player gaining more power via equipment. Let's do a mental comparison between the strength of a regular battle mount and the Phoenix pet.

Player X is an A class Inheritance player with 150,000 HP, (The

highest non-tank player), with an average attack damage of 35,000 (based on Zhang Yang own's attack), and owns a Violet-Platinum pet (normal) with 35,000 attack damage.

Player Z is a B class Inheritance player that has all the same stats and equipment of Player X. Player Z's pet will be the Phoenix pet with 150,000 HP and 35,000 attack damage.

The only difference between Player X and Z would be their Inheritances.

After activating their Inheritance Transformation skill, Player X would have 4,500,000 HP and 175,000 attack damage (along with the damage of the pet).

Player Z would have over 6,000,000 HP. (Shared Life + Transformation bonus of both pet and the player). Attack damage of 210,000!

Hence, the player with the Phoenix pet will overwhelm the other player despite having lower class Inheritance. It was better and more flexible since the pet and the player would activate their Transformation skills at different times.

The strongest skill of the Phoenix pet was the skill {Forbidden Firefall} that can only be used in the Transformation form. It was a full-screen Tornado Cleave! A super-enhanced AoE attack skill! Plus, it was also 30 seconds of DoT! A miniature version of a {Forbidden Scroll}!

No wonder the skill could have the name tag "Forbidden"!

Thought the Phoenix pet does not have many attacking skills in its normal form, its attack would already be enough to cause havoc! When the Blazing Fire Phoenix reaches Level 100, its normal attack, the flamethrower attack would reach as far as 10 meters. Even though it was not very wide, it was similar to an AoE attack! All targets in the line of attack will receive damage! Furthermore, it had only a 2-second attack interval! The damage was either equivalent, or stronger than the Thunderhawk!

The only drawback of the Phoenix pet was that it could not learn additional skills from skill books. Instead, it will gain skills as it evolves.

As a conclusion, the pet truly deserved to be called a Legendary Beast!

"Guild master. I have urgent news for you. The Myth is issuing us a challenge to duel!" Just when Zhang Yang was about to test out the Phoenix's attack capability in further maps, he received a message from a random guild member.

Zhang Yang was surprised but he remained calm. "The Myth? Hmph. What does Liu Wei want now. Does he not know when to stop?"

The guild The Myth was a "rejected" customer of Morning Town. Like the poor, unfortunate players of Japan and Korea, they would have to travel a long distance through the Ten Barren Sea to reach

the Chaos Realm. As such, it was extremely inconvenient, not to mention the time wasted. Hence, the trouble that was self-imposed on them had made them rather grumpy.

"They have a Berserker! He is very strong! Right now, he is waiting in Morning Town! He has challenged only Lone Desert Smoke and had already defeated most of us!"

Zhang Yang snickered. "Alright. Sent Galileo in. Let the two Berserkers have a go!"

Zhang Yang had not cared about the menial dispute and continued on to the outskirts of Morning Town to kill. Compared to Zhang Yang himself, the Blazing Fire Phoenix's AoE attack were much stronger! One single blast of fire could cover an area so long that it could rival {Blast Wave}! Though the Phoenix's fire attacks were extremely potent and fatal!

At such rate of killing, Zhang Yang had the confidence to gain a Level in just 5 days! That is, if they had enough monsters to kill in the first place. He wanted to reach Level 130 before he departs for Los Angeles for the World Championship. If he could, he would be able to equip a few new equipment! Felice and Phoenix would also gain a new tier upgrade!

"Guild master. I've lost."

Roughly half an hour later, the little boy had reported his loss with a solemn voice.

Zhang Yang was thrown. "How could it be?"

The little boy was a skilled player who learned at an extremely fast pace. His PvP skills were also above average! He also had the B class Light and Shadow Inheritance and an array of strong equipment. Yet, he lost the fight? Zhang Yang was greatly intrigued. "Who is the enemy?"

"A player named Death Arbiter. Level 120. His equipment was better than mine. He too, had a B class Inheritance. I was completely outmatched by his skill! I lost the match badly!" said Galileo.

Death Arbiter.

For someone to defeat Galileo in a fair fight, the player must be someone strong and not some random player who had come out of nowhere. Death Arbiter was a famous player in Zhang Yang's previous lifetime. In fact, the person could be one of the top 3 Berserkers in the whole world. The problem was, he had recalled that Death Arbiter was a core member of Rolling Rocks guild. Perhaps, due to Zhang Yang interference, something had changed the outcome, causing Death Arbiter to move to The Myth instead.

"There's no shame in losing. Just don't give up. Improve. Overcome. Improvise. Train harder so you could fight back next time!"

Zhang Yang sighed. He knew it was going to be messy if he goes to the scene. However, as a guild master, he had the obligation to



retaliate. Zhang Yang unsummoned both Felice and Phoenix before teleporting back to Morning Town.

In town, Felice would not draw much attention other than regular perverts. On the other way, it's the Phoenix that he was worried about. The bird was huge and not to mention, fiery. If he had flown in with the bird, its wide 10 meters long wings and 30 meters long fiery tail would surely be the center of attention. Unlike other people, Zhang Yang does not like to attract random eyeballs to glare at him.

Zhang Yang walked casually towards the center plaza and saw Death Arbiter standing at the center of it taking all the limelight. There were buildings around the plaza which was filled with players. Players were completely jammed pack together like sardines in a can. Zhang Yang could not even move closer to the make-shift arena and could only stand behind the massive crowd. Zhang Yang wished he could join the players that were in the sky, riding on their flying mounts, rather than standing among the noisy crowd on the ground. However, thanks to the noise, Zhang Yang could pick up a few chatters regarding about the fight.

"That dude is strong! He had defeated Galileo!"

"Why? Was Galileo strong to begin with?"

"Yeah! He is the main attacker for Lone Desert Smoke secondary raid team!"

"Death Arbiter...The guy is indeed strong. Why haven't we heard

of his name before?"

"You're the only one that had never heard of his name. The guy is famous. Before he joined The Myth, Death Arbiter was the main attacker for the guild Goldilocks. However, since the guild was only a small guild. The equipment that the guild could provide was not on par. Even the guild's own Battle Team were not as strong as they could only fight in the C class Professional League. Hence, the man decided to leave the guild to join The Myth. I heard that the guild master had a high expectation of him and spent a fortune to buy him the equipment he needed. The guild master had also used all his members just to help the man to level up!"

"Holy cow! If only someone treated me the same way! I'd sell my soul to him!"

"Probably no one would."

"What does that mean?"

"I don't have to explain."

"Grrr..."

While everyone was busy chatting, Zhang Yang tried to recall the past history of Death Arbiter. He was an Orc Warrior and had a set of armor that gave off a particular metallic luster. Based on the appearance, Zhang Yang deduced that the man was wearing a full set of Mythical tier equipment. Perhaps, only the ring and necklace

were Violet-Platinum tier.

Hm...That's a lot of money spent... By then, Mythical tier equipment were extremely expensive and rare. Some of them even could not be bought with money alone. If Liu Wei had sorted out the equipment for Death Arbiter, he must have done something else than just throw out cash.

"Good job!" Liu Wei clapped his hands when Dearth Arbiter had taken down two to three more Lone Desert Smoke members that had confronted the man.

With his arms crossed, the man looked down to all the spectators and bellowed, "Is there no more strong players in Lone Desert Smoke? Is that what you have to offer? How dare you call yourself China's number one guild! You cannot even defeat a nameless player of a small guild! It's a shame that the world is looking up at a disgraceful guild!"

"Did he just insult us?"

"WTF did he just say?"

"Ayy! You wanna fight!?"

"I'll fight you here and now!"

...

Many players were stupid enough to fall for Liu Wei petty provocations and started to push forward into the plaza.

Liu Wei stood still and glared at the players with condescending eyes. "Look at you all. None of you could stand alone and fight and have to rely on numbers to defeat a single person. Such a shame. So be it. Come! Come at me with all your wrath! I shall stream this live, for the entire nation to see! See what their representative guild had fallen!"

"Pfft! Well said guild master! Lone Desert Smoke might have the numbers, but where are the strong ones!"

"Hmph! None could defeat our Death bro here!"

The players of The Myth had naturally stood with Liu Wei. In fact, there were a few other guilds members had voiced out their disdain towards Lone Desert Smoke. As such, there was nothing Lone Desert Smoke could do at the moment. All they could do was to clench their fist and swallow their pride. Streaming? There's no need to do that. The crowd around them was enough to put shame on the guild since they could not put up a solo 1v1 fight with Death Arbiter.

Death Arbiter laughed. "I do not mind a group fight. You...you... Let's see. 1,2,3,4...Hm...All 13 of you, come at me! None of you could even put a dent on me!"

"F\*CKING PRICK!"

Even fuming with rage, all the Lone Desert Smoke had not rushed in.

"Come on! Why are you not attacking?" Death Arbiter struck his axe to the ground and said, "Do you want me to replace my axe with a Level 10 White-Wood tier axe? Guild master, have someone deliver a White-Wood axe here, please. I'm afraid they would not dare to attack me if I am not using a noob axe!"

"HAHAHAHA!" Laughter blasted in the town as players from The Myth laughed with disdain. Even players that had no business in the fight had laughed as well. Naturally, the spectators were there to watch the fight. They had no inclination to support either side. However, even though most of them had a negative perception toward Liu Wei, Death Arbiter however, was able to win the support of the crowd fair and square.

In the end, a strong player will always win the support of mass.

# Chapter 622: One Sword Stroke Versus Death Arbiter

---

"You wanna go!? Let's have a go!"

Unable to resist the provocation of Death Arbiter, all 13 members of Lone Desert Smoke present there had jumped at him altogether.

"Wah! 1 v 13?!"

"Death by a player's hands would result in all experience points lost!"

"That man is bold! He could lose any one of his equipment!"

"That is what I call, balls of steel!"

The spectating players started to chat. The cheers and claps were directed towards the brave. Naturally, in that sort of situation, the audience was cheering for Death Arbiter. Liu Wei and his guild members enjoyed the show.

Zhang Yang laughed bitterly. Even though it was 13 players fighting against Death Arbiter, all 13 players were at a huge disadvantage. The highest leveled player then was only Level 110, the lowest being Level 102. At most, the strongest player there would be wearing Violet-Platinum armor and some Yellow-Gold. A guild can be strong, but only the strongest player in a guild would

have the strongest armor. Take Zhang Yang for example, even if he was the strongest player in all of China, and perhaps even the world, he had a mixture of Mythical tier equipment, 3 Violet-Platinum, and 2 Level 80 equipment that was in dire need of being swapped out!

However, the most important aspect of an equipment was the tier! Not the level but the tier! A normal player with a full set of level 110 Violet-Platinum equipment would have over 70,000 HP and around 18,000 weapon attack. (Two-handed weapon with 3.8 seconds attack interval).

On the other hand, a player with a full set of Level 110 Mythical tier equipment would have HP as high as 150,000 to 160,000, and an average weapon attack of 36,000! (Two-handed weapon with 3.8 seconds attack interval).

Furthermore, Death Arbiter had a B class Inheritance in hand. Even if he does not use his Transformation skill, he would have a higher advantage over normal players! By then, even though Inheritance players were sprouting out like mushrooms after the rain, the number was still extremely scarce. In reality, out of 10 players who were mingling in the Chaos Realm, only 1 of them would have an Inheritance. In other news, players with high-class Inheritance such as Wei Yan Er or Zhang Yang would be like searching for a four-leaf clover in a football field!

Still, Zhang Yang silently praised Death Arbiter for challenging 13 players at one go. The man showed potential, there was no doubt about it.

The battle started when Zhang Yang was still in his sea of thoughts.

It was not a battle. It was an ambush. If this was a battle, the system would have set up a 5-minute timer to allow some preparatory time. In reality, it was like a random sudden encounter in the field. You would not expect a player to pop out suddenly and say, "Hey! I'm going to attack! Have you made adequate preparations?"

However, Death Arbiter was not the everyday jack you see in the streets. Zhang Yang judged from the sidelines. With a strong swing of his axe, Death Arbiter's attack was strong enough to kill a player off with three simple swings. However, just raw power alone would not do you much in a fight. When 13 players jumped at him, he would have to take at least 50% HP as damage. However, the man was powerful. With coordinated Supporting Attacks, he had managed to avoid many attacks that could not be evaded. He had performed many moves which required one to be as quick and agile as Zhang Yang. Haymakers, uppercuts, lowkicks, clotheslines, knees, left, right hooks, the man was practically a powerful MMA fighter! More than 10 of the players who were attacking him could not connect their attacks! Death Arbiter had even used the enemy as a human shield to nullify damage!

"How strong...He had killed 3 players in just 30 seconds..."

"D\*mn. Not even Zhan Yu could be that strong..."

"Please. Didn't you hear about Zhan Yu taking on 30,000 Japan-Korea region players at the same time? He had also dealt with a



bunch of Japanese and Korean players in Anjar Castle!"

"It wasn't the same. Both attempts, he had help from NPC bosses! In fact, Zhan Yu used his Inheritance Transformation skill! Death Arbiter did not use anything!"

"Nonsense! If Zhan Yu had used his Transformation skill, don't you think that the Japanese and Korean players would not do the same?"

"I think Death Arbiter is stronger!"

"No. Zhan Yu is the best!"

As the heated discussion went on among random players, Zhang Yang paid attention to the fight instead of the random useless chattering. Amongst the audiences, there were in fact, more players supporting Zhang Yang. However, after the first few moments, Death Arbiter's popularity had risen up. As such, his name would definitely be jotted down in the list of professional players in China!

8...6...3 left.

As the number of players started to reduce, Death Arbiter's started adopting a more fleet-footed style. In the end, he had only casually used {Cripple Defense} to kill the remaining three players. Even though it was rather bold, the audience around cheered for him, for that was the kind of battle they preferred – a one-sided

massacre.

Even though PvP does not dictate a 100% chance of dropping equipment, out of the 13 players, 5 of them had unfortunately, dropped their equipment. Liu Wei had his crooks to pick them all up and arranged them nicely in a row. There were a total of 27 equipment.

They were placed blatantly in public as a public humiliation to Lone Desert Smoke.

Zhang Yang sight turned cold. His killing aura grew stronger. Just as he took the first step towards the plaza, a shadow flashed by. A large, golden-winged condor flew over the crowd and towards the plaza. Riding on the condor was a player equipped in Heavy Armor. There was a one-handed axe hanging from his waist and a large shield slung over his back. The name tag that was hanging on top of his character was none other than China's second strongest tank – One Sword Stroke.

"Liu...Wei...!" The man dropped from the air and landed with a powerful slam to the ground, creating a small crater as he did. His glare locked on Liu Wei. He pulled out his axe and pointed it boldly at Liu Wei. "It's time to settle our grudges."

"Pfft." Liu Wei cracked a smile which immediately burst into a laughter. "Hahahaha! Look who's here! It's the eunuch!" Liu Wei did not spare any second to humiliate him.

"I heard that someone chopped off your manhood! If you felt no

shame of it, I could understand that, you didn't lose much anyway. But I also heard that your wife was raped over a hundred times! It's weird seeing you still alive. I wonder where did you get the courage to look at your wife without imagining a hundred d\*cks inside her! How does it feel being a husband to a whore?"

One Sword Stroke snapped. Zhang Yang had even noticed when Liu Wei was talking, One Sword Stroke's grip on his axe was so strong, it had bent the metal handle of the axe. Just when he raised his head back to eye level, One Sword Stroke had jumped towards Liu Wei with his axe, ready to cleave Liu Wei in half.,

DANG!!!!!!!!!!!!

A large two-handed axe appeared in between the two players with Death Arbiter standing on his left, holding the axe with just one hand. With quick reflexes, Death Arbiter shoved One Sword Stroke's axe upwards and pushed him backward with his palm.

"Please...if you want to kill me, do it properly." Liu Wei snickered. "Ah! I've forgotten to tell you. When your wife was in bed, she was practically as horny as a bitch in heat. Every time I stuck it inside, she would squeeze me dry! My advice to you? Please pleasure her like how the hundred men did. Or else she might just run into the streets and whore herself out for more cocks. Oh... Perhaps, it is already too late for you. HAHAAHA!"

One Sword Stroke had enough. However, he was not alone. Liu Wei's poisonous words had angered so many spectators around, resulting in a change from cheering to massive disdain.

One Sword Stroke drew in a deep breath and changed his target towards Death Arbiter. One Sword Stroke had just arrived at the scene. He had no idea on how Death Arbiter fought.

However, from the man's masterful defense of his strike, One Sword Stroke had already concluded that the man was not to be underestimated. In fact, he might as well be as strong as Zhang Yang! There was no room for him to make a single mistake.

"I heard that you're only second to Zhan Yu, the second strongest Warrior in China. Hmm...To tell you the truth, I'm not interested in your tank ranking, but I will take away the title as Warrior! Now that Zhan Yu is hiding like a coward, I shall be taking your position for now. When the time comes, I shall destroy Zhan Yu and stand tall as the strongest warrior!" Death Arbiter laughed proudly, filled with confidence.

One Sword Stroke scoffed and chuckled.

"What's so funny?"

"Nothing. It's just...For a second there, I had actually thought that you might be stronger than Zhan Yu. But now I see...You're nowhere close to him. He might be an \*sshole. But even I would recognize the man as the strongest tank and warrior in China! No! The whole world!"

Death Arbiter gritted his teeth and snarled. "I will defeat the both of you and claim the title!"

"You can try."

"And I will. When I do, I will dance on your corpse."

One Sword Stroke was not an ordinary man. He was, after all, the guild master of Imperial Sky. Even though his wrath was so strong that it could poison a man, he was still able to control his rage and focus on the real threat. A guild's strength is decided by the strength of all the members in it. However, it requires guidance. Guidance that would never falter in the face of despair.

Lone Desert Smoke was under the care of Zhang Yang. Crimson Rage had Snow Seeker. Radiance had Sword of Light. Imperial Sky? One Sword Stroke, of course.

The man with the entire guild on his shoulder shan't be shaken by mere provocations! For he holds the pillar that supports the entire guild. If he falls, so does the guild.

One Sword Stroke equipped his shield and his axe.

"Let me give you an advice. There is a fine line between courage and recklessness. Know the difference now before you ending up on the wrong side."

"Hahaha! Who you think you are? Trying to lecture me when you should take a good look at yourself!"

"I don't need to. I know where I stand. Do you?"

Death Arbiter summoned his mount, a Mechanical Quad-Winged Tiger. "Enough! Time to end this!"

Zhang Yang could not hear their conversation. When he saw Death Arbiter summoning his mount, he could not help but feel a little jealous. The Mechanical Quad-Wing Tiger was a product of the Engineering Profession. The recipe to craft the item was extremely rare! Furthermore, when the mount is crafted it will be bound to the crafter. Hence, only a player with the Engineering Profession could craft and use it for themselves. It was a flying mount, a Mythical tier at that! At the stage where only a handful of players had reached Level 120, that mount was strong!

On the other side, One Sword Stroke's mount, the Golden-Winged Condor was just a Violet-Platinum tier. One tier lower than Death Arbiter's. That was not an issue. The main problem was that, One Sword Stroke was Level 118!

Even though the gap between them were only 2 Levels, the power that Death Arbiter held was stronger by 10 levels! Death Arbiter could equip Level 120 equipment while One Sword Stroke could only equip Level 110 equipment! Death Arbiter also had one extra Inheritance skill, and his mount would be on another level!

To put things in comparison, One Sword Stroke was out-classed in terms of attributes.

"One Sword Stroke! This is a fight of honor! Come at me with

everything you got!" said Death Arbiter as he zoomed towards One Sword Stroke with his axe, ready to cleave.

"HMPH!"

One Sword Stroke raised his shield and blocked the attack. A blast of spark was unleashed and One Sword Stroke staggered back. He was clearly overpowered in terms of Strength value.

"Hmph. You're nothing but words." Death Arbiter rushed onwards and cleaved One Sword Stoke.

"Don't be too sure of yourself." One Sword Stroke scoffed. With a quick leap, One Sword Stroke dodged the attack and flew behind Death Arbiter, throwing out a counterattack.

After the attack landed, Death Arbiter turned around and punched the condor with his full might. The punch packed so much power that the condor was sent flying, pushing One Sword Stroke away with ease.

"Hahahaha! I'm invincible! This game...This game was designed especially for me to conquer!" Death Arbiter laughed manically. "I am China's national Wushu Champion, many times over the course of several years! Even though my attacks could not cause any damage, it was strong enough to be a great support in battle! One on one fight? No one can defeat me!"

As he taunted One Sword Stroke, the man flew towards him and

landed a barrage of attacks.

Even though One Sword Stroke had no talents in martial arts, there was a reason why the man was publicly recognized as China's second strongest tank. His capabilities were not just for show! In fact, in terms of class prowess, a Guardian was designed to specially counter a Berserker! At the rate of their fight, the two of them might not share the same stats, the two of them were indeed standing on the same level!

"Use your Transformation skill! Or else, you're not my opponent." Death Arbiter grinned evilly. "I'm not going to pull my punches."

"You don't deserve to fight me in my Transformation mode." One Sword Stroke had collected his composure and replied coldly with no emotion.

Both fighters were pressuring each other to use their trump card, despite silently feeling out the other's strengths.



# Chapter 623: Fight with Everything You Have!

---

Despite One Sword Stroke's demeaning words. His true intention to not use his Transformation skill was because it was his trump card. In fact, Transformation skill is every player's trump card. Only a few players would release information regarding about their Inheritance. The smart ones would not, tell everyone about your strengths, giving everyone a chance to exploit your weaknesses

A good example was Wei Yan Er's Darkness Inheritance. Her Transformation skill maybe strong but she was extremely vulnerable to Holy elemental damage during the activation duration. If her weakness was discovered by outsiders, anyone could counter her with a bunch of Priests and Knights. On the other hand, if the Fire Immunity of the Phoenix is kept a secret, all dispatched Pyromancer will be completely be wasted.

It couldn't be helped; class skills were exposed completely to everyone in the world. However, Inheritances, especially higher-class Inheritances are being guarded like a national treasure. It was rather simple, since the number of high-class Inheritances like Class A and Class S were extremely scarce. Hence, in normal circumstances, some even had refused to use their Transformation skills to prevent anyone from researching their weakness.

However, S class Inheritances were different from the norm. Even if the information about the Inheritance is leaked out, no one could really craft out a proper countermeasure!

Neither One Sword Stroke nor Death Arbiter would want to leak their own Inheritance Transformations to the world. Hence, the best scenario was for none of them to use their Transformation skills to fight. If either one of them used it, the other would be forced to use his as well to balance the power difference.

However, the two enemies were constantly provoking the other to use their own Transformations.

Sounds of heavy metal clashing with each other continued on. The two players' movements and attack patterns had enthralled the audience.

'God's Miracle' had been online for more than 1 year and a half. The Professional League had been going on for half a year. There would be more and more talented players emerging out of the crowd of greenhorns. Zhang Yang felt like everyone's PvP skill had increased greatly. It was time for him to train, or else he might be left out as well.

One Sword Stroke and Death Arbiter were the best among the best. Just by watching the two titans clash with each other was enough to send shivers down one's spine. Just like a sports player who enjoys watching other players fight, it was a way of improving oneself. Taking the best from their performance and applying to oneself. Like the display of supporting attacks by the two players.

Death Arbiter was a fighter in real life. He was trained to look for the opponent's opening to strike an attack. His martial art skills were extremely useful in the battle. On the other hand, One Sword Stroke might not have been trained in martial arts, he had the

reflexes that could rival Zhang Yang. His responses were lightning quick and fast that he could compensate his sluggish movement by dodging attacks and even counterattacks. To put it mildly, the two of them were almost at the same level. Even their HP drop rate was the same!

Amongst the audience, there were many Imperial Sky and The Myth members. Healers were standing out, but everyone had kept their hands in their pocket. If any side supports the battle, they would be forfeiting the match. There were eyes and ears watching from all corners. Any mistakes could not be forgiven! It was a matter of guild honor where only One Sword Stroke and Death Arbiter could settle the core.

Since Berserker's Heal was removed from the game, warriors had been nerfed in long combat. However, that would not mean that the fight between the two would end quickly. Both players had been finding the chance to land a stun skill in order to provide time to use [Bandage] or [Healing Potion] whenever they can. Additionally, supporting attacks were used to break the combo of the opponent attacks, causing the entire battle to last as long as 7 minutes. At that moment, both sides only had 20% HP left.

Two players, two sides, two cheers. All sort of skills and moves were unleashed to kill but neither of them were actually landing a solid blow. Clearly, both of them were professionals, that even skills that were supposed to be used normally had been twisted and bent in a way that no one would believe without actually seeing with their own two eyes!

Both sides were far from each other. The atmosphere between

the two was as tense as a steel thread holding a building together. Both of them were at the HP threshold where both of them could use {Killing Cleave}. One single mistake would spell doom for either party.

{Killing Cleave} ignores Defense, cannot be blocked, nor evaded. Hence, if the opponent mistakenly enters the range, it would be a sure-hit.

The two of them roughly had the same HP %. However, One Sword Stroke was a tank, therefore, even by percentages, this HP was much higher than Death Arbiter's. However, Death Arbiter had the advantage of attack, for he wields a two-handed weapon. Even if the two of them launched {Killing Cleave} at each other, the damage dealt would be different, but the HP % deducted would be the same.

As such, if neither of them did something out of the norm, both of them would die together.

Liu Wei snickered. Without making a move, he nodded lightly to a person who was standing in the opposite crowd where he stood.

The players nodded back to acknowledge the command and quietly sneaked into the crowd whilst hiding his profile information. The player sneaked amongst the player of Imperial Sky and healed One Sword Stroke.

Shring!

‘+8,821!’

A large green color text floated up on One Sword Stroke character and everyone at present gasped.

It was a clash of titans, yet someone had purposefully sabotaged the fight. The entire match was suddenly brought down to a screaming match.

One Sword Stroke stopped attacking immediately and threw away his axe, refusing to continue. "WHO DID IT!" He screamed at the top of his lungs.

Players of Imperial Sky turned to each other. "Not us!"

Death Arbiter lifted his axe and placed it on his shoulder. With a smug look on his face, he scoffed. "So, this is the way Imperial Sky fights. You can't rely on your own strength and had your healer sneak in a heal for you in the middle of battle. Did you think that the thousands of pairs of eyes around would miss such a cheat?"

The audience around who had nothing to do with Lone Desert Smoke, Imperial Sky, and The Myth booed loudly. Insults and demeaning words were thrown all around. Any healing skills would have a direction pointer and everyone had spotted the green stream of magic coming from the crowd of Imperial Sky.

One Sword Stroke opened his battle log to find the culprit. However, the name of the player who had healed him was

concealed. Immediately, he knew that the culprit was sent by Liu Wei. He had been working with Liu Wei for quite some time before he had separated with him. He knew clearly that such a deceitful method was Liu Wei's doing!

However, no matter how One Sword Stroke tried to explain himself, the power of ignorant players had laid down the final judgment. Everyone had already marked Imperial Sky as a guild of cowards and cheaters.

As such, One Sword Stroke picked up his axe and roared at Liu Wei for a final time before leaving the arena.

Liu Wei was disappointed at his reaction. He had thought that One Sword Stroke might still stick around a little longer to fall into more of his traps.

Zhang Yang kept his mouth shut. Unlike the other players, Zhang Yang's eyes were as sharp as an eagle. He had spotted the sneaky players walking from The Myth and towards Imperial Sky. However, he had not done anything to defend One Sword Stroke. He was close enough to One Sword Stroke to defend the man in trouble. Secondly, if he had tried to clear his name, it might cause him to be dragged into the mud pit. Even though Zhang Yang was someone who could reason with the crowd, he was dealing with players of The Myth as well. Who knows what kind of trickery that man might pull off to cause him to be labeled as another cheater.

"One Sword Stroke...Just the name, and no honor." Death Arbiter turned away from the arena and stood beside Liu Wei.

The man had demonstrated his prowess to the crowd. Hence, his popularity had reached a point where he now stood on the same stage with Zhang Yang himself. No one, including Zhang Yang had thought that the man was a man of his words. He might occasionally be boastful of himself, but he played his game right.

Liu Wei was delighted. He had even thought of uploading the recording of the battle to the internet. It might increase the influx of strong players into his guild! The amount of money spent on Death Arbiter was worthwhile, after all! He had not even spent that much money on himself!

"Where is Zhan Yu! Bring the man here! One Sword Stroke has been defeated! Does he plan to hide his face forever! Is China's number one fighter a coward!?" Death Arbiter roared.

"Zhan Yu! Call him! Call the coward out!"

"Tch..." Players of Lone Desert Smoke scoffed.

"Our big boss could defeat him with one hand behind his back."

"Hmph. I dare say that he could even win him with all his equipment off!"

Someone from The Myth had heard the conversation and started to lunge at Lone Desert Smoke. A screaming match started between guild, causing the mass to split itself apart. On the

sidelines, audiences who were not affiliated to either of the guild were starting to gossip. As the gossip turned into greater insult, a hot-headed player had tried to settle the score himself by entering the arena to fight Death Arbiter. He was immediately stopped by his friends.

"LET ME GO! I'LL FIGHT THAT DOUCHE! ZHAN YU IS OUR GUILD MASTER! I SHALL DEFEND HIS HONOR!"

Zhang Yang reached out and held his shoulder firmly.

"That's what I wanted to hear," said Zhang Yang with a smile. Zhang Yang moved forward and revealed his name tag and a string of title. "Allow me to prove what Lone Desert Smoke could do."

"Zhan Yu, Crypt Slaughterer, Physician's Friend, Hero of Snow Sprite City, Warrior of Centaur, Hero of White Jade Castle, Warrior of Sacred Glory, The Challenger, Level 124, Male Human, Guardian, {Lone Desert Smoke}."

The crowd was stunned. No one made a squeak when the man, the legendary fighter, the person who Death Arbiter had been eager to fight, made his appearance.

The string of titles was not a feat that anyone could accomplish. Even if they did, the title was nothing of value. Zhang Yang's title was obtained by completing the hardest challenges, proving himself as both a player and a guild master, to be the best in China. The best tank! The pinnacle of 'God's Miracle'!



Everyone shrunk away from the frontlines. Zhang Yang had nothing to say. In fact, he does not need to do anything. Players themselves know who Zhang Yang is and what he was capable.

"You're finally here!" Death Arbiter cried. He had never fought Zhang Yang before and did not know what he was capable of. With the momentarily bolstered confidence after dueling with One Sword Stroke, the man brandished his axe and pointed it at Zhang Yang with utmost confidence. "Come! Let's fight!"

Zhang Yang tapped the tip of the axe and sent it flying with just a flick of his index finger. "You..."

Zhang Yang gave the man a condescending glare and said, "You're not worthy. In fact, none of you all are. Sigh...I'm disappointed." He shrugged.

"You. You. You with the stupid outfit. You. And You. Join Death Arbiter and fight me."

All of the players that he had pointed were all members of The Myth.

Such a bold statement...exactly the same words that Death Arbiter had spoken earlier. Zhang Yang took the liberty to have Death Arbiter eat his own words. All the previously defeated 13 players of Lone Desert Smoke teared up at his challenge, while others were started to get excited. Such a man!

Death Arbiter was enraged. "Zhan Yu. What are you playing at? Ahhh...I see what you're doing. You trying to make an excuse when you're defeated. Isn't it! Haha! I might be wrong about One Sword Stroke. He might not have a d\*ck anymore, but he had balls bigger than yours!"

"That's true. Now that we're done comparing d\*cks. Shall we fight?"

Zhang summoned out his Blazing Fire Phoenix and mount on it. "I'm challenging all of you together to show a little handicap. Since you're still complaining, shall I give you a hand and a leg?"

"What is that mount.."

"It's...so cool!"

"It's on fire!"

With the appearance of the Phoenix, the crowd's attention was diverted towards it instead.

"Enough!" Death Arbiter bellowed. "I alone shall be your opponent."

He had been healed by the healers around and most of his skills were already ready to be used. With an angry roar, he hopped on his Mechanical Quad-Winged Tiger and flew towards Zhang Yang.

There were no reins on the Phoenix. Instead, Zhang Yang had only mentally commanded the Phoenix to move. With a flash, the mythical bird zoomed towards the guild, leaving a trail of flames behind as it did. With a blast of fire and a swing of a sword, Zhang Yang and the Phoenix massacred the players of The Myth. There was no mercy left to spare for him. They had intruded upon his peace and brought shame and humiliation to everyone around him. Blood must be shed!

‘-35,929!’

’-38,092!’

‘-37,092!’

‘-31,889!’

...

Both Zhang Yang’s and the Phoenix’s attack had dealt roughly the same amount of damage to all the players of The Myth.

{Horizontal Cleave}!

‘-67,880!’

‘-72,982!’

‘-79,336!’

Three players took the damage and were killed instantly. All three of them had only over 70,000 HP. Even though they had over 120,000 HP while mounted, their remaining HP after the initial attack had only left them with half of their HP. There were still two players around him that had over 20,000 HP left.

"ZHAN YU!" Death Arbiter roared and chased after Zhang Yang. The Phoenix was a Celestial tier beast, though it had not yet achieved that rank, its speed was not something a Mechanical mount could match. Before, when Death Arbiter flew towards him, Zhang Yang ignored him and attacked the players on the ground instead. Death Arbiter felt the utmost humiliation when Zhang Yang refused to fight him!

The two players with a tiny bit of HP left had tried to run away. Zhang Yang immediately summoned Felice out and have her kill one player with a normal lance attack and the other player with a {Fire Missile}.

The first two deaths had been confirmed.

"Stay in formation! Do not break your formation!" Liu Wei quickly took command and spread the players out to prevent multiple kills from Zhang Yang. The audience around the battle had retreated to a great distance to allow adequate fighting space for the two foes.

Zhang Yang laughed and sped through the air, breaking the sound barrier and blasted towards Death Arbiter.

PANG!

Two blades clashed against each other, the muscles on the arms of both Death Arbiter and Zhang Yang tensed up.

"Zhan Yu. Today, I shall take your title of China's number 1 player!" Death Arbiter gritted his teeth and knocked Zhang Yang sword upwards. With a quick duck, Death Arbiter swung his axe and aimed at Zhang Yang abdomen. Zhang Yang quickly raised his shield and blocked the predictable attack.

What that was shocking was not the fact that Zhang Yang could block the attack. Death Arbiter was extremely shocked at Zhang Yang remaining stationary! He was supposed to be knocked back! Zhang Yang's array of equipment, followed by the immense Strength bonus and Defensive builds, Zhang Yang would not be weaker than any Berserker! Perhaps, only Wei Yan Er with her {Strength Aura} activated could surpass him.

Zhang Yang pulled his sword back and stabbed Death Arbiter in the chest. At the same time, he casted {God of War Devastation}!

‘-34,780!’

‘-110,961!’

Two damage texts popped up! But it was not done! Felice could not wait to cast an attack, hence, she morphed into her human form and stabbed the man with her lance for over 30,000 damage. At then, the Phoenix attack blasted him for over 40,000 Fire damage, dealing a total of 210,000 damage in a flash.

He had only over 250,000 HP when he was mounting! The combined attacks had nearly caused his death! Zhang Yang was a little disappointed that none of his attack had procced a critical strike, nor the effect of the Sword of Purging Devourer.

"HOLY SHIIIEET!"

The audience gasped in horror. They were still admiring the beauty of the Phoenix and were stunned when they saw Death Arbiter's HP dropping down so rapidly! The amount of damage had taken One Sword Stroke at least 8 minutes to deal!

As expected of China's number 1 tank! NO! Perhaps even the number 1 attacker! How could someone deal so much damage without even using their Transformation skill!?

# Chapter 624: Phoenix Transformation

---

Death Arbiter was shocked, and he let out a breath of surprise. He quickly hopped onto his Pet Mount and did a tactical retreat. Who would want to get caught in the swing of a {Killing Cleave} from Zhang Yang!

However, Zhang Yang did not intend to activate his {Killing Cleave}. As the guild master of the Lone Desert Smoke, Zhang Yang wanted to get even for his guild members. He wanted to show that Death Arbiter had made a grave mistake by shaming them with his foul words!

So, Death Arbiter wanted to retreat, huh?

Could he be faster than the speed of a Phoenix Pet? Is that a joke? The Phoenix was a legendary beast. It would be the best among all Pet Mounts in the current stage of the game. It would remain as number one until the first appearance of a Dragon pet.

Like a flaming ball of fire, Zhang Yang arrived right in front of Death Arbiter. While the opponent was still glaring at Zhang Yang with his frightened eyes, Zhang Yang bashed his shield right onto Death Arbiter's face!

Bam!

3 teeth flew right out from Death Arbiter's mouth, followed by small splashes of blood. Half of his face started swelling up. The HP bar of Death Arbiter remained untouched.

However, Death Arbiter felt worse than being dead!

All he did was to underestimate his enemy, and next thing he knew, he almost got killed by a series of attacks from Zhang Yang! He would rather be dead than be smacked in the face by Zhang Yang. It felt like a part of his reputation had been smacked off of his face!

Zhang Yang did not continue to launch his assaults on Death Arbiter. He commanded his Phoenix Pet back to the enemy crowd. With a swing of his sword, he began to slaughter the members of the Myth like a farmer with his scythe!

Zhang Yang had over 5,230 Defense. Upon the activation of his {God of War Transformation}, he had over 40% of Damage Immunity and 4,612 points of Damage Absorption! In other words, if his enemies wanted to deal a Physical Damage that could penetrate his Defense to cause effective damage to him, they should be able to deal 13,000 damage at the very least! Even with their magic attacks, they must also deal at least 7,500 in order to cause effective damage to Zhang Yang!

Meanwhile, normal players would only have Level 110 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment on them. Even if they were to hold a weapon with 3.8-second Attack Interval, they would only deal approximately 18,000 damage to their target. So, how much damage could they really deal to Zhang Yang, then?

On the other hand, how powerful could Zhang Yang's attack be?



With Zhang Yang, the Phoenix Pet and Felice combining their assaults together, their enemies were on the verge of being annihilated! Wherever they passed by, they leave tons of bodies behind them!

"Heal! Heal Death Arbiter now! Heal him like there is no tomorrow!" Liu Wei screamed as loudly as he could. No matter how many men he had with him, they would still be unmatched to the oppressiveness of Zhang Yang --- tens of players had not been able to accumulate enough firepower to turn the tide of the battle. They were there just to let Zhang Yang slash them up. The only player who could withstand the power of Zhang Yang was Death Arbiter.

When Death Arbiter had finally succeeded gotten Zhang Yang's full attention fixed on him, the other members of the Myth were only able to launch their assaults on Zhang Yang without that much pressure.

The other players in the surroundings were shocked to see everything that was happening. Death Arbiter had taken on numerous members of Lone desert Smoke at the same time earlier on, slaughtering them up. He seemed so powerful back there. Who would have thought that Death Arbiter would be forced to retreat just because of one person! Meanwhile, Zhang Yang was slaughtering up the players in front of him! That was just...

Zhang Yang was to answering Death Arbiter's slaughtering of the members of Lone Desert Smoke in kind! He went up against numerous players of The Myth like how Death Arbiter did!

What the hell! Zhang Yang was showing his oppressive power off to his enemies! He was braver than a man!

"Zhan Yu!" Death Arbiter let out an angered roar. He had never felt so puny ever since he joined the game. Although he had encountered some high Tier players, he would never lose a single match, unless his equipment are too far off compared to the equipment of his opponent! Ever since he joined The Myth, Liu Wei had been very focused on building him up. The standard of his equipment would surely be among the top players --- his equipment standard would not be far off, at least!

Death Arbiter thought he could win all battles that came at him. Apparently, he was proven wrong by Zhang Yang. Of course, he could not accept the reality!

Roaring in rage, he activated his Inheritance Transformation Skill without any hesitation!

A pair of dark sharp horns appeared right above his head. A pair of black wings taking the shape of the bat's wings came out of his back. His eyes turned red as his body mass began to increase drastically. The armor on his entire body began to sink into that large body mass of his. By the end of it, Death Arbiter had transformed into a large muscular being that only wore a pair of long trousers.

The naked upper body of his was covered with dark green, mythical runes that were radiating with ghastly flames!

Although he had two wings behind his back, Death Arbiter did not seem to have the ability to fly. With a deafening roar, he charged towards Zhang Yang while riding on his mechanical tiger.

That was the Class B Demon Hunter Inheritance!

Although the information about high-Class Inheritances were very hard to obtain, Zhang Yang had over 3 years in his previous life to gather enough information about them. Anyone would have been able to retrieve a certain amount of information in that amount of time.

Upon activating the Inheritance Transformation Skill of the Demon Hunter Inheritance, the player would have all the basic attributes of a Class B Inheritance: Increases Maximum HP by 20 times, Increases Attack by 300%, Increases Defense by 3 times, and increases the rate of Magic Immunity by 20%. Upon activating the Transformation Skill, players would also be able to deal 50% additional damage to demons. However, the user would also be afraid of Sacred Spells and Holy Spells as the user would receive additional damage.

However, even though Zhang Yang was not equipped with any sorts of Holy attack, he would not be affected by the 50% additional damage that Death Arbiter could deal. The same goes for Felice and Phoenix Pet. None of them were demons! Therefore, Death Arbiter had no chance at all but to unleash his full potential.

Zhang Yang was confident enough to engage in battle with a

player with Class C Inheritance without activating his {God of War Transformation}. But a Class B Inheritance ... Furthermore, Death Arbiter was a high Tier player. Zhang Yang would be digging his own grave if he ever thinks of holding back against Death Arbiter by not activating his {God of War Transformation}!

{Phoenix Transformation} activated!

The Blazing Fire Phoenix immediately let out a long roar as it began to light up with blazing flames. The heat waves were overflowing into the surroundings, as everyone around it was forced to retreat tens of meters back in order to flee from the scorching heat from the Phoenix!

In the midst of the blazing flames, the feathers of the Pheonix Pet had turned from crimson red to Violet-Golden color. Its body mass had also increased tremendously while its attributes were insanely boosted up!

[Royal Blood Phoenix] (Mythical Tier Flying Battle Mount)

Level: 124

HP: 5,454,400

Defense: 15,600

Attack: 94,308 - 124,308

Upon the power-up of the Phoenix Pet, the Maximum HP of Zhang Yang had reached up to 5,600,000 HP! Although that was still a little far from the power he could obtain by activating his God of War Transformation Skill, it was enough for Zhang Yang to go up against Death Arbiter. Unfortunately, after Zhang Yang had mounted onto the Phoenix Pet, his Defense would still be based on his initial amount of Defense. Therefore, the 15,600 Defense of the Phoenix Pet would not be accounted for as long as Zhang Yang is on its back.

As the attributes of the Pets were only accessible by their own owners, Death Arbiter could not have known the Blazing Fire Phoenix was, in fact, a legendary Tier. He activated his Demon Hunter Transformation, and his confidence came flooding over him. He swore to humiliate Zhang Yang as hard as he could and get back his 'face'.

"Zhan Yu! I shall make you regret everything you've done all along!" Death Arbiter raised up his battle axe and swung it straight towards Zhang Yang. Under the influence of his Demon Hunter Transformation, his axe was flashing with ghastly green flames.

Zhang Yang smiled coldly as he raised his weapon to engage Death Arbiter.

‘-87210!’

The {Tornado Cleave} that was struck upon Zhang Yang by Death Arbiter had finally dealt an unexpectedly high damage on Zhang

Yang. Even though Zhang Yang had activated his {God of War Shield}, he still received about 90,000 damage! However, Zhang Yang was currently mounted on his Phoenix Pet. The amount of his Maximum HP had reached over 5,600,000 HP. 90,000 damage would mean nothing compared to that amount of HP he had!

At the same time, Zhang Yang returned Death Arbiter's favor by swing his sword back at Death Arbiter. His Phoenix Pet spat out a blazing fire 20 meters across the distance! Not only were the flames torching up Death Arbiter, the Healers right behind Death Arbiter were also lit up!

‘-72,226!’ {Frost Strike} by Zhang Yang!

‘-95,320!’ {Flamethrower} by Phoenix Pet!

‘-118,033!’ {Flamethrower} by Phoenix Pet!

Three extremely high damage values popped out at the same instant. Although Zhang Yang was not powered up by his Transformation Skill, the Phoenix Pet was already extremely powerful at that moment. Its Attack power could match the Attack power of Death Arbiter! Furthermore, its attacks were basically AoE attacks. Not only it dealt approximately 100,000 damage to Death Arbiter, the Phoenix Pet also almost took out the Healer instantly!

The Healer tried to escape after being left barely alive. However, he failed.

Felice charged up to that Healer with her lance pointed straight at him! With a basic strike, Felice killed the Healer instantly.

"Felice, go get the others! Little Fiery and I shall take care of these nincompoops!" Zhang Yang told Felice. Obviously, Zhang Yang was referring to the Phoenix Pet as Little Fiery.

"Roger, big brother!"

Felice transformed herself into her Dragonhawk Form and began her reign of chaos upon the formation of The Myth, as she tore them apart!

"Impossible!" Death Arbiter was horrified at seeing Zhang Yang having with such abundant amount of HP without his {God of War Transformation}. Other's might not have known how much damage Death Arbiter could cause in a single hit, but he himself knew about it too well!

That was approximately 90,000 damage he had dealt on Zhang Yang. That one hit should have taken out a player with high Tier equipment! It could even reduce half of the HP bar of a player mounted on a pet! Therefore, he was terrified to find out that the 90,000 damage was merely 2% of Zhang Yang's HP!

Furthermore, a blazing bird that could cause a damage over 100,000? What the f\*ck!? Was there anything worse than this?

What the f\*ck was going on?!

Death Arbiter could not begin wrapping his mind around anything as he began to break down from the inside!

Even Zhang Yang would go crazy with the thought of not having his Phoenix Pet. He would not have known that a Legendary beast would have the ability to activate a 'Transformation Skill'!

What's done is done. Death Arbiter knew that he had to continue the battle no matter the consequences. Furthermore, he would not be willing to admit defeat just like that! He was not the type that could afford defeat!

Everyone had seen how powerful Zhang Yang could become once he activates his {God of War Transformation}. Now that Death Arbiter had activated his Transformation Skill, if everyone sees him getting defeated even before Zhang Yang activates his Transformation Skill, how would he be able to hold his head high after all these? Would he still have the face to look at others? Would he even have what it takes to look himself in the mirror?

With a very violent Felice swinging her lance about, the members of The Myth were no longer capable of launching their assaults on Zhang Yang. They were too preoccupied with saving their own \*sses from being skewered or burned up by the little dragon lady!

Although Felice did not have any sort of Transformation Skills, once she activates her {Absolute Defense}, she would instantly become the most ferocious Tanker in the entire 'God's Miracle'! Some would call her invincible!



Cling! Clang! Cling! Clang!

Zhang Yang and Death Arbiter were exchanging hits. Both of them were aggressive as hell! This time, Death Arbiter did not dare to underestimate Zhang Yang anymore. He could not even afford the slightest mistake. He went all out on Zhang Yang with every possible skill that he could use. He had an advantage, that was being real-life experience in the field of martial arts. From the perspective of 'skill', Death Arbiter could be on a whole new level, compared to the normal players. Therefore, his 'Supporting Attacks' were a little hard to handle, even for Zhang Yang!

However, Zhang Yang has lived two lives. So he was basically trained in Martial Arts for approximately 7 to 8 years! He would not be far off from the standard of Death Arbiter if he were to be a little weaker.

More importantly, Zhang Yang had the advantage of having better reflexes than Death Arbiter!

In the previous battle, One Sword Stroke had managed to match the 'Supporting Attacks' of Death Arbiter with his all, because of his outstanding reflexes. Zhang Yang's reflexes in battles were definitely on par with One Sword Stroke's. Furthermore, Zhang Yang's martial art standards were not lower than Death Arbiter. Combining the two forms of art into one, it was enough for Zhang Yang to dominate Death Arbiter!

Bam! Bam! Slam!

Zhang Yang would usually hit his target in the face. It was just his habit. Bashing his shield over and over again on the face of Death Arbiter, he had knocked all teeth off Death Arbiter's mouth early in the battle. The face of Death Arbiter was so swollen that he looked exactly like a pig at the moment! It was the most miserable moment in his entire life!

The players from Lone Desert Smoke were very contented to see that son of the b\*tch suffering for his deeds!

Hit them in the face! Burn their \*sses! Hit them hard so that they would remember this for all eternity! Who told them to be so full of themselves to launch a full-scale assault on other's Territory! Didn't they just shove their own faces over just to get smacked?

"Guildmaster is fearsome!"

"Guildmaster is almighty!"

"Guildmaster is fearsome and almighty altogether! No debate needed!"

# Chapter 625: A Torturous Torture

---

Liu Wei could not help but feel a chill up his spine as he saw how swollen Death Arbiter's face was.

Liu Wei had the same experience back then when he was trying to snatch a boss from Crimson Rage. It was one of the worst ways to be humiliated! If even Death Arbiter could not defeat Zhang Yang, would there still be someone who could? Would there still be anyone left to defeat Zhang Yang in a One-on-one battle?

The question could only be answered by Zhang Yang himself. He had someone in mind: Sun Xin Yu!

Only that Queen of shadows could pose a threat to Zhang Yang. As a Thief, she could just enter her Stealth Mode and stay quiet while approaching Zhang Yang. Upon the activation of her {Dance and Slash}, she could ambush Zhang Yang in silence and take him out instantly! Zhang Yang would not even have the chance to activate his {God of War Transformation}!

But, how about facing each other fair and square? A fair Player-vs-Player match?

To hell with that! Asking a Thief to battle players of other Classes would be an unfair act in itself! The developer had given the Thieves the ability to do stealth to allow Thieves to act in the shadows as assassins. Thieves would do no any good at all charging into battles like warriors.

In this battle, Zhang Yang was not the one causing high damage to the enemy. It was the Phoenix Pet right beneath his buttocks!

Death Arbiter could not understand it. How could a Pet Mount deal so much damage? The damage it could deal was enough to match with the damage a Transformed player could deal! There was nothing more absurd than this!

Surrounding players were stunned to see that!

Previously, they were not aware of the power this Phoenix Pet could wield. However, their intelligence should not be underestimated as well. Although they could not see how much damage the Phoenix Pet and Death Arbiter could cause, they could tell by the reactions of the combatants.

Death Arbiter is capable of activating an Inheritance Transformation Skill. He should have at least a Class C Inheritance. Furthermore, he had those shiny equipment strapped on, which appeared to be similar to the equipment that One Sword Stroke himself has. So, they could deduce that the standard of his equipment should be top tier as well!

Even if Death Arbiter could only deal a basic damage of approximately 10,000 damage, a Class C Inheritance could increase his basic attacks by 200%, which would allow him to deal approximately 30,000 damage.

On the other hand, Zhang Yang had not activated his Transformation Skill. His initial HP should be around 200,000 HP.

After approximately 10 hits from Death Arbiter, Zhang Yang still had over 20% of HP on him. That could explain that the Maximum HP of Zhang Yang could have reached over 1,500,000 HP after being mounted.

It would not be possible that a player could have so much HP all by themselves. The only way of increasing the amount of HP to that extent would be by mounting on a pet! It was common sense!

Holy molly! So, what type of 'creature' could this be? How on earth could one pet provide over 1,000,000 HP to a player who mounts onto it?

This could be a unique, ultimate pet!

Players who saw through that began to discuss about it. They were debating on what Tier this Phoenix Pet had to be. How could it be so powerful?

Naturally, Zhang Yang did not waste his breath explaining all that to them. It was the {Phoenix Transformation}! It was a Pet Skill that was equal to an Inheritance Transformation Skill! Zhang Yang gave Death Arbiter a good bash on his face with his shield. Blood was spilled across the ground as Death Arbiter's face looked so sh\*tty, that words were not fit to describe it anymore.

Who told him to go way over his own stinky head in the first place then? Who told him to scream by saying he would defeat One Sword Stroke and Zhang Yang? Now that One Sword Stroke has been defeated, he turned his attention over to Zhang Yang, who

was oppressively powerful. The situation was like a perverted man encountering an ugly woman! Of course, his 'little brother' would not stand still!

"Immolation Aura!" Death Arbiter roared in anger. He had been keeping his anger in for half a day. Now that he finally accumulated enough EP, he activated that one ultimate Skill that could only be used when he is in his Transformed form.

[Immolation Aura]: Expands an aura filled with torching flames, causing 6 times the Fire Damage that the user could deal to all target within the effective area of the aura, each second. {Immolation Aura} requires 3 EP of Demon Hunter Inheritance to be activated. Lasts for 1 second. Every 3 EP can extend the duration of {Immolation Aura} by 1 second. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

Zhang Yang did not know the attribute of this Skill at first. However, after he realized that the Skill could cause Fire Damage, he smiled. He found out by looking at his Battle Log. Upon the first tick of {Immolation Aura}, he hopped off the back of his Phoenix Pet.

‘18,485!’

‘+38,496!’

Zhang Yang received a tick of damage from the {Immolation Aura}. However, not only was the Phoenix Pet immune to Fire Damage, it could also recover HP by absorbing fire attacks. Immediately, a green value popped right on top of the Phoenix's

head.

While a player is mounted on a pet, attributes such as Defense, Damage Immunity, and other special attributes would be based on the player's. Therefore, the {Blazing Build} would not kick in. In order for the effect to kick in, Zhang Yang had to dismount and allow the Phoenix to be an independent unit.

After that wave of attack, Zhang Yang hopped back onto the Phoenix Pet. Instead of a reduction of their total HP, he gained almost 20,000 HP, due to the fire attack from the {Immolation Aura}.

Well... Death Arbiter did not know how to react to that situation!

He was on the verge of popping his veins. Even his ultimate Skill which should be causing grief to Zhang Yang, had ended up healing the man instead. What a tragic experience for him.

"Thank you!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he charged towards the Liu Wei and his men. He took the advantage of using the {Immolation Aura} to recover his own HP while ridiculing Death Arbiter without the need to say anything!

"Stop him!" Liu Wei screamed like a sissy as he gasped in astonishment.

"Just with these men of yours?" Zhang Yang gave him a disdainful look as he looked at Liu Wei's men. Those men were

beaten straight up in their \*sses by Felice. However, he also realized that the number of Liu Wei's men were increasing by the second! There were now hundreds of them! He also saw that Liu Wei's 'Suicide-Squad' of 12 was lined up nicely by his side.

He commanded everyone to stop moving and said, "You guys, just stay and watch!"

"Zhan Yu! Are you still thinking of going against 100 men all by yourself?" Liu Wei had tasted defeat before, so he was extremely afraid of Zhang Yang, as he knew how powerful Zhang Yang could be. He had 'fortified' himself among his own men and had made it difficult for Zhang Yang to repeat history. Meanwhile, Liu Wei also had someone cast a {Sacrifice} on him. Furthermore, there were also 11 others lining up to give him {Sacrifice}.

"What's so difficult about it?" Zhang Yang laughed as he commanded the Phoenix pet to activate its {Forbidden Firefall}.

Immediately, countless flames descended upon the ground from the sky as the flames spread across the area of 100 X 100 meters. The entire effective area became a land of living hell engulfed by flames. The flames were so blazing hot as no living thing was seen within the effective area.

‘-38992!’

‘-40877!’



‘-32483!’

...

At every passing second, players who were within the effective area of the Skill received approximately 30,000 to 40,000 damage! It was fatal to the players! Those players who did not have Inheritances to boost their HP were all burnt to crisps after seconds!

Even more unfortunate was the Guardian who had cast his {Sacrifice} on Liu Wei. He had to suffer two times the damage! Therefore, he was forced to activate his {Shield Wall} just to stay alive!

However, the range of the attack was terrifyingly vast! All 12 members of Liu Wei’s ‘Suicide Squad’ were forced to do the same to stay alive. They activated their {Shield Walls} to cover their own \*sses. Because the {Shield Wall} could last for 10 seconds, upon the end of the first {Sacrifice}, Liu Wei could still enjoy a second {Sacrifice} from one of his Guardians.

However, no one was that stupid to stand still in the effective range of the {Forbidden Firefall}. As they started scattering like wild chicken, Zhang Yang came at them with a {Blast Wave}, stunning Liu Wei and three members of his ‘Suicide Squad’.

Could they attempt to lift the stun effects on them by activating their Skills?

Zhang Yang activated his {Heroic Leap} and stunned the four of them once again!

Liu Wei could not make it out. That being said, the other 12 members of his 'Suicide Squad' could not leave as well! Or else, they would be charged of 'treason' as they would be abandoning their 'master'! Their 'purpose' was to protect Liu Wei, no matter the cost!

The miserable screaming continued to echo across the battlefield!

The {Forbidden Firefall} was basically like a mini-version of the effect of a [Forbidden Scroll]! See the resemblance? The word 'Forbidden' on the names of the two? In just 5 to 6 seconds, players with shorter HP bars began to collapse and die. The effect of the Skill was devastating!

Liu Wei was a real lucky son of the b\*tch. He survived for 13 seconds long by depending on the {Sacrifices} that were being wasted on him. After that, he survived for another 10 seconds by activating his {Ice Barrier} as he entered a 10-second state of invincibility. Furthermore, he was the guildmaster of The Myth. Of course he would have an item or an equipment that would grant him another 5 seconds of invincibility.

After all, the {Forbidden Firefall} was not the real [Forbidden Scroll]. The flames blazed on for only 30 seconds before they faded away. Liu Wei only took two rounds of damage from the {Forbidden Firefall}. Apparently, he was still able to sustain so much damage and still be alive!

However, right after the {Forbidden Firefall}, the entire army of The Myth was annihilated. Only Liu Wei and Death Arbiter were left alive on the battlefield!

It seemed that the power of this Phoenix Pet could be seen in the destruction it left behind!

"Wow! When did you get a powerful birdie, noob tank? It's pretty and I like it! I want it as well! Get me one as well!" Wei Yan Er heard the news as she rushed all the way over to the battlefield. She was just in time to witness the powerful Phoenix Pet sending hell down on The Myth. Her eyes were glittering as she stared at the flaming bird.

"Haha! Unfortunately for you, you have no chance of getting it anymore! Just feast your eyes upon it!" Zhang Yang laughed. The Phoenix Pet lunged over and pinned the ugly mount of Liu Wei firmly to the ground. With its sharp claws, Little Fiery began to tear that ugly fly creature into pieces! That ugly beast could not help but roar in misery as it was torn into pieces!

"Zhan Yu ---" Death Arbiter was charging straight at Zhang Yang from a great distance. He had fled to remove himself from the effective range of the {Forbidden Firefall}. Even the great Death Arbiter was forced to avoid remaining in contact with the flames of the Skill.

"Oh! You're late!"

Zhang Yang revealed a cruel smile on his face as he sliced his sword across Liu Wei's throat. With a powerful backswing of his sword, Zhang Yang cleaved Liu Wei's head clean off his neck, and the head rolled across the ground like a football. Blood was oozing out from the stumps as the headless body collapsed onto the ground, making a great mess of its surroundings. The scene was spectacularly bloody.

"I will never forgive you!" Death Arbiter let out a desperate roar.

Everyone had witnessed what happened with their jaws dropped wide open. Although it was the Skill of Phoenix Pet, those who did not know the truth would believe that it was all Zhang Yang's doing!

Words could no longer describe the oppressiveness of it!

So that was the power of the Number One Tank in the China Region! Worthy of it all!

"Oh! It's your turn now!" Zhang Yang rode Little Fiery and charged forward. He swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] as swift as lightning. At the same time, Little Fiery was discharging its {Flamethrower}. Felice had also transformed into her Dragonhawk Form as she began to spit {Fire Missiles} repeatedly at the target.

"Mana Incineration!"

"Thorn of the Devil!"

"Crescent Moon Slash!"

Death Arbiter went berserk on Zhang Yang with the best Skills he had. The Inheritance Skills of his Demon Hunter Inheritance were being activated, one after another. There was no reason for him to hold back anymore. If he fails to kill Zhang Yang now, he would be shamed by his own deeds!

However, Zhang Yang had nothing to fear at all! Upon activating the {Phoenix Transformation}, the Maximum HP and Attack power of Zhang Yang were able to match Death Arbiter's!

Zhang Yang continued to bash Death Arbiter up!

With a series of attacks, he began to overwhelm Death Arbiter with his mighty bashes and smashes. Death Arbiter was struck so hard in his vital parts that he could no longer differentiate the direction he was facing.

At the same time, Liu Wei and his men had run all the way back to their dead bodies as they began to resurrect among themselves.

"Kill them! Kill them all!" Zhang Yang commanded his guild members in a cold tone.

"Yes, guildmaster! Our swords belong to you!"

The fellow members of the Lone desert Smoke had been keeping their head down long enough. Upon hearing Zhang Yang's command, they charged into the battlefield and launched their most brutal form of attacks on Liu Wei and his men.

Now that these scums were defeated by Zhang Yang all by himself once, no one would complain even if Zhang Yang would send 10,000 members of Lone Desert Smoke to slaughter them up. Even if it was true that Lone Desert Smoke was using numbers to overwhelm their enemy forces, no one would say a word anymore.

Liu Wei and his fellow guild members were aware of their situation at least. After a few attempt of charging at the Lone Desert Smoke army, they ceased fire. Upon resurrecting at the graveyard, they began to run off. However, Death Arbiter was continuously tortured by Zhang Yang for two hours long, literally! Everything was only over for him after his Transformation expired. Who knows if that experience would leave a deep mark that would haunt him for the rest of his life.

# Chapter 626: World League Championship

---

Despite the fact that Death Arbiter was suffering at the hands of Zhang Yang, his outstanding battle performance stood out while he was battling One Sword Stroke. Many players praised and recognized him as one of the best players in the entire game. It could be said that he would be famous, a new rising star in the China Region over night after that battle. A large number of players believed that Death Arbiter deserved to be ranked as one of the top Tier player with a special title!

Little did they know that they had been underestimating Zhang Yang all the while.

Zhang Yang was indeed worthy to be the Number One in the entire China Region. It seemed that he was so powerful than those beneath his 'throne', that the gap of strength between Zhang Yang and the rest were blurred greatly. No one could seem to shake his title up to this point!

However, the players were debating intensely to whom shall hold the title of being the Number Two player in the entire China Region. Since there were true individual ranking competition held in China to determine the player's rank, everyone could only rely on debates to determine the ranking position. The name One Sword Stroke had struck out prominently while some had suggested Sword of Light. There was even a few who suggested that Snow Seeker was the one that should be ranked second.

Furthermore, some players even tried to urge the official to organize a yearly ranking contest to satisfy the players' curiosity.

Dream Technology had addressed the issue and responded. They had announced that a consideration to organize a qualifying contest in every Region after the World League Championship had ended. A list would be made to rank the professional players according to their performances. The lists would be classified according to each Class as each list would list out the Top 100 players of each Class in each individual Region. In other words, there would be Top 100 for each of the available Classes in the entire game.

After being reminded by the official, many had only come to realize that the finale for the World League Championship was just around the corner!

The World League Championship in each of the main Region was held in a full swing. Other than the Class S matches, the Class A matches were being monitored closely by many as well. Even the Class B matches were attended with large crowds. In the upcoming finale of the World League Championship matches, each main Region would send their best and second best Battle Teams to join the fight against the best and second best Battle Teams from other main Regions! The matches should be interesting to see. So more people were paying attention towards the event!

Players from all 8 main Regions were hoping that they would be the ones who could acquire the Champion Trophy for their own Regions.

As everyone had turned their attention towards the finale of the World League Championship, only a small number of attentions



had been put on the progress of the new Level 120 dungeon called the 'Red Garnet Palace'. There was a reason why players had picked to focus more on the World League Championship instead of focusing more on the progress of a new dungeon. Firstly, only a small number of players were able to reach beyond Level 120 at the moment. Secondly, this would be the second world-class dungeon. The definition of first and the definition of second would differ largely. Therefore, no guild would actually put so much effort as they did with the progress on the Dragon Throat Fortress.

Zhang Yang was currently grinding his level as hard as he could. It was only approximately 10 days before he would depart for America. He was only 4 levels from reaching Level 130. Hence, there was still hope in attaining that target.

Wei Yan Er had been complaining and blaming Zhang Yang for not taking her with him while he was acquiring the Phoenix Pet. By the end of it, Zhang Yang bought a puppy and gave the little canine as her pet. Only then, the little brat was calmed. Unfortunately, that little brat only had a brief period of enthusiasm towards that puppy. When Zhang Yang brought he puppy back to her, she swore to take care of the puppy for better or worse till death do them apart. Like Sakura trees, the enthusiasm to take care of the puppy died down after three days. The little poor canine was left to starve to death on its own in the corner of the house.

Sun Xin Yu hugged the puppy into her room without make a sound about it. At the very least, the puppy did not die of starvation.

However, Zhang Yang had a new problem. The pug had acquired a habit to stash food. It was most probably because Wei Yan Er starved it for a while hence this little fellow learned to reserve food in the case of emergency. Zhang Yang could find tons of bones and meat underneath his couch...

Even though Sun Xin Yu looked all cool and 'icy', but her heart was filled with compassion and love. The pug had gotten a fat and round stomach after a few days being pampered by Sun Xin Yu. The way it walked looked absolutely adorable! When the little brat came back one week later to stay for a night, she could not recognize that it was the same pug that she had almost starved to death.

Time passed without mercy. In a blink of an eye, it was already the day that Zhang Yang and his gang depart for America. However, the game company suddenly sent them a message saying that the venue of the contest had been changed to the city of Luxembourg in the Grand-Duché de Luxembourg (Grand Duchy of Luxembourg). As visa had become a major problem for most of the contestants, the date of the contest was delayed by a week.

It was actually a fortunate thing for Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was currently at Level 128. His experience bar had filled up to 89% at the moment. One week of extra time could provide him buffer period to reach Level 130.

Upon acquiring their visa passes, Zhang Yang led his party of seven and departed for the contest. Meanwhile, Crimson Rage had won the contest that was held back in the China Region and became the second qualified guild to enter the finale of the World

League Championship. However, Zhang Yang and Snow Seeker were living too far away from each other. They did not depart together. They only met up when they arrived at the hotel that was arranged by the organizer of the event.

The Grand Duchy of Luxembourg was a country that was known to have the best living conditions among many European countries. The country had many mansions and castles of all sizes. The country was well known to be the country with a thousand castles. The venue of the contest was being held in one of the large castle. The exotic style of foreign countries was always so amazing.

It was quite a rare occasion to travel across another country. Therefore, they did not spend all their time on the game. Instead, the seven of them went out to feast their eyes upon the historical culture of the Europe countries. The only time they were playing the game was when they were all sleeping,

Finally, Zhang Yang had succeeded in reaching Level 130 before the opening ceremony of the competition. He could finally take out the {Python's Helmet}, {Amoss's Nose Hoop} and {Knight's Glory Chest Plate}. Upon switching the three equipment on, his attributes increased by a notch.

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 130

HP: 346,550 (With Vitality Aura)

Defence: 5,640

Strength: 8,306

Attack: 52,416 - 57,551 ((23,193 - 25,465) \*226%)

Damage Absorption: 5,987

Luck Attribute: 28 (Lucky Strike rate: 2.8%)

Critical Rate: 15%

The two Level 150 Ethereal equipment had really boosted Zhang Yang up to a whole new level. Compared to his previous attributes, his Attack and HP had been increased 2 times over! It was surprisingly terrifying! That was also why Zhang Yang had pressured himself to reach Level 130 before the competition.

As the day of the competition was approaching, Zhang Yang could also see other contestants in the game. Members of top Tier guilds such as Land of Savages and Paragon were wondering about in the palace.

"Zhan Yu?" a beauty with the look of a foreigner came right up to Zhang Yang. This beauty had an extremely 'intoxicating' hot body figure. She was really tall. Although it was the middle of the winter, but the woman took off her coat as soon as she entered the castle. Upon taking off her coat, she revealed her extremely hot body figure to everyone in the castle. Her waist was extremely

slim. She was a true marvel sight for sore eyes.

She appeared Indian. However, her skin was very fair. She had blonde hair and her eyes seemed to whisper in mystery. They were really electrifying to look at! She had to be of mixed-descent.

She was quite tall among her own people. There were many men following her from behind. By the looks of it, they were her bodyguards. Other than that, there were also some admirers laying their eyes upon her. When she walked up to Zhang Yang, the bodyguards went into alert mode, and the admirers revealed a sense of hostility towards Zhang Yang.

"You are ---" Zhang Yang could not remember the last time meeting such a beauty that could be seen as the same level of Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er in term of their looks.

"In 'God's Miracle', my name is 'Hourglass Figure'!" The beautiful woman laughed, "Amisa Tarta. That's my real name."

The woman was speaking fluent, Oxford English.

Zhang Yang had encountered a world-class apocalyptic problem. All the while, Zhang Yang had been relying on the in-game automatic translator to communicate with players of different languages. However, now that he was in the real world, he could no longer rely on the Translator. With the little English that he knew, Zhang Yang could still manage to understand a word or two of what she was trying to say. After all, introducing themselves to each other was a rather simple step.

However, this Hourglass Figure was worthy to be the Number One beauty in the entire India Region. Furthermore, she was the successor of the Steely Dangs Holdings. Who would know how much assets she had in those pretty hands of hers? No wonder there were so many admirers trying to pursue her. No wonder those admirers would look at him with such hostility!

Zhang Yang had only crossed path with this beautiful creature once. Why would they be so envious? Why did they look at him as if he had tainted their goddess? If they can not get the woman, why would they blame their own failure on others, then?

Zhang Yang sighed quietly, deep in his heart. Then, he attempted to speak to Amisa with his half-baked English. However, the conversation was basically like a duck trying to quack at a clucking chicken. None of them were able to fully understand each other.

In the end, Han Ying Xue had to step up as the interpreter. She had learned English when she was studying back in London a few years ago. Her English was rusty, but still fluent. Although the two of them seemed to be smiling and giggling as they spoke, Zhang Yang could see sparks flying from one side.

That's right. Han Ying Xue was defending her 'sovereign property'. However, Amisa did not express anything but friendship towards Zhang Yang. She only wanted Zhang Yang to join her ranks. That sort of hostility between the two of them was just odd. There was no other way to describe the situation.

Zhang Yang was very familiar with the Battle Teams from the Chinese Region. However, he was not familiar with the Battle Teams from other Regions. Other than players who had acquired a Class S Inheritance like Amisa herself, Zhang Yang would not waste his effort and time, digging deep for the information about someone. After all, he had only been struggling about in the Class A League Championship matches in his previous life. He was not even qualified to represent China Region when competing for the crown in the World League Championship.

For the next two days, Amisa kept coming over to visit Zhang Yang and his Battle Team members at their hotel rooms. She kept trying to invite Zhang Yang... not just Zhang Yang, she even tried to invite Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu and the others to join her! Zhang Yang could not help but frown. This woman was actually attempting to poach his members right in front of him!

However, none of Zhang Yang's gang had shown the slightest interest in joining her --- although Amisa did try to pique their interest by offering a great deal of conditions!

However, all of them felt that as long as they had enough money to spend, that would be sufficient. There were no greedy persons in Zhang Yang's gang. They were quite content with their current life.

"Pui! 30,000,000 dollars a year to get me over to your side? Are you underestimating me?" Wei Yan Er was angered, then she said, "Noob tank could give me a hundred millions in a year! If you want to recruit me, at least offer me 200 million to 300 million dollars!"

Erm... well, there was still someone acting greedy, after all...

On the 22nd of January, the World League Championship Finale had finally raised its curtains! It was 7 p.m, the 16 Battle Teams arrived and lined up by the hall. After a short and brief opening ceremony, the organizer announced that the matchings of each Battle Team would be decided by lucky draw.

Although the opening ceremony was short, the ‘God’s Miracle’ was, after all, the most popular game in the entire world. Naturally, many celebrities and VIPs attended the event. That included some of the top influential people and some of the finest actors and actresses in the entire world! The opening ceremony was so grand that it felt like a Winter Carnival!

It was finally the moment that the players had been waiting for. The Lucky draw session.

To prevent any possibility of cheating, the two Battle Teams from the same Regions would be arranged to compete in two different sections separately. In other words, the 16 Battle Teams would be separated into two sections, with 8 Battle Teams competing against each other in each section. Of course, the Battle Teams from the same Region would not be arranged into the same section. Therefore, it was not possible for two Battle Teams from the same Region to run into each other before the Finals. The schedule of the contest would be as follows:

22nd , Quarterfinals (Top 8); 23rd ,



Top 4 on each different section; 24th ,

Semifinals (Top 4); 25th ,

Finals (Champion, Runner-Up, Third-in-place, Forth-in-place).

The final rewards for the winners of the competition were finally announced: Champion Team will acquire 5,000,000 USD and one Class A Inheritance Fragment. Runner-Up Team will acquire 3,000,000 USD and one Class B Inheritance Fragment. Second Runner-Up will acquire 1,000,000 USD and one Class C Inheritance Fragment.

Money aside, the main attraction would naturally be the fragments of Inheritance!

As long as one obtains a single piece of an Inheritance Fragment, the person would be able to gather the other missing pieces and activate the Inheritance Quest. It would just be a matter of time before that happens.

Although there were quite a number of players in the game who had already acquired an Inheritance for themselves, it did not mean that the value of the Inheritance would drop.

Lone Desert Smoke was already packed with 3 players carrying Class S Inheritances, 1 player with Class A Inheritance, and 5 players with Class B Inheritance at the moment. Even so, they were still hoping more of their members would obtain

Inheritances to make their guild even stronger!

In another aspect, if the contestants were not interested in acquiring the Inheritance Fragment, they could still sell it after they manage to acquire it. There would be countless of guilds willing to offer their higher tier equipment, and some would even fork out large sums of gold coins for the Inheritance Fragment!

"It's a Class A Inheritance! If it's a Spell-type Inheritance, then sister Daffodil will finally have her own Inheritance!" Wei Yan Er clapped with joy as she said. Among the seven of them, only Daffodil Daydream had not yet acquired an Inheritance.

"Alright! Let's do our best and help Daffodil get that reward!"

As captain of the battle team for Lone Desert Smoke, Zhang Yang and the rest of the party captains went up to the stage. The matches they were going to go up against would all be decided by lucky draws.

The organizer had applied the best 2 out of 3 method to determine the winner of the match. Every match would be following the same protocols of the previous League Championship. Firstly, they would set up 7 matches in the form of 1 VS 1. If none of the two sides could score 5 wins for their side by the end of the 7 matches, the competition would switch things up a little. It would become a 5 VS 5 party battle. Every team that is going to participate must acquire two victories in order to proceed into the Quarterfinals, to become one of the Top 8.

Zhang Yang managed to draw a number that set his team up against 'Moira Battle Team' from the Europe Region. Their match would be the fourth match of the day.

Upon the completion of the lucky draws, all battle teams went to the rest area and got ready for the competition. Currently, everyone had the information about all 15 battle teams, which including all players' levels and their Classes. However, their Skills, especially their Inheritance Skills were not listed on the sheets. Of course, it would be better to keep those a secret to make the competition interesting. Right before the competition starts, the two battle teams must confirm their members who would be participating in the matches. Upon confirmation, they could no longer make any changes afterward. Or else, the entire battle team would be forfeited!

The Moira Battle Team came in full force. All 10 slots were filled, and the contestants were all ready to roll. The player with the highest level among their members was a Level 122 Spellcaster named 'Light of Hope'. Meanwhile, the player with the lowest level among their members was a Level 117 Priest named 'King of the Jungle'.

After reading the sheet lists of the other Battle Teams, Zhang Yang had to decide on which member of his team would take part in this competition.

"A team of high Tier horses versus a team of middle Tier horses, and then a team of middle Tier horses versus a team of low Tier horses. Then the winner shall be revealed by the end of all these matches!" Wei Yan Er wrinkled her nose as she spoke.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Hmm, are you a high Tier horse, a middle Tier horse, or a low Tier horse then?"

"Pui! You're the horse! Not me!" Wei Yan Er did not fall into Zhang Yang's trap, not admitting herself as a horse. She rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang made a final headcount, then he said, "We don't know them well, and we don't know who's strong and who's not. However, we shall remain the best, always! We don't need to think about cheating or anything else! We just have to prove ourselves by doing our best and taking out anyone that stands in our way! Well, the first one to go up stage will be Ice queen. The second one will be Witchy Snow. I'll be the third. We shall use three Class S Inheritances to show them who's the boss and destroy their confidence. Little brat, you're the 4th one going out. If you still can't win with your Class A Inheritance, we're going to punish you by forcing you to stand outside of the door for the entire night! After that, Lost Dream and Hundred Shots, you guys just have to win once each. By then, we can end the battle earlier without getting ourselves into a Party Battle!

# Chapter 627: Quarterfinals

---

At 8 p.m, the first match of the World League Championship Finale finally kicked off! Players from all around the world put everything aside and tuned in to watch the matches.

Battles between top Tier players would either last 10 seconds or drag on for hours. Truth be told, unless it is a battle between Thief Class players, the matches would typically last for tens of minutes before it ends with victor up top. After all, players who have made it this far must have been one of the top players in their own Regions.

The first match was won by the 'Real Battle Team' from South America. They won by scoring 5:1 as they defeated the 'Azuma no Netsu Battle Team' from Japan-Korea Region. They were now leading with a final score of 1:0 at the moment. One of many reasons they could triumph over the players from Japan-Korea Region was because they were in luck. Every player from their side happened to face an opponent that had a disadvantage in terms of their Classes. Secondly, none of the players from Azuma no Netsu Battle Team had reached up to Level 120 yet. With a detrimental combination of inferior equipment and ill-matched classes, their loss came as no surprise.

However, the second match was intense. This time, both sides had made some adjustments on the sequence of players who would go in first. Real Battle Team was not as lucky as they were in the first match. They no longer had the advantage in Classes. The battles were fierce and close. The round was concluded with the score of 4:3 after 7 matches. Therefore, the two Battle Teams had to participate in the 5 VS 5 Team Battle.

By the end of it, the Azuma no Netsu Battle Team lost because of their inferior equipment. They lost with the score of 3:6 in the second round. With the final score settling at 0:2, the Azuma no Netsu Battle Team was eliminated from the Championship.

The next rounds were the matches between the 'Hell Battle Team' from Europe Region and the 'Holden Battle Team' from Australia Region. After struggling through 3 difficult rounds, the Hell Battle Team won by scoring 2:1 in the final score and progressed into the Quarterfinals.

Zhang Yang felt that something was a little off. Dusk Phoenix who had been constantly hunting after him was supposedly on Hell Battle Team. However, there was no sign of her at all, in both the 1 VS 1 matches and the 5 VS 5 team battles!

She had a Class A Inheritance and had to be one of the most powerful members of the team. So, why would she not be battling in any of the matches so far? If she would just join in any of the battles, there would be 90% certainty that the Hell Battle Team would score 1 victory for themselves. They would not have to go through so much hardship. They even might have won their previous match by scoring 2:0!

It was indeed very strange. What could that woman be up to, then?

After that, the Philosopher's Stone Battle Team from North America Region was defeated by the Steely Dangs Battle Team

from India Region by the score of 1:2. They were the third to be eliminated from the Championship.

The following match was Zhang Yang's battle team going up against the Moira Battle Team.

Because they were not familiar with the members of their opponents, they could not arrange the appropriate players to go up against their opponents based on their weaknesses and strengths. However, Zhang Yang and the rest of his members were very confident. After all, all of them had already acquired an Inheritance that was higher than Class B, at the least for themselves, other than Daffodil Daydream. This poor little lady still could not get her own Inheritance, as she had not come across any suitable ones so far. Hence, every single one of them should not have any trouble if they go up against their opponents in 1 VS 1 matches, regardless of who they were dealing with.

After the sexy host finished with her introductions, Sun Xin Yu was the first member of the team to step foot onto the battle stage. Meanwhile, her opponent - 'The Reaper' was a guardian who had only reached Level 120 recently. Judging from the looks of it, this Guardian was well equipped, with high Tier equipment. He seemed very different from the others.

It was an unfortunate turn of events for a Thief to go up against a Guardian. Tanker Classes had a natural advantage over Thiefs!

When they saw Sun Xin Yu walking up the stage, the members of the Moira Battle Teams broke in smiles of joy. Victory was theirs, even before the match has begun. How wrong would they be to

think like that?

To them, it was simple math. Players would not be able to activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills in this competition. Although Sun Xin Yu was currently Level 126, her attributes would only be as good as a Level 120 can get, even with all the high Tier equipment she was equipped with. It seemed that The Reaper had the absolute advantage over Sun Xin Yu in the aspect of Classes.

As the night was packed with several matches in its schedule, the 5-minute preparation provided to all contestants was shortened to 1 minute. In just a brief moment, the system had announced the commencement of the first match.

Without wasting any time, Sun Xin Yu went into Stealth Mode. No words, no taunts, no flourishing of her weapons. She just vanished into thin air! Meanwhile, The Reaper walked towards where Sun Xin Yu had disappeared with extreme caution. He held a shield in his left hand, and a battle hammer in his right hand. He was moving around as carefully as possible. If he could just force Sun Xin Yu out of her Stealth Mode, victory would already be his!

"Noob tank, do you think that sister Sun can win?" Wei Yan Er was very nervous.

Zhang Yang laughed with ease and said, "Even I would have a 50% chance of being killed by her if she ever comes for me in the Open World map. So, what do you think?"



His gang members were very well aware of how powerful Zhang Yang was. Everyone became very confident that Sun Xin Yu would win the battle, upon hearing what Zhang Yang had to say. Most Warrior Classes could only be as powerful as 10% of Zhang Yang's strength. If Sun Xin Yu could really fight Zhang Yang and stand a 50% chance of winning, then she would definitely stand over any other warrior, regardless of class.

Pak!

A shadow appeared all of a sudden, right behind The Reaper. It was Sun Xin Yu! With {Ambush}, she stunned The Reaper for 4 seconds. The moment The Reaper was stunned, Sun Xin Yu began to whirl her weapons in both hands, and the HP bar of The Reaper began to drop.

The Reaper did not activate any Skills to dispel the effects of {Ambush}. Instead, he intended to keep his {Warrior's Will} for the more dangerous {Kidney Shot} that had yet to be used on him. The duration of the status restriction from {Kidney Shot} could last for 6 seconds.

As for his accessory that could provide him with an invincibility effect, he decided to only use it after the second round of the {Vanish}.

However, even though he could not move at the moment, but his Battle Companion did not stay idle. The Battle Companion of The Reaper was a middle-aged human. There was no way of determining the initial Tier of the Battle Companion at the moment. However, his entire body was radiating in violet

equipment. It was obvious that the Battle Companion was equipped with Violet-Platinum Tier!

However, this middle-age man was not a DPS Battle Companion. He was a Healer-type Battle Companion. He would remain behind to heal his master.

Just hit it, girl! Just hit it! The Reaper thought to himself as he had a thick layer of armor protecting him. Furthermore, he also had the Class B Aethereal Turtle Inheritance. Without the need of activating his Inheritance Transformation, he still had 10% additional Damage Immunity and 50% additional Defense increment. Therefore, his Defense should be as hard as a turtle shell! He was not worried about how much damage Sun Xin Yu could deal to him. Furthermore, he even had a Healer-type Battle Companion healing him up! After that 4-second of stunning, he would be the one torturing Sun Xin Yu!

The Reaper had a cold smile on his face. However, he realized that something was off after being hit for 2 seconds. How could his HP be reducing at such a rapid speed?

In merely 4 seconds, his HP bar had been reduced by 40%! Holy molly! He could swear that he had the Defense of a turtle! How did this Thief make it seem as if he was made of paper!

The brief 4-second stun effect was like four hours to him. He was anxious. After waiting out for the effect, Sun Xin Yu activated her {Kidney Shot,} as expected. He quickly activated his {Warrior's Will} to cancel the negative effect on him and turned around swiftly to face Sun Xin Yu. The moment he faced her, he finally

realized that Sun Xin Yu was not holding two daggers, instead, they were two swords!

The Reaper was astounded to see that. Did he not receive a {Backstab}? Well, {Backstab} was a Skill that can only be activated when the user has daggers in her hands. How could Sun Xin Yu be using the Skill with swords? What the hell?

Sun Xin Yu did not waste her breath explaining how she made it possible. It was the passive Skill that was provided by her Shadow Dancer Inheritance!

[Weapon Mastery (Passive)]: You can use a one-handed sword to replace your dagger and activate all Skills that require a dagger.

It was just like how Zhang Yang's God of War Inheritance allowed him to equip two-handed weapons in his left hand while holding a shield in his right hand. It was a special perk that only the wielder of a Class S Inheritance could have!

In terms of DPS, the same level and same Tier of a one-handed sword and a dagger did not differ much. However. The speed of the weapons differed. The slowest attack interval for a one-handed sword was 2.8 seconds, while the slowest attack interval for a dagger was only 1.8 seconds. If both weapons end up with the same amount of DPS, it would only mean that the sword should have a significantly higher attack attribute to make up for its sluggishness. However, this DPS only took into account the normal strikes of a weapon. The DPS would greatly differ if the player activates the same Skills with two different types of weapons!

{Backstab} was a Skill that would cause 200% of the Attack that the main Weapon could deal. Upon a complete upgrade of the Skill, the player would deal up to 250% of the Attack that the main Weapon could deal! It could be considered as the main damage dealing Skill of Thieves. A player should be able to deal 45,000 damage to the target by using a dagger. On the other hand, the player should be able to deal up to 70,000 damage to the target, by using a sword!

That was a lot of difference!

Even though The Reaper had a thick Defense, it would still not be enough for him to tank against a {Backstab} that is fuelled by a sword. Fortunately, one {Backstab} would require 50 MP. Furthermore, Sun Xin Yu must be standing behind her target in order to activate her {Backstab}. Furthermore, a professional player like himself would definitely not give his back to his opponents!

However, The Reaper felt that his entire body was numb once again before he could begin his assault on Sun Xin Yu. He was stunned, again! A second Assassin had appeared behind his back!

Sun Xin Yu dashed over to The Reaper's back to get ready for her next assault. She only needed 10 MP before she can activate her second {Backstab}!

With nothing left to back him up, The Reaper was forced to remove the restriction status on him by activating the Invincibility

Effect of his accessory.

He attempted to fight back the moment he removed the status restriction effect on him. However, Sun Xin Yu was an extremely agile Thief. Her steps were as light as a feather as she retreated from The Reaper. She was stalling The Reaper until his Invincibility Effect fades.

The moment the Invincible Effect faded, Sun Xin Yu activated her {Vanish} and disappeared into the surroundings. Then she smacked an {Ambush} right on her opponent once again!

This time, however, The Reaper had nothing left to rid the Restriction Status effect on him. He could only activate his {Shield Wall} in an attempt to stay alive.

{Shield Wall} could last for 10 seconds. It was just enough for him to shield himself from the 4-second stun effect of the {Kidney Shot} and the 6-second Restriction Status Effect!

With that, Sun Xin Yu had succeeded in getting rid of all The Reaper's life-saving Skills that he could spare!

Sun Xin Yu did not waste her Skills and MP on the {Shield Wall} of The Reaper. Instead, she turned her attention towards his Battle Companion as she began to launch her assaults towards the poor middle-age man. 4 seconds later, she turned her attention back to The Reaper as she activated her {Kidney Shot} and put another Restriction Status Effect on him!

10 seconds was more than enough for Sun Xin Yu and Ankh the Assassin to kill that Battle Companion several times over!

The moment the {Shield Wall} faded, The Reaper recovered from the stun effect. He immediately charged at Sun Xin Yu, roaring in anger. Ever since the beginning of the match, he had not been able to move at all. Also, his Battle Companion had been slaughtered, and he could not do anything about it! He felt extremely embarrassed!

{Blast Wave}! {Heroic Leap}! {Brutal Smash}!

He was not willing to show any sign of weakness as he kept spamming his Skills on Sun Xin Yu.

However, Sun Xin Yu dodged every single attack that The Reaper could throw at her. The Reaper could not do anything about it as Sun Xin Yu started beating him up.

Upon acquiring the {Weapon Mastery}, Sun Xin Yu no longer feared going head-on with other players in battles. Not only did she have the agility of a Thief, but her durability and stamina were that of an Assassin. It was just like the God of War Inheritance, her Shadow Dancer Inheritance had allowed her to have both advantages of the two Thief Classes!

Furthermore, Class S Inheritances could provide players with an additional 50% damage output. It had made her so powerful that she was now capable of facing a Tanker head on! She also had her Battle Companion - Ankh the Assassin to support her in dealing

damage to her enemy!

The match ended with an unexpected outcome! A guardian with a Defensive-type Inheritance had been whittled to death by a Thief!

It was the uttermost humiliation that one could ever experience!

## Chapter 628: A 'Different' Tactic

---

Silky Soft Battle Team obtained their first victory and they scored 1:0 against their opposition team. The next to go up the stage was Han Ying Xue.

The witchy Snow planted a kiss on Zhang Yang's lips and said, "I'll be right back, sweetheart!"

What the f\*ck! This witch had turned him into the involuntary half of a couple displaying their affection in public!

Coincidentally, her opponent was a Level 118 Spellcaster with the name 'Elemental Mistress'. She was a female Elf. She seemed to be well-equipped. Her Battle Companion was a female Hunter. It seemed that this player would be attacking the target together with her Battle Companion. They would attempt to go on an all-out assault.

Han Ying Xue summoned the whiner out. Before Messick could even begin with his perverted acts, she had already sent him flying with a kick to the face. Then she said, "Go, defeat the two enemies over there! Make them your girl slaves!"

"My queen, I'm always loyal to you! Other women are just sh\*t in my eyes!" Messick spoke with passion and sincerity. However, his eyes were already set upon Elemental Mistress and her Battle Companion as he 'scanned' their body figures. He suddenly pulled out his long spear and charged towards the two women. He screamed, "The mighty Messick is here! Me! No one can hurt my



queen! You two witches! Lay down on the bed ... I mean kneel down on the ground and die!"

The whiner charged out with admirable courage. He would only be so courageous in such a situation. Well... a pervert for life... who is to judge them?

Elemental Mistress did not even spare the Battle Companion a glance. Her primary target was the player. She gave her Battle Companion a command and both of them charged towards Han Ying Xue. Upon locking onto Han Ying Xue, they held nothing back and launched their assaults on Han Ying Xue.

On the other hand, Han Ying Xue had already activated {Milkmaid Deity's Protection} at the start of the battle. She threw her {Putrefying Poison} onto Elemental Mistress and began to heal herself. She stood there like a pillar, as the enemy bombarded her to no end.

Elemental Mistress grinned. This was a free win for her.

Before the Healers had been nerfed by the system, they could easily nullify the attacks that a single player could deliver. As long as their equipment were of the same standards, they should be able to maintain their HP and survive. As long as their MP bars were not emptied out, their HP bars would not be emptied out either! However, since the system had nerfed the Healers by one-third of their initial capabilities, their healing speed would no longer keep up with the speed of their enemies dealing damage on them.

Furthermore, she also had a Battle Companion to support her in dealing even more damage. Although this Battle Companion started out as a Gray-Silver Tier, her agility growth rate was a whopping 11 stars! Now her Battle Companion was mainly wearing Violet-Platinum Tier equipment and a few pieces of Mythical Tier equipment, the damage-dealing capability of this Battle Companion was as good as 40% of her own!

Under that sort of bombardment, how long could the opponent possibly remain alive?

98%, 96%, 94%, 92%, 90%, 88% ...

87%, 100%, 86%, 100%, 83%, 100% ...

After some time battling, Elemental Mistress realized that something was off! What was going on, exactly? How was her HP reducing steadily under the influence of Han Ying Xue's {Putrefying Poison,} even though she was busy healing herself most of the time? Although the rate of reduction was extremely low, her HP bar was indeed decreasing in every passing second! How could Han Yin Xue's healing capability be so powerful!? Elemental Mistress only managed to hit Han Ying Xue once before Han Ying Xue healed herself back to her full HP! She was basically unkillable!

Wei Yan Er laughed herself silly, then she said, "Haha! Trying to kill my cousin sis? Dream on! Haha! Even after I use {Destructive Smash} to reduce her Healing efficiency by 50%, she could still heal herself back up! This one here is just a Spellcaster! Cousin sis has a Class S Inheritance now! She's the cow of immortal udders and

endless milk! Haha!"

Healers would have an absolute disadvantage against Berserkers who can reduce their healing efficiency. Once they use their {Destructive Smash} on the Healer, they could kill the Healers with just a few attacks, even if their equipment was inferior to the Healer's.

If the little brat could not kill Han Ying Xue, no one but Zhang Yang could possibly kill her. After all, Zhang Yang had an insanely high Attack and he was capable of reducing more than just 50% of a Healer's healing efficiency! Therefore, Han Ying Xue could heal herself and outlast any opponent in any 1 VS 1 match!

Elemental Mistress was so overwhelmed by her own emotions that she began to panic. She was on the verge of crying! No matter how hard she and her Battle Companion tried, they could not even reduce Han Ying Xue's HP down to below 70% before she heals herself back up --- actually, she managed to reduce Han Ying Xue's HP bar below 70%. That was because she had activated a counter Skill on Han Ying Xue, causing her to not be able to use her Skills for a brief moment.

However, counter Skills had cooldown periods as well. The moment the effect was over, Elemental Mistress could only stare at Han Ying Xue helplessly as the super 'cow' milked herself back up to health.

Battling Han Ying Xue in a Player VS Player match was definitely a torture for most of the players!

Her complete lack of tactical knowledge further adds to the insult. She could not perform 'Supporting Attacks', and neither would she move around the arena! She would not even attempt to exhaust other players into using their Skills ineffectively! She only uses that one offensive skill on the opponent. The {Putrefying Poison} and healing herself combo... until her opponent dies of DOT effect!

Theoretically speaking, a player like her who would not even run around the arena would easily get overpowered by Berserkers with higher attributes. It would be even worse if those Berserkers would even know how to use 'Supporting Attacks' efficiently. They could just interrupt her chanting with their 'Supporting Attacks' and rid her of her healing capability in a battle. However, that annoying Messick would be guarding her, acting as her human shield when she goes up against a Berserker.

Furthermore, she still had her {Holy Shield} to protect herself. As long as her shield is not broken, her chanting would not be interrupted and she would never be pushed back. She could effectively counter the 'Supporting Attacks' from her opponents with her shield.

Hence, the current situation was totally one-sided.

Han Ying Xue did not possess any useful PvP skills. However, she managed to oppress Elemental Mistress by using many of her Healing Skills and the high Healing Efficiency gifted by her Inheritance!

2:0!

After losing two matches in a row, the morale of the Moira Battle Team plummeted. It would require one great victory to reignite their fiery will!

Unfortunately, the opponent that they were going to face was the Strongest player in the Silky Soft Battle Team --- Zhang Yang!

The Moira Battle Team had sent yet another lady as the third contestant. She was a Level 118 Hunter who had a Wind Fox pet and a Healing-type Battle Companion with her.

This Hunter was called 'Seductive Wild Pussy', an elf. She was rather tall. The appearance and height of a player in the game would not necessarily reflect their real-life appearance. However, the attitude and behavior of the character would be the mirror-image. When the battle started, she began to launch her assaults on Zhang Yang, attempting to sway Zhang Yang's 'will' by saying, "Hey handsome! Can you really prove yourself as a real man here? Why don't you come over to my room later so that we can have a good 'battle' there! Hmm... you look 'strong'... I'm thinking of filling up my void down here with that stick of yours over there!"

Zhang Yang frowned intensely as he never thought that a woman would seduce him during a battle! He continued to push the woman to the corner with all his assaults, pretending that he did not hear a single word she said.

The movement of Seductive Wild Pussy around the arena was

smooth. She used her pet as an obstacle between herself and Zhang Yang to slow him down a little. She continued to tease Zhang Yang as the words she said never left the topic of 'come between my legs'. Well, everything she said to Zhang Yang so far was more than enough to turn into an erotica masterpiece.

In his previous life, Zhang Yang had encountered various players who loved to use foul language to tease and provoke other people. However, he had never encountered a player who would use the sexual approach on him during a battle! This woman had no sense of shame in her at all! She was using every possible word that would turn a man on. She would even take the opportunity to shake her boobies and her butt between her attack intervals. Zhang Yang believed that she would have stripped completely naked if the equipment did not give any boosts to her attributes. Because that would definitely be more effective to seduce a man.

"Hey, we could have a threesome as well! I don't mind you bringing another woman over to my place. Or you can even bring another man to f\*ck me! Hmm --- to be honest, I prefer 3 or 4 men to f\*ck me up at the same time! The pleasure is just heavenly when you're being filled up and down!"

This b\*tch is really gifted in such a way that she could bombard Zhang Yang with all her horny words as her arms spoke a completely different language. Her arrows flew at him relentlessly. He could help but to feel impressed by this b\*tch.

Every match of the Championship was being broadcast live. Everyone could observe their battles from all 360 degrees of angle and hear every single word they say during the battle. With the

string of vulgar moans and garbage coming from Seductive Wild Pussy, some of the players were agitated, while some of them were turned on instead. These perverts were hoping to switch places with Zhang Yang right away so that they could have a great time with that little b\*tch.

The arena was not particularly large. If she was battling some other player, Seductive Wild Pussy could still agilely dodge all assaults from her opponent by moving all over the place. However, her opponent was Zhang Yang, the best player in the entire China Region! Therefore, her only way was to retreat until her back was against the wall of the arena.

Truth be told, even if Zhang Yang did not approach that little b\*tch, Felice alone was enough to torture Seductive Wild Pussy with her assaults in her Dragonhawk form. Currently, the {Fire Missile} of Felice could deal up to 46,000 damage to her target. Even if that little b\*tch had a Healing-type Battle Companion to heal her from time to time, she would instantly burn up.

However, knowing that her words should have won over more than one fan, Zhang Yang had to hold back to prevent making enemies out of those horny fans!

Seductive Wild Pussy was not able to deal much damage to Zhang Yang for the moment, because she had been forced to move around frequently. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had insanely high Defense! Gradually, slowly, she was still losing more HP than him!

"Armor-Piercing Arrow!" Seductive Wild Pussy knew very well that she would get killed by the Dragonhawk lady in the sky before

she could even seduce Zhang Yang into wanting her! She fixed her eyes on her target as she began to load an arrow onto her bow. She pulled the string back and released the arrow straight towards Zhang Yang. The arrow was radiating in dark energy as it flew towards Zhang Yang.

‘-2,812!’

The arrow went straight onto Zhang Yang’s neck. Blood was spilled across the ground violently and Zhang Yang realized that he had acquired a new Negative Effect.

[Armor-Piercing Arrow]: All Defense provided by Defense-type equipment will temporarily lose their effect. Lasts for 10 seconds.

What an insanely powerful Skill!

Although it could last for a good period 10 seconds, it would not do much good in a boss battle. However, it could become an extremely useful Skill in a Player VS Player match! Temporarily losing one’s Defense provided by Defense-type equipment would mean total vulnerability! Be it Defense attribute or Passive Immune Damage, everything would become nullified for 10 seconds!

This would finish off any Tanker in the game!

Seductive Wild Pussy took the opportunity to strike out with her ultimate Skill! She stood still and released a powerful arrow at



Zhang Yang!

‘-40,341!’

Zhang Yang only had his 20% damage reduction passive Skill left. That one strike of the arrow had struck Zhang Yang with over 40,000 damage! Of course, that was all thanks to Seductive Wild Pussy’s ultimate Skill effect!

‘-26,894!’

Another arrow was released from her bow and struck Zhang Yang. This time, it was a normal attack. It was much lower than the previous hit.

If anyone would ever underestimate this woman, thinking that she only knew how to talk dirty, they could be taken out by her {Armor-Piercing Arrow} without even knowing what had struck them!

Zhang Yang managed to close in on her. With a {Charge}, he dashed up to Seductive Wild Pussy and swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] at her.

Zhang Yang had been receiving damage from the woman throughout the entire battle. Meanwhile, he could acquire 2 Rage Points in every second when he is in battle mode. He had accumulated over 120 points of Rage Points. Zhang Yang had finally let out the tiger in the cage! He began by activating his

{Destructive Smash}, followed by a series of normal slashes in order to maintain his Rage Bar at maximum --- if he just kept using his normal attacks, he would have been wasting the opportunity to collect more Rage Points, as his Rage Bar was already full. Therefore, he used his Skill first before using his normal attack on the opponent. If he had used his normal attack first before using his {Destructive Smash}, Zhang Yang would only have 75 Rage Points left.

Sometimes, small details do matter. It sets apart the professional and the regular.

Switch!

Switch!

‘-105293!’

‘-54332!’

However, two ‘Switch!’ words popped up on top of Seductive Wild Pussy. She did not receive damage from the 2 hits that landed on her. Instead, her Wind Fox pet was the one that received a large amount of damage. That two damage values instantly killed the pet, even though it had full health!

## Chapter 629: A Wild Pussy has appear!

---

It was a Pet Skill, similar to the Player's Skill - {Sacrifice}. The damage that the owner of the Pet receives will be switched over to the Pet instead!

Unfortunately, Wind Fox was a Spell-type Pet, so it did not possess a high amount of HP and Defense. Upon receiving two extremely high damage values dealt by Zhang Yang, the Wind Fox was instantly killed.

However, the sacrifice of this little Pet had granted Seductive Wild Pussy an opportunity to survive! The moment she recovered from the stun effect, she activated {Ice Trap} and she leaped back at high speed. She leaped over 10 meters back --- that was the Hunter's {Tumble}.

Zhang Yang reacted very quickly as well. He activated his {Heroic Leap} and got away before the {Ice Trap} could trigger its effect. He went flying straight towards Seductive Wild Pussy like a fearsome speedster.

{Fake Death}!

Seductive Wild Pussy suddenly let out a miserable scream and she collapsed onto the ground. Not a second later, she had already leaped back up to her feet.

It was definitely not just a useless act!

Every Skill would lock on to a target upon activation. However, if the target dies halfway through, the Skill would stop --- although {Fake Death} does not really kill a player, the system would consider the target to be lost!

Zhang Yang fell to the ground halfway through his leap. His {Heroic Leap} was forcefully halted, as his target was 'lost' all of a sudden!

That was a true demonstration of a skill! She actually managed to pull it off!

Zhang Yang was astounded by her performance. Though using a {Fake Death} to avoid being hit by another Skill sounded easy, but it would require absolute precision in doing so. The activation of {Heroic Leap} only took a split second. That being said, the reflexes of Seductive Wild Pussy had to be very swift and sensitive for her to react in such a short period of time!

Although this woman seemed to be all about sex and lust, she is one hell of a marvelous player. She should not be underestimated! Furthermore, it confirmed Zhang Yang's suspicion. She was hiding her true strength with all the dirty language. It seemed that she wanted people to believe that they have lost thanks to her endless distraction, rather than actual skill!

Seductive Wild Pussy had her back against the wall as she leaped forward. The wall actually served as a trampoline, allowing her to leap to the other far end of the arena!

She giggled like a little girl as she moved around in the arena. As she ran around the arena, she would leap and turn 360 degrees in the air while shooting out her arrows one after another. Each of the arrows landed on Zhang Yang precisely. She did not lose any speed after landing either, every time she did that!

It was a demonstration of her true professional skill!

Zhang Yang could not help but admire her even more!

That sort of leap and turn 360 degree in midair is called {Leap Shot}. It would not affect the movement speed of a player when using the Skill. At the current build of the game, Hunters could deal a substantial amount of damage as the cooldown periods for their Skills were much shorter, after the developers made some adjustments. They were now the best DPS Class in Party Battles or Boss Battles! However, the disadvantages that Hunters had in PvP matches were glaringly obvious. Once their opponents get closer than 3 meters, they would be helpless.

Though Hunters had {Tumble} and {Breaking Shot} to make distance between themselves and their opponents, but there were ways for players of other Classes to counter these Skills as well. Their opponents of other Classes could ignore the stun effect of the {Breaking Shot} by taking a [Mobility Potion]. As for {Tumble}, Warriors could activate their {Charge}, Thieves could activate their {Sprint} while Spellcasters could use their {Apparate}. Each of the Classes would have their own Skills that could be used to approach the Hunters!

Therefore, a Hunter's attack would be like shooting arrows at the target from a range. When the target is approaching, Hunters could activate {Tumble}, {Breaking Shot} or {Ice Trap} to pull some distance between themselves and their target before they continue to shoot their arrows at the target. If the Hunters still could not take out their target upon repeating the pattern of attacks, they would be as good as dead.

However, the appearance of the {Leap Shot} was a game-changing Skill for the Hunters in PvP matches!

Because Hunters could now run and shoot at the same time while maintaining a certain distance between themselves and their targets. There was no longer a blind area for them to worry about.

However, normal attacks were not the same as Skill attacks. Players were required to stand still and aim precisely. Meanwhile, leaping and turning 360 degrees over in the midair put a player in full motion across the air. It would be extremely difficult for a player to aim, pull the string on the bow and release the arrow at the target!

Furthermore, the most important thing was precision!

Normally, there would be at least 30% rate of landing an arrow on the target while a Hunter is leaping across the air. So, if a Hunter Class player could increase the hit rate up to 60%, that player could be deemed as an expert. When a Hunter Class player could increase the hit rate up to 90%, that player could be deemed as the master of experts in the Hunter Class!

Seductive Wild Pussy was that kind of a master among experts!

Up to this point, her hit rate was maintained at 100%! That was a full mark of perfection in hitting every single arrow on her target!

Zhang Yang recalled back from his past life that this {Leap Shot} was only widely known among the players of this game, three years from today. As he recalled, only a few Hunter players were using that Skill in battle when he first joined the 'God's Miracle'.

"Holy god! It's my first time I've seen a Hunter being so agile! A hunter can do all that?"

"Shooting while running? I have not thought of this!"

"That's only 0.1 second for her to aim! That woman could still hit her target so precisely! This little pussy is really great!"

Everyone was astonished by her performance as they were watching the match through the 'god's view' function of the game. It seemed that the big change in the way Hunters are playing would be happening much sooner than anyone could think of.

"Felice!" Zhang Yang called out to Felice. Felice knew exactly what Zhang Yang had in mind. So she went straight down from the air and transformed into her human form. Then she put herself in between Zhang Yang and Seductive Wild Pussy.

The movement speed of a player could not be compared to the movement speed of a flying unit. So Seductive Wild Pussy could not stop herself in time and she collided into Felice.

Bam!

Upon the collision, the person who would be bumped back would depend on their Strength values. Meanwhile, a Hunter always relied on Agility to perform. It would be a lost cause if a Hunter were to try to compare Strength attributes with the humanoid Felice. Seductive Wild Pussy was sent staggering back.

She had been maintaining a distance of about 10 meters between herself and Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang would eventually catch up to her if she takes one step slower. When she was knocked off her momentum, Zhang Yang had enough time to make a dash up to her.

"You want to have a hot sex with me?" Seductive Wild Pussy winked at him as she made a throwing gesture at Zhang Yang. Countless strings of spider webs poured out from her hand and tangled Zhang Yang! Zhang Yang instantly lost his mobility!

[Web Entanglement]: Locks a target and disables the target's mobility for 10 seconds. The target will not be able to move or attack at all. However, any attack the target receives will cancel the effect.

It would really be a grave mistake to underestimate this little b\*tch! She really had countless unpredictable tricks up her sleeves!



{Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang immediately activated his Skill to break himself out of the effect. With a swing of his [Sword of Purging Devourer], he gave the little b\*tch two slashes straight on her chest.

‘-155,323!’

‘-54,389!’

Two splashes of blood were spilled across the ground as Zhang Yang landed the highest attack of his {God of War Devastation} on Seductive Wild Pussy, followed by a normal slash. The two attacks caused 210,000 damage to the woman!

That was series of destructive attacks! The woman let out a miserable scream as she collapsed on the ground.

Zhang Yang fixed his eyes on her body as he realized that the battle was not over yet. The system had made no announcements! Neither has he been teleported out of the arena!

Shoof!

A dark arrow came flying from afar! Seductive Wild Pussy had appeared 30 meters from Zhang Yang. She seemed to be walking out of a void. Meanwhile, she had already loaded her second arrow

and she was ready to send it flying at Zhang Yang!

Was that a Skill similar to {Rise Anew}?

Zhang Yang did not ask because he knew he had forced that little b\*tch to use her trump card! He could only be scolded and cursed at, as that Wild Pussy had to be extremely mad right now!

"Felice!"

Zhang Yang called out to Felice again. The two of them had a very deep mutual understanding as they had been working together for so long. Felice nodded and transformed into her Dragonhawk form. Then she flew into the air and began her chanting for {Fire Missile}. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang took a few steps back as swiftly as he could.

"God damn!" Seductive Wild Pussy realized that Zhang Yang had already gone out of her attack range before she could launch her second arrow.

The key for a Ranged Combatant to defeat a Melee Combatant in a battle would be the ability to maintain a distance between themselves and their opponents. If the Melee Combatant could not get near enough to attack, the Range Combatant would certainly win the match. As Seductive Wild Pussy was used to staying 30 meters away from her opponent, she had never thought expected Zhang Yang to step back instead!

She was forced to Zhang Yang by herself. However, Zhang Yang turned tail and started running in the other direction. Even she was a little faster than Zhang Yang, it would take more than a few seconds for her to catch up with him!

Meanwhile, Felice took the opportunity to bombard Seductive Wild Pussy with her fireball attacks from midair. Every single hit the little dragon lady threw at Wild Pussy dealt up to 45,000 damage. That amount of damage was not an amount that the Battle Companion of Wild Pussy could heal back. Therefore, her HP bar began to drop steeply.

Seductive Wild Pussy let out a raging roar as she began to shoot some arrows at Felice. They were both 30 meters away from each other. If Felice could hit her from where she was, then Wild Pussy could also hit back on her from where she stood!

After throwing arrows and fireballs at each other, Felice flapped her wings and began to withdraw from the fierce exchange of fire.

At the same instance, Zhang Yang came back swiftly at the little b\*tch with his {Charge}!

Seductive Wild Pussy was knocked into a stun!

Although it was just 1 second, it was enough for Zhang Yang to finish the job! After all, his Attack was terrifying!

‘-108,908!’

‘-52,723!’

A {Frost Strike} followed by a normal strike took out the remainder of Wild Pussy’s HP bar. This time, she could no longer get back to her feet, because she was dead!

The match had finally ended. Zhang Yang was teleported out of the arena immediately. Coincidentally, that sexy Wild Pussy was walking towards Zhang Yang while shaking her sexy \*ss. Her face was lit up, and she did not seem to be disappointed. She seemed very interested in Zhang Yang as she looked at him with her eyes. Then she said, "You’re the first man to beat me in a 1VS1 match!"

"Should I be flattered then?"

"Hehehe! I’m interested in you... a man from the east. If you’re ‘interested’, just come by to my room after the competition later. L1209, remember my room number. I’m looking forward to conquering you!" Seductive Wild Pussy gave Zhang Yang a flirtatious wink as she walked away with her two round buttocks.

"You prolonged a 10-second battle to a 2-minute battle?!" As Zhang Yang walked back to his own teammates, Han Ying Xue gave him an angry face as she was envious. "Why didn’t you prolong the battle for the entire night then?!"

Zhang Yang decided to ignore that witch as it would only be a waste of his time. When he saw that Wei Yan Er was biting her lips

as she could barely contain her excitement towards the match, he smacked the little brat on her head and said, "Stop dreaming and get ready! You're up next!"

"Woi! Stop hitting me in the head, noob tank! What if I get dumber if you keep hitting me in the head!?" The little brat jumped in surprise and rage.

"Don't worry. You're already stupid to the point of no turning back. Who knows, if I keep on knocking, something might fall into place, and you might get clever one day!" Zhang Yang laughed.

"You bus tart!" Wei Yan Er pouted as she rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang. As the fourth match was about to begin, the little brat was teleported into the arena.

Her opponent was a Thief. After playing hide and seek for half a day, she finally forced the Thief out of his hiding! After all, she had been taught by master Sun Xin Yu. Learning from the best of the best!

The moment when the Thief got caught, there was nothing left to describe. Wei Yan Er swung her giant axe at her opponent and turned the Thief into pile of bloody meat. She claimed the match with ease!

4:0! Silky Soft Battle Team had acquired the absolute lead. As long as they could score one more match, they would not have to participate in the Team Battle.

Moira Battle Team was forced into a difficult position. However, they had sent their best player, Seductive Wild Pussy. There was no one with the same standard with Wild Pussy left on their team. They could only wish that the remaining 3 of their contestants would be lucky and acquire all three wins. By then, they would still stand a chance by participating in the Team Battle.

It was great to have wishful thoughts. However, the reality was cruel. Lost Dream had shattered their 'wishful thoughts' by winning the next match.

By scoring another point, Silky Soft won the round by scoring 5:0. They led the round by having a final score of 1:0.

The second round began right after that.

Now that their opponent knew more about Zhang Yang's members, they might arrange the sequence of their members going into the arena appropriately, based on the sequence of Zhang Yang's team. To prevent that, Zhang Yang decided to let everyone on his Battle Team roll to decide who would go up first. By using such random numbers in it, he managed to confuse his opponents.

On the second round, Silky Soft lost one point to their opponent -- Hundred Shots was only considered as a professional player, not a Master player, not until he gets his Red Dragon Pet!

However, it did not matter at all, as Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Lost Dream won. They scored 5:1 and eliminated Moira Battle Team out of the Championship with

their final score of 2:0. They managed to push themselves into the quarterfinal.

Zhang Yang and his team members left the hall as they made their way back to their own rooms to rest for the night. Although they did not have to battle for the day, they logged into the game to watch the battles between other contestants. They planned to observe and analyze their potential opponents in the upcoming quarterfinals.

Knock! Knock! Knock!

Suddenly, someone was banging the door loudly. Zhang Yang was wondering who could it be. Could it be Han Ying Xue or Sun Xin Yu trying to sneak into his room to have some 'alone time with him?

--- the Organizer was being very generous. Everyone got their own personal rooms.

Zhang Yang walked up to the door and opened the door. What he saw was an old man in his fifties standing right in front of his door. He had golden hair, and was dressed in a neat tuxedo. This man looked like an old butler that Zhang Yang kept seeing in the Hollywood Movies. Out of his habit, Zhang Yang looked up at the top of the man's head. He did not see an exclamation mark that would indicate an available quest just like in the game. After doing that, only did he realize that he was currently not in the game! This was a man standing right before him in the real world! He was not an NPC!

Right beside the old man was a girl that seemed to hail from the east. She seemed to be in her 20s, with an averagely good-looking face. She wore a pair of glasses rimmed with golden sides, like an educated girl.

That old man began to talk in his own tongue. Zhang Yang could not help but frown as he could not understand a single word coming out from that old man's mouth.

"Mr.Zhang, this is Taj Rosh, the butler of the castle. I'm his translator." The lady from the east explained. Zhang Yang felt more comfortable upon hearing the Chinese language that she spoke, "Mr. Taj Rosh would like to inform you that he is here to invite you over to see the owner of this castle. Such were his orders."

After Taj Rosh and the lady were done talking, both of them bowed and made a gesture of 'This way please'.

The owner of the castle was inviting him?

Zhang Yang was flattered as he was very confused. As he recalled, he did not even know who the owner was. So, why would the owner invite him over?

After giving it some thought, he said, "Your owner has spoken! I do not dare to defy his good will! Let's go!"



# Chapter 630: How to Treat Your guest

---

As for how the lady did the translation, Zhang Yang had no idea about it. After all the talk, it only meant one thing: Let's go!

The three of them walked out of the room. Zhang Yang followed the two of them through a few twists and turns. There were really many buildings, halls, and chambers within the vicinity of the castle. The three of them walked all the way from the east side of the castle to its west side. Then, they entered a small building that reminded him of ancient palaces.

There were 4 bodyguards standing by the entrance of the building. They wore black suits with earphones over their ears. They looked like those FBI and CIA officers in the movies. After walking through the entrance, Zhang Yang could also see several other large men wearing black suits lined up by the walls. It seemed that the place was heavily guarded.

So, who could this owner be? Why would he need so many bodyguards then?

Zhang Yang was haunted by questions as he followed the old butler and the lady through the corridor. He went up to the fourth floor. The old butler escorted him to the front of a room. Then, he knocked on the door gently. After 3 to 4 seconds, he opened up the door and let Zhang Yang in.

Finally! Zhang Yang was about to meet the mysterious owner of this castle!

The old butler made a gesture, beckoning Zhang Yang into the room. Zhang Yang walked right in without any hesitation.

Bam!

A powerful blow landed on the back of his head all of a sudden. Zhang Yang could not react in time. He let his guard down just for one second, and he got a knock right on the back of his skull! Even though he tried to react, it seemed that the person who sneaked an attack on him was a professional! One hit was all it took to send Zhang Yang into unconsciousness! Zhang Yang could only feel his vision blurring as he began to lose consciousness.

He did not know how long he was knocked out. The moment Zhang Yang regained his consciousness, he realized that he was tied up to a wooden chair! Holy sh\*t! Did he just get kidnapped!? He struggled in the chair and attempted to get free, and the chair was shaken about by him pretty violently.

"Stop struggling! It's futile!" A woman's voice was heard in his ear. It was Chinese, but layered with a thick accent. He knew that it was a foreign woman speaking.

Zhang Yang looked towards where the voice came from. However, there was only a small lamp in the entire room. The room was dim. A faint, single source of light was all that barely lit the place up. Most of the room was dark, so Zhang Yang could not see the face of the woman standing in the dark corner.

"So, is this how you treat your guest?" Zhang Yang smiled weakly, as he was not expecting the owner to be a woman. Furthermore, the voice sounded vibrant and youthful!

"Humph!"

The woman began to walk up to him. Slowly, her features started showing themselves in the dim light. Although her face still remained hidden in the shadows, Zhang Yang could already vaguely make out the perfect curves of the woman's body that were tightly wrapped in that tight dress! That body figure was heavenly!

The black dress was short. Her fair and long legs stood bare in front of Zhang Yang. Her skin was so fair that the color resembled the color of snow! The thin cloth material was wrapped tightly around her small little buttocks. They stood out like the rear end of a peach, able to get men to drool all day long!

"Zhan Yu, Zhang Yang. I told you before that I will never forgive you, and that I'll get you someday!" The woman continued speaking in that weird accent through gritted teeth.

So, who could this be?

Although Zhang Yang was not considered to be a morally abiding player, he had never toyed with a woman before in the game. So how could he suddenly get a woman to hate him so much? Furthermore, this was a foreign girl!

Wait a minute... speaking of foreign girls... he did make one of them extremely angry! Besides, it was not just a one-time thing!

--- Dusk Phoenix!

It would not be a surprise at all if it was her! She did ask all players that reached beyond Level 100 from the Europe Region to aid her in completing her Class A Inheritance quest. Then, she also used up two [Forbidden Scrolls] without any hesitation. That was not something that one could do just by using a lot of money. She must have come from a very impressive background.

So it would not be a surprise at all if she is the owner of this castle.

"Dusk Phoenix?" Zhang Yang guessed.

"Yes! It's me! Dusk Phoenix!" the woman in the shadow was trying to act mysterious at first. However, her anger took over her the moment she heard Zhang Yang saying out her in-game name. She stomped up, revealing herself under the light. There she is! She finally revealed her face to Zhang Yang.

It was an elegant beautiful lady that seemed to hail from a western country. She had perfectly proportioned facial features which made her look naturally elegant in her own way. That elegance on her could really bring people down to their knees to worship her. Her beauty resembled a different kind of beauty compared to eastern beauties. However, her beautiful appearance was just as breath-taking as any other beautiful angel in the entire

world. Her appearance was definitely on the same standards with Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. Well, she was one hell of a kind in her own way.

"Hey!" Zhang Yang smiled.

Hey your head!

Dusk Phoenix was on the verge of losing her own temper. Even now, he's still as aloof as ever. Was he trying to treat her like a friend? Had it not been the palace aristocracy which had brought her up to be elegant and polite, she would have been cursing at Zhang Yang in a foul language!

She continued to stare at Zhang Yang, still fuming. She recalled suffering so many times at the hands of this man. She had dream many times that she would torture this man to retaliate.

Even now with this man in her hands, she had almost fainted in rage, because this man was still trying to ridicule her!

"Zhang Yang, today is the day I return all the humiliation that you put me through in the past!" Dusk Phoenix could not help but slap her own butt as she recalled all those angry moments with Zhang Yang. It was quite a 'unique' way of expressing her anger... She revealed a pinkish blush on her face as she reached for something behind her. Zhang Yang was wondering what she was up to. The next moment was the moment when he realized that he was truly in danger! She unfurled a long whip right in front of Zhang Yang!

Holy mother of god! This b\*tch was serious!

A wise man does not fight when the odds are against him! Zhang Yang quickly laughed and said, "You don't have to get so serious over it! It's just a game! Just forget about it!"

Just forget about it? Did he just said 'just forget about it'?

Dusk Phoenix tightened her teeth as she proceeded. The game has been made too realistic! Although everything in there was virtual, the characters, the buildings, the trees and many more, but the sensations were as real as they could be! Every single morning when she wakes up, she would remember how Zhang Yang had spanked her butt in front of everyone! The worse part of it was that every time she dreams about it, she would wet herself!

Zhang Yang was now her inner demon! If she did not purge all these negative thoughts from her mind, she would have lost her mind, sooner or later!

Piak!

The whip stretched across the room like a dragon, and she began to whip Zhang Yang up! The first stroke went across his body. Zhang Yang could not take the pain of the first stroke, and he bit down intensely. After all, he was just a mortal of flesh and blood!

"You crazy b\*tch! Have you forgotten the human rights bestowed

upon mankind!?" Zhang Yang struggled even harder to get free as he started running his mouth at her.

"Haha! Don't you even think about using that mouth of yours to distract! I'll never forgive you!" Dusk Phoenix continue to stroke the whip on Zhang Yang repeatedly like a maniac. "I have used up all my connections for this moment! It was me who suggested that they switch the venue of the Championships all the way here!"

No wonder the venue of the World League Championship was suddenly changed from Los Angeles to Luxembourg! So it was her who did all that! So, who was her true identity? She's even capable of deciding the location of organizing the Championship! That's some serious influence!

"So you are one of those spoiled rich whelps!" Zhang Yang bit the pain down by thinking about something else.

Dusk Phoenix stopped her labors for a brief moment and spoke up haughtily, "I am Luisa.Bavaria.Doqminderh, the daughter of the Grand Duke Henri, the future Grand Duchess of the Grand Luxembourg! You should call me 'My princess'!"

Oh sh\*t! Zhang Yang felt his breath escaping his body! He had actually provoked a real life princess!

"You jerk! You jerk! Jerk!" Dusk Phoenix began to blush again as her cheeks were becoming redder at every passing second. Why exactly was she getting red? Was she tired after whipping Zhang Yang? Or was she just excited at the prospect of revenge? Her eyes

were glaring at Zhang Yang as if there was a fire ignited in her pupils! It was like she was on drugs, or something! She was obviously overjoyed.

"Help! Someone! Help me!" Zhang Yang suddenly screamed for help as he began to lose himself in panic.

"Haha! Scream all you want! No one is going to hear you!" Dusk Phoenix was obviously satisfied with how things were going according to plan, and she said, "I've sent all the men away! Even if you scream through the rooftops, no one will come and rescue you! Just give up and stay down! Don't worry! As long as your brain functions, you can still join the Championship later!"

As she watched Zhang Yang writhing about in pain, Dusk Phoenix could not help but to stick her tongue out from her mouth and swept it across her lips. She could no longer hold the heat that was rushing up to her chest!

"Beg me, and I might give you some mercy!" she said proudly.

"Haha! Are you trying to tickle me or what? That's all you got?" Zhang Yang did not plan to give in to her at all, as he continued to agitate Dusk Phoenix with his mouth. He continued working to free himself. He could feel that there was a slight chance for him to set himself loose if he could just keep struggling. He could also deduce that although the person who had knocked him out cold was a professional, the person who tied him to the chair was not.

"Let's see how long can you keep that mouth of yours open!"



Piak! Piak! Piak!

Dusk Phoenix continued to whip Zhang Yang. His shirt started to get shredded up by the whip. Torn fabric was beginning to fall off his body. Lo and behold, the firm and muscular upper body of Zhang Yang was revealed. His eight-packs stood out, proud and noble! The blood stains and the traces of the whip made him look even more masculine!

She started to get attracted by the appealing sight, but did not show any sign of slowing down with her whipping on Zhang Yang at all. The unruly appearance of this man gradually coincided with that of the mighty and domineering figure in her dreams. However, Zhang Yang did not show any sign that he was willing to give in, like an untamed beast. Dusk Phoenix could not help but recall the mighty shadow of the Zhang Yang who had kept tormenting her in her dreams.

In her dreams, Dusk Phoenix had given in to that mighty shadow of Zhang Yang countless of times. The scene of her being spanked in the \*ss had been repeated over and over again in her dream. Every time when she woke up from those dreams, she would find herself wet between her legs. She would feel the unexplained void inside her heart. She would feel ashamed of herself every time she looked at the wet bed sheets!

Suddenly, Zhang Yang got his right hand free! He continued to move his left hand around in an attempt to loosen his left hand as well. After just a brief moment, he freed his left hand as well. At that very moment, Dusk Phoenix was in the middle of lashing the

whip at him once again! As the whip came flying towards him, Zhang Yang reacted swiftly and caught its end! Before Dusk Phoenix could even react to the situation, he quickly tugged on the whip with all his might. With his mighty strength, he pulled Dusk Phoenix straight into his arms!

Zhang Yang wrapped his left arm around Dusk Phoenix's neck while trying to loosen up the ropes around his legs with his right hand. He managed to get himself out of the chair in just a brief moment.

"Wu ---" Dusk Phoenix swung her hands around as she was attempting to break loose from Zhang Yang's chokehold. However, how would she be able to overcome Zhang Yang's mighty strength? She could only widen her eyes as she let Zhang Yang take control of the situation.

Zhang Yang stood up, wincing. Although he was acting all tough back there, he was also overwhelmed by the excruciating pain caused by the whippings.

As Dusk Phoenix wriggled in his chokehold, Zhang Yang felt the fury burning up in his heart. He heaved her over to the sofa and pressed her down there, on her face. With a big swing, he laid the smackdown on that piece of royal \*ss. Thus, commenced the royal spanking session.

Since she had taken things this far, it would take more than simple begging to convince Zhang Yang to let her off the hook. She had awoken "Dark Zhang Yang", and dark indeed was his power! She now had to experience the power of the dark force!

Piak! Piak! Piak!

Such is the quality of a royal pair of \*ss. They were so bouncy that Zhang Yang's very palms resonated with the harmony of her plushness! He started to get lost in a whole new world of royalty! Some dark thoughts started rising up in his mind.

"Argh! Argh!" the miserable screams of Dusk Phoenix continued on as she was spanked into submission and despair. As she had sent all of her bodyguards away, no one would hear her screams, and no one would definitely be coming to rescue her!

"You b\*tch! Apologize! Now!" As he gazed upon all the whip marks on his chest and his waist, Zhang Yang went deeper into the dark force as he lost himself over in spanking Dusk Phoenix!

"You jerk! You want me, a princess to give to you? Impossible!" Dusk Phoenix was acting tough on the outside, even though she was in an unfavorable position at the moment!

# Chapter 631: Reverse Play

---

So, she's not willing to give in...? Then, I shall bring you round a tour in smacktown!

Spanking a pair of jelly mountains would not cause lasting injury to a person, so Zhang Yang gathered his might and continued directing his spansks on her pom poms with all his might.

"Mmmmh ---" As the spankings got harder and harder, Dusk Phoenix suddenly let out a strange utterance, as if she had given in to her fate. This scene that she was in had happened before, in her dreams, countless times over countless nights. This man who was spanking her royal \*ss hard had inadvertently turned into her inner demon long ago, even without his own knowledge!

If such is her fate, so be it! It was not their 'first time' doing it, anyway, not in real-life at least...she was ready to give in --- as long as Zhang Yang does not start bashing her face in!

Dusk Phoenix had completely surrendered herself to despair. The same situation had visited her dreams every night, again and again, until she no longer could feel anything about it. Now that these 'prophetic visions' have come true, she was far more relieved. It brought a closure to those fantasies --- it's really happening now!

However, another 'terrifying' sensation started creeping up her body!

Dusk Phoenix could feel a mysterious heat spreading across her body, coming from the core of something very tender and sensitive. The pain in her buttocks wasn't the only sensation bombarding her at the moment. Things were getting heated up, and her shame was being engulfed in waves of excitement!

"Please stop! No! Stop!"

Dusk Phoenix tried to hold it in, as she whimpered for him to stop. However, her will had long been lost to her body, as her dreams had left her sopping wet and heated up, night after night. This session was no different. The heat burst out through the most forbidden crevice between her legs as something gushed straight out, squirting through her dress and down on the sofa!

This mysterious pleasure was beginning to zap through every single branch of her nerves like an unstoppable tidal wave. Dusk Phoenix could not hold it in anymore and she screamed out in excitement. Fortunately for her, Zhang Yang mistook the scream of ecstasy as a scream of pain. Nobody would have imagined that this royal, dignified woman was actually getting off, being spanked like that!

In the beginning, Dusk Phoenix was still able to hold in her moans. However, as Zhang Yang continued to spank her harder and harder, the sensations got too intense and started taking over her body. It was an unmistakable, distinct cry, very different from what Zhang Yang recognized as a scream of pain. It seemed to turn the very air around them pink and blurry....

Zhang Yang got a shock upon hearing such an erotic melody! He

turned his eyes upon her face as he saw that her face was as red as a rose. Her eyes were glazed over, and lost in ecstasy. It was the expression of a girl shrouded with lust as if she was on fire.

Holy sh\*t!

Zhang Yang had spanked a woman into falling for him!

He had a great shock as he slowly put his hand down.

As she no longer felt the sensation from being spanked in her royal \*ss, Dusk Phoenix regained her consciousness. When she realized that Zhang Yang was extremely shocked, she was overwhelmed with shame! She could swear that she wanted to bang her head against the wall at that moment. However, her shame over the matter had been obliterated by the repeated dreams that she had. The lust of her body went beyond her pride. She looked at Zhang Yang with her misty eyes as she began to speak in a weak voice, "Zhang... Zhang Yang... I surrender..."

Zhang Yang stood up and said, "Call for your men and get me out of here!"

Before he could walk away from the sofa, Zhang Yang could feel a pair of arms wrapping around his legs. Something had anchored him to the ground! At first, he thought that Dusk Phoenix was just attempting to fight back. However, when he looked down, he saw that the royal lady was hugging his legs as tightly as she could. She was obviously deeply obsessed with Zhang Yang, as her face revealed her true emotions. Her eyes were peachy as she left her

sexy tongue lolling out of her half-opened mouth. She began to lick his leg with her small, fragrant tongue like a little horny slut.

"Mein God you horny thing! Get off me!?" Zhang Yang felt a chill up his spine. It was not because Dusk Phoenix was not pretty or sexy enough. It was because he already had two super tigresses by his sides. He did not intend to lure more women to his side. Furthermore, this woman was the type who would not budge once he sticks his d\*ck up her!

Although Luxembourg is operated based on constitutional monarchy, the so-called Grand Duke or Princess were basically placeholder names. But, only God knows how influential and wealthy they had to be! So, this woman was not a woman that he could just toy with and toss aside.

Furthermore, Zhang Yang had lovers. He could even have multiple wives if he wanted to. There was no need for him to 'restock' on his Harem Palace. After all, Zhang Yang only had one d\*ck.

"Zhang Yang! Conquer me please! Let me be your woman! I want you! I want to give birth to your child! Children! I will make you the future King!" Dusk Phoenix was caught up in her lost thoughts as she wrapped herself around Zhang Yang's leg without any intentions of letting go. She looked at Zhang Yang with her watery eyes, filled with passion.

What the f\*ck! Are you kidding me!? If he had only known that this would happen, he would not have spanked her \*ss at all!

Zhang Yang quickly pushed the royal woman away, as the woman had reached her evil claws around his pants, trying to take his pants off!

"I have wife! Stop this, you black bird!"

"So what? Divorce her and come be with me! I don't care!" Dusk Phoenix had once again grabbed on to his legs.

"Stop being so full of yourself! When did I ever say that I wanted you! Besides, you're far behind, compared to my two wives!" Zhang Yang attempted to break her interest by purpose.

"Then ... I shall be your secret mistress!" Dusk Phoenix narrowed her eyes as she spoke. She had been completely 'conquered' in both her body and her will. In the past, she had been bestowed with the highest education that she could get in her country. Furthermore, her identity was royal. Therefore, it would make sense that she would turn out to be such a girl with such a twisted personality. In her eyes, she only had Zhang Yang as the only man who could conquer her!

"You must be joking, right? Wait... you're not joking?"

"My king! Conquer me now!" Dusk Phoenix moaned erotically.

"Stop stop stop! I hate slutty women the most! Stop with all this nonsense!" Zhang Yang was forced to simply throw a reason at the



royal woman to stop her from scratching at his pants.

Dusk Phoenix quickly pulled herself together. Zhang Yang was impressed by her sudden change of attitude. She got rid of the sluttiness in an instant and behaved like an elegant lady, as if nothing had ever happened. She just sat gracefully in front of Zhang Yang. Without looking her in her misty eyes and her beautiful cheeks, Zhang Yang would have thought her as a completely different person!

This royal woman could potentially be the finest specimen of an elegant wife and a slutty partner in bed! Unfortunately, Zhang Yang had no intentions of hunting for more women for his own pleasure.

"If you allow me to be your mistress, you shall have the wealth, the resources, and the connections that far beyond your imagination!" Dusk Phoenix looked at Zhang Yang sincerely, as if she was trying to market herself to him, "Our children will become the new Duke and Dutchess! All I want in return is to have you conquer me as hard as you can, as rough, as brutal as you possibly can!"

Zhang Yang had never been so frozen in fear before. He knew that this woman was not joking with him at all. She was dead serious!

This woman must have gone mad!

He should have just accepted the 'offer,' as the conditions that

she laid out were extremely appealing. Such women do not exist in every dynasty! But why did he not feel anything for her?

"Wait wait wait... you're a princess... and you're just going to make yourself...this easy?"

"When one has found true love, wouldn't it makes perfect sense to see money, fame, status as nothing less but a passing cloud?" Dusk Phoenix shot back a question of her own.

Zhang Yang thought of rejecting her directly again. However, he realized that it was not nice to hurt her just like that. So he said, "Stop joking around! You've just met me in person for the first time today! It would not be real love if you can just say you love me after meeting me like this, with a f\*cking whip!"

The woman only blushed deeper. Although she had never once met Zhang Yang in the real world, she had been 'conquered' many times over by the shadow of this man in all the dreams that she had all this while. She had already raised her little white flag high up to show that she was willing to submit to him. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had brought up her desire to become his 'personal slut' by spanking her so hard in her peachy butts. It was the act of stirring her memories from her dreams which had gotten her so wet.

However, it would not be wise for her to tell Zhang Yang about all her wet dreams involving Zhang Yang! How would a man react if a woman tells him that she had been having wet dreams about him?

"I want to be your woman no matter the cost!" Dusk Phoenix hardened her tone.

Zhang Yang rolled his eyes at her and said, "Alright. Only if! If you can convince my two girlfriends, I won't mind having you as well!"

"Okay!" Dusk Phoenix thumped her chest apparently very confident that she could seal the deal.

After hearing that conditional agreement from Zhang Yang, this black Phoenix was finally willing to let Zhang Yang go.

What the hell just happened back there?!

A woman from a royal family was willing to give him so much just to be with him! It was not like the other women who only looked at his money! This was a real princess in real life, a true descendant of a royal family! Zhang Yang could not help but wonder, was his appearance so charming that he could get a woman's heart just by spanking her \*ss?

His thoughts were scrambled as he made his way back to his own hotel room. That night, he did not even log into the game. He just went straight to bed and slept it off.

On the next morning, everyone was asking him about why he suddenly went offline. Zhang Yang did not waste his breath in

front of everyone to spare himself the trouble. He only mumbled some vague excuses. Later on, he called Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue aside and told both of them about the incident.

Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue were both shocked to hear about it. Han Ying Xue even placed her hands on Zhang Yang's forehead and said, "Huh? Do you have a fever or what? What kind of nonsense are you talking about?"

Zhang Yang could only smile bitterly and said, "Just stick to the gang and try not to get yourself alone from the gang. We will never know what that crazy b\*tch would do to the two of you if she ever finds the opportunity! I bet that she would not dare to do anything in the crowd. After all, these Duke and Princess thingies are only being supported by their names!"

"Alright, cut it out. You can stop garbling about. Why would a real Princess in real life want to be your third woman then? My Silly Yu, are you becoming silly for real?" Han Ying Xue shook her head again and again.

Although Sun Xin Yu did not say a single word about it, her eyes spoke out everything that was on her mind. She doubted his words as much as the other woman.

Zhang Yang was actually amazed as the two ladies were. However, he was completely sure that he was not being delusional about last night. He had proof all over his body! The whip marks! He brought his two ladies over to his room and he started undressing.

"You horny dog! You were just talking about a Princess was trying to become your mistress and now wanna go, right now?!" Although Han Ying Xue was complaining, she had automatically lain on her back opening her legs up.

So who's horny now?! Zhang Yang shook his head and took off his shirt completely. Then he pointed at the whip marks on his body and said, "Do these look delusional to you?"

Han Ying Xue instantly stared at Zhang Yang with her eyebrows raised and eyes distended with fury. Then she said, "You! Which b\*tch did you sleep with, last night!?"

Zhang Yang sighed and said, "What kind of woman do you think could have done such a splendid job on my body? Look at the wounds! Even nails would not be able to do all these!"

"That being said... the incident with that Luisa Princess was for real?" Sun Xin Yu frowned as she asked.

"I rather believe that Silly Yu met an insane one! Pui!" Han Ying Xue put her hands on the wound on Zhang Yang's chest. Then she whispered gently, "These should hurt a lot..."

Her soft and gentle hands were touching his soul. Zhang Yang could not help but flirt with her, then he said, "It won't be if you rub them for me with your gentle hands!"

"... Silly Yu, I can rub them for you... but why are you pushing my hands down into your pants?"

...

The Top 8 had been decided through the matches on the night before. However, the Battle Teams that were eliminated last night were invited back to have a rematch among themselves as a token of goodwill from the organizer. In other words, these matches would be one of the entertainments before the finals.

It was 7 p.m and it was time for the semifinals of the Championship.

Even though everyone had made it this far to prove that they were very capable in the game, there were still differences in their capabilities and levels. After yesterday night's elimination rounds, the eight Battle Teams were even more capable in terms of their gaming skills. Therefore, Classes became one of the most important deciding factors on the winners.

After a series of fierce battles, the final 4 Battle Teams that made it into the semifinals were: Silky Soft Battle Team, Crimson Rage Battle Team, Hell Battle Team and Steely Dangs Battle Team.

# Chapter 632: Semifinal

---

For the semifinals, Silky Soft Battle Team would be going up against the Hell Battle Team. Meanwhile, Crimson Rage Battle Team would be going up against the Steely Dangs Battle Team.

The Battle Teams from China Region were performing at an outstanding level as two of their Battle Teams had managed to proceed into the semifinals. Everyone was impressed and shocked at the same time.

It was not a surprise to Zhang Yang at all. The Crimson Rage Battle Team was the Runner-up for the World League Championships in Zhang Yang's previous life. Meanwhile, Silky Soft Battle Team had Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. The three of them had acquired their very own Class S Inheritances. Of course, they stood heads and shoulders above other players, for now.

Every single player from China Region were lifting their heads up expectantly. They hoped to see the two Battle Teams from China Region meet up at the finals and provide the world a spectacular battle of the century! Of course, there were numerous players from other Regions wishing for the two Battle Teams to fail in such regards. China Battle Teams should just kneel before the semifinals and get themselves eliminated from the competition.

The Hell Battle Team that Zhang Yang and his gang were going up against for that night was Dusk Phoenix's Battle Team. That woman had participated in the quarterfinal in the previous night. She relied on the power-up from her Class A Inheritance to oppress

her opponents, scoring two critical points for her own Battle Team. The Hell Battle Team scored 2:4 on the first round and 3:4 on the second round. Therefore, they succeeded in proceeding into the Team Battle. That was where Dusk Phoenix managed to team up with her teammates and turn the table around!

Before semifinals, Dusk Phoenix came up quietly to the room of Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu. She asked the two of them out and had a small 'chat' with Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue.

When the two ladies confirmed that she was indeed the Princess, the future Dutchess of Luxembourg, their faces were filled with silly looks as they were in shock. Who would have thought that everything that Zhang Yang had told them panned out to be true! Who would have thought that this Princess was not only into BDSM, but was also willing to make sacrifices just to be with Zhang Yang?! The fabric of reality itself must be collapsing!

The three women had their 'chat' for over an hour. Finally, black Phoenix left with a satisfied smile on her face. Zhang Yang could sense something sinister in that smile, something bad must have come out of this. So he went into the room and asked, "Did you two saved me or did you sell me over to that crazy woman?"

"Haha! The Princess must be blind to actually fall for you! It's such a rare case, you know. You're not that handsome yourself, and yet, you are capable of hooking the Princess's heart by just standing there like an idiot!" Han Ying Xue pinched Zhang Yang's cheek as she spoke.

"Hey! Watch your mouth! I will replace you with the Princess! I



dare do it!"

"Ha! Let us tell you one piece of good news! Me and this cold-blooded woman have recruited you a Princess as your mistress!"

Zhang Yang stared at the two ladies with his eyes wide open, and then he said, "I told her to talk to you two because I was hoping that you two would reject her for me! What the hell! You two actually turned around and sold me out!"

Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes backward at Zhang Yang and said, "We made her a promise. She can only come to China once a year. The promise will be effective starting from next year! When she comes, you'll be hers alone! Other than that, you're still ours! Isn't that great?"

Zhang Yang spun his eyes around. He pointed his finger at the two ladies as he was shivering out of anger, "You two are really evil!"

That black Phoenix was no ordinary woman. She was the heir to the throne of the Duke. She would really stand out when traveling across countries. After all, she represented her entire nation!

Under those circumstances, her actions would be under strict limitations. She would be escorted by members of the Parliament, her bodyguards, mostly! She would have a difficult time just traveling over to China!

Even if she could travel over to China as a representative of Luxembourg, there would be a bunch of people tagging along. Furthermore, the press, the reporters would be swarming around her. So how would she be able to have some 'alone' time to have a date with Zhang Yang, then?

Well, maybe this ridiculous 'storm' would blow pass after two to three years. Sooner or later, this Princess would need to marry someone.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily as he knew that women are much better at handling this kind of crap.

That royal woman was obviously unshakable in her own determination that carried the weight of a steelyard. Since there was no way of getting through to her, so the two ladies decided to agree to her terms. However, they did not lose anything in the process of negotiating with her.

"Oh, right! Before I forget, the Princess wanted us to pass her words to you. Even though she is already 'yours', she will not be holding back at all for the match tonight!" Han Ying Xue laughed her butt off.

With or without her holding back, it made no difference at all. With the current strength of his team, no opponent should really pose a great threat to them, not yet. However, his worst problem had been solved. Zhang Yang felt a lot more relieved as for now. So, he pulled each of the ladies into each of his arm and grinned lavishly. Then, he hugged the two ladies as the three of them made their way to the bed.

"That black Phoenix came at the wrong time... let's carry on then! Oh, right! Who was on the bottom and who was on top?"

...

Time waits for no man. It was already 7 p.m. The first round of the semifinals had begun. It was the Crimson Rage Battle Team versus the Steely Dangs Battle Team.

It was beyond Zhang Yang's expectation that the Steely Dangs Battle Team could be this strong!

Hourglass Figure had acquired the Hunter's Class S Inheritance -- Shadow Striker Inheritance! Zhang Yang had no prior knowledge of what kind of Skills the Inheritance provides to the player who owns it. However, Hourglass Figure had revealed some information about the attributes of her Inheritance while battling the Crimson Rage Battle Team during her two matches.

Firstly, a much longer range of attack --- she could begin to launch her attack 40 meters away from her target! In her first match, she kited Snow Seeker around the arena and took her own sweet time at ending her!

Secondly, she had no blind spots!

As mentioned in earlier chapters, Hunters feared being approached by their opponents most of all. Letting their enemies

approach them would cause them to lose 99% of their attacks! However, Hourglass Figure performed the unexpected in her second match. Even though Thorny Rose managed to approach her, whenever she did, Hourglass Figure would fire into the sky. Those arrows would just turn back towards Thorny Rose and make a hedgehog out of her!

Furthermore, Class S Inheritance increases a player's damage by 50%. The attack power of Hourglass Figure was terrifyingly high. It did not take long before she killed her opponent and claimed victory over the match.

In the first round of their matches, Crimson Rage Battle Team were quite lucky. They had the advantage in Classes over a few of their opponents. Therefore, they managed to score 3:4 in the first round. Even though they were losing, but they managed to prolong the round by participating in the team battle. However, the team battle ended with the score of 3:5 with Crimson Rage Battle Team narrowly losing the battle. However, the lady army were not as lucky in their second round of the match. This time, their opponents were lucky enough to send their players in the sequence where their players had the advantage in Classes over the players of Crimson Rage Battle Team. So, Crimson Rage Battle Team lost with the score of 2:5. They did not even manage to participate in a team battle.

By the end of it, Steely Dangs Battle Team had eliminated Crimson Rage Battle Team with a final score of 2:0. They became the first team that would be proceeding to the finals.

Zhang Yang and his team members did not even have the time to

feel impressed over the performance of the Steely Dang Battle Team as it was their turn to go into the arena. They were going up against the Hell Battle Team to earn their ticket to the finals!

Hell Battle Team had been holding a grudge over Zhang Yang and his team for quite a long time. If they did not exist, Han Ying Xue's Class S could have been theirs to claim! Ironically, the first match was Han Ying Xue versus Hell Priest!

When enemies come face to face their eyes blaze with hatred. The moment the match begun, Hell Priest launched a series of aggressive assaults toward Han Ying Xue. She attacked like a pro, moved around like a pro, maintained a distance from her opponent like a pro. Everything she did on the arena exhibited her sharp and precise PvP skills. However, Han Ying Xue just ignored her. She only threw her {Putrefying Poison} onto Hell Priest as she began to heal herself. Her HP bar never got below 90%. She would activate her {Punishment Ray} once in a while when the time was right to attack her opponent.

The battle between the super Healers was obviously going to be long-lasting. No matter how interesting a battle starts out to be, it would eventually get boring. Furthermore, Han Ying Xue was showing no signs of effort in attempting to fight like a professional player. The only thing she did was to keep healing herself until her DOT Skill Effect eventually kills her opponent.

Moreover, Hell Priest was deemed to be one of the Top players in the entire Europe Region. She managed to complete a Rank-S Profession Quest all by herself when she was Level 30. Upon that, she acquired the {Divine Soul} that reduced 75% of her MP

consumption when using her healing Skills. Thus, she was also capable of fighting a long battle.

Even though the in-game time was going much faster than the real-time, the battle between the two of them took up approximately 4 hours of real-time. It took Han Ying Xue that long to completely deplete the MP bar of Hell Priest and end the tormentingly long battle.

There was statistic chat to show how ‘tormenting’ a battle was to the players: When the battle began, there were 1.1 billion players watching the match. However, when the match was over, the number of players watching the match had dropped down to only 12,000,000!

The spectators were exhausted watching the match. Zhang Yang and his team members almost ran out of their patience, watching how that witch prolonged the battle unnecessarily. Even the commentators had run out of things to say and let the battle play along. All Han Ying Xue did was to heal herself. There was nothing much to talk about either.

Well, at least there was one person of all people was extremely happy after the match had ended. Han Ying Xue had tortured her opponent for over 12 in-game hours. Of course, she would be happy about it.

Fortunately for the spectacles and the other contestants, there was only one Healer on Zhang Yang’s team, Han Ying Xue. Hence, the remaining battles were smooth and brief. Zhang Yang encountered Hell Knight in his first match. It did not take much of

his effort to defeat Hell knight. He was lucky that he did not have to face Dusk Phoenix in the arena. He was worried that if they did encounter each other in the arena, that woman might put up her \*ss and beg Zhang Yang to spank her in front of the public.

The Silky Soft Battle Team had scored 5:2, getting their first point for the final score of the round.

After Zhang Yang had submitted to the line-up of his team, the organizer invited him over as they requested him and the captain of Hell Team to reorganize the line-ups of their team. The reason was due to the fact that Han Ying Xue was going up against Hell Priest once again...

Obviously, the Organizers were not looking forward for another long and tormenting battle in the upcoming round.

After changing the order of line-ups of their respective teams 4 times, Han Ying Xue was finally no longer going up against Hell Priest. The second round of the matches had finally commenced!

This time, the line-up of Zhang Yang's team had put them into an unfavorable situation. Lost Dream, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream were going up against players who had an absolute advantage over their Classes. Furthermore, their opponents were all the same standard as Dusk Phoenix. Therefore, the three of them lost by the end of their own matches. So the result of the 1VS1 became 4:3. Zhang Yang's team had to join the team battle because they scored lower.

Truth to be told, it would not matter if the score was 4:3 or the other way around. As long as Zhang Yang and his team could score 2 more points, they would win the round.

However, players would still focus on only one opponent in 1VS1 matches. However, during the team battle, there were 3 players with Class S Inheritance, 1 player with Class A Inheritance and 1 player with Class B Inheritance. Even though Lost Dream was a little weaker compared to the other 4 members of his team, his Inheritance was still Class B nonetheless!

On the other side, Hell Battle Team only had 2 players with Class A Inheritance, being Hell Priest and Dusk Phoenix. Meanwhile, the other 3 of their members only had Class B Inheritance. The level power of two battle teams differed too much. It was like an elephant and a tiger in an arm-wrestling contest. Although a tiger is also extremely ferocious, how could a tiger beat an elephant in strength?

By the end of it, Silky Soft Battle Team scored a final score of 2:0 and eliminated Hell Battle Team with ease. So, they would be facing Steely Dang Battle Team in the final for the 'Crown' of the Champion.

"Our opponents are not weak at all! Look at them!" Before the final battle, Zhang Yang and all his team members were discussing the strengths and weaknesses of their opponents as they were attempting to exploit their weaknesses. They looked at the name list of the Steely Dang Battle Team as they dug further for more information about them. Although it was not possible for them to investigate so deep to know every one of their Inheritances, they



could still know the names of their Inheritance.

There were 2 players with Class A Inheritance, 4 players with Class B Inheritance, 3 players without any Inheritance and 1 player with Class S Inheritance. That player with the Class S Inheritance was Hourglass Figure of course.

Zhang Yang took a deep breath and said, "Hourglass Figure is a Top tier Hunter who has the Class S Inheritance --- Shadow Striker Inheritance! I have no idea what kind of Inheritance Skills she might have, but we do know that she has no blind spots or minimal range of any kind while we were watching her match. Furthermore, her range of attack is beyond 30 meters! Take note of that!"

"We cannot assume that we can get 3 points to get ourselves into the team battle match even during the 1VS1 matches!" Hundred Shots made the worst case scenario, "We do have the advantage if we look at all of our levels combined. However, if two of us with Class S Inheritances ever encounter their players with Class B Inheritance, and one of us with a Class S Inheritance loses to Hourglass Figure, we might not even win the other four 1VS1 matches!"

Everyone who had made it this far into the finals must be very skillful and capable. Even if there was an obvious gap between the power level of two players, the battle between them would not become one-sided. The outcome of the battles between these capable players would be unpredictable. Those who had lower Class Inheritances would still stand a chance at defeating those who had higher Class Inheritances. Things would rather get more

interesting during the matches for the Championship and the Runner-up.

However, if the Inheritance Classes of the players are far lower than the Inheritance Classes of the other player, then the player with the advantage over the Class of other player would become far more advantageous than before. If Zhang Yang and his team would be so unlucky to face players who would have an advantage over their Classes, Zhang Yang and his team might even lose all matches! Even if they have 3 players with Class S Inheritance on their team, there would not be a guarantee for all 3 of them to win.

However, everything that was being discussed mostly applied to the 1VS1 battles. It would become a different story when it all comes down to Team Battles. Having 3 players with Class S Inheritances on the same team would make the team undoubtedly invincible. Therefore, Zhang Yang and his team just had to make sure they make it into the Team Battles if they could not wrap it up before that.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Let's hope that Witchy Snow doesn't have to go up against Hourglass Figure!"

As the line-up order was being randomly picked and submitted before the matches were even started, there was no way for anyone to arrange their line-up order accordingly. This was all pure luck. If one encounters an opponent that has a Class inherently weak against his or her Class, then it would be like hitting a jackpot!

"Don't worry, I've never lost before!" Wei Yan Er tapped her flat chest and said, "Just count on me! I'll give anyone 3 continuous

slashes regardless of whether they are Class S, Class A! Pui!"

"So the best case scenario is having sister Sun encounter Hourglass Figure. Just give her a {Soul Cleansing} and go into stealth. It can be a guaranteed win in 3 minutes!" Daffodil Daydream said.

The threat that a player with Class S Inheritance could pose was just too great to most of the players. Excluding Han Ying Xue, who is a Healer with a Class S healing Inheritance, just look at the attack power of Zhang Yang and Sun Xing Yu. They had become so much more powerful after acquiring their own Class S Inheritances. Therefore, it would be wise to assume that this Hunter... a Hunter without a blind spot or a minimum range... her DPS must be insane! Therefore, only Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu could go up against a powerful Hunter like Hourglass Figure, no one else!

More importantly, Hourglass Figure could now attack 40 meters away from her target. Therefore, most of the Melee combatants would have no way of approaching her without having only 50% of their HP left.

"Hmm... so, other than Hourglass Figure, there are still two players with Class S Inheritances. Everyone needs to be extra careful about this! Beware of them!" Zhang Yang tried his best to recall his past life memories. Although he was not really familiar with the two Inheritances, he knew more about them at least, compared to the others.

"Savage Lord, Class A 'Twin Blade Inheritance'. He can wield two

swords at the same time, thus the name 'Twin Blade'. He can just switch his secondary weapon slot to a shield whenever he needs to block attacks. He also can just switch his secondary weapon slot to equipping a one-handed sword whenever he decides to go all out on causing pain to his enemies. He should be fighting like a battle-type Assassin. However, the amount of Rage Points and Mp he can earn during a battle should differ a lot. In other words, he will become more powerful as he receives more damage!"

Zhang Yang pointed at a player named Savage Lord as he said.

"Judging merely by the Skills of a Guardian, Savage Lord should not have must boost on his Attack even after he equips a secondary-weapon. The main thing here is that he will definitely have some Skills up his sleeves that would involve him using his secondary weapon in his hand. After all, things are always aren't they seem. His 'Twin Blade Inheritance' must be capable of more than just allowing him to carry a secondary weapon. Just keep that in mind!"

Zhang Yang gave it some thought, then he cautiously said, "Other than little brat and myself, anyone who encounters him later should keep a distance between him and yourselves. He is potentially a nuclear-level threat thanks to his Class A Inheritance. His power level should be terrifying! Do not underestimate him!"

# Chapter 633: Let the Finals begin!

---

"Other than that, Bloodbath Apocalypse, the other player with a Class A Inheritance known as the 'Swampy Inheritance'. I only know one of the Inheritance Skill called 'Swamp'. The Skill could turn a radius of 30-meter into a swamp. It will reduce 50% Movement Speed of all non-flying units."

Zhang Yang moved his finger and pointed at the other name on the list.

"That sounds troublesome!" Lost Dream frowned.

Bloodbath Apocalypse was a Spellcaster. Although a Spellcaster would not have a blind spot or a minimum range, they were disliked being approached by their opponents. Because their opponents could interrupt their spells or stun them. They basically worked like how a Hunter would. They would need space and time before they can launch an assault. If they get interrupted while chanting their spells, they would not be able to attack or heal their comrades.

Now that Bloodbath Apocalypse had acquired a Skill which could slow down all his enemies within the effective range of his Skill, he could toy around with Melee combatants in the game.

Fortunately, Sun Xin Yu had an Ultimate Skill called {Soul Cleansing}. It would not matter what type of enemy she goes up against. As long she wished to win, it would not be hard at all for her to play hide and seek with her opponent for 3 minutes until the

effect of {Soul Cleansing} kicks in. After all, she was the Number One in stealth.

The bigger question is, would this pride woman win a battle with such a 'shabby' tactic?

As he did not know much about the Skills of the other four Inheritances, Zhang Yang only roughly briefed his team members about them. However, he was very impressed with the standard of the opponents. Lone Desert Smoke could become so great and powerful, mostly because Zhang Yang had lived 2 lives.

However, the Steely Dang Holdings could build up such a powerful battle team mainly because they were quite rich. They must have invested quite a large sum of money in order to prepare for the Championship.

Just look at the amount that Hourglass Figure tried to offer Zhang Yang and his gang. She could flippantly promise Zhang Yang and his gang a yearly salary of 30,000,000 dollars, 50,000,000 dollars, and even 100,000,000 dollars! How many people in the world could resist the temptation of such amount of money if they were ever offered with this sum of money?

So, what they say about money is true. Money is the root of all evil.

"It's alright to be careful about them, but remember, don't fear them! We're stronger than them! We're better than them! I believe that they are having a bigger problem in figuring out the order of

their line-up! They must be dying to know about the order of our line-up as well!"

Zhang Yang concluded their tense discussion and made everyone smile.

He guessed it right though. The Steely Dang Battle Team were indeed squeezing their brains out trying to figure out how Zhang Yang would arrange the line-up order for his team. Although they were really strong and powerful, the players from Silky Soft Battle Team seemed to be more well-equipped than them. Three players with Class S Inheritance, one player with Class A Inheritance and two players with Class B Inheritance were really a little too much for them to take in.

After all, the skills that a player had on them mattered the most. A player with Class D Inheritance would not necessarily be able to defeat a player with Class E Inheritance. As mentioned earlier on, players who have made it this far into the finals would definitely be very skillful and powerful! Even if there is only a 5% difference in the Attack of a player between a Class S Inheritance and a player with Class A Inheritance, anything could happen by the end of the battle. Even a 1% difference in the Attack power on both sides could be a deadly number!

As the two sides were preparing for their final clash for the crown of the World League Championship, the 2 battle teams that were eliminated earlier on in the semifinals were ready to battle for the title of being the 3rd place and the 4th place in the competition. Crimson Rage Battle Team managed to break out of their shell as they struggled on to survive. They managed to score

5:2 on the first round and 5:4 in the second round of the matches. They turned the table over and claimed the third place in the competition.

In that sense, even if Silky Soft Battle Team could only claim the runner-up, it would already prove that the power of the China Region is outstanding. Of course, every player from the China Region would want to see their favourite Silky Soft Battle Team claim the crown and be the champions of this competition! That would be the only ideal ending everyone is hoping to see!

It was almost 9 p.m. The final round of the matches were about to begin.

On the list of Silky Soft Battle Team's line-up list, Zhang Yang had put Daffodil Daydream as the last on the list. Meanwhile, the others were told to roll in order to decide who goes first. Zhang Yang would be speechless if the Steely Dang Battle Team could still predict the line-up order of his team and act accordingly.

The first round was Wei Yan Er versus King King Arcane.

Well, King King Arcane was the battle-type Thief of the Steely Dang Battle Team. He had a Class B Inheritance called 'Blood Wolf Inheritance'. Although it was not a Class A Inheritance or a Class S Inheritance, the power it provided to the player must not be underestimated! After all, the difference between the Attack of each class of the Inheritance would only be 5%. Of course, the Inheritance Skills had their own differences as well.



The Blood Wolf Inheritance was a very flashy package. Every time when King King Arcane launched his attacks, there was a certain rate of triggering a Blood Wolf Shadow that would snap at the target and cause quite a certain amount of damage to the target. Furthermore, the Blood Wolf Shadow would appear to be much larger than its usual size. Not only could it deal a lot more damage than it could when it is smaller, the Blood Wolf Shadow could even stun the target.

Fortunately, the rate of Blood Wolf Shadow triggering the Stun Effect was extremely low. Furthermore, the control style for a battle-type Thief was not the same as the control style of an agility-type Thief. Battle-type Thieves worked dealing more damage and killing their enemies before their enemies kill them! Their style is all about DPS! On the other hand, Berserkers lacked Status Restriction Skills. They would also try to kill their enemies before getting killed. They are a Class born to bring destruction to their enemies!

Therefore, these two would have to compete and see who deals more damage in the end!

In term of normal attacks, King King Arcane had the upper hand as he was equipped with two one-handed swords. However, in term of the Skill attacks, the Attack of a two-handed weapon would be much higher compared to the Attacks of a one-handed weapon.

The little brat seemed to have finally used 'Supporting Attacks' in the battle. As she was swinging her large battle axe around, trying to slash her opponent up, she would also throw a punch or

two at King King Arcane whenever she saw an opening. On the other hand, King King Arcane had super high agility. Since it was not possible for him to go head-to-head against a Berserker without getting himself crushed to death, he attempted to dodge the attacks coming from the little brat as swiftly as he could. He was reacting really fast. The little brat could not land her quite a number of her attacks!

However, that was also when a Class A Inheritance started to shine.

The Darkness Inheritance had a passive damage increment of 45%. On the other hand, the Wold Blood Inheritance only had 40% passive damage increase. Furthermore, the Darkness Inheritance provided the little brat a 10% passive damage immunity while the Blood Wolf Inheritance did not provide any to King King Arcane.

As the little advantage accumulated its value over time, it became the one factor that would decide who wins by the end of the battle. By the end of the battle, Wei Yan Er still had over 17% HP while King King Arcane collapsed onto the ground with an empty HP bar and died. The little brat had earned the team a good start by scoring the first point for the team.

"Wahaha!" upon claiming victory over her first match, Wei Yan Er came back with an exaggerated laugh. She put her hands on her waist as she raised her nose up high towards the sky with pride.

"Sigh... no matter what happens, you'll still be a flat-chest little girl..." Han Ying Xue sighed as she gave a spank on the little brat's bum, "But the sensation of giving your \*ss a slap is really

addictive!"

"Argh! You're so mean!" Wei Yan Er pressed her hands on her butt as she tried to avoid being spanked in the \*ss again.

The second round of the match would be Zhang Yang versus Savage Lord!

The battle was a showdown between two Guardians. It would also be a good comparison between the 'God of War Inheritance' and the 'Twin Blade Inheritance'!

The moment each of them set foot onto the arena, Savage Lord glared at Zhang Yang with his angry eyes and said, "Zhan Yu, you have defeated the four of us with the aid of the Class S Inheritance that you acquired! Now, I have an Inheritance as well! It's time for me to get my revenge!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Well, many have claimed that they would beat me. But unfortunately, not a single one has managed it! You will be no exception to that claim!"

"Just wait and see!"

1 minute had passed and the two of them were ready to engage! Let the match begin!

Savage Lord had a healer-type Battle Companion to back him up. The Battle Companion had thick metal plates covered him up from

head to toe. He seemed more like a Knight than a Priest. As the battle had begun, Savage Lord charged out at Zhang Yang swiftly while his Battle Companion stayed behind to support him. The two of them maintained a distance of 30 meters, the furthest healing range of a Healer.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and commanded Felice to act, "Felice, go get that Knight. I'll handle this Indian boy! Let's see which one of us takes out our enemy first!"

"Alright, big brother!"

After accepting Zhang Yang's challenge, Felice transformed into her Dragonhawk form and glided straight towards Savage Lord's Battle Companion.

{Charge}! {Charge}!

Zhang Yang and Savage Lord activated their {Charge} almost at the same instant as they clashed into each other like two trucks clashing head on! Both of them were stunned for one second!

However, Savage Lord had a look of dismay on his face because Zhang Yang had activated his {Charge} a little later than him!

It was not because Zhang Yang had reacted slower. On the contrary, it was because Zhang Yang knew the game too well. He performed like an outstanding player by showing Savage Lord his excellent in-game coordination!

The player who activates {Charge} slightly slower than the others would recover from the Stun Effect quicker than the others. Even though it was just a difference of 0.01 second, that little amount of time would be sufficient for an excellent player like Zhang Yang to activate another Status Restriction Skill on Savage Lord to be in control of the battle. It was proven by so many other players that such a stunt is extremely difficult to be executed.

The range distance of {Charge} was only 10 meters far. The moment the Skill is activated, the player would charge towards the target at high speed. That entire process would only require 0.1 seconds. Even the top Tier players would find it hard to create the opportunity to activate their {Charge} so precisely! One brief moment of delay would result in being knocked into Stun Effect by the opponent instead.

Once players with excellent skill sets approach each other, it would become extremely hard for any of them to get away from each other. So, any of them would have an extremely rare second chance to activate their {Charge} again!

Savage Lord knew that he suffered a tremendous setback the moment he realized that he had activated {Charge} slightly earlier Zhang Yang. He did it because he was too worried that he might lose the gap to activate his {Charge} on Zhang Yang! Though Savage Lord was speaking confidently, he was in fact overwhelmed by the fear of being defeated by Zhang Yang again. He had seen Zhang Yang's excellent performance previously, after all.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely as he swung his [Sword of Purging

Devourer] at Savage Lord right after he recovered from being stunned.

‘-34,332!’

His Rage Bar got filled up straight away in that instant. Meanwhile, Savage Lord had also recovered from being stunned as well!

{Blast Wave}!

‘-9,204!’

Just as Savage Lord was beginning to swing his sword at Zhang Yang, he was knocked into another Stun Effect which would last for 4 seconds long!

Without wanting to suffer the disadvantage of being stunned for 4 seconds, Savage Lord activated his {Warrior’s Will} to lift off the effect. He would probably lose half of his HP if he does not do that.

{Brutal Smash}!

By the time when he activated his {Warrior’s Will}, Zhang Yang had moved to the back of Savage Lord as he launched another Skill to stun Savage Lord for another 4 seconds! Savage Lord could not react in time at all as he had to accept the fate of being stunned again. The hand with his sword that was lifted up was once again laid down --- basically, Warrior’s Skills would require the player to

face their target before the Skills can be activated. Therefore, Savage Lord would need to face Zhang Yang first before he can activate all his Status Restriction Skills such as {Brutal Smash} and {Blast Wave}.

"Damn!" He cursed right before he activated his accessory which would give him a brief period of invincibility.

--- in a PvP match, the most important thing would actually be the ability to get rid of the Status Restriction Effect on oneself. The ability to restrict your opponent's movement with your Status Restriction Skills or your ability to deal damage would not matter as much. Once a player is afflicted with Status Restriction Effects of any kind, the player would not be able to attack or even move! By then, everything would become futile even if the player had tons of Status Restriction Skills on him or her. Therefore, top Tier players would always equip one or two accessories that could provide them invincibility over a brief period of time. That is also one of many reasons that Zhang Yang encouraged all his team members to acquire that Gray-Silver Tier accessory back in the days.

However, it would not do good for the players if they were to equip too many accessories at the same time. While a player is in battle mode, the player could just switch their equipment or accessory with a click in their mind. However, it would also mean that they would be required to unequip the current equipment or accessories that they are equipped with, before equipping their desired item. That was a full 2-step procedure which would require some time. During a battle, it could be a fatal mistake if a player wastes that one or two seconds on switching their equipment or accessories. The players could have been killed several times over

in that period of time.

On the other hand, switching weapons during a battle would be more convenient in such regard.

A golden light surged across the entire body of Savage Lord as he began to radiate in light. He had waited so long for this moment!

He turned around swiftly as he faced himself at Zhang Yang. Then he swung his weapon as hard as he could towards Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang engaged by raising up his shield. He activated {Block} to shield himself from the first attack by Savage Lord. Then, he activated his {Shield Wall} without any hesitation --- well, it would be a waste to not use it since he was still pretty 'free' at the moment!

‘-o!’

Savage Lord swung another attack at Zhang Yang. However, the attack was so pathetic that it did not even penetrate through Zhang Yang's Defense. It did not even deal any damage to Zhang Yang! It was actually a natural occurrence. Zhang Yang had a 20% damage immunity passive ability. However, the 75% damage immunity that his {Shield Wall} provided does not stack with the 20%. The percentages do not stack up by method of addition. Instead, it was a percentage over a percentage. The end result would be  $0.25\% * 0.8\% = 20.2\%$



Even if Savage Lord's basic Attack reaches up to 30,000, but it would still be extremely difficult for him to deal damage to Zhang Yang!

# Chapter 634: Full Recovery Potion

---

{Destructive Smash}!

Savage Lord did not slow down at all. He swung another Skill attack that could potentially damage Zhang Yang. {Destructive Smash} only has 8 seconds of cooldown. On the other hand, {Shield Wall} could last for 10 seconds. Therefore, his {Destructive Smash} would be ready for dispatching again when Zhang Yang's {Shield Wall} fades.

‘-3,167!’

That attack of his had finally dealt some damage to Zhang Yang! However, Zhang Yang had over 350,000 HP. It was like a mosquito bite!

Truth be told, Savage Lord still had a Skill called {Double Slash} which could potential deal much higher damage than any attack he launched at Zhang Yang up to this point. Upon equipping his secondary weapon with a similarly powerful weapon as his primary weapon, he could deal an additional 200% of his initial damage with each of his weapons in each of his hands. Furthermore, the Skill would ignore all Defense as well! It would totally pack a punch in the gut! However, the cooldown of this Skill was 1 minute long. It would be a waste if he uses it on Zhang Yang while his {Shield Wall} is active.

Savage Lord was still in a state of invincibility. So, he switched his shield off from his secondary slot and equipped it with another

battle sword. Then he began to launch a flurry of attacks on Zhang Yang.

Slash! Cut!

Savage Lord threw {Cripple Defense} on Zhang Yang like any Guardian would. It would not be a waste when he is encountering a Tanker with super high Defense. Also, because Savage Lord was using one-handed swords to attack, the Defense of his target affected him significantly in this battle. It was actually a wise move to reduce the Defense of his target before attacking.

Upon throwing 5 layers of {Cripple Defense} onto Zhang Yang, he managed to reduce Zhang Yang's Defense down to 2,820. That brought down the minimum amount of damage he needed to deal before he could begin causing effective damage to his target. It was quite a remarkable achievement for him.

The powerful Skill {Twin Blade Devastation} could last for 8 seconds. Right before the flashing strikes came to an end, Savage Lord struck out with his {Blast Wave} and stunned Zhang Yang!

{Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang immediately broke out of the Stun Effect and took down a [Beginner Mobility Potion] almost at the same instant.

{Brutal Smash}!

Immune!

Savage Lord repeated what Zhang Yang did to him earlier on. However, he did not expect Zhang Yang to be so swift in taking out a potion from his inventory and gulping it down! Therefore, every strike that could potentially cause a Status Restriction Effect on Zhang Yang went to waste just like that!

He could still hit Zhang Yang with his {Heroic Leap} in an attempt of stunning Zhang Yang. However, he knew that it would go to waste as well, as the effect of the potion was still alive and kicking!

"Big brother! Felice has reduced half of his HP bar! You're falling far behind! Haha!" Felice spoke from the other side of the arena.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Don't worry! I'll be able to end the battle very soon!"

"Zhan Yu! You little shit!" Savage Lord let out a raging roar. Of course he would get mad! Zhang Yang was actually treating him as a means of winning a wager that Zhang Yang had with his Battle Companion! Was he treating him as an entertainment instead of an opponent? Does Zhang Yang think that Savage Lord is that easy to defeat? Did he not take him seriously? Who could have endured such an insult!

Zhang Yang swung his sword swiftly as he continued to deal damage on Savage Lord while Savage Lord did the same. After all, he was competing with Felice! He had no intention of using any of

his Status Restriction Skills as using them would slow his assaults down. He only wanted to take out his target as soon as he is able to.

{God of War Devastation}!

‘-156,314!’

A terrifyingly high damage was dealt upon Savage Lord and that hit almost took him out! He only had approximately 3,000 HP left on him!

Savage Lord frowned intensely. After throwing two quick slashes at Zhang Yang, he quickly switched back to his shield and gulped down a bottle of Potion. His HP bar was miraculously restored back to full!

‘-45,234!’

‘-13,815!’

That two consecutive slashes were actually the Ultimate Skill of the Twin Blade Inheritance. It was known as {Double Slash}. The damage this Skill could deal supreme damage to the target. That two slashes had taken out more than 60,000 HP of Zhang Yang!

Furthermore, Zhang Yang realized that Savage Lord had used a potion called [Full Recovery Potion]!

He frowned.

A [Full Recovery Potion] could restore a player's HP (Health Point), MP (Mana Point), RP (Rage Point), EP (Energy Point) and FP (Focus Point). All of it! Thus the name of it! This should be the most powerful potion there is in the entire game. However, this potion could not be made or crafted by Alchemists.

There was a rate of this Potion dropping from a super boss on an Open World Map. Other than that, the bosses from Hardcore Modes of dungeons would also potentially drop the potion as part of the rewards for clearing the bosses. However, that rate would be extremely low. After all, the effects of this potion were a little too powerful.

If Savage Lord could have this sort of potion, how about his other teammates, then?

These opponents were really keeping their cards well hidden up in their sleeves. They did not even use this sort of potion during their previous matches even when they were losing! Of course, there were not much of a challenge for them in the previous matches, to begin with. So, they reserved this sort of potion for the finals to create an element of surprise for their opponents!

However, it would be illogical for them to reserve the potions so badly if they had plenty of it. King King Arcane would have used it right before he was defeated by Wei Yan Er. After all, a normal [Level 5 Healing Potion] could only recover 30,000 HP. The effect of a [Full Recovery Potion] was far more advanced than the effect of a [Level 5 Healing Potion]. If King King Arcane had this sort of

potion and he did use it back then, Wei Yan Er would have been the one losing the match.

Well, the Steely Dang Battle Team was really unlucky this time around. No matter what potions Savage Lord takes, he would still be defeated by Zhang Yang by the end of this match. His fate has been locked in! It would just be a matter of time. It would only be a waste, taking a [Full Recovery Potion] while engaging Zhang Yang.

However, no one would have known who they would be going up against in the arena. All could only blame Savage Lord for being reckless. He could have kept the potion and let his other team members have it. After all, the potions were not bound upon picking up.

Zhang Yang could not help but feel pity for Savage Lord for being so unlucky.

If the standard between the two opponents were almost on the same par, this potion would have worked marvelously in affecting the outcome of the match. Furthermore, the better the equipment on the players are, the more the potion could heal.

Although Zhang Yang had the {Alchemist's Intuition} and he already made quite a number of [Level 5 Healing Potions (Grade 10 Transmutation)], but one [Level 10 Healing Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] could only heal as much as 60,000 HP. It would not even be nearly enough if this potion was used to heal a player who has over 150,000 HP!

"Haha! I bet you have never expected this!" Savage Lord laughed out loud. As he was not afflicted with the effect of {Destructive Smash} at the moment, he had managed to fully heal from it. He let out a roar and continued to launch his assaults on Zhang Yang. However, the effect of [Mobility Potion] on Zhang Yang had not faded just yet. So any Status Restriction Effect that Savage Lord attempted to put on him would not be effective.

"Stop struggling! It's futile to attempt avoiding the inevitable!" Zhang Yang smiled down at Savage Lord. He still had over 300,000 HP while Savage Lord only had about 220,000 HP on him. Comparing the weapons they wielded, Savage Lord was using two one-handed weapons while Zhang Yang was using a two-handed weapon. It was obvious that who would come out on top in terms of Attack. If they were to compare their Defense attributes, both of them were holding shields. However, Zhang Yang's was much higher, because he had two pieces of Ethereal Tier equipment on him to boost his Defense up by a notch!

Zhang Yang did not push his opponent too hard. He commanded Felice to slow down her attack speed a little. He allowed Savage Lord to hold on for a little while longer --- he was thinking of forcing Savage Lord to use another [Full Recovery Potion] - if he still had more with him!

As Savage Lord realized that Zhang Yang had tuned down his attack a little, he switched his shield out and his Defense was increased greatly. He laughed with pride and began to go all out on Zhang Yang.

However, generally, for matters under heaven, those closely



involved cannot see as clearly as those outside. Hourglass Figure immediately saw Zhang Yang's intention. However, she could only stare at the match from aside. When a match begins, no outsider would be able to interrupt the match. Public channels, private channels, and even phone calls would be completely blocked off from the players inside the arena.

Hourglass Figure could only stare at the match as she was overwhelmed by anxiety. Well, Savage Lord did still have one more [Full Recovery Potion] with him. Honestly speaking, Hourglass Figure, Savage Lord, and Bloodbath Apocalypse had two bottles of [Full Recovery Potions] each. They meant to win two matches out of three. Even if they were falling behind in the 1VS1 matches, they could still continue on in the Team Battle and turn the tables over on their opposing Battle Team.

However, Zhang Yang was evil. He could have won the match easily. But he was trying to prolong the match. It was obvious that he was trying to dig deep into the sleeves of Savage Lord, trying to find out what else he had up his sleeves.

After giving it some thought, Hourglass Figure started to smile faintly. There were two sides on doing this. Because Zhang Yang had no idea how many bottles of [Full Recovery Potion] Savage Lord had on him. If Savage Lord were to really take another bottle of potion, Zhang Yang would definitely drag the match on for another minute to see if Savage Lord has a third bottle of [Full Recovery Potion]!

If Savage Lord still could not take out Zhang Yang in two minutes time, that would only prove him to be weak.

"Why isn't noob tank defeating that dark charcoal? Shouldn't he be winning the match by now?" Wei Yan Er could not understand why Zhang Yang was trying to drag the match. As long as Savage Lord does not activate {Shield Wall} or any kind of Accessory that may grant him invincibility, Zhang Yang could have taken him out cold within 10 seconds!

"That's really strange... I wonder what is going on with Zhang Yang right now?" Lost Dream and the others were expressing their concerns as well.

"Potion!" Sun Xin Yu was being as concise and comprehensive on her choice of words as always.

Lost Dreams and the others were looking at each other as they did not get what Sun Xin Yu was trying to tell them. However, the person who would understand you most would actually be your enemy. Han Ying Xue immediately got it, then she said, "You're saying that Indian guy took a potion? Hmm... he did take a bottle of potion and his HP bar went back to full."

There were too many life-saving Skills in the game. It was as if everyone already had their own life-saving Skills on them. Therefore, when the HP bar of Savage Lord miraculously recovered back to full state, no one was paying attention to how he did it or what Skill did he use. Now that Han Ying Xue had pointed it out loud and clear, everyone had finally realized the secret behind it.

"So that potion can what? Heal you back to your full HP?"

"That potion is much more powerful than Zhang Yang's [Level 5 Healing Potion {Grade 10 Transmutation)]!"

"However, such powerful potions are usually extremely rare!"

"Silly Yu is trying to drag the match so that he can trick that Indian guy into using all his potions up!"

Lost Dream and the others were not stupid either. They understood the real intention of Zhang Yang in just a brief moment.

Now, the only one who had not realize the scheme behind Zhang Yang's mind was Savage Lord. 1 minute later, his HP had dropped below 20%. The match had entered a 'killing cleave' stage. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang still had over 40% HP on him. Savage Lord suddenly activated his {Warrior's Will} to remove the negative effect that he had from Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash}. Then he also took another [Full Recovery Potion] to restore his HP bar.

"Zhan Yu! Your time has come!" Savage Lord laughed. He activated a {Brutal Smash} and stunned Zhang Yang. Then he took some time to switch his sword out onto his secondary weapon slot. He slid over to the rear of Zhang Yang before he launched his assaults. He did that to avoid Zhang Yang's shield from getting in the way.

As expected, there was a second bottle of [Full Recovery Potion]! However, would there be a third bottle then?

Zhang Yang revealed a vague smile that no one would spot easily. Then, he activated his {Warrior's Will} and rid himself of the Stun Effect. Then he stomped his legs on the ground and activated his {Thunder Strike}. With that strike, he afflicted Savage Lord with a negative effect that reduced 90% of his movement speed. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang took the opportunity to run from Savage Lord.

--- Zhang Yang intended to delay this match for another minute to see if Savage Lord had a third bottle of the potion.

"Damn!" Savage Lord had just taken the [Full Recovery Potion]. So all his other potions were on Global Shared Cooldown for the moment. So he was forced to walk very slowly!

Zhang Yang took the opportunity to recover as he began to patch himself up with [Bandages].

‘+10000!’

‘+10000!’

...

During the 10-second patching session, Zhang Yang recovered over 100,000 HP all thanks to the double healing effect that was

bestowed on him by his title of ‘Physician’s Friend’. That being said, Zhang Yang now had approximately 230,000 HP on him at the moment. He managed to heal back almost the same amount of HP that Savage Lord did.

Savage Lord was so anxious that he was on the brink of crying! He was capable of restoring his HP back to full because he had taken a [Full Recovery Potion] which appeared to be an extremely rare item! Hourglass Figure had put up the ‘honor’ of India and a substantial sum of money in order to get only 4 bottles of [Full Recovery Potions]. With the two [Full Recovery Potions] that they managed to keep in their guild’s warehouse, they only had a total of 6 [Full Recovery Potions]!

However, knowing that the amount of HP he recovered by using one super rare [Full Recovery Potion] was as much as the amount of HP Zhang Yang recovered by using one [Bandage], of course, he would feel like crying out loud.

# Chapter 635: Absolute Slaughter!

---

Truth to be told, Zhang Yang could have just taken another bottle of [Level 5 Healing Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] after that. He could still recover another 60,000 HP if he does that.

However, he would have recovered too much amount HP that he would have pushed Savage Lord into despair. When that happens, Savage Lord would have just given up hope and he might not use his third [Full Recovery Potion] if he really had one with him. Therefore, Zhang Yang had to maintain his HP bar at a certain amount to encourage Savage Lord that the match was not over yet. He could coax the other Guardian into giving his best and pulling out every other trump card.

Haih... more effort is required in order for one to be the villain these days.

Zhang Yang had to keep Savage Lord occupied while making sure that he could still make Savage Lord believe that he still stood a chance at winning the match. It was much more difficult than taking out Savage Lord just like that. After all, Zhang Yang must not let Savage Lord know that he was holding back. At least he managed to maintain the pace of the battle with his high standard of skill by utilizing his 'Supporting Attacks' and his facial expressions. He could really need to prolong the battle as long as possible in order to lure Savage Lord into revealing his remaining 'tricks'. It was wise of him to use his 'Supporting Attacks' which would not cause a point of damage from time to time to create the illusion that he was trying his best to bring Savage Lord down to his knees.

Well, not everyone was born with the gift to act!

"Zhan Yu! You're destined to fall before me!" Savage Lord began to laugh out loud as he was very content with his current performance. In his own eyes, he believed that he could equally match himself with the opponent that had kicked his \*ss earlier on in the battle --- although he relied on some [Full Recovery Potions] while he was doing it, his opponent was a player with a Class S Inheritance after all. So it was understandable that he would become a little arrogant over it.

Zhang Yang was being extremely cooperative with Savage Lord. He humphed in annoyance and faked out a few fumbles and mistakes. He even purposely missed some of his attacks on Savage Lord. Furthermore, Savage Lord was also equipped with {Block}! Therefore, Savage Lord managed to hang on for more than 50 seconds before his HP bar dropped below 20%.

On the other hand, Zhang Yang maintained his own HP at approximately 25%. He kept his HP bar slightly higher than Savage Lord in order to pressurize Savage Lord without causing despair to him. In the meanwhile, Savage Lord still believed that there was still hope for him to defeat Zhang Yang as he saw that Zhang Yang's remaining HP was barely higher than his.

As expected! The moment the Global Cooldown for potions was over, Savage Lord immediately took out a bottle of [Level 5 Healing Potion] and gulped it down. As the effect of the {Destructive Smash} was over at the moment, he managed to recover 30,000 HP.

Zhang Yang let out a breath of relief. At the same time, he was a little disappointed as well.

So, he now knew that Savage Lord had no [Full Recovery Potions] left on him. However, there should be more of this sort of potion with the other members of the Steely Dang Battle Team! It was really unfortunate for Zhang Yang. If every single one of the [Full Recovery Potion] was with Savage Lord, Zhang Yang could have lured Savage Lord into finishing up all his potions and bring Silky Soft Battle Team one step closer to victory.

"Hey, have you finished up all your Full Recovery Potions already?" Zhang Yang asked Savage Lord out of a sudden.

"How did you --- bastard!" Savage Lord was not that dumb as well. He immediately understood the situation after he heard Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud. If that is the case, Zhang Yang had no reason to hold back anymore.

{Destructive Smash}!

{Block}!

Normal attack!



{Rising Dragon Strike}!

Zhang Yang felt a heat rush in his right hand. A ‘Dragon of the East’ suddenly emerged from his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. The dragon lashed out with its outstretched fangs! Zhang Yang intended to activate his {Killing Cleave} as he saw that the remaining HP bar of Savage Lord was lower than 20%. However, since that the {Rising Dragon Strike} was triggered, it could finish the job as well.

‘-459,802!’

Savage Lord received an unbelievably high damage and lay dead. The dragon slammed its claw straight on Savage Lord’s head and clawed his head opened! Savage Lord let out a miserable scream towards the sky before he died.

Zhang Yang could not help but feel lucky. If his {Rising Dragon Strike} had triggered a little earlier when he was battling Savage Lord, he might not have made Savage Lord use up two of his [Full Recovery Potions].

Meanwhile, the players who saw the {Rising Dragon Strike} dropped their jaws in shock. The situation was different compared to arena battles and the Open World battles. The system would ensure that everyone in the game could see the numerical damage values that pop out on top of players whenever they receive damage. The battle logs would even specify the amount of damage reduced based on the Defense, Damage Absorption and Damage Immunity.

This {Rising Dragon Strike} could actually cause up to 560,000 damage! More importantly, it was not a Critical Hit!

Holy god! Would anyone be able to withstand such a powerful hit from Zhang Yang and live after that? Engaging Zhang Yang in a 1VS1 match would definitely be a waste of time! He could just score an instant win by triggering {Rising Dragon Strike}!

However, that was merely wishful thinking. Zhang Yang had only managed to trigger the {Rising Dragon Strike} once, throughout the entire time. The rate of triggering the effect was so low that Zhang Yang would just ignore the existence of it! Or else, he would have timed it right and swept out every single enemy that he goes up against! He could have easily scored 2 points for the round!

Savage Lord finally made his way back to his teammates. He could not avoid being lectured by Hourglass Figure for the dumb things he did back in the arena. Now that he had the time and space to recall, he only realized that Zhang Yang was just having a good time toying with him. He could not help but feel shame as his anger towards Zhang Yang ignited brighter than ever.

The competition continued on with the third match of the round. This match was like a comet crashing into earth! It was Sun Xin Yu VS Hourglass Figure!

It was going to be a spectacular match between two players with Class S Inheritance!

Truth to be told, Sun Xin Yu could win the match easily if she is willing to throw a {Soul Cleansing } onto the Hourglass and stealth kill her to claim victory over the match. With her current skills in the art of stealth, Sun Xin Yu could sneak up on top Tier players like Hourglass Figure herself. Even a Hunter who excels in the arts of forcing out the stealthy ones would not be able to force Sin Xin Yu out from the shadows.

However, the Ice queen was too proud to win a match with such a ‘despicable’ method. She would prefer to win the match by showing off her skill sets.

Shoof!

Hourglass Figure threw out a {Flare} at the direction she was facing at and illuminated the surroundings. That was a Hunter’s Skill for revealing all units that are hidden from plain sight in the game. The Skill could reach out to a radius of 10 meters. Any Thief or other hidden units within the effective range of it would be revealed straight away!

Shoof!

Upon the 15-second cooldown of the Skill, Hourglass Figure threw another {Flare} to the opposite direction of the first {Flare}. The moment when she threw it out, she felt a sense of danger, however, she only smiled coldly and did nothing.

A blade emerged from the air and struck Hourglass Figure into a

stunned state. A shadow faded right after the strike. However, right before the shadow could launch the next assault, she was frozen up in a box of ice, immediately.

--- that was the Hunter's {Frost Trap}! The Skill could freeze any non-boss type targets (including players) for 10 seconds. The target would not be able to move or do anything during the effective period of the Skill. However, the effect would break if the target receives any attack or damage during the effective period of the Skill.

{Stealth} could stun the target for 4 seconds while {Frost Trap} could freeze the target for 10 seconds! Therefore, the Thief would be the one who suffers! 6 seconds was more than enough for a Hunter to keep a distance of 30 meters between themselves and their enemies. Meanwhile, Thieves who are already forced out of their 'Stealth Mode' would become very vulnerable as they could not withstand many hits.

Huh?

The joy that Hourglass Figure felt did not last more than half a second. Another shadow emerged out of the air and two blades slid across her back! The HP bar of Hourglass Figure was reduced steeply after that! At the same time, she received a negative effect of {Soul Cleansing}: If Hourglass Figure could not kill her enemy within 3 minutes, she would die, literally!

Zhang Yang could not help but clap and praise his girl for what just happened. The first shadow that struck Hourglass Figure appeared to be Sun Xin Yu's Battle Companion, Ankh the Assassin!

As Ankh had stepped up to take the {Frost Trap}, she allowed Sun Xin Yu to go all out, launching her assault on Hourglass Figure!

This Ice queen really had her own personality going! She still wanted to attack her opponent head-on even after she had cast the negative effect of {Soul Cleansing}. It was obvious that ... she did not want to win the match by taking the ‘shortcut’. She wanted to give Hourglass Figure a fair chance to strike back at her!

{Compel}!

Hourglass Figure’s pet came out of the shadow as well. It was a Wind Shadow Leopard that activated {Stealth} which knocked Sun Xin Yu into a Stun state.

Huh?

Zhang Yang widened his eyes and stared at Hourglass Figure. She was a ranged-type Hunter. {Compel} could only be learned by the ‘babies’ of Beastmasters!

Obviously, it was the special ‘gift’ that only the Hunter’s Class S Inheritance could provide. That would really give Hourglass Figure the advantage of learning two different types of Skills.

The effects of {Compel} were similar to the effect of {Stealth}. However, the Stun effect duration of {Compel} was 1 second longer than the Stun effect duration of {Stealth}. A 5-second Stun effect would be far more practical than a 4-second Stun effect.

In other words, Hourglass Figure would be recovering from the Stun effect 1 second earlier than Sun Xin Yu. That would provide her enough time to get a distance away from Sun Xin Yu unruffled. That would prove to be unfavorable for Sun Xin Yu.

Sun Xin Yu activated her accessory and triggered the Invincibility effect. On the other hand, Hourglass Figure did the exact same thing and leaped 10 meters away from Sun Xin Yu. Both of them activated their accessories at the same instant. Therefore, Hourglass Figure did not launch her assaults towards Sun Xin Yu. Instead, she chose to get as far from Sun Xin Yu as possible.

Although Hourglass Figure no longer had any blind spots, a Thief would triumph over her in melee combat. By creating a certain distance between herself and Sun Xin Yu, Sun Xin Yu would not be able to deal damage to her from a distance. Meanwhile, the Skills that a Thief could have were too unpredictable and various. The situation would become unfavorable for anyone who thinks about going head-on with a Thief in a melee combat! Furthermore, Hourglass had just used one of two Accessories that could grant her the ability to become Invincible for a brief period of time. Although she could still activate another of her Accessory pieces to grant her another brief moment of invincibility, it would not be a wise move as there would be too much of a risk for her to do so. After all, she had no idea how many more 'tricks' were reserved under the sleeves of Sun Xin Yu!

A moment before the effect of invincibility ended, Sun Xin Yu immediately activated her {Shadow Step} and appeared right behind Hourglass Figure. With her two blades whirling across the air, she unleashed a series of flurry attacks on Hourglass Figure.

Blood was spilled across the arena as she started slicing Hourglass Figure up!

{Breaking Shot}!

Hourglass Figure suddenly shot Sun Xin Yu into a 4-second stun as she took the opportunity to pull herself away. She ran 30 meters across the arena before she began to shoot her arrows at Sun Xin Yu.

{Sprint}!

As she was running towards Hourglass Figure. Sun Xin Yu accelerated, all of a sudden! She ran straight up to Hourglass Figure as swiftly as the wind and continued to launch her assaults as aggressively as she could.

The two ladies were exhibiting their best skills to everyone watching their match. The way they move, the way they used their Status Restriction Skills, the way they removed the Status Restriction Effects on themselves. Everything they did on the arena was immensely satisfying for the people to enjoy. It was a marvelous performance that the two ladies were putting up in the arena! Many Hunters and Thieves were astonished and ashamed of themselves. They had no idea that they could actually play the game in so many other ways!

The battle was at the peak of its climax. The two ladies would also use any opportunity that they could grab to patch themselves up with [Bandages], especially when they were throwing their

Status Restricting Skills at each other. They were basically spamming the potions the moment the global cooldown for their potion was over.

They kept throwing their Status Restriction Skills at each other while dodging attacks from each other. However, the amount of HP that they could recover by taking [Potions] and [Bandages] could not make up for the damage they received from each other. In about two and a half minutes later, both of their HP bars were reduced down to approximately 10%.

The potions' global cooldown for both ladies were over at the same instant. However, Hourglass took a bottle of [Full Recovery Potion] instead of a [Level 5 Healing Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)]!

Her HP was restored back to full in just a brief moment! Her Focus Points were restored back to 100 points as well!

{Vanish}!

Upon taking her potion, Sun Xin Yu vanished into thin air with her Skill, without any hesitation. Then... there was no then anymore. She went completely silent!

Zhang Yang was shocked, then he laughed out loud.

Although Sun Xin Yu was proud and competitive, she was not a fool!



If Hourglass Figure wanted to compete with her fair and square, she would not have taken a bottle of [Full Recovery Potion] which broke the status quo of the match. Without that, Sun Xin Yu would not have hidden and let her {Soul Cleansing} to finish the job! However, since that Hourglass Figure had decided not to duel with Sun Xin Yu in a fair manner, there was no reason for Sun Xin Yu to go head on with her like a fool!

It was just matter of seconds before 3 minutes comes to pass. There was no sign of Sun Xin Yu at all. Hourglass Figure was so badly infuriated that her eyes almost popped out from her eye sockets!

After all, she had just taken a bottle of [Full Recovery Potion], an extremely expensive and rare potion that they had spent a fortune on in order to get a few bottles. However, the effect of {Soul Cleansing} would not be affected by the amount of HP on the target. It would not matter if the target has only 1% or 100% HP. The target would have to die when the time is up! Therefore, it became a total waste for Hourglass Figure when Sun Xin Yu decided to vanish into thin air and wait out for the effect of {Soul Cleansing} to kick in.

Are you kidding me? What the f\*ck!

Hourglass Figure was on the verge of losing her sanity! If Sun Xin Yu had just thrown the {Soul Cleansing} onto her and stayed quiet for the rest of the match, she would have given up and played along with it. She could have reserved the potion so that her other teammates could use it in the upcoming matches. However, Sun

Xin Yu had given her some false hope! That had really tricked her into using one of her [Full Recovery Potion], that was really...

Were all the members of Lone Desert Smoke so cunning?!

Three minutes had passed. Hourglass Figure collapsed onto the ground with great grievance and died instantly.

The Steely Dang Battle Team had been ‘tricked’ into using 3 bottles of [Full Recovery Potions] in two battles. That was a great win for Zhang Yang and his team!

Furthermore, Silky Soft Battle Team was leading the matches with the score of 3:0. They could win the first round by winning another two of the 1VS1 matches.

The 4th match was Han Ying Xue’s turn. She took down Galavan with ease, just like how she did with her previous opponents. By doing so, the Silky Soft Battle Team scored 4:0.

However, Hundred Shots lost the 5th match to Almodo. Therefore, the Steely Dang Battle Team managed to score 1 victory for themselves. On the following match, Lost Dream won the 6th match with an outstanding performance as he scored the last point for his team to claim victory over the first round with a score of 5:1.

After a short break, the organizers carried on with the second round of the matches without any delay.

This round, Zhang Yang and his team were not that lucky. Although Sun Xin Yu and Zhang Yang won with ease, both of them managed to do that because their opponents were only players with Class B Inheritance. Meanwhile, Han Yin Xue was so unlucky that she actually had to battle against Hourglass Figure. Hourglass Figure won the match at the cost of one bottle of [Full Recovery Potion].

Lost Dream and Hundred Shots had to go up against players with Class A Inheritance. They waged an arduous struggle before they lost. As for Daffodil Daydream who was the weakest among the entire team, even though she outdid herself this time, she had not yet acquired her Inheritance. It was logical that she would lose to another player who already had an Inheritance.

Fortunately, Wei Yan Er performed superbly for her match. She won by whirling her huge battle axe around without giving space for her opponent to even flinch, securing the crucial point for Silky Soft Battle Team to stay in the game. Although Zhang Yang and his team were falling behind by scoring only 3:4, they managed to participate in the team battle.

Everyone, including the members from two teams that were competing against each other, the players that were watching the competition and the commentator were extremely nervous about the outcome of the team battle. After all, it would be the final match of the World League Championship!

Ding! The Team Battle had begun!

Zhang Yang charged at the front as he led his teammates into battle. He activated his {Charge} towards King Kong Wrath, followed by sweep with his [Sword of Purging Devourer] without any hesitation. After causing a damage of 58,000 on King Kong Wrath, Zhang Yang suddenly felt a heat rush throughout his right arm. A ‘Dragon of the East’ emerged out from the sword and struck out towards his enemies!

It was unbelievably lucky that Zhang Yang could trigger his {Rising Dragon Strike} with one single hit! Not to mention that it was only his first solid hit on his target!

In just one instant, Zhang Yang caused a damage of 580,000 to every single member of the Steely Dang Battle Teams, every single Battle Companion, and every single pet of the opposition team!

It was an instant kill for everyone on the Steely Dang Battle Team!

The world became calm in an instant!

Everyone had their jaws dropped in silence. That included the commentators as well! Even Zhang Yang and his team members, and every member of the Steely Dang Battle Team were stunned over what had just happened!

Did the match just end?

It was! The match was ended in just an instant!

# Chapter 636: Gurant's Thumb Ring

---

Perhaps, there was no way that anyone could beat the record set by Zhang Yang and his battle team.

The entire arena remained quiet for a long time before the usual rowdiness returned. It took several players quite some time for them to accept the fact that Zhang Yang had single-handedly eliminated all 5 enemies with a single strike. Steely Dangs Battle Team did not even have time to react.

It could not be helped, {Rising Dragon Strike} was only activated by luck and luck alone. It was not something that Zhang Yang could control. It would be extremely nice to have the skill proc at the crucial moment...

In the end, despite the audience still left dumbfounded, the champion of the World Championship Professional League was Silky Soft Battle Team! Zhang Yang and his band of merry friends had become the first World Champions ever! They held the pride and honor of China! While everyone was happy that China was able to hold the first place in the championship, Humbly Gentleman, Liu Wei, and other players that had a grudge on him were pissed off albeit still happy for their nation.

After everyone was sent out of the arena, the two Battle Teams were teleported away. China had produced two teams that had obtained the champion and the second runner-up. That alone had proved that China was a force to be reckoned with.

The prize money was sent out almost immediately after the results were out. Even though Zhang Yang was smiling from ear to ear as he holds the large cheque made out of a large cardboard with several zeros on it, the prize money was already in his saving account. As to how the division of the prize money goes, the organizers of the event would not bother to interfere. It was up to the leader of the battle team to decide.

The second prize was the Inheritance Fragments. All three battle team leaders were sent up a stage to draw from loot box. Snow Seeker obtained a C class Mammoth Inheritance, Hourglass Figure obtained a B class Silverwing Angel Inheritance, and Zhang Yang obtained an A class Soul Breaker Inheritance.

Due to the lack of information about the Inheritances, no one had any clue on their details. It could be a physical attack type, or a magic type, it could be a melee type, or a ranged type. All of the questions will be answered only when the players themselves obtain the Inheritance Keepsakes.

Even so, if Daffodil Daydream accepted the Darkness Inheritance back then, she would still benefit from several of its buffs. Sadly, it would still be wastage, such as the 250% attack boost {Dark Vengeance}, for it requires a melee weapon. Hence, some Inheritances were meant for specific wielders. It could be so precise to the class type down to its branch job, such as a Beastmaster or a Sniper, a Pyromancer or a Cryomancer.

Zhang Yang passed the Soul Breaker Inheritance Fragment to Daffodil Daydream and had her search for all 6 remaining Fragments. If the Keepsake's description reveals the Inheritance to

be directed towards magic, Zhang Yang would have her take on the Inheritance quest. If it is the other way around, she will be greatly compensated for her futile effort. Zhang Yang would never send someone on a random goose chase without a proper reward in hand.

After the event ended, the organizers of the event threw a grand closing ceremony and invited all participant to visit Luxembourg for a holiday. Naturally, all expenses would be covered.

Sadly, China's Lunar Year celebration was about to arrive. Hence, Zhang Yang and the rest of the China players had chosen to fly back to China to resume their activity there. Once the teams arrived back at the mainland, Daffodil Daydream started her adventure to search for the Inheritance Fragments. Like other Inheritances, collecting all the pieces of the fragment was not a difficult task. It was just time-consuming. After 5 to 6 days, she found the second piece. The journey of collecting all seven pieces of Fragment would definitely be a far road ahead.

With the emergence of players that had surpassed the Level 120 threshold, Zhang Yang felt that it was time to move forward with his plans. He had Mountain Mover and Endless Starlight to take charge of exploring the Red Garnet Palace Dungeon. The second dungeon was the target of all players in the world. Even though the importance of obtaining the First Clear Achievement of the second world-class dungeon could not be compared to the Dragon Throat Fortress, it was still a priority to everyone since it had skill points as a reward! On the side note, the haul from a dungeon was constant, even though the equipment farmed there are not as strong as an open-world boss, the dungeon does have tons of bosses to kill and equipment for Battle Companion to loot! All and all, it

was still worth raiding.

Since the progress of players in the game was so rapid (due to Zhang Yang interfering with the timeline), and the existence of Battle Companion (also Zhang Yang's fault), the difficulty of the Red Garnet Palace was not too difficult for players to raid. Both the Normal and Hard modes of the dungeon were conquered in just half a day's time. All big guilds from around the world had funded their Exploration parties and had started the raid on the Hardcore Mode.

Similar to the Dragon Throat Palace, the Red Garnet Palace had many bosses. Up to 13 of them! Compared to the previous dungeon, the first five bosses were conquered in just 3 days. The middle 5 bosses were slightly stronger and lasted for a while. Most of the super-guilds Exploration team only took close to 7 days to clear the middle stage. Zhang Yang believed that the last 3 bosses would end up being cleared in no time at all.

After working for half a month, Daffodil Daydream had managed to find all the Inheritance Fragments of the Soul Breaker Inheritance and had formed the Keepsake. Turns out, it was an Inheritance that can be acquired only by Priests, Spellcasters, and Knights. It was a class-specific Inheritance! A good [red envelope](#) for the new year!

With the new year coming closer and closer, every family in China was busy getting ready to celebrate the festive holiday. Many needed to travel far to visit their family from all corners of China. There were many things that needed to be done, hence, the time spent on playing games was greatly reduced. Some days, a



member would be asking for a 3 days leave, the next day, another would want a 4-day leave. One by one, members of the Exploration team had requested for leaves, leaving the party incomplete.

Eventually, after a serious discussion between Hundred Shots, Endless Starlight, and Mountain Mover, the guild decided to hold off the Exploration of the dungeon and allow everyone to do as they please till the 15th of the month.

With Lone Desert Smoke out of the picture, the fight for the First Clear Achievement was going on strongly. In just a few days' time, the guild Paragon had managed to kill their way to the 11th boss. Nihilum was following closely behind and defeated the 12th boss, surpassing Paragon. However, the one who had the last laugh was Hourglass Figure, as she had led a team of elite players from her guild, the Land of Savages and killed the last boss. The First Clear Achievement had fallen into the hands of the India Region. For the first time ever, Zhang Yang had missed out on obtaining a First Clear Achievement.

It was all due to the special occasion of China, Korean, and even Japan celebrating the new year. Due to the celebration, almost all guilds had stopped their pursuits of the dungeon raid. Perhaps it was greed, or pride, when Land of Savages obtained the First Clear Achievement, they used the momentary attention to voice out their dismay of their losses during the World Championship. Still, a win was a win, at the very least, they still managed to obtain the world's second world-class dungeon First Clear Achievement. However, the shame of losing to Lone Desert Smoke still lingered around. Hence, Land of Savages had accused Lone Desert Smoke of only depending on luck to win the championship. If it was not for Zhang Yang's weird skill, they would have won the group 5v5

fight! Land of Savages was, in truth, stronger than Lone Desert Smoke in every way! Or so they claimed.

In response to their sudden accusations, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er, and many other hot-headed players of Lone Desert Smoke were enraged. Han Ying Xue had even suggested starting a national war to show the Indians their rightful place amongst the trash of the world!

It was merely a suggestion. Whether or not Zhang Yang takes action is another thing. As such, after the short period of time since the Red Garnet Palace's First Clear Achievement was taken, players had yet again indulged themselves in a race of grinding Levels. There was a large gap till the next dungeon, hence, everyone placed their attention on getting their level as high as possible. After all, Levels dictates the character's strength in all MMORPG!

In the middle of the second month of the year, the Professional League had started a new seasonal championship. In the previous seasonal Professional League, the last two Battle Team in the S class Professional League had to fight the Champion and the Runner-Up Battle Team of the A class Professional League. In the end, the S class Battle Teams lost Title Defense match, allowing the A class Battle Teams to enter the S class Professional League fight ring.

The two new fresh blood were strong. In the first match, they defeated Sunset Amber guild and Rolling Stones with a massive gap, giving them a promising prospect. The next few matches they were assigned to were easily won. However, when everyone was

about to cheer for the greenhorns, the two Battle Teams had cold water poured over their head by Lone Desert Smoke and Imperial Sky. As such, the new Battle Teams had learned their lesson after finally tasting what real pros were like. In other news, the so-called "undefeatable" guild, The Myth was defeated.

...

After a series of pre-requisite quests were completed by Daffodil Daydream, Zhang Yang had assembled a small team to help Daffodil Daydream kill the Soul Breaker Inheritance quest boss. Right then, the team consists of three S class Inheritance holders, one A class Inheritance holder, and four B class Inheritance holders. The formation was extremely strong and could easily topple any boss at their level. If that was not impressive enough, the players had also reached Level 120 and equipped an array of equipment to further increase their overall DPS. Zhang Yang even had Level 150 Ethereal equipment! (Lowered to Level 130 due to the special skill). Attack, Defense, Skills, Power, all of those requirements were fulfilled by Zhang Yang little battle team.

To save time and effort, everyone activated their Inheritance Transformation skill and only took less than 1 hour to kill the boss! The boss dropped two Ethereal tier equipment. One of them was a shield which was immediately given to Endless Starlight to increase his Defensive power for a change. On the other hand, Zhang Yang had taken the liberty of hauling the other Ethereal equipment for himself.

[Gurant's Thumb Ring] (Ethereal, Ring)

Vitality: +1667

Strength: +566

Dexterity: +556

Equip: Increases 3,330 Maximum HP.

Equip: Increases 8% damage dealt and healing rate.

Equip: Absorbs 485 damage when attacked.

Equip: Increases Frost Damage dealt with a weapon by 50%

Level Requirement: 150

The good news did not last long. Right after Daffodil Daydream defeated the Inheritance quest boss, the Japan-Korea region players had issued a war, a Territorial Conquest War!

Like the previous attempt, the enemy had used two [Territorial Conquest Order] to strike both Winst Castle and Morning Town at the same time. With the [Level 4 Guild Upgrade Order] available then, Zhang Yang, or rather China, was facing 80,000 strongest players of Japan-Korea Region.

The situation was rather disadvantageous for China since the

Empire Expedition Army had left a long time ago. The castle was practically defenseless! Even the Mechanical Servants placed in the castle were no match to them as they were now far behind on levels.

Worst of all, Zhang Yang and his team had just used their Transformation skill. He had no [Forbidden Scrolls] in hand to counter the enemy powerful attacking force! If Zhang Yang still decides to fight them, it would be a suicide mission! And they are the suicide squad!

Then again, it has been 6 months since Zhang Yang had conquered the territory. 6 month of constantly traveling was enough to make anyone as grumpy as a mad pig. It would not hurt much for Zhang Yang to allow Winst Castle to be taken over. After all, Zhang Yang had not planned to occupy the territory for long.

As such, Zhang Yang had mobilized all his forces to protect Morning Town, leaving Winst Castle in the hands of the NPCs inside to put up a little resistance.

The two wars started with a bang. Without a doubt, even without his Transformation skill, Zhang Yang as still able to lead Lone Desert Smoke to stampede over the invading players. However, Winst Castle was successfully taken over by the enemy.

As such, after taking back their land that had been occupied by the enemy for 6 months, Japan and Korea cheered happily. However, they might have won the war, but they still lost one of the fights. The shame for having the enemy occupying their land for 6 months was not something anyone could wash off with just

one war.

Red Envelope: It's Chinese culture to present a red envelope packed with money inside to someone else as a means to pass on the prosperity. It was a practice that existed in most Asian countries with Chinese population. Japan and Korea have similar practices but the envelope do not necessarily have to be red in color.

# Chapter 637: The Soul Breaker

---

After a few days of boredom, Daffodil Daydream had managed to obtain the Soul Breaker Inheritance that she had been eagerly waiting for.

Despite being an A class Inheritance, the Inheritance was Lone Desert Smoke's one and only magic class specific type A class Inheritance. Hence, Daffodil Daydream became the center of attention for a short period of time, and everyone was interested to know of her abilities. The young woman happily obliged.

[Understanding of the Soul]: Permanently increases your damage by 45%.

[Soul Pierce]: Directly attacks the soul of the target. Deals 300% Magic Shadow Attack. Stuns the target for 5 seconds. Cooldown: 1 minute.

[Soul Breaker Transformation]: Transforms into the Breaker of Souls. Increases HP by 3000%, Attack by 400%, Defense by 400%. Gains a chance to nullify magic attack by 30%. Gains 1 Soul Breaker Energy Point every second. Lasts for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours.

[Soul Rupture]: Ruptures the souls of all target within an area of 100 meters x 100 meters. Deals Shadow damage based on the value of Intelligence of the caster, multiplied by 8. Costs 3 Energy Point.

[Souls Substitute]: Creates a Soul Substitute that shares the same appearance of the caster. The Substitute would not deal any

damage. When the Substitute receives damage, the damage will be converted into HP and heals the caster. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

[Soul Manipulation]: Takes control of the soul of a target. The inflicted target cannot control its character. Requires 10 Energy Points to activate. Lasts for 5 seconds. Every 2 additional Energy Points will increase the skill duration by 1 second. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

With Daffodil Daydream obtaining her Inheritance, all his core members of the party, except for Fantasy Sweetheart, had obtained their Inheritances, with none of them being lower than B class! If Zhang Yang is to lead the team to another nation to start a war, they would be capable of inciting massive chaos! That would be even without the use of Transformation skill! If they did, their attack would be depicted as the Valkyries of the heavens!

...

A few days later, Dream Tech "loyally obeyed" their customers. They went ahead and created the Individual ranking system. Unlike the other PvP system, the Individual ranking systems do not include any rewards but the title itself. Still, having the title of being the best player will definitely be cool! The patch was extremely well-accepted by the mass and induced a momentarily heated fever.

The rules of a 1v1 Individual match was, that there are no rules. Besides the limitation of only two players in the arena, all players could use anything and everything to defeat their enemy. All skills,



all potion, all scrolls, all tools of any cooldown will be refreshed immediately upon entering the arena! The winner of the match will be awarded a few points while the loser will have their points deducted. As such, for balancing, all competitor will only be fighting players who have roughly the same points. It is to prevent cases where strong players will only target weak ones.

Despite being an Individual competition, the match had three different categories. The Regional All Rounder Rank. The Regional Class Rank. The Regional Sub-Class Rank.

The All Rounder ranking system judged players by their strength from all regions of all classes.

The Class Ranking system had 6 different ranking boards based on the player's class type. There were a total of 6 boards, that is the Warrior, Knight, Hunter, Thief, Spellcaster, and Priest.

Lastly, the Sub-Class ranking board was a more specific ranking system. It would be divided into Guardian, Berserker, Sacred Knight, Templar, Beastmaster, Sniper, Pyromancer, Cryomancer, Priest, Assassin, and Bandit.

The rules of being listed on the board were simple. Every 10 alternate days, players who have participated in 10 matches will have their scores calculated and ranked. If players have joined less than 10 matches, the score they had collected would be voided. The ranking system refreshes every 10 days; hence, players would have to repeatedly battle to maintain their rank. If players do not continue their streak, they would have all their points reset to zero.

All players can check their own ranking on all the boards. However, each board public display would only display the top 100 players while players below rank 100 would be omitted. Naturally, players that would be enlisted in the ranking boards would be the regional pros! If any of the players that were enlisted on the board were not in a guild or perhaps not in a strong guild, they would automatically be a large bait for hungry sharks, big guilds like Imperial Sky or The Myth.

Right then, the system had brought a massive positive change to the gaming community. Instead of asking for their equipment, they would ask for your ranking. Players would not care about equipment since they could be bought or farmed easily. The real deal was the ranking system, since it all depended on your own capabilities. As such, guilds started using this method to set a minimum requirement for recruitment.

Besides the Regional Ranking boards, there was another ranking system. It was called the World Ranking board. In this golden board, only the top 20 regional players could register themselves to fight. The world ranking system shared the same rule and regulation as any other ranking system. Again, they would have to fight 10 matches in 10 days to have their name enlisted on the Global Ranking Board.

Since there were 8 Regions in the entire world, only 160 players could participate in the Global ranking board. There are limited by how many players from a single region could be enlisted in the Global ranking. Hence, there would be cases such as the top 40 ranks being dominated by only one region. If that is to happen, it would bring glory and pride to the nation! Hence, countless players

would be willing to walk through the valley of shadow and death just to be enlisted in the Global ranking board. It was the ultimate certification a man can accept!

Zhang Yang had no intention of joining the ranking board since he felt like it was fictitious. Even if he takes the number 1 position in the Global Ranking system, what good would it be for him? Right then, he was the guild master of the world strongest guild, while also being the leader of the world strongest Battle Team. He owns two Territories! Money, Fame, Equipment, even babes, all that he could ask for are already his. So why bother with the trouble?

After 10 days, all ranking boards would be refreshed to display the first few pioneers. However, most of the "real" players shared the same view with Zhang Yang and did not participate in the fight. Hence, when the first Ranking Board was put up, there were plenty of random players. All of them were still familiar names and had appeared once or twice in the forums. Still, the top ten players in the list were still the usual strong such as One Sword Stroke, Sword of Light, Death Arbiter, and even the little brat!

Wei Yan Er did well. She had fought hard and was enlisted in the China's Regional Sub-Class Berserker Ranking list as Rank 1. She was also ranked 1 in the Regional Warrior Ranking list, and China's All Rounder rank 1.

The only reason she could be in the first place was because players like Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu had not participated in the ranking competition. Another reason was that there were no restrictions to skills. She had literally used her Transformation

skill at the beginning of every fight!

Every battle started with all skills, item cooldown reset to zero. Everyone would have the same equal chance to fight with all their skills ready to be used. However, when the player ends the fight, the skills' original cooldown will be set back to before they had entered the arena. The complete skill cooldown reset was made purposely by the officials to allow players to be at their best to fight for the best!

10 days after the regional ranking board had been up, all top 20 players from each region had joined the fight in the Global ranking board. As such, after 10 days, the first ranking list was published. The result was unexpected but not shocking. A large portion of the ranking board was dominated by the European players. Not only they had claimed the top 19 positions in all ranks, they had taken the top 4 positions. Unexpectedly, Sexy Wild Pussy had claimed the number 1 All Rounder Rank. As such, it could be said that the European has the upper hand in the world while the Indian (Region) had the best raiding team.

On the far end of the scale, The Japan-Korea region had performed the poorest. Amongst the top 100 ranks, they had only managed to secure the last 5 positions. Their poor performance was understandable, since Zhang Yang had taken their Territory for as long as 6 months. With the further Level deduction penalty during the Ancient Creature war, all the players in the Japan-Korea region were on average, 10 levels behind other players from all other regions.

When the new Global ranking list was published, the entire globe

was shaken. Players of Europe and India were celebrating with their great achievements and had been posting slanderous, and provoking posts in the forum to incite disdain. As the war of words went on between regional players, the ranking system which was used to judge the level of a player had become a marker of regional strength.

Since the situation had morphed into a global problem, Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and the other true professionals had to enter the ranking competition or they might be deemed as traitors of the nation. With great power comes great responsibility.

Hence, almost all strong players from all region who did not wish to enter the useless squabble were forced to join in. As such, the previous ranking list was refreshed, removing all the "normies" from the list and replacing them with the real deal.

The 10 matches required was just the lowest requirement. Stronger players could keep on going if they wanted to. Since consecutive wins will accumulate more points and as the points accumulate, the challengers will be harder and harder.

As such, the more points the opponent has, the more points you will obtain when you win the match. However, there is a limit to it. 3000 points would be the limit. After a player has obtained points surpassing the 3,000 threshold, they will not obtain any bonus points even if the opponent has more points than you. All in all, the beginning journey will be slow, while the speed will increase in the middle ranks, and will be slowed down immensely when you reach the top ranks.

Everyone will have 1,000 points at the start. Wei Yan Er, who was ranked at the first place in China had accumulated a total of 4,208 points. At that point, if she fights and wins a round against China's second-best player, she will only gain 4 or 5 points. On the other hand, if she loses the match, she will lose more than 20 points!

That was why Wei Yan Er had only insisted on playing 10 matches in 10 days.

Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and Han Ying Xue had spent a day to fight a total of 13 rounds. They had accumulated more than 2,500 points in one shot. It was rather fast and easy for them. Each time they entered the arena, they would nonchalantly use their Transformation skill and kill the opponent with relative ease. If the player is a C class Inheritance holder, defeating them would be a matter of seconds.

After 2 days, everyone had accumulated more than 3,000 points. From there on, the points accumulation speed had started to grow slower.

However, Zhang Yang had no intention of snagging the first position. Let the little brat have the glory. Zhang Yang only wanted to obtain the top 20 rankings to allow himself to enter the Global ranking board.

After the 30th days, all ranking boards were refreshed and Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, and other S class Inheritance players had easily positioned themselves in the China Regional All Rounder top 20 positions. Zhang Yang was ranked 18th, Sun Xin Yu was ranked 11th, and Han Ying Xue was ranked 15th. All three of

them had gained the qualifications to enter the Global Ranking All Rounder competition.

# Chapter 638: War of Nations

---

There were many strong players who had participated in the Global Ranking competition. However, strong or weak, was an abstract value. Even during the first ladder climbing phase, the enemies that Zhang Yang faced were B class Inheritance players. When a B class Inheritance player meets an S class player, the result would be likely one-sided. An intense battle is unavoidable when two sides use their Transformation skills. However, Zhang Yang stood undefeated.

After several more fights, Zhang Yang collected enough points and met Sun Xin Yu in the random roll player assignment. It was inevitable since she too was climbing up the ladder.

Sun Xin Yu smirked when she saw that Zhang Yang was her opponent. Being a hard-headed woman, she would not let Zhang Yang defeat her easily. The two burst out with their Transformation skills and eloped to another world in an intense fight. Unlike normal PvP arenas where players could join the room to spectate the fight, ranking battles are held in private arenas. The most intense battle between the two strongest players in the world could not be seen. In the end, Zhang Yang won the battle, even though there were several times when he almost got his head lopped off.

Sun Xin Yu took the defeat proudly and bade Zhang Yang farewell. Zhang Yang had admitted to himself that perhaps the only player that could defeat him was Sun Xin Yu. That would place Sun Xin Yu as the second-best player in the world. Thus, Sun Xin Yu's true rival was only Zhang Yang and Zhang Yang alone. The other players around were nothing but scrap that sullied the



ground before her. After several more rounds, Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu were matched with each other again. Zhang Yang nodded his head with satisfaction. Only by improving herself intensely would she be gaining ranks to fight him again.

There were only 160 players that could fight in the Global Ranking battle. With that number, it was hard to fight a matched rank. There were times that Zhang Yang would have to wait for more than 30 minutes just to be matched with someone. As the rank goes higher, it would take a longer time to find a match. Hence, the speed of Zhang Yang collecting more points had become extremely slow.

However, unlike many other match-making games, 'God's Miracle' allows players to roam around the world to fight monsters while waiting for the system to find a match. When the system finds an opponent, the system will teleport both players to the battle arena. Once the match ends, the player will be sent back to where they were before. Hence, it was a good time to train. Naturally, no one in their right mind would apply for a match and fight a boss. When the system forcefully teleports the player away in the middle of a boss fight, it would be extremely inconvenient for the player's teammates. However, after several match-making sessions, players themselves would get the hang of it. They would know how long would the system take to find a match. By then, if a player knows that they have enough time, they would go ahead and fight a boss, depending on the situation.

5 days after Zhang Yang joined the Global ranking battle, he had reached the top 20 ranks. From there on, the players he was matched with were all A class Inheritance holders. Naturally, the fights intensity was tweaked up by a notch. However, it was not

much trouble for Zhang Yang. If he felt a possibility of him losing, he would just activate the Phoenix's Transformation skill and own the player! The combination of both Zhang Yang and the Phoenix was the firepower of an S class and B class Inheritance in a single character! In a 1v1 fight, perhaps no one could fight him.

A few more days later, Zhang Yang's undefeated killing streak had players dubbed him as the "Inhuman", or even "Devil's Incarnate". On the other hand, Fatty Han had been relying on the Phoenix's strength to defeat his foes. However, the Phoenix itself was not overtly strong. Its strength could only be used to a certain extent when Fatty Han has no PvP skills. As a result, Fatty Han had only managed to hug the Phoenix's legs up till the top 60 ranks. Any higher and Fatty Han would face a little too much trouble. He might have the firepower of a cannon when he and the Phoenix use their Transformation skills, but his skills were so bad that even though he was steering the cannons, the man could not aim properly to save his own life!

Although the system had written the words "fair" and "equal" in the patch notes when the officials launch the individual ranking system, it was, in fact, unfair and broken in many ways. The most prominent fact was the cooldown reset for all skills. Players could buy themselves a ton of powerful skills and used them in the fight since cooldown was not a concern for them. It was not fair in a way that poor player or players without proper support could not properly gauge their skills. It was not a good way of gauging a player's ability. Despite the bold fact, many players did not care about it. In their own opinion, it would be a thrilling fight when all skills could be used immediately!

10 days after the first rank match, Zhang Yang had successfully

planted his feet in the first place in the Global All Rounder ranking board. Almost everyone, especially those who were not from China, felt it extremely odd when the Global All Rounder Champion is ranked 17th in China's All Rounder Rank, 6th in the China Warrior Rank, and 3rd in the China Guardian Rank.

Usually, when a player is a Global Champion, he should be the champion for all the other ranks, including his own Region. However, Zhang Yang had purposely kept himself lower in all of the Regional ranks. If others wanted to challenge him, they would have to start from the 18th rank! Everyone in China understood that Zhang Yang does not want to fight for fame in his own nation. However, understanding and looking at the results are two different things. How could a person be a Global Champion when he is only ranked 17th in his own nation?!

Once the ranking board was released to the public, nobody could say a word...

When the ranking boards were refreshed, Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and Han Ying Xue – the real professional players had been enlisted, replacing all the previous winners. This time, it was China who dominated the Global Ranking list. The first and second places were taken by Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu respectively. All in all, there were a total of 18 players from China who had been enlisted in the top 100 global players. The previous dominators, the Europeans had been pushed down to only 15 players. On the other hand, the boastful India Region was being pushed to the third. Their pride was completely extinguished. Hourglass Figure was pushed down to the third place, lacking only 14 points to the second place. Perhaps, even Han Ying Xue, who was ranked 4th could defeat her in the next Global Ranking list.

Naturally, the Japan-Korea region was still the weakest amongst all other regions. Previous, they had 5 players in the Global Ranking list. After the second refresh, they were shortened down by 4 players. Out of the 4, their best player was ranked at 46th!

With Zhang Yang emerging in the Global Ranks, the Japanese and Korean player had reminisced about the cruel past and were enraged. Just like that, they started a Nation War, with the intention of sacking Morning Town and entering China Region via the Ten Barren Sea portal and kill their way in.

The officials had revamped the Nation War system and added a reward and penalty. The attacker can issue a declaration of war and attack any major city. As such, the attacker's victory will be rewarded with all players Level +1 while the loser will receive a Level -1 penalty. The penalty for destroying one city will be the same as destroying all eight cities. However, the more cities destroyed, the more Honor points will be awarded to the attackers. Honor points can be used to exchange non-tradable equipment and items. It was not a good way to earn a fortune via Honor points.

A Nation War can be declared once every 30 real-time days. During the cooldown period, any city raiding would not be registered as a Nation War; no rewards will be given even if the attackers manage to kill all eight major cities in the entire Region.

The Nation War system was a little rigged. The defender would not receive any rewards for a successful defense. On the other hand, the attacker's side – the one that calls for the Nation War, will not receive any penalty for losing. The system was made that

way to encourage players to start a world war as frequent as possible. Staying passive in the shadow would do no good.

Ever since Japan-Korea Region players had successfully retaken their own Territory in the Chaos Realm, they were at great enmity between the China players. One thinks that the world belongs to them, while the other thinks that the universe belongs to everyone. It could be said that players were extremely emotional and they were not thinking straight when they started the war.

There were conflicts between China and Japan-Korea region before, but the intensity of those wars was not too great. The most intense war that ever occurred was when Japan-Korea region players had charged into the China's Ten Barren Sea. It was not considered to be an all-out war since the number of participating players were less than Level 100 and were not up to the required number. However, the most recent Nation War had more than 50 million Level 100+ players! It was more than enough to meet the requirements of a Nation-wide War.

On the 10th day of Spring of the month of March, Japan-Korea region player had initiated 'God's Miracle's' first ever Nation War. With 40 million players, they took down Morning Town easily, destroying the town's portal with ease which caused many players to be unable to teleport to the place.

After Morning Town was destroyed, Japan-Korea had positioned 10 million players to block the entrance to the Ten Barren Sea, in case reinforcements from Chaos Realm came to help. The remaining 30 million players then rushed into the China region in formation to destroy cities to wipe their slate clean of shame.

The news of the war spread like wildfire to all China's player's ears. No matter what they were doing, be it training, raiding a dungeon, or banging someone's brain out in bed, all players took the news to heart and vowed for revenge.

Zhang Yang, Snow Seeker, One Sword Stroke, and other guild masters that were on amicable terms with each other sat down to have a serious discussion. After a quick meeting, everyone decided to dispatch a large portion of their guild member to attack Morning Town and retake the Territory. All players with Flying Mounts were summoned back, not to provide reinforcements, but to attack Winst Castle and attack Japan-Korea region directly at their major city.

By then, even though Japan-Korea region had more than 40 million players attacking China, only 1% of them had flying mounts. Their progress was slow. On the hand, they had also sortied their higher-Level players to attack as well, leaving most of their major cities empty and exposed to invaders. Even though there were many players lingering around the place, they were all but lower level players who were crushed instantly.

Zhang Yang assembled his troops, taking all players with flying mounts with him and left the remaining forces on the ground to meet the oncoming players. By the looks of it, before the Japan-Korea could reach their major city, Zhang Yang would have reached their major city first.

10 of China's elites of the elites guilds had grouped up together in a hidden valley between mountains, 30 kilometers outside of Winst

Castle. All of them had Flying Mounts, hence, the defenses of Winst Castle had little to no effect on them. On the other hand, they were all flying at the highest altitude possible for them where not a single player in Japan-Korea region could spot them. It was possible to spot them in the sky, but that requires a player to look into the sky with clear intent and squint their eyes hard. The other way of spotting them was if other flying players happened to bump into them. However, literally, all players with flying mounts were sortied to attack China.

Since the Nation War was started without warning, there was no strategy to properly counter their attack. There were only around 3,500 players, although they were the strongest of the strongest around China, and as many as 1,500 C class Inheritance holders, not everyone had their Transformation ready to be used.

"How do we fight when there are only so few of us?" asked many guild masters.

Zhang Yang took the commander position and explained, "There's no need to kill players to win a city raid. As long as we can kill the high ruler of the city, it's our victory. During a city raid, the ruler's level is not fixed at a certain level. The Level of the ruler will be the average level of all players within the city, +30 Levels. From my calculations, I think the boss should be Level 145. It should be a Mythical tier with around 500 million HP. We'll gather 20 players with the strongest class Inheritances and attack the main target. On average, each of our DPS should be 100,000, 20 of us should be 2 million DPS."

Everyone listened with their full concentration while Zhang

Yang continued. "It's really that simple. All we have to do is to attack the palace. 20 of us will take 5 minutes to fight the boss while the rest of us will guard the entrance. After the boss is dead, we will retreat. Any questions?"

Everyone could not believe what Zhang Yang had just explained. It was too simple!

The truth? They were more than capable to complete the task. Flying mounts granted them the ability to skip most of the defensive formation and directly attack the palace. However, there was one more threat. The Dragon Riders in the major cities. They would require luck to ambush the palace from the sky. After all, the Elite tier Dragon Riders do not behave like their level. In fact, their difficulty could be greater than the ruler in the palace! If everyone is preoccupied by the Dragon Riders, it would be a complete waste of time that might lead to failure.

"There's only over 3,000 of us. There's no way in but to ambush." Sword of Light agreed with Zhang Yang. "Time waits for no man. Let's get going."

All guild masters nodded and informed their own guilds about the strategy. With Zhang Yang taking the lead, all players soared to the sky and hastily went over Winst Castle, undetected and entered the portal that led to the Japan-Korea region.

"GO GO GO! DON'T STOP!" Zhang Yang cried. With great speed and silence, everyone made sure their mounts made no noise as they entered the first major city of the Japan-Korea region, Hansung Castle.



On the other side of the world, news was relayed to Zhang Yang about the enemy who were making their way towards the Level 80 maps. Their target was Emerald City. In truth, they wanted to target White Jade Castle because of their hatred for Lone Desert Smoke and Zhang Yang. White Jade Castle was the main city of Lone Desert Smoke. However, they had changed their target because they knew about Queen Serena, the god-like entity resides within the castle. It would be suicidal to launch an attack.

Unlike the incoming enemies, Zhang Yang assault party had flying mounts. They were much faster than the enemy. In just 4 hours, they had entered the airspace of Hansung Castle and dived straight into the castle. One by one, the assault party dove past the magic cannons attack range and entered the interior sector, and into the royal palace.

Right then, the defensive squadron of the Hansung Castle started to retaliate against Zhang Yang. As Zhang Yang feared, the defensive force were the powerful 3,000 Dragon Riders!

Zhang Yang no choice but to implement their last resort plan. With 1,000 players deducted from the assault party, the remaining 2,000 players swept past Dragon Riders and headed straight into the royal chamber.

In reality, a ruler would be hidden from sight. However, in the game, unless there are specific events the require the king to be at some places, the ruler of the will definitely be in the royal chamber, waiting to be killed! While the Dragon Riders were preoccupied, the ground forces were left to deal with Zhang Yang's

assault team. However, no one could match the speed of the flying mounts. With little trouble, Zhang Yang's assault party managed to make their way into the royal chamber. 20 strongest players activated their Transformation skills and entered the chamber while the remaining forces stayed behind to prevent anyone, players or NPCs to intrude upon the battle.

"Assassin!"

"Protect the King!"

Behind the 24 giant pillars, a total of 48 fully armored Elite tier soldiers, with ridiculously high levels, came out and attacked Zhang Yang's party.

"Take down the guards first!"

A small part of the 20-man party split off and drew the attention of the guards, allowing the remaining players to directly attack the king.

Even though they were China's strongest attacking squad, the number of players were just too little. 3,500 players were not enough to fight against an army of NPC soldiers of a major city. However, all players had placed their unrelenting faith in Zhang Yang's plan. Rush in, attack, and run! With no seconds to spare!

Mounts were disabled in an interior environment; hence all flying mounts were forcefully disembarked from their masters.

Players like Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and Wei Yan Er still possessed flight capabilities for their Inheritance Transformations granted them wings.

Shush! Shush!

All unoccupied players rushed towards the boss and attacked with all their might. 20 players are not exactly a crowd, but they were still the best among the best. Besides Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and Han Ying Xue, the rest of the 10 players were all A class Inheritance holders, and 7 players were B class Inheritance holders. Fatty Han and Zhang Yang had the Phoenix pets, dealing particular high damage.

# Chapter 639: Game of Thrones

---

[McLaren Artilos, the King of Hansung Kingdom] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 144

HP: 1,000,000,000

Defense: 9,410

Melee Attack: 70, 092 – 90,092

Skills:

[Great Destructor]: Lays down a powerful strike to destroy the land. Deals 100% melee attack to all targets attacking the caster.

[Heavy Bash]: Bashes a target and deals 150% melee physical attack. Knocks a target back and reduces the aggro value held by the target.

[Constitution]: Restore 2% HP every 30 seconds. Cannot be affected by any effect.

[Wrath of a King]: If the battle was prolonged to 10 minutes. McLaren will be enraged and summons all his guards to destroy all enemies.

Note: The ruler of Hansung Kingdom. Despite his age, the man is powerful. He was a war general when he was younger and carried the skills of war to his old age.

"Zhan Yu! WTF dude! You said 400,000,000! The boss has 1,000,000,000 HP!" Sword of Light gasped.

Zhang Yang merely laughed. "In that case, let's just try to make it within 10 minutes!"

Zhang Yang had already activated both his and the Phoenix's Transformation skill. The combination of the two god-like entity was not something a regular player could comprehend!

Zhang Yang led the assault party towards the King. As they approached the royal highness, the older man merely raised his head and glared at Zhang Yang. When he noticed the White Jade Empire emblem on their character's uniform, the King bellowed.

"White Jade Empire? Which backwater country did you come from! How dare you call yourself an empire!?"

Zhang Yang could not care less about the boss for time was not a luxury he possessed. He jumped towards the boss and threw out the first attack.

"Pesky rodent! You dare lay a hand on me!?" McLaren roared. Being as old as rock, the King moved as fast as an athlete on

steroids! With quick movements of his hand, the King grabbed hold of the blade between his fingers. Although he had still taken the damage from the sword, he now prevented Zhang Yang from moving.

Zhang Yang grunted in annoyance. With the weight of the world, Zhang Yang tugged his sword out and managed to pull his sword out. However, it was not because of Zhang Yang's own strength, the King had purposely loosened his grip on the blade. With a free hand, the King hurled a large battle hammer towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang saw the attack coming instinctively and raised his shield up.

WHAM!

With a powerful clank, Zhang Yang was able to negate the damage. However, the attack did not stop there. Instead, Zhang Yang was sent flying like a cannonball. His entire character flew into a wall, making a large hole in it.

It was not a normal attack. It was {Heavy Bash}.

"Puny warrior! Hmph!" The King scorned and turned to his next target, Sun Xin Yu. Unfortunately for her, Sun Xin Yu did not possess any damage blocking skills. With another quick swing of the hammer, Sun Xin Yu was sent flying and landed next to Zhang Yang on the same wall. However, unlike Zhang Yang who stood back up more or less unscathed, Sun Xin Yu coughed out a pool of blood.

Zhang Yang helped Sun Xin Yu back to her feet and quickly made his way towards the boss.

From the previous attack, Zhang Yang understood that the skill only has a cooldown of 5 seconds. Its effect is to prevent a tank from maintaining a solid aggro on the boss, allowing him to deal equal, devastating damage to all players around! If Zhang Yang had not requested for everyone to activate their Transformation skills, one normal attack and one {Heavy Bash} would be enough to kill any player. At then, among the 20 players, the lowest HP among them was already at 4,000,000! In such circumstances, it was almost impossible for the boss to instant-kill a player that easily.

The battle continued on and Zhang Yang had been paying attention to the boss' skill cycle. By the time the boss lost more than 8,000,000 HP, Zhang Yang's assault party have begun to show casualties. However, the boss had only managed to kill someone when Han Ying Xue was not healing.

At that rate, the boss' DPS would be at most, 80,000. In 10 minutes he could only deal half of the party's overall HP before he falls. In theory, it sounds simple. However, the skill {Constitution} and the {Great Destructor} would be a hassle to deal with.

"Die! Outlander!" McLaren roared and lifted his hammer up high. A glimmer of dark aura gathered at the tip of the hammer. After half a second, McLaren struck the ground hard with the hammer and created a blast wave that spread all around. Marble tiles were peeled off the ground and the shockwave continued on, unhindered. All players who were within 100 meters around the

boss had taken close to 70,000 to 90,000 damage.

Luckily, the palace was huge! Most of the players who were guarding the entrance were not affected by it. Only the 20 strongest players in China had taken the skill damage.

"Die in the ashes of despair, regret the day you were born!" McLaren laughed maniacally and stuck another {Great Destructor}.

The blast wave spread further outward and broke the pillar that was supporting the royal chambers. The grand chamber of the King was destroyed and turned into rubble. Several broken water pipes started gushing, causing a minor flooding in the chamber.

As everyone took a great deal of damage constantly, Han Ying Xue's superior healing powers was greatly brought to light. After activating the Milkmaid Deity's Transformation skill, she was now the epitome of healing! Even though 20 players were taking some serious damage, Han Ying Xue had no problem squirting all her "milk," restoring everyone's HP back up to the green zone.

Everyone had more than 4,000,000 HP. It was a level where the boss could not cause serious harm. It was also a good buffer for Han Ying Xue to heal everyone overtime with just the percentage-based{Regeneration}.

In a situation where the boss is an AoE attack berserker type, players with low HP would only be committing suicide. Hence, not a single Battle Companion had been summoned, fearing that they will immediately die after being summoned. Only Zhang Yang and



Fatty Han could summon their pets to do individual damage. With 22 attackers, the overall DPS was extremely powerful. Zhang Yang was far stronger than anyone else in the party. After gaining more than 200,000 DPS in his God of War Transformation, Zhang Yang attacks had generated a massive amount of aggro on the boss. Even after taking several hits of {Heavy Bash} which was supposed to have "deleted" all of Zhang Yang's aggro, the boss would still aim his attacks at Zhang Yang.

"We have to be quicker now! More NPCs and Japanese and Korean players are coming at us. We have already lost many players and if the situation gets any worse, we might lose this war!" Snow Seeker shouted in the public channel. Due to the limitations of the party size, guild master who leads a large party had to rely on the public channel to communicate with their members.

"No problem! 5 more minutes, and we'll be done with the boss!" Zhang Yang replied.

"Heh. What makes you think you could kill the boss in 5 minutes?"

Zhang Yang pretended to not hear her reply. Instead, he cast a {God of War Devastation} and dealt "-603,922!". That was his reply.

"I will crush you to smithereens!" Just as Zhang Yang was about to lose the aggro hold on the boss, the powerful 600,000 damage had forced the boss to turn back towards Zhang Yang in the nick of time. Zhang Yang continued his normal attacks on the boss and felt a sudden glowing heat in his right palm.

{Rising Dragon Strike}!

‘-2,028,970!’

"GRAAH!"

It was the only attack that was able to make the boss groan in pain. The skill was powerful and vast enough that even several surviving Elite tier soldiers in the chamber had taken the same amount of damage. However, because the Elite tier guards had Levels that were too high for Zhang Yang to even see, the damage they took was slightly affected.

"D\*mn you all!" McLaren bellowed. He used {Heavy Bash} on Zhang Yang again. Even after he was sent flying away, the boss still chased after him instead of changing targets! The skill was supposed to prevent that very thing from happening. Under normal circumstances, the boss would automatically switch to a new target in the aggro list after using the skill. Zhang Yang had generated so much aggro that even after the skill is used, Zhang Yang still remained first on the boss' aggro list.

"Strong..." Snow Seeker muttered.

No one in the field then was a greenhorn in battle. Even though they could not observe the damage Zhang Yang dealt on the boss, they could gauge out the total damage dealt by him was far superior to anyone present in the battle.

Everyone knew about Zhang Yang owning an S class Inheritance. However, the fact that the Phoenix could transform was supposedly still a secret. Since Zhang Yang had been fighting in the ranking battles for quite some time, many would have already found out about the Phoenix's ability. Although the information about the Phoenix was not spread, there was still the loudmouth Fatty Han who would boast his skills and the Phoenix pet to the world.

Still, even if they knew about the Phoenix's power, what could they do surpass Zhang Yang?

One Sword Stroke, Greensleeves Prince, and many other guild masters felt immense grievance, for it was almost impossible for them to compete with Zhang Yang.

The battle continued on. Even though the boss had a powerful HP regeneration skill, the boss could not recover as much HP as it lost. In no time at all, the boss was left with 20% HP.

It was time for {Killing Cleave}. Every warrior present in the field activated their attack boosting skills and laid down the final waves of attack. Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er had activated {Indiscriminate} and struck the boss using {Killing Cleave} at full Rage!

‘-1,668,840!’

Although the damage dealt was not as powerful as {Rising Dragon

Strike}, it was still powerful enough, as all attacks during the activation of {Indiscriminate} will be a Critical hit. If a {Rising Dragon Strike} was proc'd then, the damage dealt would reach as high as 4,000,000!

"Lowly peasants! Die!" McLaren was losing his Kingly composure.

Zhang Yang laughed. "If a King wants his legions dead, his legions would have to comply. But you are not my king! Haha! If you call for my death, I'll have your head instead!"

With a quick flick of his fingers, Zhang Yang cast {Glare of the Death God}. Dark clouds formed on the boss' character and assembled into a large grinning skull!

‘-10,000,000!’

‘-10,000,000!’

‘-10,000,000!’

...

1% of the boss's 1,000,000,000 HP was 10,000,000! All hits that were required to proc the damage was quickly triggered, with all 22 attackers present!

"NO! NO! THIS CANNOT BE!" The King screamed and shouted

disgruntledly.

It only took 4 seconds to proc all hits of the {Glare of the Death God}. As such, the boss had less than 4% HP left!

Everyone's eyes glinted with intense focus. They knew that it was almost time to loot the rewards. A Mythical tier boss such as McLaren would surely drop a few Mythical tier equipment! That's not all, this boss was considered as an open-world boss! They would only respawn once every month! Hence, the number of Mythical tier equipment circling around the market was extremely scarce!

3%...2%...1%...

Everyone made preparation and slowed down on their attacks. Right then, everyone had their own parties even though they were all under the command of Zhang Yang. Each of them had already laid an attack on the boss, hence, everyone had the "right" to loot!

0%!

McLaren groaned in great pain before dropping to the ground, dead.

# Chapter 640: The Curtains Fall Perfectly

---

The moment the boss fell, all China players received a system notification. The King of Hansung Kingdom has been killed and everyone has gained a Level for free. On the other hand, the players of Japan-Korea region too had received a notification, for their King has been slain, everyone would have one Level deducted!

Zhang Yang snickered. "WTF!?" was probably the phrase that every player in Japan-Korea region had blasted out in unison.

They had been planning this for a few days and had even sortied all the strongest players of guilds, big and small from all over Japan and Korea. Only then were they capable of sending more than 40,000,000 players to conquer all major cities in China!

How could they have known that the Chinese players would send only 3,000 players to take down a kingdom before they could! Right then, the only thing they could do to makes things even would be to take down a Kingdom.

Things have taken a turn for the worse, yet the army of Japan-Korea players was still unable to see the silhouette of Emerald Kingdom! It was the worst situation they had been in since the Ancient Creature invasion.

When the sudden negativity struck everyone, their morale started to waver. It was not clear to what extent would the players work together.

...

When McLaren fell, Zhang Yang, Greensleeve Prince, One Sword Stroke, Snow Seeker, and many other pairs of hands had swooped in to grab whatever there is to grab. McLaren would have an array of luxurious drops such as skill books, Mythical or even Ethereal tier equipment! Even though the number of drops would definitely be plenty for a party, it was not enough to share amongst a party of 20 players! Within a microsecond, all of the loot was gone.

Zhang Yang checked his inventory and found out that he had only picked up a skill book. The man giggled awkwardly as he was impressed by the speed of the other guild masters. Little did he know that the other guild masters were thinking the same thing. After all, the item he obtained was a skill book! Even the best equipment then would eventually be discarded soon after, but a skill will be carried until the end of the game!

Now that the boss was killed and the loot was distributed. Everyone turned to Zhang Yang.

"Well, time to skip town, then!" said Zhang Yang with a grin.

If they had continued to stay there, the angry NPC and players of Japan and Korea would swarm them by the 100 of millions!

Everyone laughed at his nonchalant joke and flew towards the exit of the palace. All of the player's Transformation skills were still active, hence, after they exited the royal chamber, they killed

a good number of players along the way. With Zhang Yang spearheading the exodus route, 19 players followed him behind, leaving a stretch of dead bodies in their wake. Although everyone had flying mounts, it was not as mobile as flying with their own two wings.

After 10 minutes of running, Zhang Yang and his assault party managed to escape the place with NPCs turning around to return to their original posts. The remaining players could not do anything without the NPC's help and turned tail and run as well. A large portion of the high leveled players had been sortied to attack Emerald Kingdom, hence, the number of strong players remaining in their own region were too scarce to fight Zhang Yang assault party. They could at least put up a resistance against the incoming China players with the help of the Dragon Knights. However, when the NPCs returned to their original posts, the players themselves would not stand a chance.

Even though Zhang Yang and the main attack force had left the region, there were still more than a thousand players remaining in the region. They were stuck there since they had not means of reviving themselves. The graveyard was guarded closely and their bodies in the main cities were guarded by players. They had no choice but to wait until the heat dies down when people start to lose their interest in guarding and the coast is clear.

Still, Zhang Yang needed to fix Morning Town up.

Because none of them had bound their [Teleportation Scrolls] to any town or city, they had traveled on their own. As they flew through the airspace, players had taken the chance to review the



items they had looted. Previously, all they cared about was to get their hands on any item there is and escape as soon as possible.

Zhang Yang himself included, 5 Lone Desert Smoke members had participated in the boss fight. However, only Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu had managed to haul an item each. Still, right then, gaining a Level was more important than anything else. To be able to gain a Level as a reward is worth all the hassle. However, the Level rewards was still pending. If they fail to guard Emerald Kingdom from being taken over, it would be for naught.

Sun Xin Yu had obtained a shield that was as black as charcoal. Its shape was triangular with pointy edges. Zhang Yang was overjoyed. It was made clear that the current hottest item on sale in the market were tank items! As long as a party's tank is strong, the party would not have much trouble in hunting strong bosses! A shield was, after all, a tank's most powerful and core equipment!

[Dragon Scale Refined Iron Shield] (Ethereal, Shield)

Defense: +7560

Vitality: +7260

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 14,520.

Equip: Absorbs 1,923 damage on attack.

Equip: With every successful {Block}, deals Holy damage to the

target equivalent to 70% of the user's Defense value.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 140

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Note: A mighty shield that was made with the Black Dragon's Scale. Its integrity is nothing like you have ever seen! The most sought-after Shield for Guardian and Defender!

The shield had not yet been Identified, yet the stats were already stronger than the one that Zhang Yang was wearing! As expected of an Ethereal Level 140 Shield!

Without saying anything, Sun Xin Yu tossed the shield to Zhang Yang to get some "lovey-dovey" points. Zhang Yang did not even care to Identify the shield and quickly equipped it. Naturally, the little brat was there to witness that "unfairness". Hence, after being teased by the little girl, Zhang Yang took out the skill book that he had looted and showed it to her.

[Skill Book: Summon Phantasm]

Use: Teaches you the skill {Summon Phantasm}

Class Requirement: Priest, Knight, Spellcaster.

Level Requirement: 100

No one, not even Zhang Yang had heard of the skill before. To play it fair as the little girl demanded, Zhang Yang decided to give the skill book out via the Roll the Dice method.

In the end, the skill book was won over by a Spellcaster from the secondary raiding party called "Ghost Knows". Right after he obtained the skill book, the player immediately learned it and posted the skill with a grin on his face.

[Summon Phantasm]: Forms a binding covenant with the devils and summons a Phantasm to aid you in battle. The summoned Phantasm is immune to all attacks and will survive for only 30 seconds per instance. After returning to the underworld, the Phantasm will convert his power and restore your MP based on the total damage it had dealt. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

With roughly a full set of Level 120 Ethereal tier equipment, a Spellcaster should have more than 70,000 MP. In 30 seconds, 70,000 damage is something that a novice could do. The skill was practically a full MP restoration skill! It was an OP skill!

If the Phantasm could not deal higher damage in return, it could at least help increase the caster's DPS for a short time! Since the cooldown was only 30 minutes, the skill could be used in all boss fight! If the fight is dragged on any longer, it would be an extremely powerful support skill! It could be used in the Battle Team Professional League fights as well!

When they came, they came with the sound of the shadow. But when they left, they left with the vigor of a riot! Over 2,000 players, including Zhang Yang had flown gallantly towards the Winst Castle and destroyed the castle's Teleportation Point to disrupt the travel of the Japan-Korea region players.

Since they had already reduced Morning Town into ashes, Zhang Yang did not reserve his anger and unleashed might and fury upon Winst Castle. After destroying the Castle, the assault party only returned to Morning Town, or what it once was. The battle was still going on at its peak. Even though the defending army, the China players had the advantage of numbers, they had been dragging the battle for quite some time due to the strategic location of Morning Town. Right then, the China players were attacking to reclaim their territory while the Japan-Korea region players were defending the place. In such situation, the defending party would have the territorial advantage. Hence, the drag.

Zhang Yang and his merry assault party had already timed out of their Transformation skill. Even though they were top tiered players from China, having 3,000 players against millions of players was not something that Zhang Yang would go for. If their Transformation skills were still active, they could easily take down millions of players with no problem. Right then, they could only form a pincer attack and target the little guys and slowly work their way up to the stronger ones. Although it was safe, it was not very effective.

On the enemy's side, they had received words of Zhang Yang attacking strategy. As a result, they had split themselves apart from the war and gathered many players who possessed flying

mounts. They had tried to mimic Zhang Yang strategy and directly assault Emerald Kingdom's ruler.

Since all eight kingdoms were unified under the rule of Queen Serena, all castle in all major cities were occupied by a Steward.

The task at hand was to take back Morning Town from the defenders before they can reach Emerald Kingdom. If they succeed, they could transport a large number of players instantly via the Teleportation Point and defend against the enemy in Emerald Kingdom.

Although Zhang Yang had already considered the party of 3,000 players that he was leading not all too overwhelming, they still managed to push forward the progress of taking back Morning Town. At most, in 20 minutes time, Zhang Yang would have fully retaken Morning Town.

By then, the assault party of Japan-Korea region player had just arrived at the castle of Emerald Kingdom and had started their assault on the Steward in the castle.

The assault party thought that they were one step ahead of China players, but in truth, China players were seven steps ahead of them. Before the Japan-Korea players had even reached the outskirts of the castle walls, a large number of players had already positioned themselves in a defensive formation around the castle entrance. Even though there were large portions of players who could not care less about the war, some of them had returned to the castle to provide reinforcements.

Right then, it's all about a contest of speed.

The Japanese and Korean players who were still defending Morning Town had gone mental. With every bit of HP left, they stood resilient to the attacks of Zhang Yang and his party. Zhang Yang knew that they were buying time for their comrades in Emerald Kingdom and will do anything to extend their stay there. Zhang Yang had no choice but to switch his attack pattern to a full on suicide squad style to forcefully take back the territory in order to reset the Teleportation point and provide reinforcements to Emerald Kingdom!

"Guild master, the Steward has 89% HP left!"

...

"Guild master, the Steward has 72% HP!"

...

As the players in Emerald Kingdom kept him updated, Zhang Yang and the assault party were getting agitated. They knew they have to pick up the speed if they wanted to defend Emerald Kingdom! At last, after several more minutes, all the players inside Morning Town were killed. The first thing Zhang Yang did was restore the fallen Teleportation Points without wasting any second. Right, the portal is set. Zhang Yang was the first to enter the magical transport and appear in Emerald Kingdom. With haste, all players around Morning Town started to teleport to

Emerald Kingdom when the boss still had over 11% HP left.

After a brief fight, all Japan-Korea region players in Emerald Kingdom were killed, thus ending the Nation War with them successfully defending against the assault.

# Chapter 641: Gagaro's Mist

---

The Japanese and Koreans were not thinking straight when they declared a Nation War. In the end, they had it coming. Instead of toppling another kingdom, they had their own kingdom toppled first. Worst yet, not only have they failed to kill the Steward, their entire fleet of players were completely wiped out as well. Everything that happened was witnessed by the entire world.

Though China may have won both Defensive and Offensive wars, the sudden attack of Japan and Korea was a good wake up call for all the players. To prevent future attacks, they would have to increase their alertness in every Territory. Truth be told, China was lucky. However, they might not be this lucky in the next attack.

After the war ended and everyone had a good night sleep, guilds from all over China proactively donated materials to Lone Desert Smoke to rebuild Morning Town. Zhang Yang gladly accepted the materials because he knew that the players were genuinely helpful in order to protect their own Territory. Although the war was over, the enemy could still strike at any moment. Zhang Yang immediately restored Morning Town to the best that he could at that moment.

At the same time, Lone Desert Smoke had initiated a patrol programme. The patrol squads would consist of several players from different guilds from all over China. The squads were extremely large and were split into several teams, set to be stationed all over Tibanya Wasteland's main pathway. It was possible to miss out several scouts high in the sky but at the very least, the patrol team could easily detect a large army of players



coming towards their direction. Morning Town could prepare their defenses before any army arrives.

Once the defenses around Morning Town was fortified, the Teleportation Point was now the main defense point. If the Teleportation Point is destroyed, all [Teleportation Scrolls] bound to the place would be ineffective. Players looking to travel to Morning Town would be greatly hindered. In the recent war, the enemy had destroyed the Teleportation Point, causing many players who were still training in the Chaos Realm to be unable to return to Morning Town. Their travel time would be lengthened greatly as they would have to travel back to the major city and use the long pathway in the Ten Barren Sea from Morning Town.

After the world's first Nation War, China players discovered many problems and loopholes that could be exploited by the enemy. Hence, each region had taken advantage of this knowledge and learned from their neighbor in order to strengthen their own regions.

...

Zhang Yang went back to town and Identified the newly acquired shield.

[Dragon Scale Refine Iron Shield] (Ethereal, Shield)

Defense: +7560

Vitality: +10372

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 20,740!

Equip: Absorbs 2,748 damage on attack.

Equip: With every successful {Block}, deals Holy damage to the target equivalent to 100% of the user's Defense value.

Level Requirement: 140

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Note: A mighty shield that was made with the Black Dragon's Scale. Its integrity is nothing like you have ever seen! The most sought-after Shield for Guardian and Defender!

After Identifying the shield, the shield stats had increased to the point where Zhang Yang was sure that it was among the top five shields in the game at the time. With the shield identified and equipped, Zhang Yang stats rose to 448,140HP with the Vitality Aura boost, 8,520 Defense, and 7,338 damage absorption. Any physical attack would have to be at least 20,000 to breach his Defenses. Magic attacks would have to be at least 17,000 to cause him damage! A true "Turtle" shell indeed! However, his sheer attack power should disqualify him from the turtle qualification, since his basic attack had reached as high as 56,268 – 61,504!

Absolute defense or absolute offence are powerful traits. If either

one of those traits exist in a player, he or she might be a little problem for the enemy. There will always be methods to countering those players. However, Zhang Yang was different. He had the best of both worlds! How could someone craft up a strategy to defeat him! Unless it was an unfair fight where he would have to face thousand of players at the same time...

Zhang Yang continued his best to be the best. There was no reason for him to stop his progress! Even though he was the best in terms of level, Equipment, Skills, and other aspects of the game, other players would surpass him if he were to slack.

It was a game after all. Losers have only one choice; to surpass the strong. The strong would have to constantly be on the edge, fearing that the weak would eventually surpass them at any moment.

A short period of time after the first Nation War, the developers had launched a patch to introduce a new map. The name of the map was called Gagaro's Mist. On the map, monsters will provide 50% additional experience points. Boss monsters were spawning like mushrooms after a rain shower on the map. However, as a preemptive warning, developers had already warned players that the monsters in the map will be aggressive. Even the normal tier monsters will be difficult to kill. Hence, players with lower tier equipment were advised to not try the map.

The important catch of the new map was that its location was kept hidden. The directional map can be found by killing Level 120 monsters or higher to obtain pieces of the map. Assemble enough pieces to form a complete map to lead the player to the new map.

Naturally, when the news was released, players were all hyped up to the search of the map. 50% experience points boost? That alone was enough to reduce 10 days of leveling duration to only 6 days! There were even high-level bosses!

A boss was extremely difficult to hunt in the explored maps. Even then, guild's would be occupying their spawn points. Those that are un-occupied will be dead after 5 minutes of spawning. For example, the stone golem boss that Zhang Yang had made use off in the past in Morning Town was now "food" for random players. Since the spawn point was so close to Morning Town, players could easily find themselves a party and defeat it in just 2 to 3 minutes.

Besides the bosses found in dungeons, open-world bosses will be extremely tough to find. The main draws of an open-world boss were the luxurious drops! Hardcore Mode dungeon bosses would never drop an equipment imbued with the Level reduction special effect! A Level 90 player may only raid a Level 90 dungeon at best, but wearing Level 110 equipment acquired from an open-world boss would make a whole difference.

Normal players were not the only ones that were agitated by the map release, Fatty Han, Wei Yan Er, and many others were rushing Zhang Yang to start searching for the map!

"Little Yang! I'm only wearing two pieces of Ethereal tier equipment. It's so annoying to not have a set! I don't even have the nerve to set foot outside the city! Do me a favor and search for the Gagalo's Mist map thingy! I want to get more Ethereal tier equips!"

cried Fatty Han as he wiped his snort off Zhang Yang's shirt.

Zhang Yang winced and slapped Fatty Han in his face. "F\*ck off! Could you at least wipe your goo off with your own shirt! As for your Ethereal equipment. I'll give you one hour. Stand by the door and snap a picture of anyone else wearing an Ethereal equipment. If you can find one player in Ethereal equipment, I'll hunt a full set of Hunter's Ethereal equipment in three days!" Zhang Yang gave his rump a good kick.

"Hehehehe." Fatty Han rolled off and Wei Yan Er replaced his spot. At first, Zhang Yang was about to continue crafting potions when Wei Yan Er stood in front of him with a smile on her face. "You know, somehow, you look exceptionally handsome today!"

"Huh? What are you talking about? I'm exceptionally handsome any day!" Zhang Yang rapped her skull. "Go and do some work if you're that free! Those who don't work, don't eat!"

"Nyehehehe. Work? Look at my equipment! I've been wearing this for years now! It's time to replace them, yes? Let's hunt for the map pieces!" said Wei Yan Er as she hugged Zhang Yang's arm, trying to play it cute.

Zhang Yang stopped in his tracks and smiled at the little girl. "If your armor is old, 99% of the world would have gladly accepted your equipment! Why don't you trade your old ones out?"

Wei Yan Er let go of his arms and sulked. Before she could pretend to do anything else, Zhang Yang closed his potion making

U.I and said, "Fine. Stop sulking about. Sigh...when will you learn to be independent? Let's go!"

The map pieces were not that simple to hunt. Although Tibanya Wasteland was huge, the number of monsters spawning was not enough to handle that many players who shared the same goal. Once a monster appears in the field, countless of attacks would land on it instantly. Zhang Yang felt a little nostalgic. The scene of which monsters would be instantly killed was exactly like the scene in the beginner's village.

Zhang Yang brought his regular team to the Land of the Flaming Rocks. It was a level 120+ map where the lowest leveled monsters were Level 120. In fact, most of the monsters here were mostly Level 130 and above. Hence, due to numerous threats around, no players under Level 120 would choose to grind there.

The difference between a Level 100 and Level 120 map were the monsters. Even though they shared the same levels, their attacks were different. In Level 100 maps, the highest-level boss would be a Mythical tier, so, the normal monsters attack would be around a Gray-Silver tier. In Level 120 maps, the highest boss tier would be an Ethereal tier, so, the normal monsters around would have attacks that are equivalent to Yellow-Gold tier.

That was one of the general knowledge among players around. That was why normal players would not want to risk their lives venturing into a Level 120+ map.

Zhang Yang spread the team out far and wide and killed as many monsters as they could. However, after a long day of killing, the

party had only managed to find 2 pieces of the map. The system had demanded for a total of 10 map pieces to form a complete map. If that was not enough to piss off players, the map pieces had numberings on them! They had to collect the first piece to the 10th piece! In three days, Zhang Yang and his merry little band had collected 17 map pieces but many of them were repetitive. They were only lacking the second piece and the 7th piece to complete the map.

Zhang Yang then contacted Snow Seeker to trade off several map pieces. In the end, Zhang Yang managed to obtain the second piece from her and the 7th piece from Sky Shaman.

[Navigation Map: Gagaro's Mist] (Usable)

Use: Opens a dimensional portal and transports you and your fellow teammates to Gagaro's Mist. The portal can only open for 5 minutes and transports a total of 10 players.

Level: 100

"Tch! What a cheapo crap! We farmed this thingy for 3 days and but it can only be used once!" said Fatty Han disgruntled.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, "Everyone, get your equipment all fixed up before we go. We must not let anything to hinder us from staying any longer!

"Understood."

Everyone went back to town and had their equipment fixed to its full Durability and stocked up on potions. After a few minutes, everyone gathered together. Zhang Yang then used the map and casted a black swirly portal. Their party entered the portal one by one and after all 10 of them pass through it, the portal disperses into countless fragments.

‘Ding! You have entered Gagaró’s Mist! You have 24 hours to stay in this map before you will be teleported out.’

‘Ding! You have received the effect: Clouded Mist! Unable to return Gagaró’s Mist within 30 days.

‘Ding! All monsters besides the boss shall have a 1 hour respawn duration!’

Everyone received the system notification right after they emerged out of the portal.

"What!? Only 24 hours!? This is absurd!" cried Endless Starlight with dismay.

"What the hell!? 30 days once? That’s like 10 days in real life!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Well, nothing to argue there. Let’s not waste any more time and start killing."



"Roger!"

Everyone followed Zhang Yang and ventured through the mysterious place. The entire space they were in was a large internal crater. From where they stood, the only visible object that they could see from afar was a large clock structure. There were long stone pathways on their left and right that all leads directly towards the central clock tower. The little girl went to the edge of the stone pathway and quickly stopped when she saw what was there. The stone pathway that the party was standing on was actually a bridge. There were a total of 12 bridges that led to the center and boiling red hot lava was right underneath them. They were quite well elevated from the lava, however, the party could still feel the intense heat radiating from below. Each bridge was at least 10km long and 20 meters wide. A few meters ahead of the party were all Spectres roaming along. The entire bridge was completely filled with them!

It was not clear where they were at, but the environment was extremely moist and steamy. The steam formed a thick smog that had blocked the sun's ray from penetrating the smog. The only light source was coming from beneath the bridge, where the glowing red lava flows.

Zhang Yang could summon the Phoenix pet out, but it could not fly. At most, the fiery bird would glide a few meters before descending downward. There was no way for either of them to travel to the other stone bridges.

Based on the direction of the clock tower. The party was in the 8 o'clock direction. The neighboring bridge were at least 5 km apart,

hence, it was not reachable.

In the world map U.I, there were four blinking dots at different positions. All of them were at least 10% away from the clock tower and Zhang Yang's party was at 0%.

"What are---" Han Ying Xue noticed the oddity and immediately realized what they were. "There are three other parties in this place!"

"There's 12 pathways but only one end...That means--!"

"The treasure lies at the end of the road! And only one party can get it!"

Everyone braced themselves for a tough battle.

The other three parties were located at the 1 o'clock, 5 o'clock, and the 11 o'clock direction. They were extremely far away and could not even be seen with the naked eye. There was no telling who they were!

Zhang Yang nodded and quickly took charge. "Don't waste any more time!"

They sprinted towards the bridge. Not far from where they appeared stood two extremely big-sized Abomination monsters. Their stomachs were ruptured and putrid-smelling green liquid was oozing out from their torn abdomens.

[Mist Abomination] (Normal, Spectre)

Level: 130

HP: 100,000

Defense: 2,280

Attack: 25,342 – 30,242

Skills:

[Decay Aura]: Deals 30,000 Natural damage to all non-Spectre beings every 3 seconds.

[Dismember]: Slices off a target's limbs and deals 150% melee physical attack. Target will be disarmed for 5 seconds.

Note: The lowest and weakest monster in Gagaro's Mist. If you cannot fight them, you best turn back and leave!

Wei Yan Er was a little too hot-headed. When she saw that the monster was only a normal tier monster, she had skimmed over the rest of the monster's stats and rushed over to attack one of them.

‘-22,334!’

The two of them shared the same aggro radius, hence, when one of them was attacked, the other Abomination turned to the little brat and cleaved her with the butcher knives in its hands, dealing high damage.

"OWWIIEE!" The little brat screamed. "Are these really normal tier monsters?! Cousin sis! Heal me!"

Zhang Yang sighed and felt that the little girl will never learn her lesson...

Zhang Yang rushed ahead and cast {Charge} on one of the monsters. He then added a {Provoke} and landed one normal attack to grab all the aggro of the other.

"Little brat! Can you at least read their properties before charging into battle!?" Zhang Yang knocked her head with the shield.

"Nishishishi!" The little girl said nothing but grinned with an innocent face.

## Chapter 642: Contest on the Bridge

---

"Well d\*mn! The monsters here are strong!" cried Lost Dream as he laid down a powerful barrage of damage on the Abomination monster.

Lost Dream was referring to its attack instead of its overall constitution. Despite having powerful skills and attack, the normal tier monster had only over 100,000 HP. It did not take long for the party to kill one and the other.

Zhang Yang nodded. "You have to be careful. The monsters are powerful inside here. I suspect that the attack power of the monsters inside will be several times more than the regular monsters you fight in the normal map. Let me tank the monsters, you guys should be able to finish their low HP in no time."

The two monsters had fallen and provided a total of 300,000 experience. It was 50% more than the monsters outside the Gagaro's Mist.

"There's nothing to fear. I'll stand at the frontier and you guys form a line behind me. Together we can push these normal tier monsters at a higher efficiency!" Zhang Yang steered the party into formation and allowed them to strike simultaneously, reaching more than 100,000 damage in one volley of attack. It would be a waste if they were all to target one monster at a time.

Zhang Yang wanted the party to increase their killing speed for there was a time limit in the place. Besides that, there were three

other parties that were technically competing with them! Even if the last prize in the clock tower was unknown to him, there was no way he would give it up to other players!

Besides Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart, the rest of the player were lined up in a straight line. Even though the monster's attacks were indeed stronger than the normal monsters, the party members were all mounted. With the increased HP limit, the two healers and three healer type Battle Companions, there was no need for them to withdraw or fall back! The only direction was forward, without stopping!

Zhang Yang took the lead and fully displayed the prowess of his thick "skin". When a monster laid down their attack, all they could deal was less than 10,000 damage to his 700,000 HP! The party did not need to worry about being attacked at all!

The party moved 300 meters forward and had already accumulated enough experience points for them to smile like they were winning a jackpot. At that moment, at the 7 o'clock bridge, a blimp appeared, indicating that a new party had entered the field.

Hundred Shots was an Engineer and had crafted binoculars for himself. The device worked just like the real thing in reality which allows players to extend their sight. Hundred Shots started surveying the new party. "It's the Land of Savages guild. I can see Hourglass Figure and a few other familiar faces."

"Hmph." Zhang Yang scoffed. "They are a little too late! Let's pick up the pace, guys. We must be the first to reach the end!"

"Hehe! That's right! That's because we are?" asked Endless Starlight hoping for a roar. However...

"Huh? What?"

"Awesome?"

"The weirdest?"

"The fattest?"

There were many replies but neither one was the answer that Endless Starlight was looking for.

The 10 men team of Land of Savages did not idle for long before they too started their raid to push forward. It seems that they too had found out the nature of the place.

In general, since there were 12 bridges in this map, a total of 12 parties could enter at a time to compete with the others. With the help of the world map, it was possible to view the progress of the other parties. Since the instance was not created as a dungeon, there were no limits as to how many parties could join. As such, there were no rules to restrict only 12 parties in the map. By which, when the 13th party joins the map, there will be a bridge carrying two parties. As such, the parties that share that share the same bridge would have to come to an agreement. They could share the loot, or they would have to fight for it. It would be likely that the

parties would have to kill one another for the right to obtain the loot. Since the bridge was small, there is not enough space to form a proper lineup formation. If two parties were to fight together, it would be extremely crowded, which will definitely slow down the pushing speed. Although it would still be faster than a party, it would never achieve the full potential of two parties.

As a conclusion, if the two parties cooperated with each other, the pushing speed would be slightly faster than the others. However, due to their cooperation with each other, the party will have lesser experience points!

There's always a trade-off!

Since the monsters in the map were all normal tier, coupled with the map's special conditions, monsters that were killed will respawn after only one hour! If the entire party is killed in the middle of pushing through, they would have to restart from the beginning!

Although the route was only 10km, the number of monsters on the bridge were uncountable. Since mounts were unable to fly in this map, the progression speed was extremely slow! Using 24 hours to make their way towards the clock tower would not be an easy task!

"Little Yang, I think we should use our Transformation skill to push forward." Fatty Han suggested. Even though their progress speed was not as slow as a turtle, it was not fast enough to look promising.



Zhang Yang shook his head. "Not yet. I know it might be awesome to kill our way in with our Transformation skill, but can you guarantee that we can push all the way to the end within the Transformation duration? What happens if the last boss at the end requires all of us to use our Transformation skills to defeat?"

"That's right. I can see that the other party did not use their Transformation skill to push, either. They should share similar thoughts," Said Hundred Shots.

"But, what if there are just endless monsters on this bridge and no bosses?" said Wei Yan Er playfully.

"Well. In that case, reserve the Transformation skill until the last 22 hours. No matter where we are on the bridge, we will use our Transformation skills. It would still be worth using our Transformation skill to spam skill normal monsters." Zhang Yang rubbed his knuckles on the girl's head. In retaliation, the little girl jumped around and snarled at Zhang Yang like an enraged kitten.

After a short period of time, a new party had appeared on the bridge at the 3 o'clock direction. Since the distance was too far for Hundred Shots to scout, they had no idea who they were. Furthermore, the communication means in the map was limited to the party only. Even if Zhang Yang posts something in the guild channel, only his party could see it.

No sooner after, more and more parties had joined in the map in the 2 o'clock and the 12 o'clock bridge. After they had pushed to

the 1km mark, a new team had joined in the map and appeared right at the opposite bridge. It was a team of North America region players. The Blood Alliance guild.

Zhang Yang was not familiar with the guild but he saw one particularly familiar name. It was Captain America.

The man had possessed the God of War Inheritance in Zhang Yang's previous life. Luckily, unlike Zhang Yang, Captain America did not know anything about that. If he does, he might summon some Norse mythology demigod to kill Zhang Yang for the thievery he had committed!

In less than one hour, all stone bridge was occupied by parties. From there on out, any more parties joining the map would occupy a bridge that already has a party. Be it cooperation or competition, the parties would have to come up with a solution fast or they will lose the race.

After Zhang Yang's party had reached the second-kilometer mark, the monsters were upgraded from normal tier to elite tier.

Instead of large, oversized Abominations, the monsters were white skeletal soldiers that were roaming around. Due to the limited space and flooding of monsters, the skeletal soldiers would bump into each other which gives out a loud, hollow sound of "Tuk".

If it was just one "tuk" sound, the party would be fine. However, the "tuk tuk" sounds were extremely frequent and rattling. It was

not something that the lighthearted could take in.

[Mist Blood Thirsty Skeleton] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 130

HP: 2,600,000

Defense: 2,280

Melee Attack: 50,274 – 54,274

Skills:

[Death Control]: Targets that have fallen to the monster will suffer from being controlled by the skeleton. Last for 5 minutes.

[Brutal Smash]: 30% chance to strike an additional attack after a successful attack.

Note: From here on out, you're facing actual threat. Although skeletal soldiers are the weakest soldier in the Spectre ranks, their attacks will take your breath away. Literally.

"ARUGH!"

A total of seven monsters rushed over to Zhang Yang and raised

their swords to attack. Zhang Yang immediately ordered the team to fall back a little. Each of these skeletal soldiers possessed attack power that could rival a Mythical boss. Even with the boosted HP via the mount, players could still be killed when they are surrounded by the monsters!

Zhang Yang took charge and took all the damage dealt by the monsters. Endless Starlight followed closely behind and rode his Black Rhino mount. Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight tanked all seven monsters to prevent any of them from attacking the DPSers.

Despite being a tank class, Endless Starlight's HP dropped ever so rapidly that Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had to immediately heal him. Zhang Yang was tanking 4 of the skeletal soldier and had a better situation than him. Worried for the poor fellow, Zhang Yang used {Provoke} and took one monster away from him and tanked a total of 5 skeletal soldiers. Zhang Yang leaped off the Phoenix and struck the ground with {Thunder Strike}. After slowing the monsters down a notch, Zhang Yang leaped on the Phoenix and kited them away. With his kiting ability, he was able to deal damage, move around, and last longer.

"Nyehehe! Pervert Starlight could not be hoped after all!" cried Wei Yan Er as she laughed.

"Wuuu! Cut me some slack. I'm a Defender. I'm stronger against magic attacks! This not my show!" said Endless Starlight as he tried to justify himself.

Everyone laughed at his retort and continued to attack. In truth, to be able to tank even two of the monsters was quite a feat in

itself! The monster did have the attack power of a Mythical tier boss! Even Zhang Yang would not dare to directly take the monster's attack!

The proper strategy would be, Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight tanked two monsters each while the rest of the monster should be handled by the players. Skills like {Frost Trap}, {Ambush}, pets skills or other immobilizing skills would come in handy at times like this.

Similar to the previous Abomination monsters, the skeletal soldiers may have strong attack, but they had little HP. After several volleys of concentrated attack, the soldier would die in no time at all. As the number of monsters decreases, the time taken to kill each monster will be greatly shortened. In the end, the party had only took 1 minute to kill all seven skeletal soldiers.

Endless Starlight breath a long sigh of relief and said, "Oh man... these few monsters were strong! I don't think 24 hours is enough to kill our way till the end!"

"Relax. If our party does not have enough firepower, no other party could do the same!" Zhang Yang laughed. He was not bragging, but merely stating the truth. There were three S class Inheritance player in their party! If they could not do it, no one could. Besides, they had half of the world's S class players!

Technically, if you take the strongest players in the game and form a 10-man party, they would share roughly the same firepower as Zhang Yang's party!

"That...may be true...But what if other teams have their own secondary parties joining in?" said Daffodil Daydream worriedly.

"You're right. Their combined forces would definitely have better results. However, there is still a possibility that the new party would be an enemy! If that happened, it would be a chaotic session!"

It was but the obvious fact. If a party of Japan-Korea players joined their bridge, it would be chaos! There will no chance for them to talk it out!

# Chapter 643: Mist Skeleton King

---

"Woohoo! I'm getting excited by the minute! I wonder what will we get in the end!" said Fatty Han as he drooled all over the place. With the Phoenix pet in hand, Fatty Han's DPS had finally received an upgrade, allowing him to rise from the bottom to the middle tier.

"Anything is fine as long as there some Ethereal equipment for me! I only have two here!"]

"Hey! I only have one!"

Everyone started to be chatty when it comes about Ethereal tier equipment. Zhang Yang could not deny that fact that he too wanted more Ethereal equipment although he already possessed four of them!

"Heeheeheehee! Look at you guys squeaking about equipment!" Fatty Han points his fingers here and there as he making fun of the party member.

"You pig! You too, want the Ethereal equipment, don't you! If you deny it! Give us all the equipment you have and switch them with a White-Wood tier!"

"Yeah! I'd say, I've been eyeing at your Ethereal pants you have. Come on! Give it to me as a bro's gift!"

"...You...have some really weird taste...Why would you even eyeing my crotch!"

"WHAT!? THAT'S NOT—I mean--!"

"ENOUGH!" Zhang Yang roared. "We're not done yet! Fight now, talk later!"

The party continued pushing as far as they could and after 10 minutes or so, they had finally spotted the 13th party joining the map. The newly joined party appeared at the 3 o'clock bridge. Since all party marked with a blinking dot, the two dots on the bridge began to approach each other. The one in the front started to withdraw while the newly joined party beginning to push on.

However, little did Zhang Yang had expected, the two dots did not reduce in size! That only means that the two parties did not fight each other but chose to go with the cooperation route!

Their sudden unexpected reaction had the other 11 parties startled. Right then, they knew that experience points do not really matter anymore but reaching the final goal was. All 13 parties, including Zhang Yang, felt the stress building up on them. However, Han Ying Xue's sudden report had eased the tension by a huge mile.

"We are only 300 meters away from the first party!" Han Ying Xue had her world map U.I out since the beginning of the raid. She had been keeping track of each party's progress.



Zhang Yang's party was the fourth party that had entered the map. When they had just set foot on the map, the fastest party was already 1 kilometer ahead of them. Right then, Zhang Yang had already managed to catch up! They had shortened their distance by a whole 700 meters despite starting out late!

"Don't stop now! Fight on!"

...

"200 meters!"

...

"100 meters!"

...

"30 meters..."

"Wait. Something's not right there. We're not catching up! They've completely stopped in their tracks! Ack-!" Han Ying Xue eyes were glued to the world map U.I and did not see where she was going. She had walked into Zhang Yang and bumped her head against his metal armor.

"Life...the scent of life...Meat...FRESH MEAT!" A deep, distorted voice could be heard emerging from afar. The bridge tremored as a

large skeletal soldier walked towards them. It wore a full set of heavy silver, metallic armor and carried a long, rusted cleaver that was dripping with blood. Unlike the other skeleton monster, this one was overly large and had three long spikes protruding out of his spine.

Han Ying Xue then realized why the other party had stopped moving forward.

[Mist Skeleton King] (Ethereal, Spectre)

Level: 140

HP: 500,000,000

Defense: 9,950

Melee Attack: 80,289 – 90,289

Skills:

[Constitution of the Afterlife]: Restores 1% HP every 30 seconds. Restoration amount cannot be affected any skills.

[Boney Pierce]: Fires a bone spike and deals 150% melee physical attack.

[Sanrenzan]: Unleashes a barrage of sword attacks, dealing 100% melee physical damage with each strike.

[Decay Aura]: Deals 80,000 Shadow damage to all targets every 5 seconds within a certain area.

[Summoned Skeletal]: Summons 100 Skeletal Soldier to aid the King in battle. 5 seconds casting time.

Note: The Mist Skeleton King was a mighty warrior who was famous for his brute strength. No one had heard of him after he had set foot in a mysterious land. No one knew about him but the man who had sworn to protect the living and exterminate all Spectre had become the very entity that he had sworn to kill.

"Aw yiss! An Ethereal boss! JACK POT GUYS!" Fatty Han laughed happily. Although they had fought Ethereal bosses during a few Inheritance quest lines, the bosses require a month (real time) to respawn. None of them could wait that long! If it had not been that way, everyone would already be having Ethereal tier equipment on hand!

Endless Starlight approached Zhang Yang and asked, "Boss, I think I should use my Transformation skill first."

Both of them were tanks, hence, it would be sensible for one of them to use their Transformation skill at a time.

Zhang Yang nodded. "We have no choice here. We'll be in your

care then."

Endless Starlight smirked and activated his King Kong Inheritance Transformation skill. His character grew in size. Golden fur started to grow all over his body as his armor seeped underneath the coat of golden fur. His arms grew in length as well as the muscle mass around his chest and biceps.

"UU UUU OH OH!" Endless Starlight beat his chest and roared like a true King Kong!

Fatty Han laughed. "Starlight boy. You may be big, but I bet that your little junk is still the size of a tiny worm!"

"Fatty bro. No offense. You can take my junk and cut it into 10 pieces and I would still have a cock 3 times larger than yours!" When it comes to a man's honor, no man, not even Endless Starlight would allow himself to lose.

Endless Starlight, in his gorilla form, stomped over to the boss, leaving a cloud of dust and tremor in his wake.

"Death...Darkness...Freezing Void..." The Skeleton King muttered something inaudible as he hacked at Endless Light.

Endless Starlight raised his arms and block the incoming blade. Although in appearance, Endless Starlight was using his forearm to block the butcher knife, he was, in fact using his shield to block. It was just invisible to the public.

The two large characters crashed into each other and created tremors that sent pieces of the stone bridge to chip off. Zhang Yang leaped off the Phoenix pet, unequipped the shield and used {Charge} to glide towards the boss at light speed.

{Cripple Defense}! {Cripple Defense}! {Cripple Defense}!

Right then, Zhang Yang was not playing the tank role. If he continues to attack while mounted on the Phoenix, the damage the Phoenix causes will generate aggro value on Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was not like others, even if he dismounts, the Phoenix would not disappear, for he had the skill {Beast Taming} like a Hunter. The reason Zhang Yang had unequipped his shield was to disable the skill {Shield Oath} from generating too much aggro.

Endless Starlight did not have the skill {Cripple Defense}. Hence, he waited until Zhang Yang attack before he did. Wei Yan Er went up with Zhang Yang and landed one or two {Cripple Defense} to maximize the effect before attacking.

Zhang Yang had not have much opportunity of being an attacker. Hence, now that he was playing an attacker role, he moved behind the boss awkwardly and attacked from behind.

Fatty Han laughed at Zhang Yang sluggish movements and teased, "Little Yang! I think you have found a new fetish now! Do you really enjoy poking the boss's butt?"

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. "Fatty, if you could just keep quiet for

a day, the world would thank you for it!"

"Please. I'm me for my random utterance! If you ask me to keep quiet, it would be when I bite the dust," said Fatty Han as he shot an arrow that was imbued with fire. It was a newly acquired skill called {Incendiary Arrow}, which deals 150% ranged damage as Fire damage. Its power was strong for it cost him more than 20,000 gold coins.

Even Zhang Yang felt that 20,000 gold coins for the skill book was a complete bargain since the real value of the skill was more than 200,000 gold coins! Nonetheless, Fatty Han was being Fatty Han. He felt that spending that amount of money was extremely costly for him. Hence, whenever the skill was ready to use, he would not spare any idle second and use the skill whenever he could! He will make sure the skill will always be on cooldown to make full use of the 20,00 gold coins he spent!

"Ayy! Little Yang. You best not poke the boss too hard. Or else the boss might lose control of his bowel movement and sh\*t all over you!"

"Urgh---" Everyone, including Zhang Yang, sulked.

"Die...Pathetic beings...." The boss gritted its teeth snarled with a heavy metal grinding noise. He rushed to Endless Starlight and jumped into a sword drawing stance. Before Endless Starlight could react in time, the Skeleton King performed three quick consecutive slashes without moving in inch and dealt three strikes dealing over 60,000 damage each. If Endless Starlight had not used his Transformation skill, he would have lost 50% of his HP! Right

then, Endless Starlight had more than 6,000,000 HP. 200,000 damage was nothing but a tiny itch that could be ignored.

"Wake up my slaves! Serve me, your lord!" The Skeleton King lowered his cleaver and stabbed his boney fingers into the ground. A black aura seeped out from his character and entered the ground. Countless of boney skeleton soldiers started to burst out of the stone bridge and filled the entire bridge. A progression bar appeared on top of the boss' character! Zhang Yang realized that it was the skill to summon soldiers out, which required 5 seconds!

Even though a great deal of skeletons were summoned, they were all but normal tier monsters. It was not a problem for Zhang Yang's party to eliminate!

Zhang Yang instinctively re-equipped his shield and cast {Thunder Strike} in the middle of the swarm. That single attack had helped him capture more than 20 monsters at a time. Zhang Yang mentally controlled the Phoenix to fire its flamethrower attack to "gather" more monsters to his side. Fatty Han controlled his Phoenix as well to aid Zhang Yang.

While Fatty Han and Zhang Yang had already witnessed the power of the Phoenix, the party member around were witnessing the prowess of the fiery Legendary Beast's power for the first time. With Zhang Yang taking the lead to attack the monster and Endless Starlight holding on the boss, the party had no trouble in eliminating all the summoned soldiers.

In less than 3 minutes, the party had all killed more than 500 skeleton monsters. 1 million HP might be a little too hard for some

player but it was nothing but scrap for Zhang Yang's party.

While they were busy fighting the mob, Han Ying Xue was paying attention to the other side of the bridge. "The other party lost 3 players during the boss fight!" Han Ying Xue reported. She was only able to divide her attention on the battlefield because Endless Starlight had used his Transformation skill, allowing him to practically survive the entire ordeal with little to no healing.

Zhang Yang concluded that the summoned monsters were rather strong to be able to wipe out the players. "Be careful. Do not let the summoned skeleton minions get close to you!"



# Chapter 644: Resurrection Monolith

---

The strongest aspect of the monster in the Gagaro's Mist was their attack. The normal tier monsters there would have attack values several times stronger than an elite tier monster in the outside world. Who could tank 500 elite monsters in one go without dying?! It was possible, since the monster's HP were low to start with. They could not even survive after moving a few meters! Zhang Yang easily defeated them even without the help of his Transformation skill.

It was easy dealing with the summoned soldiers. It was as simple as keeping them in place and not allowing any single monster to roam around and flank the party. 100,000 HP could be easily killed with two volleys of AoE attacks.

Fatty Han laughed manically as he boasted. "Hehehe! Screw them! They had Transformation skills but refused to use them! Who do they think they are?!"

It was inevitable. Fatty Han could say such things and nobody could say anything else. For he had obtained the powerful Legendary Beast, Phoenix pet! Its normal attack was already considered to be a powerful AoE attack!

"Please. Pervy bro, you are nothing without your Phoenix! Besides, you could only acquire the pet with noobie tank's help! You're lucky to be a Hunter or Uncle Hundred Shots would have been the master of that fire birdie!" Wei Yan Er muttered disgruntledly. If Fatty Han's daily task is to spout some random pervert jokes, teasing Fatty Han was Wei Yan Er's daily task.

Fatty Han puffed out a confident snort and said, "What are you saying? Zhang Yang is my bro! Everything he owns is mine! Everything I own is his! His wives are my wives! My wife is his wife! Both of us are practically brothers---OWIEE!"

Before he could finish his sentence, Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu had already stomped over to him and smacked his butt hard.

"Then again, the two Phoenix pets are truly spectacular." Hundred Shots could not hide his admiration for the pets. He was a Hunter and a Beastmaster specialized class. His specialized class prioritized pets. Hence, it was not odd for him to crave for strong pets. If Zhang Yang were to have his Phoenix fight with Fatty Han's, Fatty Han's Phoenix would win with all the buffs provided by the player's class specialization.

Zhang Yang smiled. Based on the real timeline, it was almost high time for Hundred Shots to obtain his Red Dragon pet soon. When he does, he will shake the world. He will indefinitely be the world's only Dragon Pet owner! All Zhang Yang could hope for was that he had not knocked Hundred Shots off the path to his destiny.

"Hundred Shots, you need not worry! I'm sure that you will get yourself an even stronger pet! No! I guarantee it!"

"cough Haha!" Hundred Shots was not the kind of person who would hold a grudge against someone who was luckier than he. He held no sort of negativity towards Zhang Yang and Fatty Han for acquiring the Phoenix pet. He merely smiled back and said, "Now

that you had said it that way, I might actually take it for real!"

"Believe! My word is gold!"

"Puny...beings...live...die..." The Skeleton King roared. While they were fighting for their lives, its opponents were merely chatting nonchalantly and paid no attention to the fight! For a King of the Skeleton Soldiers, it was an offense that had hurt his own dignity!

The only AoE attack skill that the boss had was the {Decay Aura}. It was a permanent DoT skill that did not require any activation. Hence, all it could do was to hack at Endless Starlight as much as it could.

"Hey hey hey! Da\*mn! The boss is fighting like its on steroids! Come on bro! I'm not the one who is poking your buttthole! Fight Zhang Yang! Not me! I'm not at fault here!" cried Endless Starlight. The guy was just like Fatty Han; if he had to keep quiet for a day, he would probably drop dead!

"Death...eternal death..." The green flare in the boss eyes burst violently as he struck his blade into the ground once more. "Wake up, my servants. Heed my call and destroy my enemies!"

The blade created a huge crater and from the abyss of the void, out came 500 skeletal soldiers!

Zhang Yang called for Fatty Han and organized their Phoenix

pets to gather and killed all the skeleton soldiers.

"Hm...That's weird. After the first wave of skeletal soldiers, the other party had not lost any more members..." Han Ying Xue pointed out. She had been paying attention to the actions of the other party and had calculated the time taken. Now that Zhang Yang's party was already facing the second wave of skeletal soldiers, the other party should roughly be at the same stage. Theoretically, the other party had lost 3 member when the boss had summoned the first wave of skeletal soldiers. Yet, with fewer members of the party, they had not lose any more players. It should not have been that way.

Wei Yan Er shouted. "Hey Hey! I know why! Hee hee! Someone in their party had used their Transformation skill!"

Everyone nodded and laughed awkwardly. It was too obvious.

Zhang Yang had only stated that if they activate their Inheritance Transformation skills too soon, they would not be able to rely on the power up to push all the way to the end. Everyone had no idea of what that awaited them at the end of the bridge. However, through experience, everyone in the map knew how to push forward while saving their trump cards for the last.

The party lost 3 players during the first wave of summoned soldiers, they would have been completely wiped out if no one used their Transformation skills. On the other hand, if they were to be wiped out, they would have to start from the beginning again. Right then, the monsters behind would already respawn.

Still, even though fighting normal monster were fast and easy, in addition to the boosted experience points, there were bosses waiting for them in the end, who would want to spend their effort killing monsters?! Then again, though the map had not provided any descriptions, it was clearly a race. The first to reach the end will attain something! Be it a treasure or a boss, no one would allow themselves to fail in the middle!

They knew that it was wrong to use their Inheritance Transformation skill, but it was the only current solution that they had.

"We better hurry. There're three more parties starting their boss fights." Han Ying Xue reported. The King of Skeletons had allowed everyone to catch up, even though they had started at different times. Additionally, the boss is able to heal itself. Having only 10 players fighting it, the firepower was not sufficient enough to bring it down quickly. As such, the boss battle was dragged long and every party on the bridge was held back at that point.

Han Ying Xue continued her report and stated that all parties in all bridges were stuck at the same position. That alone determined the strength of the boss.

With the Blood Alliance and the Land of Savages competing in the same race, the distance between the bridges was shortened as the party moved closer towards the center. By then, the distance should be at least 4 kilometers apart, yet players seemed to have gained a huge boost to their sight. Zhang Yang could somewhat make out the silhouette of the regular players on the other bridge.

On the other hand, Zhang Yang could clearly see two players who have activated their Transformation skills. Like Endless Starlight, the players towered over everything else. It was so big that Zhang Yang could spot them at a glance.

Since they encountered the boss at approximately 20% of the journey, there should be 4 to 5 more bosses appearing before they reach the final point. To put it mildly, it was best to have two players activate their Transformations skill at every boss fight to survive until the end.

Zhang Yang's party had no need to activate anyone's Transformation skill, or their original attack power was already top tiered. B class Inheritance Transformation skill will only provide 300% attack boost and HP boost. They just intended to play it safe.

Among the 12 parties in the map, the two parties were making extremely quick progress. In the beginning, they had started out at the 9th place. After joining hands and pushing forward, they had made it to the 4th rank in no time at all. The advantage of numbers were particularly handy during the boss fight.

"Faster!"

Everyone present was racing to be the first to end the boss fight to proceed. Zhang Yang's party had strong attack power, with the additional top class potions that Zhang Yang provided them, their total cumulative attack power could rival a party of 100 players!

TAK TAK CUK CUK!

Arrows, blades, spells, and other attack landed on the boney character of the boss. Although it did not bleed, the attack had still managed to create visible cracks in the bones of the boss. Enraged from the violent attacks it received, the boss roared wildly and shot out the spikes that grew on its back. It was no problem for him to do so since the spikes will regrow almost instantly.

It was a little problem to Zhang Yang party since the player with the lowest HP was Fantasy Sweetheart who had just slightly over 250,000 HP (mounted). It was impossible to kill the healer in a single strike. Hence, the problem was so little that it could not be considered to be a problem at all. It was merely an annoyance.

As time passed on quickly, the team managed to bring down the HP of the boss to 20%.

"Starlight boy, get ready. I'm going to go all out. Make sure you have enough aggro on you!" said Zhang Yang. Endless Starlight nodded. Zhang Yang immediately consumed a bottle of Tier 10 Power Potion and activated {Indiscriminate}. All the skills that he had reserved for this moment were unleashed.

‘-519,870!’ Killing Cleave, Critical

‘-379,536!’ God of War Crushing Devastation, Critical

‘-257,890!’ Destructive Smash, Critical

...

Endless Starlight had been wondering why did Zhang Yang unequip his shield. His intrigue was answered when Zhang Yang's deadly combo attack had not made the boss turn its head to him. Even though Endless Starlight had gained an enormous damage boost after transforming, the damage he dealt was through a one-handed weapon. Hence, it was not all that high. There was no way that his damage would compete with Zhang Yang!

Even without his Transformation skill activated, Zhang Yang's DPS power was higher than Endless Starlight's. Luckily, tank class character had skills to generation extra aggro value when they attack. That was the reason why Zhang Yang had removed his shield. That, or the boss would have targeted Zhang Yang the moment he attacked! Naturally, there was still a possibility that he will OT the tank. Hence, he had the skill {Shadow of the Void} ready to prevent that.

10 seconds of the {Indiscriminate} skill duration, Zhang Yang's non-stop critical damage had nearly caused his aggro value to exceed Endless Starlight. Endless Starlight was so terrified of that happening that he placed his utmost focus on to attacking the boss with all skills he had, to prevent anyone from taking the spotlight. At the same time, he had been calling Zhang Yang a godlike being for able to take away the aggro-control despite not being in his Transformation form! Then again, the big boss does own one of the only six S class Inheritance in the world!

On the other hand, Sun Xin Yu's attack was almost the same level



as Zhang Yang. However, unlike Zhang Yang, she would not allow her aggro gain to reach a dangerous level to scare Endless Starlight. When her aggro value reaches a certain point, she would use {Vanish} to clear all her aggro and start from the bottom once again. That alone had earned a praise from Endless Starlight. Sin Xin Yu did not exactly appreciate Endless Starlight calling her elder sister.

After the team's combined attack, paired with Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er {Killing Cleave} and {Indiscriminate}, the party had managed to take down 2% HP in just 10 seconds. If they could just maintain the entire battle at such a pace, they would have cleared the boss fight in just 10 minutes and not 50 minutes!

Zhang Yang flicked his finger and sent out a cloud of smoke.

{Glare of the Death God}!

Technically, the cooldown of the skill had allowed the skill to be used only once or twice in a boss fight. Zhang Yang had calculated the time taken to kill the boss had decided to use the skill at the very last minute. Even though this particular boss does not have a "Berserk" state, it does repeatedly use its skills.

Hence, if he were to use {Glare of the Death God}, he would choose to use it when the boss has 10% HP left. If the boss does use some super power up skill, it could be killed easily with the skill.

A large skull formed on the boss character. The bosses quickly gazed upward and stared at the skull. The scene was rather funny,

as the skulls were grinning at each other.

"What is this!?" The skull dispersed and the boss suddenly cried out in anger as he sensed something amiss.

"Hehe! Time for you to turn into dust! Rest in pieces while we turn you into pieces!" Wei Yan Er laughed.

The skill triggered and the party attack rapidly to proc the damage. As such, each proc had taken away more than 5,000,000 HP at an instance. Such an amazing skill! Truly a hack!

15%...12%...7%...5%...!

After all 10 procs were triggered, the boss' HP dropped to only 5%. The party would only require 2 minutes or less to win the battle!

"All who live...must die!" As the boss started to lose more and more HP, its skill usage frequency increased dramatically. However, as predicted, the party had taken less than 2 minutes to end the boss. The massive boney character of the boss fell into countless pieces and dropped a few shiny equipment.

"Little brat, loot all the drops. We must keep going. Endless Starlight still has his Inheritance Transformation going, we will go ahead first."

"Alrighty!"

Endless Starlight mounted on his Black Rhino and rushed forward. Although the Rhino was as large as an elephant, how could it ever carry something as large as a 12 storey tall King Kong! It was like a grown-up adult riding on a tiny little pussycat!

"BUAHAHAHAHAHA!" Fatty Han laughed. It was extremely hilarious to see how Endless Starlight flattening the poor critter. Even the Ice Queen had smiled a little.

With the boosted HP and attack, Endless Starlight rushed forward and kited close to 10 elite monsters in one shot. After the first boss fight, the monsters deeper were stronger and fiercer. One volley of attack was enough to take away more than 100,000 HP. With a stomp of his feet, Endless Starlight activated an AoE skill that was similar to {Thunder Strike}. The stomping attack slowed down all enemies around him, enabling Endless Starlight to create breathing space for him to attack safely.

Even though the little girl had finished picking all the loots, everyone resisted the urge to review items since they knew every second in this place counted. With Endless Starlight leading the way, the party had not need to do anything else but to spam all their AoE skills while keeping the monsters from splitting up too far apart. As long as the skill does not require too long of a casting time, they could continue spamming it and all would be fine.

Wei Yan Er attacked while reviewing the items in her inventory U.I. Feeling a little discontented, the little girl complained, "The stinky skeleton boss had only dropped two Ethereal, and three Mythical. There's one Skill Point Crystal and one more...Hmm.

Resurrection Monolith? Noobie tank! What is a Resurrection Monolith?"

Zhang Yang turned around and rolled his eyes at her. "Are you daft? The item is in your hands. Read the description as tell me!"

"Hmph! If you're going to call me stupid, say it to my face directly! I'll show you my wrath!" The poor little girl does not have a wide range of vocabulary and had only puffed her cheeks at Zhang Yang. She then posted the item description on the party chat.

[Resurrection Monolith] (Special Item)

Description: Allows your soul to remain by the side of your body after death, saving you the travel. After the first usage of the Resurrection Monolith, the Monolith will have a 30 minute cooldown. Any death during the cooldown period will result in your soul appearing in the nearest graveyard. Ineffective in dungeons.

Level Requirement: 100

# Chapter 645: The Mist Blood Zombie

---

"Wow! This item is good!" cried the little girl. Everyone else agreed.

This item was extremely useful in the map. If the item was used on the healer, even if they were unfortunate enough to be party wiped, the healer could resurrect immediately on the spot and revive the rest of the party with ease. It was not just specifically for the healer, in fact, anyone could benefit from the Monolith. However, at that time and place, the party decided to just entrust the Monolith to Han Ying Xue.

"It's sure nice if the next few bosses drop a few more Monoliths as well."

Besides the [Resurrection Monolith], the other rare item dropped was the [Skill Point Crystal]. After a session of rolling, Lost Dream won the item and used it for himself. The poor fellow smiled like he had just touched a pair of boobs for the first time in his life.

Wei Yan Er had skipped over the Mythical items since neither one of them could be equipped at the moment. She moved on directly to the Ethereal items, which was a hat and a pair of boots.

[Crown of Seeping Death]

Defense: +64

Vitality: +4356

Intelligence: +1490

Spirit: +635

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 2,980.

Equip: Increases 5.6% damage.

Equip: Absorbs 641 damage on attack.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 140

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

"Well. I can't say anything else. Praise the Ethereal equipment, for their stats are so high even before even being Identified." Hundred Shots coughed. Even though the party had seen many Ethereal tier equipment, new equipment would always be a surprise!

There were three players in the party who could use the hat. Han Ying Xue lived up to her promise and let the other Ethereal tier equipment go. After two players rolled for the item, Daffodil

Daydream won it fair and square.

"Little Yan Er! Come one! Show me them boots!" cried Fatty Han impatiently. He then removed his boots and showed it to everyone. "See this? This is a Level 120 Violet-Platinum boots! I need to change it, quick!"

"Awwww shucks! Put away those boots! It stinks! It's worse than Stinky Tofu!" said Wei Yan Er as she pressed her nose.

"Is it? Hm...Let me see...\*sniff\* ahhh, sweet scent of lavender!" Fatty Han then shoved his nose into the boot and took a deep breath. That action alone was enough to send a few girls in the party squealing.

"Hahaha! Come on. I'm joking! It doesn't smell like lavender! It doesn't smell at all! Come on guys!" cried Fatty Han as he tried to talk it off.

Wei Yan Er retreated to a corner, away from Fatty Han and posted the boots properties.

[Golden Scale Thick Boots] (Ethereal, Leather Armor)

Defense: +192

Vitality: +2178

Strength: +318

Dexterity: +745

Equip: Increases your Maximum HP by 4,350.

Equip: Increases 5.6% damage dealt.

Equip: Absorbs 641 damage on attack.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 140

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

The boots were catered for Thief and Hunter class players. Fatty Han was the first to roll and obtained a high score of 98 points. The man snorted proudly and unequipped his boots, getting ready to equip the new one with extreme confidence. However, lady luck was a little unfair that day, Sun Xin Yu rolled and scored 99 points. The poor fellow rolled on the floor crying like a little baby, while the party laughed at him.

"A pity that the equipment has only 70% of the original power..."  
Hundred Shots sighed.



"I agree. It's like buying takeout! You have to wait until you get home to unwrap it!" Fantasy Sweetheart puffed her cheeks.

"Haha. No use in complaining now. Let's hurry up." Zhang Yang reminded them.

Not long after, the skeletal soldier dwindled, while the enemies that replaced it were the undead zombies. All of them were still undergoing putrefaction and remnants of their rotten flesh dangled down, swaying left and right as they walked. Some had even had their eyeballs dangling out of their sockets. The scene was extremely vile and gory.

[Mist Blood Zombie] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 135

HP: 2,700,000

Defense: 3,540

Melee Attack: 55,789 – 65,334

Skills:

[Infected Blood]: Throws a piece of rotten flesh towards a target and infects the target with the Zombie Virus. Deals 10,000 Shadow Damage to the target every 3 seconds. If the infected target dies

during the duration of the skill, the player will turn into a zombie.

[Consume]: Devours a nearby corpse, restoring 5% HP per second for 10 seconds.

Note: A powerful being that reeks of hatred and vengeance towards all that bear life.

"Wuuu. That's one ugly bad guy!" said Wei Yan Er as she cringed in disgust. She then turned to Fatty Han and gave him a good look.

"Huh? What? Did you just only realize that Fatty bro is handsome?" said Fatty Han as he put up a macho man pose while flexing his flabby arms.

Wei Yan Er narrowed her eyebrows and said, "If you're the definition of handsome, the zombies there would be normal, then."

Fatty Han had always been the class clown his life. Sometimes, his irritable face had provoked many others to just make fun of him. However, the man did not take offense from any of the insults thrown at him. The guy would shrug, laugh, and walk it off like it was nothing. The little girl failed to pissed the guy off and resorted to simply sticking her tongue out at the man.

Right then, with Endless Starlight's Transformation still active, the party was able to make faster progress by kiting a large number of monster and killing them in one go. However, as they proceed further on, the attack of the monster underwent further upgrades.

No sooner later, the attack had gone beyond that of a Mythical tier boss and had reached to the point of an Ethereal tier boss!

Constantly killing and running on was tiring, however, the experience reward gained from the kill was enough to motivate the party to go on. The thought of training there for long was running in everyone minds since grinding levels in this place was far more efficient!

The important reason behind the high-speed killing was due to the number of monsters and their positions. All the party needed to do is to move forward! Unlike monsters spawning in fields, the monsters on the bridge were all in a straight line. Even though the monsters in the place had only provided 50% extra experience points, the experience points gained was at least twice normal since the monsters were all crowded together!

"24 hours...is really not enough..." While Endless Starlight sighed, everyone agreed with his resentment. After this trial, the next entry would be 30 days later!

The party continued on further with vigor and slowed down after Endless Starlight's Transformation skill ended. By then, the party had progressed as far as 30% of the entire journey. Including Zhang Yang's party, there were a total of seven other parties had already cleared their first boss fight. The fastest party to progress was definitely Zhang Yang's party. Coming close to the second place were the two parties sharing the same bridge. With their combined players, their pushing speed was roughly the same!

At this rate, the two parties would definitely catch up to them

and be the first party to reach the end goal!

"Sigh...Dragon O dragon. Why are you are not coming out to ravage the monsters now?" said Zhang Yang as he felt a little annoyed for the {Rising Dragon Strike} had not procced a single strike!

"Eh?!" Han Ying Xue exclaimed suddenly.

"What's wrong?" asked Zhang Yang. He knew Han Ying Xue would not shout at anything random. Something bad must have happened.

"The party of Land of Savages is rocketing through their bridge!"

There was no need to use any special tools to see their progression speed. They had players with Transformation skills to push faster. A few other parties had noticed the sudden increase in speed of Land of Savages and were pressured to activated their own Transformation skills to maintain the gap between them.

By a rough estimate, all parties in the map were reaching the 40% mark, technically, they could use their third or fourth Transformations to continue their progress without stopping.

"Zhan Yu...Should we use one of our Transformation skills as well?" Hundred Shots asked with concern. The party had a total of 10 player Transformation skills and they had already used one. It should be alright to use another!

The main point of using Transformation skill when they are not battling a boss is the AoE skill. All Transformation skills would have a flashy, powerful AoE skill such as Zhang Yang's God of War {Crushing Strike}, or the little brat's Darkness Inheritance {Shadow Curtain}. Hence, the Transformation skill provides more of an AoE attack boost, stronger than their single target attacks. Hence, using the Transformation skill right there and then would be extremely beneficial!

Zhang Yang went silent for a brief moment before answering Hundred Shots. "You said that we have 9 more Transformations left, correct? Well, technically, we still have 11 left! The two Phoenixes each have their Transformation skills as well! I think, we have more than enough Transformations to spare for the last boss. Hmm, Lost Dream. Go for it!"

"Really?! Hell yeah!" Lost Dream nodded his head happily and transformed himself into a character made of ice. As he walked, a frosty mist started forming up, filling the air with frigid coldness and condensed the moisture in the air into countless ice droplets.

Now that Lost Dream had used his Transformation skill, the party progression speed had increased dramatically. Lost Dream used his special skill which was only available during Transformation and cast a long river of ice to deal heavy damage to all enemies as far as 50 meters away.

The skill was a monster magnet! Countless of monsters from afar rushed towards the party and were blocked efficiently by Zhang Yang, Endless Starlight, and the two Phoenixes. Coupled with a

few more strong Battle Companion in the field, the monsters would have to circle around the front line before they could find their way to attack Lost Dream.

Zhang Yang and the two Phoenixes attacks were not too strong, but neither were they weak. Although the two Phoenixes did not own any AoE skills, their normal attacks were wide and far enough to deal damage to all enemies that were within 10 meters of their flamethrower attack. With ease, the two Legendary Beast scorched the floor clean!

Still, with attack alone, the party would not have able to last that long without Han Ying Xue's turbo-charged healing powers. It was all thanks to her Milkmaid Deity's power, or she would not have been able to handle such a massive workload.

The party was able to hold on as the first party with Lost Dream's super-far, super-strong AoE attack skill. Although their progress toward the end goal was not too obvious since the other party had already used the fourth or the fifth Transformation skill to catch with Zhang Yang's party. Little did they know that Zhang Yang's gang had only activated their second Transformation skill!

In the end, no one can be sure about who will be the winner! They would have to fight until the end to find out.

# Chapter 646: The Zombie Lord

---

Every time an Inheritance is activated, the progress of each party would receive a boost. 5 hours later, all 13 parties arrived at the second boss. Although they arrived at different times, none of them were falling behind.

However, it remained unknown whether all parties could still maintain the speed of their progress. No one had any idea how many players from the other parties had already activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills. It could only be assumed that weaker parties would already be urging their party members to activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills.

The second boss was a gigantic Blood Mist Zombie. It was a male that was approximately 15 meters tall. His flesh all around his body was rotten and stinky! More surprisingly, that rotten man was wearing a nose hoop on his nose. He also wore many other golden rings on his utterly decomposed body. The golden rings were clanking into each other as he moved.

[Blood Mist Zombie Lord] (Ethereal, Zombie)

Level: 143

HP: 600,000,000

Defense: 9,410

Melee Attack: 70,102 - 90,102

### Skills:

[Poisonous Blood]: Infects the target with poisonous blood. The target will suffer additional 10% damage when being hit. The effect cannot stack.

[Decay Aura]: Causes 80,000 Shadow Damage to all targets within the effective range once in every 5 seconds.

[Paralytic Pierce]: Causes 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target, causes the target to become paralyzed for 10 seconds.

[Zombie Build]: Recovers 1% HP once in every 30 seconds. The recovery rate will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: The Zombie Lord. According to legend, he was a famous pretty boy. However, he had never thought that it was possible for him to turn into such ugly being!

"Boss, all yours!" Endless Starlight backed off, knowing that without his Inheritance Transformation, he was out of his league.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "I believe that everyone can see the description of the boss's Skills. There shouldn't be any difficulties in this boss battle. Just deal as much damage as you can and heal as much HP as you can! No time to lose! Chop chop! Let's move out!"



He patted his Phoenix pet as gave a command for it to charge towards the boss without any delay. Now that he was the main Tanker of this battle, he would need to get as much aggro as possible so that the attention of the boss would be firm and focused on him. Although it was almost impossible for his other party members to snatch the aggro of the boss away, even without the help of Phoenix pet, the boss's {Paralytic Pierce} would stun Zhang Yang for 10 seconds. If that Skill would be activated frequently by the boss, Zhang Yang's DPS efficiency would definitely be affected. That would come back to bite him when it comes to maintaining the boss's aggro. Therefore, he decided to play safe. He mounted onto his pet to try bringing more of the boss's aggro on him.

"Living being?" Zombie Lord let out a thunderous laugh as he lifted his leg up. Then he said, "So tell me, human! Am I the most handsome man in the entire world?"

Zhang Yang and the gang frowned so hard that their eyebrows were going to fall off from their faces.

Zhang Yang threw his {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss and said, "As a zombie, you are considered as one of the top models that everyone would remember for eternity! Yuck! Haha!"

"Bastard! I'm the number 1's most handsome human being!" The Zombie Lord let out a raging roar, as he was already swinging his gigantic hand towards Zhang Yang and slammed it on him. While he was swinging his hand, rotten juice flew off his hands and body parts! The stench was so strong that Han Ying Xue and the ladies were frowning even harder than ever!

"Hey, zombie! You're so rotten that even your penis is rotten to the core! Can you still be considered as a man? You will be better off if you just choose a pretty zombie and marry her!" Fatty Han had not forgotten about teasing the boss with that foul mouth of his. Well, having a foul mouth was part of his trait after all.

"..." The Zombie Lord gave another slam. The powerful impact of his slam pushed Zhang Yang a few steps back. At the same time, he actually put his other hand into his pants to have a quick check on his 'brother' underneath!

Everyone frowned again.

"Wu ---" Suddenly, the Zombie Lord let out a screeching and miserable scream. Everyone could actually see the sad and yet angry face of the boss crystal clear. Apparently, his hand could not 'find' what he was looking for!

--- high Tier and high-leveled bosses tend to have more intelligent AIs which would react to the movements and words of the players. Because of that wretched fatty's foul mouth, the boss lost himself to his anger and went berserk.

"Just get over it and everything will be fine!" Zhang Yang gave a pat on Phoenix pet and charged back up to the boss. He began his assaults by putting his {Cripple Defense} onto the boss. Then, he whirled his [Sword of Purging Devourer] across the air as aggressively as he could in an attempt to reduce the HP bar of the boss.

"I am the most handsome man! I am the most handsome man! Number one handsome man!" The Zombie Lord continued to roar in anger as he was swinging his hands across the area so hard, that the air was swept up by the force of the swings, "You all know my secret now! You all must die! Die!"

"Pui! Everyone in the world knows that you have no d\*ck! So why still call it a secret?" Fatty Han got hooked on teasing the boss, as he found it fun to do so.

"Bastards! I will kill you all! I will kill every one of you who knows about my secret!" Zombie Lord went completely berserk. He was screeching like a real devil as he continued to swing his hands towards Zhang Yang.

"What the f\*ck, fatty! Your mouth is foul indeed! Even bosses get angry at you!" Zhang Yang said.

The amount of damage that the boss deals would not change, regardless of whether he is agitated or not. Even though that was the case, the scene of the boss going berserk, smashing up the ground and the walls was really a spectacular scene to gaze upon.

"Haha! Of course!" Fatty Han tapped on his chest as he showed pride in his 'skills'.

The Inheritance Transformation of Lost Dream was still not over yet. He became one of the main DPS in the entire party. There was a risk of him snatching the aggro of the boss from Zhang Yang, but

Zhang Yang could still manage to maintain their positions. He did it by using all sorts of Skills that would generate a large amount of aggro and the additional 20% aggro that he would get by holding a shield.

Although Zombie Lord was the second boss, he was slightly easier than the first boss. The only key point was that his amount of HP was 100,000,000 points higher. That was all.

However, it was not as simple as dealing additional 100,000,000 damage to the boss. Because the boss could recover his HP with his {Zombie Build}, the boss could heal over 1,000,000 HP once in every 30 seconds. That would require the entire party to deal as much damage as 33,000! After all, there were only 10 players in one party. With two of them being Healers and two of them being Tankers, there were only 6 DPS players in the party. That being said, each of the DPS players would need to deal an additional 5,000 DPS in order to deal effective damage to the boss. It was quite a demanding amount of damage required.

The Zombie Lord had over 600,000,000 HP, and he could recover 1% of that amount of HP once every 30 seconds. That 1% amount of HP would be 6,000,000 HP. In other words, the boss could heal over 200,000 HP in every passing second. To deal effective damage on the boss, Zhang Yang's party should deal a minimum of 200,000 damage to the boss every passing second before they can begin reducing the boss's HP bar. That was not a small number. The number of parties that could pull that off without having to activate any of their Inheritance Transformation Skills would not exceed 100 at the current stage of the game.

Averagely speaking, only ten guilds in each region would be capable of pulling such a party together.

However, there were also some differences between the strengths of all top Tier parties. The DPS of Zhang Yang's party had reached up to 400,000 damage! They managed to deal an additional 100% damage to the boss, compared to the minimal amount of damage they were required to deal to the boss. Of course, one of the main reasons was that Lost Dream had activated his Inheritance Transformation Skill. Even if he did not activate it, the party would still be able to deal approximately 350,000 damage in each passing second. After all, the party was receiving support from two Celestial Tier Phoenix pets and a Felice! The damage output of these pets and Battle Companion could match the amount of damage that Hundred Shots and the others could deal to the boss!

Theoretically, Zhang Yang and his party could take out this boss in 50 minutes. The boss did not have any special Skills that could potentially reduce the number of players in the surroundings in an instant. He only had his {Decay Aura} that was a DoT style AoE. As long as Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart could maintain the HP bars of everyone on the party, they would not have much of a problem in taking down the boss.

Furthermore, Zhang Yang also had his ultimate boss-killer Skill {Glare of the Death God}. If this Skill is not resisted by the boss, the boss would basically have 90% HP since the start of the battle.

When the HP bar of the boss was reduced down to 23%, the Inheritance Transformation of Lost Dream finally came to an end. The damage output of the party was slightly reduced. However, it

did not matter much anymore. They were just 3% away from entering the 'killing cleave mode'!

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, "Fatty, activate your Inheritance Transformation now. But don't use your inheritance Skills just yet, unless your EP is full!"

"Roger!" Fatty Han had absolute trust in Zhang Yang. Although he did not understand why Zhang Yang wanted him to do that, he just did it without any hesitation. Instantly, he transformed himself into a vampire with fangs and bat wings on his back. His Attack power was insanely boosted in an instant.

Upon activating his Inheritance Transformation, Fatty Han managed to gain 1 EP every 10 seconds. He would be required to wait 1,000 seconds in order to accumulate 100 EP. That was equivalent to 16 minutes. Zhang Yang asked Fatty Han to activate his Inheritance Transformation early to start accumulating his EP while battling the boss. After they defeat the boss, they could rely on Fatty Han to unleash all his Inheritance Skills on the monsters along their way. He would not be required to wait for 30 seconds before activating his Inheritance Skill.

After a brief moment, the HP bar of the boss dropped below 20%! Everyone began to activate their own 'Killing Cleave' Skills. After a series of aggressive assaults on the boss, the HP bar of the boss had been reduced down to 12%! Zhang Yang did not hesitate anymore as he threw his {Glare of the Death God} onto the boss --- Resist!

Well, they were getting used to the disappointment already.

After all, the special effect of {Glare of the Death God} could only speed things up when the party is encountering bosses that they could otherwise triumph over without help. It was not some major, emergency measure. If the boss resists it, let it be! The party would only have to battle for 5 to 6 minutes longer.

After some messy beating, the narcissistic Zombie Lord finally let out a miserable scream as his miserable life was ended once again. He dropped quite a number of loot upon his demise.

"Huh? There are three parties that are ahead of us!" Han Ying Xue shouted out in shock.

Everyone brought up their map to take a look. It was true! The parties that were progressing towards the middle from 3 o'clock, 5 o'clock and 12 o'clock had already made it past the boss! The party from 3 o'clock had 20 players on their side. It was understandable that they could progress a little faster than expected. However, it was really a shock to see that the two parties from 5 o'clock and 12 o'clock could beat Zhang Yang and his party!

They had either used a [Forbidden Scroll] or more of their members had activated their Inheritance Transformation!

The possibility of them using a [Forbidden Scroll] was not high. After all, the bosses in this area were not those World Tier super bosses. It would really be unwise to waste a [Forbidden Scroll] on any of these bosses!

So that would only leave one other possibility on the other end. They must have activated more of their Inheritance Transformation Skills in order to progress faster. However, if they have used up all most of their Inheritance Transformation Skills at such an earlier stage of the map, how would they be able to progress on when they were nearing the end of the progress? Surely the difficulty of progressing forward would increase as they progress further towards their destination!

Zhang Yang could not afford to waste time on thinking for the other parties that were competing with them to get to the 'finishing line' on the map. All he intended to do was to make sure that his party was progressing at the most efficient rate.

The rules remained the same. Wei Yan Er was the one who picked everything up while the remaining party members continued on cleaning up the monsters that were blocking their way forward. Fatty Han struck out with his immense AoE attacks with his full EP. So he became one of the best DPS sources of the party at the moment. The party managed to push forward swiftly all thanks to him.

"Little brat, what did that stinky Zombie Lord left us? Show it to us, quickly!" Zhang Yang looked at Wei Yan Er as he cleared out the monsters in front of them.

"Hehe!" Wei Yan Er revealed the two rolls of her white teeth at Zhang Yang as she began to dig into her inventory, "Just like what the first boss left for us. We have two Ethereal Tier equipment, 3 Mythical Tier equipment and one [Skill Book]! However, there's no sign of any [Skill Point Crystals] this time around!"



"I see. Take out the [Skill Book] and let's have a look at it!"

"Haih... why are you so picky... It's always so hard to fulfill your request!" Wei Yan Er shrugged as she pretended to be annoyed.

"Fine... stop acting like it's a fuss... just take out the Skill Book and show it to us now, will you? Or else you're going to become enemy number one of the public!"

"If you insist!" Wei Yan Er finally took out the blue-covered Skill Book out of her inventory and said, "Look, it's called 'Armor-Piercing Arrow'!"

# Chapter 647: Necromancer

---

Huh? This Skill had the exact same name as the Skill that Seductive Wild Pussy was using during the World League Championship!

[Skill Book: Armor-Piercing Arrow]

Use: Teaches you the Skill {Armor-Piercing Arrow}.

Required Class: Hunter

Required Level: 100

Fatty Han and Hundred Shots were in immediate agreement. After all, Fatty Han was not suited to using such Skills that would require precision upon activation. Therefore, he gave the [Skill Book] to Hundred Shots without the slightest hesitation.

[Armor-Piercing Arrow]: Crushes the target's Defense, causing all Defensive-type equipment and accessories to malfunction. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 2 minutes.

This Skill did not seem to be useful in a boss battle. That was because the duration of the Skill was too brief. However, this Skill could be really effective in a PvP match, especially when going up against a Tanker with super high Defense.

Hundred Shots was beaming with joy as he was smiling like a little kid who just got some sweets. Everyone could not help but laugh upon seeing such a side of him. After all, he was a middle-aged man who always had that serious, stern expression. It was truly a rare thing to see him would actually reveal such a side.

"So how about the Ethereal Tier equipment then?" Han Ying Xue had nothing on her hands for the moment. So she reached out and gave a gentle pat on the little brat's cheek. She also took the liberty to pinch the little brat's cheek out of fun. Han Ying Xue laughed and said afterwards, "Yan Er! Your skin is getting better and better, to pinch of course!"

Wei Yan Er rolled her eyes backward at Han Ying Xue and muttered, "You deserve to be bullied by noob tank! You hoodlum!"

The little brat then reached into her inventory and took out the other two pieces of Ethereal Tier equipment. One of it was a gray armor plate while the other was a light blue cape.

"So which comes first?" The little brat moved her head around and fixed her eyes on Zhang Yang.

"Let's have a look at the armor plate then."

[Ghoul's Armor Plate] (Ethereal, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +320

Vitality: +4356

Strength: +1490

Agility: +635

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 8,710.

Equip: Increases Damage by 5.6%.

Equip: Absorbs 641 damage when being hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 140

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I already have my [Knight's Glory Chest Plate]. So I've no need for this. Little brat and Endless Starlight should roll and see who gets it."

"Oh right!" Endless Starlight was excited over it. After all, that piece of equipment was an authentic Ethereal Tier piece. It would definitely boost one's attribute up by a lot! He put his palms together as he made a praying gesture. Then he revealed a sincere look on his face and said, "I believe in Brother Chun! Give me 100

points on every roll!"

He threw the dice out as the dice spun one round in midair. As the dice landed, the number '0' came out!

"Hahaha!" Wei Yan Er laughed to the point that she doubled over. Then she said, "Wretched Starlight, are you one of those people from the circus? Haha! I shall show you how to roll out a 100 points, then! Abracadabra, may the high lord of the gods bless me! 100 points! 100 points! 100 points!"

Wei Yan Er threw her dice out. She managed to roll out a number that was 'slightly' above 0 points. The dice stopped at '1' point!

"You two are really... Hahaha! This is what I call a pot calling back the kettle! Hahaha!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he also shook his head around. Then he turned to Endless Starlight and said, "You're so outdated! The time is so modern now! You should find your way out of the ancient ages! You're really something to be able to roll out a 0 point!"

Endless Starlight filled his eyes and cheeks with his tears as Wei Yan Er was laughing out loud by his side. She took up the [Ghoul's Armor Plate] and equipped it straight away. Although the equipment had not been identified yet, it already boosted the little brat's attributes significantly.

However, the appearance of this piece of equipment was a little too horrific for many people's eyes. The piece was covered with skulls all over it. It would definitely not be the first choice for

ladies. However, the little brat was different from normal ladies. She believed that those skulls that were decorating the equipment could bring out her 'personality'. She appeared to be very content upon acquiring it.

Even so, she did not forget to show the other Ethereal Tier equipment to her party members.

[Underworld's Blue Cape] (Ethereal, Cape)

Vitality: +1,089

Strength: +373

Agility: +373

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 2,170.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing efficiency by 5.6%.

Equip: Absorbs 321 damage when being hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 140

Special: Reduce Required Level by 20 levels.

That cape was one hell of a powerful equipment under the category of Physical-type equipment. Even Zhang Yang felt an itch in his heart as he wanted it for himself. Well, the [Destroyer's Madness] on him right now was just a Mythical Tier equipment after all. It was much more inferior than this cape that just came out right in front of him. However, among all party members that were of Physical-class, he already possessed the most number of Ethereal Tier equipment.

Although packing and gearing up a Tanker on a party was priority number one, the Defenses of Zhang Yang were more than enough for him to tank against any Ethereal Tier bosses without much of a problem. Therefore, he decided to stand back from the rolling session and let others have the chance at obtaining the equipment.

After an intense session of rolling, the luck of Endless Starlight suddenly turned as he rolled out 100 points that beat up the others. So this cape became his to claim. The little brat was not happy with the outcome at all and said, "Wretched Starlight! You only get 50 points on average! So you're not fit to get it!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "So you only get 49 points averagely in your two rolls! You're still worse than him! Haha!"

Wei Yan Er immediately rolled her eyes backward at Zhang Yang as she began to curse Zhang Yang instead of Endless Starlight.

The progress of the party did not get dragged out as they were

distributing the equipment among themselves. That was because they were clearing out the monsters and pushing forward as they were distributing the equipment at the same time. However, the party suddenly realized that they had dropped behind to number 4! It was obvious that the party that just overtook them had activated multiple Inheritances. It was true that they were progressing at a much faster rate than Zhang Yang and his party, but can they keep up that pace till end of it?

However, it was a completely different thing to know that they lagged behind. Wei Yan Er has always been brash and impatient. She began to reveal her worried look on her face as she was very tempted to activate her Inheritance Transformation right away! She believed that she could just push her party straight to the finishing line.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Don't get all nervous now. We shall activate all of our remaining Inheritance Transformation Skills at 70%. By then, we should be able to surpass every other party! So, be patient now."

Wei Yan Er could not calm her anxiety just yet. So, she unleashed her frustration onto the monsters that got in her way. She whirled her battle axe and chopped the zombies into pieces like nobody's business. All she did was pure violence!

After a brief moment, the number of monsters in the area dwindled. What replaced them was a bunch of Necromancers!

[Mist Necromancer] (Elite, Spectre)



Level: 140

HP: 2,800,000

Defense: 3,780

Magic Attack: 16,457 - 20,457

Skills:

[Shadow Arrow]: Strikes the target with the power of Shadow, causing 200% Magic Attack in the form of Shadow Damage to the target. Casting time: 2 seconds.

[Strong Will]: Chanting cannot be interrupted.

Note: These foul necromancers were once very gifted Spellcasters. Even though they are already dead for a long time, they must not be underestimated. Or else, you will have to pay the price with your life!

Fatty Han was in high spirits as he threw a {Bloody Feast} towards the monsters. However, things did not go well for him. With that Skill of his throwing out without thinking about the consequences that might be wrought upon him, he lured over hundreds of dead Necromancers over to him. As the Necromancers attacked him all at the same instant, Fatty Han was almost killed

instantly. His 6,000,000 HP was reduced down to a critical level. He was so terrified that he had to transform himself into small bats to suck some blood from the Necromancers closest to him.

"Little brat! It's time! Activate your Inheritance Transformation now!" Zhang Yang quickly gave the command to the little brat. The advantage that Spell-type monsters had was that they would not be affected by the terrain across the ground. If they were encountering 100 Melee-type monsters, they could just let them pile up, out of reach. Only the monsters on the front would be able to attack them. However, Spell-type monsters could just cast their spells even if there are monsters right in front of them. It would proven to be a fatal mistake to lure so many Spell-type monsters to attack oneself at the same instant. Even Fatty Han who had activated his Inheritance Transformation was almost killed in an instant!

"Roger!" Wei Yan Er immediately showed her acknowledgement and activated her Transformation Skill. Her body instantly turned into a grayish black shroud. Now that she could change into whatever form of shape she liked, she began to swing her huge axe at the monsters as she charged forward.

Upon acquiring her Darkness Inheritance, Wei Yan Er became immune to Shadow Damage. If she would activate her Inheritance Skill {Shadow Orb}, she could turn herself into a shroud that no one could touch. As long as there are no airtight surfaces, Wei Yan Er could just go through any wall like how air travels through the holes and cracks on the walls. It was fantastic at the least!

Unfortunately, flying was currently forbidden by the system.

Agile as she was, she was unable to perform at her best.

Because she could only accumulate 1 EP every 30 seconds, Wen Yan Er could not activate her {Shadow Curtain} just yet. Therefore, she could only snatch the aggro of about 60 monsters over onto her. The remaining 30 Necromancers were still focusing their assaults on Fatty Han.

Zhang Yang activated his {Vanguard's Aggression} as light blue translucent barrier expanded across an area of the ground. Everyone stood within the effective area of the Skill. Instantly, their HP bars were reducing much slower.

10 seconds later, Endless Starlight had also activated his {Vanguard's Aggression}. After two {Vanguard's Aggression} were over, Wei Yan Er had also managed to get most of the Necromancers' Aggro in the surroundings fixed on her. Then, the entire party began to launch their full assault on the monsters.

Wei Yan Er had over 30% Magic Resistance upon activating her Transformation Skill. Her Darkness Inheritance could even cancel out most of the Shadow Damage . However, her HP bar was reducing at a very fast rate, while she was the main target of most of the necromancers. While the 100 Elite Tier monsters was launching their assaults on Wei Yan Er, even Han Ying Xue, Fantasy Sweetheart and other 3 Healing-type Battle Companions could not maintain Wei Yan Er's HP bar from dropping down swiftly.

Fortunately, two players in their party had activated their Inheritance Transformations. The damage they could deal to the

monsters were not to be trifled with. Furthermore, Zhang Yang and the two Phoenix Pet could deal quite a substantial amount of damage as well. The three of them did not even activate their Transformation Skills yet! By the end of it, the party annihilated the monster army in the surrounding without much trouble, though the situation got them worried sick.

However, the moment when they were done, the party sat down on the ground with cold sweat dripping across their faces. The situation had been intense. Zhang Yang even activated {Rearm} so that he could use his {Vanguard's Aggression} once more. He also activated {Sacrifice} on the little brat twice and activated his {Shield Wall} twice to forcefully get through the battle. With all the effort he had put out, only did the party manage to stabilize the f\*cked up situation they were in.

Only Wei Yan Er who had little regard for niceties and Han Ying Xue were energetic at picking up the loots across the ground. The others were so exhausted, sitting on the ground catching their breaths. The eyes of the two ladies were glittering as they could only see money and gold in their eyes at that moment. They had totally forgotten about the dangerous situation that they just went through.

"Haha! The parties coming from 1 o'clock, 5 o'clock and 11 o'clock are out of the picture now!" Fatty Han was taking pleasure in others misfortune.

It was understandable though. Zhang Yang and his party were almost wiped out. If the other parties had also lured that many monsters to them at the same time, even players with their

Transformation Skills activated would still have to be torn into shreds by the assaults of so many monsters!

However, Zhang Yang and his party also realized that two of the three parties that were wiped out still remained at the same spot on the map. Only one party was sent back to the beginning point. It could be said that the party had dropped out from the competition in reaching the finishing point on this map in getting the 'treasures'.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "These two parties must either have the Skill {Rise Anew}, or they also obtained [Resurrection Monolith] the same way we did by defeating the first boss."

However, even if the players could get back on their feet after they heal themselves up with Skills and items, but the cooldown of {Redemption} was 5 minutes long. Therefore, it would take some time to get the remaining 9 players on the same party to get back on their feet.

Zhang Yang and his party members continued to move forward after they were done healing themselves up. Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er managed to pick up almost everything on the ground. Their faces were filled with content as they grinned from ear to ear.

This time, the party did not dare to lure so many monsters like they did in their previous encounter. With their current capabilities, they could only handle as many as 50 Elite Tier monsters at a time without much of a problem. After all, Zhang Yang's life-saving Skills also had cooldown periods to consider.

Because Wei Yan Er's Class had an advantage towards the Spell-type monsters, the little brat managed to unleash hell upon the monsters. She was basically the nemesis of these Spell-type monsters the moment she has enough EP. The party managed to progress at an accelerated speed. After just a brief while, the party became number one!

The situation was not simple at all. It could not be solved by activating a few Inheritance Transformations. Of course, upon activating the Inheritance Transformation Skills, the players would become very powerful as their attack range would be expanded many times over. Meanwhile, players would have 20 times to 30 times the boost of their Maximum HP. With that much HP, they should not be taken out so easily by the monsters. However, the key point of surviving the battle against a horde of Elite Tier monsters would still be the ability to heal. Without the capability to kill the monsters instantly, the players would have to slowly reduce the monsters' HP bars. If their Healers on the party could not keep up with the rate of the party members losing their HP, the party would be wiped out sooner or later. Everything would just be a matter of time.

Therefore, every party that was headed towards the finishing point reduced the number of monsters they would lure towards them. After all, the capability of each party differed from the others. Wei Yan Er was 'compatible' with Shadow Attacks. Furthermore, she had a Class A Inheritance. Therefore, Zhang Yang and the rest of the party members could lure up to 50 monsters at a time. On the other hand, the other parties could only lure as many as 20 to 30 monsters at a time. That gap was the reason why Zhang Yang and his party members had managed to leap ahead of other parties.

Zhang Yang and his party members were leading way ahead of the other parties as they gained an absolute advantage over the others. Meanwhile, their progress speed could not be replicated by the other parties as well. Unless they were willing to use a mass destructive item [Forbidden Scroll], they could just stare at the map, witnessing Zhang Yang's party progressing swiftly across the map.

Meanwhile, using a [Forbidden Scroll] to clear up monsters in an area would not grant a single digit of experience point to the players. The monsters would not even drop anything.

Witnessing Land of Savages and Blood Alliance falling further behind, the party could also vaguely see the scornful faces on their opponents. The gang was laughing out loud as they were even more motivated to press forward.

Another hour had passed. The Transformation Skill of Fatty Han was over. Meanwhile, the gang were now meeting the third boss.

It was a bewitching woman with a long and slender body figure. She was wearing a red robe with a high neckline. Her skin was so fair that it could enrapture a lot of eyes just by a fleeting gaze. She had blonde hair and a pair of blue eyes. Her body figure definitely fell under the category of 'hot'! Her two peaks were pushing her robe high up. Her round butt was wrapped around tightly in a thin cloth. The cloth was so tight that it totally revealed the boss's two round and sexy buttocks.

[Blood Necromancer Garces: The Nauseous] (Ethereal, Spectre)

Level: 146

HP: 100,000,000

Defense: 9,410

Magic Attack: 42,128 - 52,128

Skills:

[Corruption Arrow]: Corrupts the target, causes 200% Magic Attack in the form of Shadow Damage to the target. Casting Time: 2 seconds.

[Spectre Build]: Recovers 1% HP once every 30 seconds. Recovery rate will not be affected by any other effects.

[Undead Regeneration]: Resurrects from death and evolves into Blood Necromancer Garces: The Disoriented.

Note: Garces was once a gifted Spellcaster. Unfortunately, she has fallen into the arms of Darkness.



# Chapter 648: The Necromancer Garces

---

After seeing that the boss only had 100,000,000 HP on her, everyone was happy. However, when their eyes came across the Skill descriptions of the boss, that happiness was snuffed out.

"What the f\*ck! It's not like the boss is launching a rocket into space! She has a stage one and two? Are you kidding me?" Fatty Han was infuriated because he knew that they would go through hell, battling this boss.

Such bosses that could turn into something more powerful would definitely be annoying as f\*ck! It would definitely be narrowing the potential effect of {Glare of the Death God}. Of course, the rate of success for using {Glare of the Death God} is extremely low, to begin with. So there was nothing to be upset about.

"Well, at least there are not many things to look out for in her first stage. Let's move out!" Zhang Yang led his party into the battle as he charged up ahead while his other members followed him from the rear. Everyone was charging as quickly as possible as time was of the essence. After all, the boss only had an Attack Skill in her first stage form. There was nothing difficult about it at all. All they have to do to defeat the boss is to focus their assaults on the boss as hard as they could.

"Filthy men!" Garces detected that Zhang Yang and his gang were approaching. She immediately frowned as she revealed a disgusted expression on her face. She raised her staff and pointed it straight at Zhang Yang who was at the forefront of the party. A dark shroud gathered at the tip of the staff swiftly as it began to form up

into a wretched looking skull.

The skull left the tip of the staff and went straight for Zhang Yang at an incredibly fast speed.

There was no way of dodging the boss's Skill, not at all. So, Zhang Yang took the first hit head-on without showing any signs of flinching. He threw his {Spear of Obliteration} back at the boss.

"Argh ---" the boss let out an intimidating roar, "Filthy men! I will kill you all! I will crush your bones into pieces!"

The moment he was 10 meters within range of the boss, Zhang Yang activated his {Charge} and clashed into the boss, followed by a swing with his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. He began to get a solid hold of the aggro of the boss.

Meanwhile, the other members were getting into position as they got ready to launch their assaults on the boss.

As the little brat was still in her Transformed state, Zhang Yang could not afford to be careless at all. He rode on his Phoenix pet and attempted to get as much aggro as possible. Every single Skill that he activated managed to deal high damage and created high aggro values. He even activated his {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} without any hesitation.

He had to go all out the DPS of Wei Yan Er was a little too much for him to handle. After all, that little brat had a Class A

Inheritance backing her power up. Even Zhang Yang might not be able to fully maintain the aggro value that she would get from the boss when she launches her full assaults on the boss.

Whenever Zhang Yang had used up all his Skills that could create a large amount of aggro, Wei Yan Er would catch up with him and even go beyond that! Naturally, the boss turned her attention over to the little brat and launched her assaults on her.

Fortunately, even though Wei Yan Er was not a Tanker, she could resist most of the Shadow Damage that was dealt by the boss. It was all thanks to the attributes that her Darkness Inheritance bestowed upon her. Furthermore, she also had help from Han Ying Xue. With some healing support from a super Healer, Wei Yan Er managed to tank against the boss! She actually did it!

"Hahaha! It seems that you're not that big a deal, noob tank! I can also tank against the boss even though I'm not a Tanker! Are you so ashamed of yourself that you're thinking of banging yourself to death with a bean curd?" Wei Yan Er was very cocky. Her tail perked up high into the air.

After activating her Class A Inheritance, she would actually be capable of going up solo against a boss of the same level and same Tier as her and her equipment.

However, Zhang Yang decided not to bother himself with her. He just smiled vaguely and swung harder at the boss. Since that he was no longer the Tanker at the moment, why not deal more damage to the boss while he was at it?

The boss had a ridiculously long HP bar. However, the party could deal 400,000 damage in every passing second. If nothing goes south, they could take down the boss in approximately 4 minutes. Once the amount of HP on the boss is reduced to a certain amount, the effect of {Spectre Build} would be weakened. The boss could only heal 1,000,000 HP every 30 seconds now. The recovery rate has been reduced down to 33,000 damage per second. The boss was so much weaker now!

After just 5 minutes, the boss let out a miserable scream and fell before the blades of Zhang Yang and his gang. She also dropped quite a number of loots upon her demise. However, a blood-red mist started rising around the boss, all of a sudden. The blood mist began to hiss out of the boss' body, and she started rising back to her feet again.

The darkness in her eye sockets flickered, followed by two greenish flames bursting to life, right in the middle of each eyes sockets. Although her eye sockets were now hollow, something that appeared to be smoky red sclera settled down around the flames.

[Blood Necromancer Garces: The Disorientated] (Ethereal, Spectre)

Level: 146

HP: 200,000,000

Defense: 9,410

Magic Attack: 42,128 - 52,128

Skills:

[Corruption Arrow]: Corrupts the target, causing 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to the target. Casting Time: 2 seconds.

[Spectre Build]: Recover 1% HP once in every 30 seconds. Recovery rate will not be affected by any other effects.

[Blood Shadow Arrow]: Fires out countless blood arrows in all directions that disorients the targets, causing 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to each of the targets. Targets will enter a state of confusion for 3 seconds.

[Undead Regeneration]: Resurrects from death and evolves into Blood Necromancer Garces: The Annihilator.

The boss actually dropped an equipment! Wei Yan Er picked it up with her fast hands. However, she pouted after having a look at the equipment, then she said, "God damn it! It's just a Mythical Tier equipment!"

"Haha! Not bad at all! So the boss can drop some equipment every time she dies, I assume. This is the first time we have actually encountered such a boss! It will get even better if we can kill the boss a few more couple of times!"

"However, the boss becomes two times stronger after she resurrects herself! That's horse sheet!"

After the boss had resurrected herself, her HP bar was restored back to full. Furthermore, all negative effects on her before that were all gone. Her aggro list was reset. It was like a new boss battle for Zhang Yang and the gang.

Zhang Yang threw his Skills at the boss consecutively to regain the boss's aggro. However, what he did there was just temporary. The amount of damage that Wei Yan Er could deal to the boss while she was in her Transformation state was far too great. She would just end up diverting the aggro of the boss over onto her.

As expected, in just tens of seconds, the aggro of the boss flew over to her. However, the situation was only temporary. The little brat became so full of herself that she began to taunt Zhang Yang. Even Endless Starlight could not escape the little brat's taunting even though he did not say a word. Every word stabbed into his collateral heart, wounding the tank's pride.

In this second form, the boss had gained another new Skill. Healers now had a tougher time. Furthermore, her HP had been doubled. {Spectre Build} now gave her, even more, HP recovery. The boss battle just became much harder than before!

"You weak living beings are not worthy of even existing in this world!" the eyes of Garces gave out a cold, murderous chill as she let out a thunderous roar. Countless blood red arrows flew out

right from her body towards all directions into her surroundings.

{Blood Shadow Arrow}!

This was a troublesome Skill for every player in the boss battle. Not only it could strike out as an AoE attack that could deal an immense amount of damage, but it could also afflict the players within the effective range of the Skill with Confusion Effect. They would be turning around in confusion upon getting hit by the Skill.

"Chaos... blood... suffering..." Garces sang out in the soprano voice of a lady as she waved her staff and shot out a buckshot of {Corruption Arrow} at Wei Yan Er. Wei Yan Er managed to snap out of her Confusion Effect a little sooner than the others.

"Stinky boss! Don't be cocky now! Let me teach you a lesson that you will never forget!" Wei Yan Er was infuriated. She was an extremely emotional person. Game or no game, NPC or no NPC, she would not tolerate any loss on her end.

Everyone gradually recovered from the Confusion at their own paces. Then, everyone focused back on launching their assaults on the boss. Spellcasters had the disadvantage of being interrupted as they chant their spells. If they get interrupted 0.1 seconds before they can finish chanting their spells, they would be forced to chant all over again.

The amount of 200,000,000 HP was not an issue at all for Zhang Yang's party. Under the oppressive assaults of the party, the HP

bar of the boss reduced at an extremely fast rate. In just about 10 minutes, the HP bar of the boss had dropped below 20%. It was once again the 'killing cleave' stage of the boss battle.

The {Glare of the Death God} that Zhang Yang threw on the boss was resisted, once again. Because the boss would be resurrecting herself one more time, the amount of HP that the boss would have when she comes back again would be much higher, theoretically speaking. Meanwhile, the {Glare of the Death God} would reduce the HP bar based on percentages. Obviously, the higher the amount of HP the boss would have, the more damage the {Glare of the Death God} could cause on the boss.

"This world is bound to be doomed! You all are going to die!" Garces screeched out as she realized that her HP bar was getting lower and lower. The rate of her activating her {Blood Shadow Arrow} was getting higher and higher. The players spent half the time fighting off the Confusion effect, more than anything. They could not even launch their assaults properly as their HP bars reduced steeply at every passing second.

"Hit harder!"

Even though the party was supported by two powerful Healers, the HP level of every member of the party was making its way down to the critical level. The {Blood Shadow Arrow} was activated on the basis of once every 6 seconds. Without the support of the Inheritance Transformation Skill, any player would be in grave danger of being killed any time soon.

Daffodil Daydream had removed herself from the front line.



Under the frequent bombardment of {Blood Shadow Arrow}, she could only launch a spell attack at the boss once every 6 seconds. Not only was her damage output poor, she also required the healing attention from the Healers which would reduce their healing efficiency. Instead, she decided to remove herself from the effective range of the {Blood Shadow Arrow} and stay idle for the moment. By doing that, she could at least reduce the pressure that is placed upon Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart.

Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight took turns in activating their {Vanguard's Aggression}. By doing so, they managed to maintain the rate of HP reduction of each of the party members. Everyone grit their teeth as the heat of the battle was getting worse and worse by the second. However, they managed to empty out the HP bar of the boss by the end of it.

Garces let out another miserable scream as she collapsed to the ground. This time, she dropped two pieces of equipment. Once again, the dead body of the boss began to get shrouded in blood mist. As expected, the boss got back to her feet again.

[Blood Necromancer Garces: The Annihilator] (Ethereal, Spectre)

Level: 146

HP: 400,000,000

Defense: 9,410

Magic Attack: 42128-52128

Skills:

[Corruption Arrow]: Corrupts the target, causing 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to the target. Casting Time: 2 seconds.

[Spectre Build]: Recovers 1% HP once every 30 seconds. Recovery rate will not be affected by any other effects.

[Blood Shadow Arrow]: Fires out countless blood arrows in all directions that can disorient the targets, causing 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to each of the targets. Targets will enter a state of confusion for 3 seconds.

[Woeful Wound]: Causes 200% Magic Attack of Spell Damage to the target. The target will suffer a reduction of 10% on the amount of damage they can deal. Lasts for 15 seconds. The effects will not stack.

"What the f\*ck! Her HP has been upgraded again! It was not stages 1 and 2, what's this a cancer? Stage 1, 2, 3?! F\*ck my life!" Endless Starlight let out a roar of disdain.

Well, taking on a boss with 400,000,000 HP instead of 300,000,000 HP would mean that the party would have to deal 33,000 damage more than what they previously attained. In other words, the amount of damage the party could deal on the boss every second had been reduced by a total of 33,000 damage. That

was approximately 10% of the party's firepower.

Zhang Yang went straight up to tank the boss as per usual while Wei Yan Er got to picking.

"Wow! The boss was so generous this time! Other than a useless Mythical equipment, there is an Ethereal Tier equipment!" Wei Yan Er was surprised as she shared its attributes.

[Blood Necromancer's Casual Boots] (Ethereal, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +64

Vitality: +2,178

Intelligence: +745

Spirit: +318

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 1,490 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 5.6%.

Equip: Absorbs 641 damage when being hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 140

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

This equipment was already better than three pieces of Cloth Armor even before it has been identified. Therefore, Han Ying Xue and the other two ladies rolled to decide on who would get it. By the end of it, Fantasy Sweetheart got lucky and won the bet. She put the equipment on the moment she got it. Switching an equipment while the player is in battle state would be much slower than switching equipment during a casual time. Although Fantasy Sweetheart momentarily lost some healing per second rate, it was a loss worth taking. With her attributes boosted further, her healing efficiency became much higher than ever.

"Damn you!" When the boss saw that Fantasy Sweetheart equipped the pair of boots, she suddenly got infuriated as if she was stabbed in her 'pressure point'.

Fatty Han immediately pointed at the boss's feet and said, "Haha! So the equipment that she dropped earlier on were her own equipment! Look at her bare feet now! Haha!"

Everyone glanced down and they saw that what Fatty Han said was true! The boss was now barefooted. In fact, the boss had also dropped a ring and a pair of gloves. However, no one had noticed that at all. If Fantasy Sweetheart did not wear the equipment that she just acquired, who would have noticed the small details of it?

# Chapter 649: Mist Death Knight

---

Fatty Han suddenly revealed a dreadful expression on his face, and he said, "What a pity that the boss did not drop her clothes and her pants!"

The mind of a wretched one would of course be... wretched. If the boss had really dropped her clothes and pants, she would be battling Zhang Yang and his party with her jiggly tatas and her big badabooms exposed!

Everyone shook their heads at what Fatty Han had to say. Only Endless Starlight sighed along with Fatty Han. After all, he was a feather from the same flock as Fatty Han. During the battle with the boss, Endless Starlight was swinging his hammer so much harder than before, as if he was wishing that his hammer would knock off the clothes and pants of the boss!

Although the boss had gained another new Skill upon her most recent resurrection, the rate of activating her {Blood Shadow Arrow} was now much lower. The threat that she posed to the party had diminished. Zhang Yang and all his party members split out into formation as they continued to launch their assaults on the boss as aggressively as they could.

Zhang Yang managed to secure first place on the boss's aggro list. However, Wei Yan Er came up with her immense damage and snatched the aggro of the boss over to her. One of the reasons being Zhang Yang was afflicted by the {Woeful Wound} which caused his attacks to be weakened a lot. The little brat got another opportunity to taunt Zhang Yang.

However, the boss had also activated her {Woeful Wound} on Wei Yan Er. The little brat's attack was instantly reduced by 10%! 15 seconds later, the effect of {Woeful Wound} on Zhang Yang had faded. Therefore, he slowly made his way back up to the little brat as he began to gain more aggro.

When the HP bar of the boss dropped below 80%, Zhang Yang succeeded in getting the aggro of the boss fixed on him.

However, the moment the effect of {Woeful Wound} on the little brat had faded, her attack power was restored again! It was Zhang Yang's turn to be afflicted by the negative effect of the {Woeful Wound} this time. Before Zhang Yang could even take a clear look at the boss's face, Wei Yan Er came back with her immense power and snatched the boss's aggro back.

It was actually good for the two of them to exchange aggro. By doing so, the Healers could heal them in turn, at leisure.

As the amount of HP the boss is now boosted up to a total of 400,000,000 HP, the amount of HP that she can recover every second had reached up to a total of 130,000 HP. In other words, the intensity of the party dealing damage to the boss had been greatly affected. The speed of reduction of the HP bar of the boss had been slowed down a lot.

"Aiya! The parties that we left behind have caught up!" Han Ying Xue let out a dismayed scream.

Everyone in Zhang Yang's party could not help but stare at each other. At that instant, they were at 60% of the overall progression. The distances between the Stone Bridges are now down to 2 kilometers. Although 2 kilometers is still quite a distance in the real world, players could already see each other clearly on each side of the Stone Bridge in the game.

The progression of the Land of Savages and Blood Alliance were considered to be average. They were beginning to take on the second boss in her first stage.

"Worry not, we're far ahead of them!" Zhang Yang laughed as he said. Although the other parties seemed to have caught up with Zhang Yang and his party by the looks of it, Zhang Yang's party still have 5 players who had not yet activated their Inheritance Transformations. They also had two oppressively powerful Phoenix pets which could also transform into even more powerful states.

At their current stage, they could clearly see their advantage over the other parties that had just arrived. Some of the parties were still engaged with the Necromancers and the other monsters. They had not even met the boss yet. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang and his party were almost done with the third boss.

Compared to the boss' second stage, Garces only had one more additional Skill which only could deal damage to one target at a time. She was not that powerful. The HP bar of the boss was reducing at a good speed. However, Zhang Yang could not afford to be careless. Once the boss's HP drops down to 20%, the boss would activate her {Blood Shadow Arrow} more frequently. That would

definitely slow his party down in killing the boss.

If the party could not deal damage half the time while battling the boss, the DPS of the entire party would drop down to 200,000 damage only. In the meantime, the boss would recover 130,000 HP every second. It would become even harder for the party to bring down the HP bar of the boss. Meanwhile, the damage that the {Blood Shadow Arrow} could deal to the party was immensely high. Zhang Yang and his gang would have to take out the boss as soon as possible if they do not want to be wiped out by the boss.

To solve the problem, everyone could only reserve their hard-hitting Skills for the 'Killing Cleave' stage of the boss battle. Of course, if the {Glare of the Death God} is not resisted again, they should be doing fine in killing the boss.

20 minutes later, Garces's HP bar had finally dropped down to 20%. The eyes of the boss turned bloody red all of a sudden as she started hissing and screeching all the way throughout the battle. Although her Attack was not increased, the rate of the boss activating her {Blood Shadow Arrow} became more frequent than before. When her HP bar was dropped down to 10%, she would activate her {Blood Shadow Arrow} even more frequently! That would be pure madness!

18%, 16%, 14%!

Because Zhang Yang and his gang kept getting afflicted by the effect of {Blood Shadow Arrow}, they could not channel their damage output at the boss properly. The reduction of the boss's HP bar began to slow down.



It was about time.

Zhang Yang raised up his hand and threw his {Glare of the Death God} to try out his luck once again.

Phew! A wretched skull began to form on top of the boss!

It was not resisted! Praise the lord!

Everyone cheered, as that had marked the boss's death!

"You stinky boss! Let's see how you crawl back up this time!" Wei Yan Er laughed like a mad lady as she began to feel the rush of slashing the boss up.

‘-4,000,000!’

‘-4,000,000!’

Under the affliction of the {Glare of the Death God}, the boss lost 4,000,000 HP each time the special effect kicked in. With her HP bar getting lower and lower every passing second, she also brought the rate of activating {Blood Shadow Arrow} up to a whole new level! Because of the Confusion Effect left everyone unable to attack, the party only managed to trigger the special effect of {Glare of the Death God} 7 times. They were forced to look at the remaining 3 chances go to waste.

It was very unfortunate.

However, the outcome of the battle had been fixed! Nothing would matter anymore at this stage!

4%, 3%, 2%, 1%!

The boss screamed out miserably and collapsed onto the ground for the third time. This time, she did not get back up on her feet. Not anymore.

"Wahaha! I have to admit that you're a strong opponent! Unfortunately, you met me!" Wei Yan Er was spouting out some lines from a movie she saw. No one knew which.

"Alright... stop fooling around and get on with the loots. We need to move!"

"Hehe!" Wei Yan Er quickly went up and picked every single loot on the ground. Then, the gang continued forward.

Because the Inheritance Transformation of the little brat was coming to an end, Hundred Shots had to activate his {Fire Transformation} to maintain their momentum of progressing forward. By doing so, he turned himself into a man on fire.

However, his Inheritance was only Class B Inheritance after all.

Furthermore, he did not have any additional Shadow Damage resistance on him at all. Hence, Hundred Shots could not handle the monsters like how little brat did. He could only handle as many as 15 Elite Tier monsters at the same time.

Well, it did not matter much either. Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight could also tank against a couple of monsters. The party could still maintain the rate of their progress at taking on approximately 25 Necromancers at the same time.

"Haih... the boss was so stingy... she only dropped one or two equipment every time she died." Wei Yan Er sighed in disappointment.

"Haha. Well, even if what you say is true, she did drop her equipment three times. So, if we look at the sum of equipment by the end of the boss battle, we still gained a lot!"

"Bingo!" Wei Yan Er bounced up and down as she ran up to the rest of the party members. "This time, the boss dropped a piece of Ethereal Tier equipment, a piece of Mythical Tier equipment which is pretty useless to us, and a piece of [Skill Point Crystal]!"

[Banshee's Howl](Ethereal, Accessory)

Equip: Increases Damage by 8%.

Use: Transforms into a Screeching Banshee. When struck, the target that hits you will be afflicted with Terror Effect and will run

around. Terror Effect will last for 3 seconds. Transformation will last for 15 seconds. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

Required Level: 140

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

"Wow! This piece of accessory can really be useful in a PvP match!"

"It's suitable for those who are ugly and always targeted by the enemies!"

Everyone turned around and fixed their eyes on Han Ying Xue at the same time. Because her healing ability was so ridiculously powerful, she would become the primary focus of the enemy during any Team Battle in a League Championship competition. With this piece of accessory, her survival capability would increase without any doubt.

"... is my face... that ugly...?" Han Ying Xue cried in misery.

"Enough of this nonsense! We're giving this to you for free! You should be happy!"

After shoving the accessory piece over to Han Ying Xue, everyone turned their attention over to the [Skill Point Crystal]. Everyone argued that they should be the one who gets the item. So by the end of it, everyone rolled and Wei Yan Er won the bet. She shoved

the crystal into her inventory with that cocky face of hers.

After pushing forward for another 20 minutes, they were very close to engaging the third boss. On the other side, although the first stage of Garces was very simple, the second stage and the third stage of the boss made the boss battle extremely difficult. It was all because of one additional Skill called {Blood Shadow Arrow}. Even Zhang Yang and his party had trouble dealing with the waves of attacks from that particular Skill. It would be perfectly understandable for the other parties to struggle against the boss.

It was clear in the map that 7 parties were being sent back to their beginning points. In other words, they would need to go through everything from the start all over again. Now that they had been in the mist for almost 8 hours, and most of them had activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills, so it would not be possible for the parties to start all over and catch up with the parties who were still in lead. They were all as good as being eliminated from the 'contest'.

There were only 5 parties remaining in the lead. Meanwhile, only three parties could pose a threat to Zhang Yang's party. The parties would be the party of 20 coming from 3 o'clock, Land of Savages coming from 7 o'clock and an unknown party coming from 10 o'clock.

The number of Necromancers began to decrease as Zhang Yang and his party proceeded on. Instead, more and more Death Knights appeared in the surroundings. They were all riding on their battle horses of death. They were wearing metal plates and pitch black

armor. They were holding long swords as well, ready to engage in any battle with anyone who comes for them.

[Mist Death Knight] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 145

HP: 2,900,000

Defense: 3,780

Melee Attack: 52,980 - 62,890

Skills:

[Death Strike]: 10% rate of the Death Knight dealing double damage.

[Death Blow]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. 100% of the damage will be converted to HP and heals the caster.

Note: Death Knights are the most dreadful monsters on this land. You're as good as dead when they shine the reflection of their swords upon you!

Looking at those monsters, Zhang Yang and his party did not

dare to lure too many of them over. Zhang Yang only lured 7 Death Knights over to him. Meanwhile, Endless Starlight only lured 4. On the other hand, Hundred Shots could only lure 7 to 8 Death Knights, even with his boosted amount of HP. Any more than that, he might not survive.

It was a thrilling experience to battle against the Death Knights. It could cost a life if players are not careful when Death Knights started directing the reflections of the swords upon them. However, despite the fact that these Death Knights were a nightmare to deal with, their drops were not bad at all. Violet-Platinum Tier equipment dropped, one after another. Some of them were even Set pieces. They could be sold at hundreds of gold coins in the market, each. Fatty Han, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were very joyful as they continued slaughtering. After all, these three could only see money in their eyes.

Zhang Yang and his party pushed on forwards for tens of minutes before they received news that the party of 20 coming from the 3 o'clock direction had finally taken down the third boss in her third stage. They began to move forward in an attempt to catch up with Zhang Yang and his party. Not long after that, the Land of Savages party coming from 7 o'clock and the unknown party coming from 5 o'clock also managed to kill the boss and continued forward with their progress. Meanwhile, Captain America and his party was wiped out by the boss.

And then, there were four...

"They really are persistent!" Zhang Yang brought up the map and glanced at it. Then he said, "Brothers and sisters, pick up the pace!"

"Noob tank, should we activate another Transformation Skills to speed things up?" Wei Yan Er was a little worried.

"No need for that, yet. We shall wait until Hundred Shot's Transformation Skill is over before letting Daffodil Daydream activate hers. After that, we shall take out the 4th boss. When that boss goes down, we shall open the floodgates and activate all available Inheritance Transformation Skills. By then, the other 3 parties will only be able to stare at their maps as we vanish from their sights! It's pointless to move fast now, we should give the other parties some hope first!"

"Sigh... you're so evil, noob tank!"



# Chapter 650: Death Knight, Ishildur

---

It took Zhang Yang and his party approximately 2 hours to clear out every single Death Knights in the surroundings before they finally stood before the 4th boss. The Transformation Skill of Hundred Shots had expired for some time by now. However, Daffodil Daydream had activated her {Soul Breaker Transformation} right after that. She made sure that their party would always have at least one player with a Transformation Skill active.

The 4th boss was a Death Knight riding on a 3-meter tall and 5-meter long battle horse. That battle horse was gigantic! It was covered in metallic armor all over. The boss was larger than any ordinary player in the game. He looked intimidatingly large as he rode on the back of his battle horse. This was clearly two bosses in one battle. There was also a blade that went as long as 7 meters slung across the back of the boss. There were many words that could be used to describe the boss and his battle horse, but ‘domineering’ was definitely among those lines.

The attack range of Melee combatants had varying reach. For instance, two-handed weapons were basically one and a half meters longer than one-handed weapons. It meant that players with two-handed weapons would be able to attack one and a half meter further than those who wielded one-handed weapons. However, this Death Knight’s weapon seemed to be 7 meters long! His attack range could be considered as vast the attack range of a ranged Class!

[Death Knight, Ishildur] (Ethereal, Spectre)

Level: 148

HP: 800,000,000

Defense: 9,410

Melee Attack: 60,138 - 70,138

Skills:

[Death Strike]: There is a 33% chance to deal double damage to the target.

[Death Plague]: Unleashes a plague into the surroundings and cause 60,000 Shadow Damage to all non-Spectre beings.

[Spectre Build]: Recovers 1% HP once in every 30 seconds. Recovery amount will not be affected by any other effect.

[Blood of Madness]: Every time when Ishildur loses 10% HP, his damage dealt will be increased by 10%.

Note: Ishildur is the synonym of 'Death'. When he pulls out his sword, there will be bloodshed and slaughter.

"Oh my god... I was so happy to see that the Attack of the boss

was similar to the Attack of an Elite Tier Death Knight... apparently, the boss would get more agitated as he loses his HP... god damn it!" Everyone began to frown and curse the moment they came across the description for the {Blood of Madness}.

"It's still alright. At least the boss does not have any automated Skills other than normal attacks." Zhang Yang nodded. "{Death Strike} has a rate of 33%. That would mean it might be triggered once in every 3 attacks. The damage is still within acceptable parameters."

"We're only 20% away from completion now. Should we activate all our Inheritance Transformation Skills then?"

Zhang Yang gave some thoughts on it and said, "Then Ice queen should activate her Transformation Skill. Phoenix pets are more suitable for area battles that involve large numbers of monsters. Witchy Snow only excels in her Healing Capability, nothing else!"

"Hahaha! Are you asking sister Sun to work overtime to the point that her mother might not recognize her?" Wei Yan Er laughed out loud.

Zhang Yang flicked his finger against Wei Yan Er's forehead with a thwack and said, "Don't be delusional. Ice queen is not like you! You cannot differentiate what's important and what's not!"

"You stinky noob tank! Stop hitting my forehead! It's swelling up like a bun now!" Wei Yan Er snarled at Zhang Yang, baring her teeth.

"Let's move out!"

Zhang Yang took the lead and led his party members into battle. Everyone took their positions as they already knew where they should be and what they should do.

"Death is just the beginning of all things!" Ishildur uttered his 'slogan' as he rode out on his battle horse towards Zhang Yang and his gang. Swinging his long-\*ss sword across the battlefield, the boss could reach Zhang Yang from afar. The cartoonish longsword as unexpectedly swift. Zhang Yang could only see a flash of light as if the sword was moving at lightning speed!

However, Zhang Yang was not slow to react either. He raised his shield up right before the blade could touch him. Instantly, Zhang Yang blocked the blade with his {Block}. However, the boss was extremely strong and powerful. The impact of that powerful strike had almost pushed Phoenix pet down to the ground. Well, it pissed off the Phoenix pet, alright. It flapped its wings and glided over towards the boss in fury. It opened up its mouth and spat out a crimson blazing fire towards the boss.

"Annoying light!" Ishildur felt disturbed by the assault and he swung his hand across the air and said, "Get lost!"

The blazing flames that were spat out by the Phoenix pet were extinguished all in an instant. Still, the boss took the full damage of it. It was just some cinematic visual effect that they could ignore.

Sun Xin Yu activated her {Shadow Dancer Transformation} on the spot as a pair of mysterious-black translucent wings spread out from her back. Upon entering her 'Stealth mode', she fluttered her wings a little and activated her {Leap Dodge}. By doing so, she arrived at the rear of the boss in a flash. With her dual swords ready in both of her hands, she activated {Ambush} as two flashes of lights were seen cutting across the boss! The boss took a great amount of damage.

‘-311,947!’

‘-155,973!’

Two extremely high damage values popped right up on top of the boss. Her aggro values instantly exceeded the amount of aggro Zhang Yang had. The boss turned around immediately and launched his assaults on her.

--- It made perfect sense. Without her transformation, she could already deal as much damage as Zhang Yang. Upon activating her Transformation Skill, she acquired an increment of 500% on her damage. So it was natural to see Sun Xin Yu at the top of the boss's aggro list. Although Tankers could create additional aggro values with their attacks and Skills, nothing would top that sheer amount of damage gap.

However, Sun Xin Yu initially had over 200,000 HP. That amount of HP was boosted up by 40 times the moment when she activated her Transformation Skill. Hence, her Maximum HP had

reached up to 8,000,000 HP. Though the boss was hitting hard, her HP bar stood strong.

However, a DPS player is not a Tanker, after all. There is a huge difference between the Defense of a Thief and the Defense of a Tanker. She could still get into trouble if left untended to. Han Ying Xue, Fantasy Sweetheart and the other three Battle Companions also had to heal the others other than Sun Xin Yu, in order to counteract the boss's {Death Plague} at the same time. Hence, they were not able to fully focus on healing Sun Xin Yu's HP back up.

In other words, Sun Xin Yu was relying on her 8,000,000 HP to tank against the boss. The moment her HP level was decreased down to a critical level, she would have to activate her {Vanish} to withdraw from the boss's aggro. Or, she could activate her life-saving Skill --- for instance, Zhang Yang had his {Radiance of the God of War} and Sun Xin Yu had her {Slaughtering Feast}. Upon the activation of {Slaughtering Feast}, Sun Xin Yu could recover her HP back to full within 10 seconds while causing immense damage to her enemy.

Based on Zhang Yang's understanding of this woman, Sun Xin Yu would definitely hold up until her HP bar is almost at the bottom. Upon that, only she would activate her {Slaughtering Feast} to recover her HP back to full. She would continue battling the boss until she is one again in the red. Only then would she use her {Vanish} to get clear of the boss's aggro.

As expected of her, Sun Xin Yu's HP bar almost hit the bottom 5 minutes later. A bright red mark flashed across her body as she

began to spin rapidly like a spinning top. Her sharp blades turned the boss into mincemeat!

[Slaughtering Feast]: Causes damage based on the Attack of both Primary Weapon and Secondary Weapon once every second. At the same time, recover 10% of HP each second. Lasts for 10 seconds.

When the bladed 'top' stopped spinning, she had almost fully recovered. The boss was infuriated for receiving heavy damage from her. He began to swing his blade at Sun Xin Yu so strongly that the air was swept up by the force of the swing. It seemed like the boss was attempting to vent out his anger towards Sun Xin Yu.

"Sister Sun looks to bad\*ss when she was using that Skill!" Wei Yan Er widened her eyes. She looked like a fangirl admiring Sun Xin Yu, "That's so much stronger than noob tank's {Radiance of the God of War}! Not only can she recover her HP, she can also cause a lot of damage to the boss!"

Zhang Yang silently smiled. Although {Slaughtering Feast} could recover HP and deal damage at the same time, life-saving Skills were meant to keep users alive. Furthermore, healing in one shot is always much better than healing over time. Well, healing over time would take time in order to fully heal a player. For instance, Sun Xin Yu required 10 seconds to fully heal herself. The healing effect would only kick in once in every second. Just imagine a player being shot by hundreds of arrows after one click of the regeneration, wouldn't the player be dead, still?

"Rest in peace for all eternity!" the boss roared out loud. His ignited Spectral eyes danced about violently.

Because the boss had an extremely long HP bar, and the boss had {Spectre Build} to recover some amount of HP over time, so this boss battle would definitely exceed an hour. Zhang Yang attempted to use {Glare of the Death God} at the beginning of the boss battle. However, the Skill was resisted by the boss.

"Haha!" Ishildur revealed a disdainful look on his face, "I'm the embodiment of Death itself! How dare you try such parlor tricks on me! How dare you try to use a curse on me!"

"What a clever boss! He actually knows how to curse with idioms!"

"Let's give him a small red rose as a reward!"

Fatty Han and Endless Starlight immediately 'joined forces' in taunting the boss. Ishildur was provoked to the point that he almost wanted to jump off his battle horse and charge after them.

Sun Xin Yu managed to last for another 5 minutes. Her HP bar was once again going to hit the bottom. So, she quickly activated her {Vanish} and got herself clear of the boss's aggro. She handed the responsibility of tanking the boss back to Zhang Yang. Given tens of minutes to get himself replenished, Zhang Yang was certain that he had built enough aggro value on himself, giving Sun Xin Yu the gap of 5 minutes to channel all her damage onto the boss without going OT1.

Meanwhile, {Vanish} only had a 5-minute cooldown period. As



long as she does not put herself at the risk of going OT, then she would never be attacked by the boss throughout the entire battle -- - unless Zhang Yang falls or activates his {Shadow of the Void} to clear the aggro values on him.

Although Zhang Yang could not beat Sun Xin Yu without his Transformation, he still had over 720,000 HP while mounted in his pet. So he need not worry about being taken out by the boss in an instant. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang also had extremely high Defense, extremely high Damage Immunity. These attributes had greatly reduced the pressure on Han Ying Xue and the other Healers.

80%, 70%, 60%. The HP of the boss was slowly decreasing. However, on the contrary, the Attack power of Ishildur was slowly increasing because of his {Blood of Madness}. He could deal approximately 100,000 damage with only one normal hit.

However, the biggest threat came from the {Death Plague}. The Skill would cause DOT effect to all players within the effective range. Every single member of the gang was suffering damages of 100,000 consecutively. Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were having a very hard time healing the party up.

At the same time, Battle Companions with weaker Attacks had all but left the frontlines to prevent adding pressure on the Healers at the rear. The boss battle was getting harder and harder by the second as the HP bar of the boss got lower and lower. The battle was going to get even tougher soon.

By the time when the battle entered the 'killing cleave' stage, the boss's Attack would have been boosted up by 80%! The rate of

activating his Skills would become even higher than before. That would prove to be a great threat to Zhang Yang and his party.

It was ironic. To kill the boss, they must bring down the HP bar of the boss as quickly as possible. On the contrary, the Attack of the boss would increase and cause the battle to become tougher the more damage the boss takes. When that happens, the entire party might be wiped out!

While everyone was trying to wrap their heads around this self-contradiction, the HP bar of the boss was reducing at a constant rate. In more than an hour, the HP bar of the boss had dropped down to 20%. The battle had entered its 'killing cleave' stage!

Ishildur was acting like a roided up undead. He activated his {Death Plague} more frequently than ever, causing havoc to the party's HP bars!

Fortunately, Zhang Yang had {Vitality Aura} with him. Everyone's Maximum HP was boosted up by a notch. Furthermore, the {Life Aura} that Han Ying Xue was carrying had increased the healing efficiency of any sorts of healing effects. The party was not wiped out, even if they were that close to death.

"Silly Yu! We can't keep up anymore! I'm activating my Transformation Skill now!" Han Ying Xue said.

"No! Stop!" Zhang Yang shook his head decisively, "There's still one more boss up ahead! That boss should be much harder to take down than this one! It's best to reserve your Transformation Skill

until then!"

"Just hang in there!"

"That's right! Zhang Yang could just throw {Glare of the Death God} when the HP of the boss drops down to 12% or 13%! Then, the boss should be as good as dead!"

"But what if the boss resists that again?" Wei Yan Er slipped her tongue and said it out loud. She immediately became the focal point of everyone's eyes! The little brat blushed in shame as she knew she said something wrong, so she said, "Why are you guys looking at me like that? I'm feeling uncomfortable now!"

Oh my god... that little brat had managed to divert the others' attention away by acting cute. Well, she succeeded at least.

"I will eviscerate you!" Ishildur let out a raging roar. He was known to be the great Death Knight. Not only could he not take out a single one of these 'noobs', they had managed to deal quite a number on him. Of course, he would feel infuriated. Although the boss did not have the idea of HP bar and damage values, he knew that he would be eventually taken out by these insignificant living beings that he despised!

"Stinky boss! Just play nice and give us all the equipment you have on you!" Wei Yan Er laughed out loud while whirling about with her huge battle axe.

"Damn you puny living beings! How can you puny creatures have such immense power?!" As his HP bar was reduced even further, Ishildur was getting more surprised.

"Just hang on a little while more! We'll try our best to bring the HP bar of the boss down to 11%! Then, I shall throw the {Glare of the Death God} at him! We cannot afford to have the boss get 90% additional damage! We'll be wiped out!" Zhang Yang shouted out loud.

80% was their maximum limit if Han Ying Xue is to hold off on her transformation. If the boss could get 90% additional boost on his damage output, he could just wipe out the entire party by activating his {Death Plague} even more frequently. Wiping out the entire party could be done in just an instance!

14%, 13%, 12%, 11%!

The time where fate deals its hand has come!

Zhang Yang raised up his hand and threw out his {Glare of the Death God}.

Please do not resist! Please do not resist! Please do not resist!

Everyone was praying hard that the Skill would not be resisted. If the boss does resist the Skill, the party would need to activate the Phoenix pets' Transformation Skills just to hang on.

So did the Skill got resisted by the boss?

A dark skull emerged and formed right on top of the boss! It smiled wretchedly in complete silence!

It was a success!

"Hahaha! Stinky boss! Your doom is nigh!" Wei Yan Er attempted to act cute as she laughed.

‘-8,000,000!’

‘-8,000,000!’

The higher the amount of HP the boss had, the higher the damage that the {Glare of the Death God} could cause to the boss. Each trigger caused a total of 8,000,000 damage to Ishildur! Ishildur was furious. He roared continuously and said, "You damned living beings! I'm the great Death Knight Ishildur! I'll not be taken down by a bunch of weak, insignificant low-living beings!"

The HP bar of the boss had dropped down to 10%. Hence, his Attack power had received an additional 90% boost. Furthermore, the rate of Ishildur activating his {Death Plague} had been shortened down to once in every 5 seconds! It was as terrifying as it sounded!

Although the boss was near his own end, he was also at his most

destructive. Any oversight or careless mistakes could lead to fatalities!

9%, 8%, 7%... the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} was triggered consecutively under the heavy assaults of the gang. In just 7 seconds, the gang had managed to trigger the special effect 10 times. The HP bar of the boss was down to 1%!

Zhang Yang was forced to activate his {Vanguard's Aggression} in order to maintain the HP of all his party members. He even activated his {Rearm} so that he could use his {Vanguard's Aggression} two times in a row. Endless Starlight had also activated his {Vanguard's Aggression} right after Zhang Yang's second {Vanguard's Aggression} expired. By activating 3 {Vanguard's Aggression} consecutively, the two Tankers managed to buy a 30-second precious time frame for the other party members to launch their assaults on the boss.

However, after three effects of {Vanguard's Aggression} faded away, the gang started to get into trouble. Even their mounts will not keep them alive for long!

7,000,000! 5,000,000! 3,000,000! 1,000,000!

Hundred Shots, Daffodil Daydream , Fantasy Sweetheart and the others screamed miserably as they collapsed to the ground, one after another. However, the [Zombie Potion] kicked in and extended the boss' nightmare!

"%!^\$!\$#!!" The boss let out a series of undefined language. He

was probably cursing something like ‘son of the b\*tch’.

500,000! 200,000! 70,000!

"Argh ---" Ishildur let out a thunderous cry. He fell off the back of his battle horse, headfirst to the ground. Meanwhile, a magic circle with six-corner star appeared right beneath that battle horse. The next thing that happened was the horse disappearing into thin air. Wei Yan Er was not able to grab the horse before it disappeared. All she managed was to plant her face into the ground like the boss and gain a mouthful of sand.

# Chapter 651: Blood Driven Madness

---

It was the most troubling boss battle for them so far. Of course, the battle was only so troublesome and risky because everyone had to reserve some of their life-saving Skills and power for the battles that yet to come. If they ever come across any super bosses in the Open World Map, they could have easily bested the boss when every one of them activates their Inheritance Transformation Skills. They could just beat the boss into submission even if the boss goes berserk.

However, there were quite a number of bosses on this special map. This special map was designed to be like a dungeon. Therefore, the party must ration and distribute the Inheritance Transformation Skills wisely. As everyone could not simply activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills at the same time, it made things much harder in this map. The battles here were tougher as well.

Wei Yan Er went up and picked up the loots while Han Ying Xue was busy saving and resurrecting the other party members. Because {Redemption} had 5 minutes of cooldown period, Han Ying Xue decided to get Fantasy Sweetheart back on her feet first. By doing so, she increased the efficiency of saving the other party members.

Since everyone was waiting for everyone to be resurrected, it would be best to take a look at the loot first.

Wei Yan Er looked at the loot for quite a while before she said something. "Cutey Drizzler reporting here, the stinky boss has



dropped two Ethereal Tier equipment, two Mythical Tier equipment, one [Skill Book] and one Inheritance Fragment."

"Inheritance Fragment?! Of what class?"

The mention of Inheritance Fragment had perked everyone's ears up. Although 9 of them already acquired their very own Inheritances, they were very interested to see if the Inheritance would be compatible with Fantasy Sweetheart. Even if it was not compatible, they could also give it to someone in their own guild. Who would complain if they could have more players with Inheritances in their guild?

However, when Wei Yan Er posted out the description of the Inheritance, everyone was disappointed by it.

[Toxicant Zombie Inheritance Fragment] (Inheritance Class: D)

Description: - Irrelevant to the plot

It was just a Class D Inheritance which did not even have a Transformation Skill. Everyone was not happy with what they saw at all.

However, Zhang Yang revealed a smile on his face, then he said, "You guys should just stop thinking about Transformation Skills. If a guild can get 100 players with Class C Inheritances, that guild could be deemed as the number one guild without a doubt. Classes won't matter that much anymore when numbers overtake

everything else! Players with Class D and Class E Inheritances are the backbone of a guild!"

He shoved the fragment into his inventory with the intention to auction it in his guild. Any member of the Lone Desert Smoke would be able to obtain the fragment by exchanging it with some guild points. Although his party members did not show any sign of interest in this Inheritance Fragment, many members of his guild would be pretty interested in getting it! After all, there was not more than 12 players with Class C Inheritance in Lone Desert Smoke. Such Inheritance fragments could potentially be a unique existence for everyone in Lone Desert Smoke.

Fantasy Sweetheart was the most disappointed person among all. She was the only one who had not yet acquired an Inheritance up to this point. She felt left behind by the other party members as much as she felt that she was just holding the party back.

Wei Yan Er took out another crimson red necklace. Then she said, "Coming up next! A necklace!"

[Heart of Fire] (Ethereal, Necklace)

Vitality: +1,089

Intelligence: +373

Spirit: +373

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 740 points.

Equip: Increases both damage and healing efficiency by 5.6%.

Equip: Absorbs 321 damage when being hit.

Equip: Upon successful spell casting, there is a certain rate that you can shorten the casting time for your next spell by 50%.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 140

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

"Wow...is today a special day for Spellcaster? Why are all the equipment today Spell-types!?" Lost Dream laughed cynically.

"That's right! No fair! There are so many of us in need of Physical-type equipment here! The system keeps on giving us Spell-type equipment! How fair is that!?" Wei Yan Er nodded repeatedly.

"Alright, that's enough... it doesn't matter what type of equipment. Our party has grown much stronger now! That's what that matters most!"

Han Ying Xue did not back off from rolling for the equipment. By the end of it, this lucky woman is indeed very lucky. She won by scoring 99 points and 'eliminated' the two ladies. Hence, she claimed the powerful necklace as her own.

Another Ethereal Tier equipment was a misty gray pair of gauntlets. The surface of the gauntlets had the crafting of a dragon with its wings spread wide open ready to fly. The crafting was so real that the dragon seemed like it could just fly out of the gauntlets.

[Flying Dragon Gauntlets] (Ethereal, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +320

Vitality: +2,178

Strength: +7,45

Agility: +318

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 2,350 points.

Equip: Increases both damage and healing efficiency by 5.6%.

Equip: Absorbs 641 damage when struck.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 140

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

"My precious! My precious!" Endless Starlight was staring at the gauntlets with his glittering eyes. He could not move his eyes away from the gauntlets at all. At the same time, he was licking his lips as well! He did not care to maintain his image anymore. Everyone was laughing at him at the bottom of their hearts.

Zhang Yang could not bear to burst his bubble. So, he nodded at Wei Yan Er and Wei Yan Er spouted at him. Then the little brat raised up her hand and showed Zhang Yang one finger. Worry not, it was not her middle finger. She wanted to imply that Zhang Yang owed her one for this. The two of them gave up on rolling for the equipment. Hence, this powerful equipment had dropped into the possession of Endless Starlight. He became so joyful that he kept bowing at Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er for letting him have it.

"So what's the Skill of the Skill Book?" Everyone turned their attention over to the final Skill Book.

[Skill Book: Blood of Madness]

Use: Teaches you the Skill {Blood of Madness}.

Required Class: none.

Required Level: 100

Although the specific description about the Skill was not revealed just yet, everyone could guess what could the Skill do by observing the boss. Well, this Skill should be similar to the Skill that the boss had. After all, the two Skills were of the same name.

Zhang Yang already had a Skill called {God of War Heavy Axe}. He would be required to maintain his HP at maximum in order for him to deal a damage that was 3 times higher than his initial damage. On the other hand, {Blood of Madness} would only work better when the HP amount of the user was getting lower. Theoretically speaking, {Blood of Madness} could boost all attacks. It would be much more powerful than Zhang Yang's {God of War Heavy Axe}. However, having a low HP bar was a risk that any Tanker should not take. So Zhang Yang decided to give this Skill to others.

However, it could be concluded that {Blood of Madness} was most suited for Tankers. Because Tankers were always on the role of being beaten up. Even though the HP bars of Tankers rarely went down to 20% or 30% low, but it was normal for them to keep their HP bars up at the level of 50% or 60%. Therefore, this Skill could at least provide approximately 40% boost on the Tankers' damage that was equipped with this Skill. It would be a great power-up --- of course, only if the effect of this Skill would be the same as it was on the boss.

After rolling to decide who gets the Skill Book, Wei Yan Er won by scoring the highest roll among all. She claimed the Skill Book

and learned the Skill on the spot with joy flowing over her face. However, the moment after she learned the Skill, that joyful smile on her face froze.

[Blood of Madness (Passive)]: Whenever your total amount of HP is reduced by 10%, your total amount of damage dealt will be increased by 1%.

What the hell! The boss got a 10% increase in damage dealt and players only get 1% increase in damage dealt?! Even if the HP bar of the player drops down to below 10%, the player could only get 9% boost on damage dealt. No wonder the little brat was frowning so intensely just now.

"Don't be sad. These damage-boosts are like free bonuses. Don't tell me that you plan to solely rely on this Skill to boost your damage by reducing your HP. It's risky as hell! Furthermore, this is not an Inheritance Skill. So, stop dreaming and accept it! It'll be useful in the future!" Zhang Yang patted the little brat's head as he tried to comfort her.

"God damn it! God damn this!" Wei Yan Er was very, very unhappy about it.

The two Healers were busting their \*sses saving everyone back on their feet. 10 minutes later, they had finally saved all 5 members who got themselves killed during the boss battle. After distributing the items and equipment among themselves, the gang continued to push on forward. Well, the last part of an endeavor is the hardest to accomplish, a thing is not over until it is completed. Now that their progress was only at 80%, they could not afford to let their

guard down at all.

Zhang Yang and Fatty Han activated the Transformation Skills of their Phoenix Pet. The two royal blood Phoenixes emerged out of the blazing flames. The two Phoenixes looked stunning and intimidating! Unfortunately, that wretched fatty was only at Level 127. He had prevented his Phoenix pet from being able to reach Level 130. Therefore, the attributes of his Phoenix was much weaker than the attributes of Zhang Yang's Phoenix pet.

However, Fatty Han was a Beastman Hunter. So he could provide some boost on the attributes of his pet. Therefore the attributes of the two Phoenix pets were on the same level.

The moment the Transformation Skills of the two Phoenixes were activated, their AoE Attacks were now incredibly powerful.

Fatty Han did not mount himself onto his Phoenix. As he was a Hunter, he could use a Phoenix pet as his pet to battle alongside with him. At the same time, he could also summon his Pet Mount. He had multiple advantages over the other Classes in such regards. Meanwhile, the pet that the player mounts on would not retain their own Defense attributes. The Defense attribute would be based on the Defense of the player who is mounted on the pet mount. The Phoenix pet had over 16,680 Defense. If Fatty Han had mounted on it, then the Phoenix's high Defense would have gone to waste.

Zhang Yang was a Tanker. So his Defense was actually much higher than the Defense of his Phoenix pet. Therefore, it would be wiser for him to mount himself onto his Phoenix in order to boost



up its Defense. At the same time, mounting onto a pet could provide an abundant boost to the amount of their shared Maximum HP as well --- well, Zhang Yang initially had over 450,000 HP prior to the Transformation.

The two Phoenix pets flapped their majestic wings as they continued to spread hellfire across the hordes of their enemies. Upon their transformation, the ranged attack of the Phoenix pets could reach up to 20 meters far. The two of them were spreading their fire forward in a conical shape, torching up the entire section of the Stone Bridge. It was a spectacular scenery to gaze upon!

Although the attack range of the Phoenix pets was much shorter than the attack range of a player after they activate their Transformation Skills, the Phoenix pets could attack once every 2 seconds while using AoE attacks as their normal attacks. Only Phoenix and Dragon-type pets of Celestial Tier and above were capable of doing this!

Comparing one's capability in dealing AoE attack with a Phoenix's was only an act of depressing oneself.

Who would be able to compete with them?

The speed of the party's progression suddenly accelerated.

In a normal situation, a party's progression would only get slower and slower as they progress because they might be running short on playable cards, or simply running out of steam. However, Zhang Yang and his party were performing otherwise. They are

incredibly powerful. Their courage would only mount as the battle progresses! Furthermore, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had not yet activated their Class S Inheritance Transformation Skills!

"Hahaha! That party of 20 had been wiped out!" Lost Dream suddenly burst into laughter. Now that only 4 parties remained in getting to the finishing line, everyone was very concerned about the progress of the other parties.

The gang was confident enough to believe that they would triumph over the other parties if they were competing against each other under regular circumstances. Therefore, they were not fond of the 'Cheating Party' which had over 20 players. Unfortunately for them, the 4th boss was overwhelmingly powerful when his HP bar was low. When Ishildur only had 10% HP left, he went on a rampage with his highly boosted Attack power. A few measly Healers would not be able to catch up with the tremendous damage that the boss could deal.

Meanwhile, the total HP of Ishildur was extremely abundant. Even though there were 20 of them trying to bring down the 10% HP of the boss, it was not possible for it to be done within 1 or 2 minutes. Unless they had more players who could activate their Transformation Skills, they would only have one option left --- to wait and die!

However, how many more 'backup' players would still be able to activate their Transformation Skills, if any?

Numbers would mean nothing when they are standing before Inshildur. The party of 20 was so badly pummeled. However, they

also acquired some [Resurrection Monoliths] earlier in their progress. Many blinking dots suddenly appeared on the map. It was obvious that they had resurrected their Healers. That was how they managed to resurrect 4 players in such a brief period of time.

However, the fact that they could not take down the boss in their first attempt had led them down to a path where they no longer had a chance of defeating the boss --- the number of Transformation Skills would only decrease instead of otherwise as the progress goes on.

Zhang Yang and his party continued forward without thinking much about them. The number of Death Knights got lower and lower as they progressed onwards. A new type of monster is going to appear soon.

[Mist Death Raptor] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 148

HP: 2,960,000

Defense: 3,780

Melee Attack: 61,781 - 71,781

Skills:

[Trample of War]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to all targets within the range of 10 meters from the caster. Targets will be stunned. Lasts for 3 seconds.

[Pounce]: Causes 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

Note: Raptors were ferocious beasts before they were dead. They became even more powerful after they had been turned into Spectre.

# Chapter 652: Ghastly Frost Dragon

---

"More fake, shoddy goods again! Pui!" Wei Yan Er was infuriated immediately. While they were back on the mountains of '12 Zodiacs', she had been very eager to get a dragon as her pet. However, after exploring for half a day, she only came to realize that the so-called dragon mountain was inhabited by countless, flightless raptors. She was so disappointed and furious that she had committed it deep into memory. She had brought that grudge along with her ever since.

The two Phoenix pets were performing with great exemplary. The damage they dealt with the monsters were tremendous. These 10-meter tall raptors were considered to be the final line of Defense for the final boss. They were 'trampled' over by the two Phoenix pets with ease. Well, at least the monsters died trying to stop Zhang Yang and his party from progressing forward. Even though they failed, they went down honorably!

Upon activating the Phoenix Transformation Skills, the two Phoenix pets had attained powerful Attacks ranging from 72,882 damage to 82,876 damage. With each fire breath they spat across the hordes, they dealt so much damage on more than 10 monsters at a time. Furthermore, they could attack every 2 seconds. The waves of flames that blanketed the monsters were consecutive and deadly! All that the two Phoenix needed was 1 minute to clean out every single monster in the area.

It was an astonishing sight! They had never thought that these two Phoenix pets could perform so much better than a player with a Class B Inheritance Transformation!

After approximately half an hour of pushing forward, Zhang Yang and his party finally received news that Land of Savages and another unknown party from the direction of 10 o'clock had defeated the 4th boss. The two parties had finally made progress up to 80%, leaving only 20% left before completion. So now, only three parties remained in the contest of becoming the first in getting to the finishing point on the map. Although Zhang Yang and his party were leading on top, they did not dare let up or to make any careless mistakes. Because no one would know what the others had up in their sleeves that might turn the tables around. They could just use their triumph card at the final moment and wrap up the dungeon.

"They're approaching us at a very high speed!" Daffodil Daydream looked at the map. The two parties were progressing at a faster rate than Zhang Yang and his party. It seemed that they might stand a chance of overtaking Zhang Yang and his party, at this rate!

"They should have already activated all of their available Inheritance Skills!" Han Ying Xue made a guess.

"That's right! It's about time for the final showdown!" Zhang Yang nodded. Then he said, "However, we still have 20% to go. Judging from the difficulty of taking down the previous boss, I believe that the next boss will be even harder! They can catch up with us, or even overtake us now. But, how about the boss? When they reach the boss, they will not have any other Inheritance Transformations to use anymore. By then, do you think that they will last?"

"However, if they get left behind, they will not stand a chance to even catch up with us!" Daffodil Daydream said, "They must be wagering on the fact that there is no fifth boss!"

"If that's the case, they would really stand a great chance to beat us to the finishing point." Zhang Yang nodded. Then he continued, "But I think that possibility is unlikely to happen. If there's really no boss number 5, that would really make the contest look lame."

"Haha! Then let them come! We shall make a fair contest out of it with them!" Hundred Shots and the others were looking very sure of themselves.

If they really could not win such a fair contest with an equal number of players, they should only accept defeat gracefully.

The other two parties must have used all of their available Inheritance Transformation Skills in order to keep up with the pace of the contest. Perhaps they were progressing even faster than Zhang Yang and his party now. If that is the case, then Zhang Yang and his party would have a lot of trouble staying ahead of the other parties.

Every single party on the map were basically exhibiting their capabilities to the fullest as they were making their way towards the finishing point. Normal players would have their eyes popping out if they could just look at how swiftly these 3 parties are progressing forward. Their efficiency in slaying those high-level monsters was astoundingly high!

As they were taking out any means that were left up in their sleeves in order to push forward, the three parties were getting closer and closer to the finishing point. Every one of the parties was progressing faster and faster. As they approached the finishing line, the distance between the Stone Bridges was getting narrower and narrower as well. Everyone on the bridge could see everything that was happening on the other bridges. Only the party at 6 o'clock could not see the party from 12 o'clock, and vice versa.

The mysterious party that was coming from the direction of 10 o'clock finally revealed themselves. It appeared that they were from the Hell family in the Europe Region. Of course, one of the members of the party was that royal princess --- Dusk Phoenix. At the same time, that black Phoenix had also noticed Zhang Yang's presence on the other Stone Bridge. She began to wave at Zhang Yang in excitement. The other 9 members of her party revealed a sense of scorn on their faces. It seemed that they were rather envious or jealous of Zhang Yang.

Dusk Phoenix was true royalty. Her appearance was divinely beautiful, just like an angel that came down from the sky. Whoever gets to marry her would be showered with luxury beyond one's wildest dreams --- Well, that man would become the 'future' king of Luxembourg. Although it was just a title by the name without any real power, how many people in the world would have the luxury to enjoy having that title?

Therefore, upon seeing her wink at Zhang Yang ever so seductively, these men could not help but feel envious of Zhang Yang. They were on the verge of losing themselves. The idea of jumping over to the next bridge to duel with Zhang Yang definitely



crossed their minds. Well, no one could blame them for having such thoughts on Dusk Phoenix.

"That horny Phoenix! Pui!" Han Ying Xue spoke coldly.

Now that the three parties were able to see each other clearly, that meant that each of the Stone Bridges were reaching its end.

A gigantic creature was seen blocking in the middle of the Stone Bridge. Although the creature was nothing but bones, it was simply gigantic! It was astounding!

It was a gigantic, Frosty Ghost Dragon!

Gigantic dragons are considered to be the most powerful beings on earth, known to mankind. Meanwhile, even though this creature no longer lived, it would still be extremely powerful. The eternal resentment had turned this Celestial beast into a Ghost Dragon! There were 3 types of different attributes among the species of such dragons before they died. They were known to be Frost, Flame, and Shadow. The attributes of Natural-types and the Celestial-types were like fire and water. Even if the dragon had turned into Ghost Dragon, it would only possess only one attribute. It would either be Frost, Flame or Shadow.

[Misty Frosty Ghost Dragon] (Ethereal, Spectre)

Level: 150

HP: 1,000,000,000

Defense: 9,950

Melee Attack: 75,409 - 95,409

Skills:

[Frost Breath]: Spits out a breath of the dragon in a conical area, causing 80,000 Frost Damage to all targets within the effective area of the Skill.

[Spectre Build]: Recovers 1% HP once every 30 seconds. The recovery rate and amount will not be affected by any other effects.

[Dragon Wing Strike]: Flaps both wings and causes 100,000 Physical Damage to all targets within effective range. The targets will be blown away by a certain distance.

Note: The Frosty Ghost Dragon is guarding the final stage in the mist. However, throughout the countless ages, no warrior or adventurer had ever gone past it. They descended as Spectres upon their failures.

On every Stone Bridge, there was a wall made of air that looked a lot like a door in a dungeon. It was just right behind the Frosty Ghost Dragons on every Stone Bridge. Everyone could see the finishing point right behind that transparent air wall. The finishing point was the one point that connected all 12 Stone

Bridges right in the middle. That finishing point was a round stage, as large as a basket ball court. There was an ancient-looking chest placed right in the middle of that stage.

Everything was so clear now. No doubt, the parties had to kill the Frosty Ghost Dragon first before they could walk through the invisible air wall and see what's being kept within the ancient-looking chest.

So whoever who could slay the Frosty Ghost Dragon right in front of them would get that treasure chest! However, if two or more parties got to slay the dragons at the same time, an all-out chaotic PvP would occur. Only one winner would emerge from that!

If the treasure chest is not there for the claiming, everyone would have chilled down a little. It would be the same if you are the first party or the last party because there would not be any special rewards. However, the situation is different when there is a final reward placed right in the middle of everything! The map had arranged 5 Ethereal bosses to guard that chest --- of course, it would not be easy at all because a party must take out all 5 Ethereal Tier bosses before reaching the chest. No ordinary party could accomplish such a thing in the game --- the one and only final reward would definitely be unique and super rare!

Zhang Yang and his party swore that they would get the rewards, no matter the costs!

"That HP... is too much!" Lost Dream squeaked.

They had encountered a boss with 1,000,000,000 HP before. However, they had managed it with over 50 players in one party! Furthermore, the most resentful fact was that the boss has {Spectre Build} which would allow the boss to recover its HP! With an amount of 1,000,000,000 HP, the boss would be able to recover 330,000 HP in each second!

The current formation of Zhang Yang party was considered grand and powerful. The entire party could deal a DPS of 350,000 damage even without a single Inheritance Transformation active. With the {Spectre Build} on the boss screwing things around, the party's effective DPS had been brought down to only approximately 20,000 damage. So, in order for the party to clear out the entire HP bar of the boss, it would require... 14 hours at the very least!

The boss would have a terrifying array of AoE assaults. Could Han Ying Xue, Fantasy Sweetheart and the Healing-type Battle Companions maintain their healing efficiency all the way for 14 hours?

This was a final boss worthy of being the final 'obstacle' on the map. Its might wrought nothing but despair!

Fortunately, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had not activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills yet. Zhang Yang would greatly boost the firepower and survivability of the party while Han Ying Xue would keep the party practically immortal. Therefore, the two large problems for this boss battle had been solved!

At that instant, the Transformation of the two Phoenix pets were about to come to an end. Zhang Yang was the only hope that could boost the damage output of the party.

Before Zhang Yang activates his Inheritance Transformation, he could deal approximately 60,000 damage in each passing second. When he activates his Inheritance Transformation, he could actually deal up to a total of 200,000 damage in each second! An increment of 140,000 damage on Zhang Yang's initial DPS could increase the total damage output of the party from dealing 20,000 damage to dealing a total of 160,000 damage in each second!

Based on this, the party would actually take out the boss in approximately 104 minutes! An Inheritance Transformation would last for that duration.

However, the party could only take out the boss within that amount of time if they performed at their very best. It would be far easier said than done. The boss had a Skill that could blast players backward and stagger them for a brief moment. As players stumble about and struggle to regain their balance, DPS would almost halt completely. Other than just dealing damage to the boss, the players would have to deal with the shockwaves that would push them back once in a while. The amount of damage the party could deal within a set period of time would surely be reduced!

Meanwhile, if the party could not take out the boss within 2 hours, they would have to suffer the fate with a DPS of 20,000 damage. When that happens, the {Dragon Wing Strike} of the boss, would completely halt the party in its tracks!

Therefore, the party must take out the boss within 2 hours!

However, Zhang Yang still had his {Glare of the Death God} ready. Therefore, as long as one out of three throws could trigger the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}, Zhang Yang and his party would be able to kill the boss.

Zhang Yang and his gang exchanged looks. Then they nodded at each other together. "Alright, let's move out! Chop chop!"

The Transformation Skill of the two Phoenix Pets would last for another 10 minutes. They could still provide some additional damage.

It was time. Zhang Yang activated his {God of War Transformation} without any hesitation. The colorful radiance streamed across the surrounding and caught many people's attention. He flapped his wings and flew towards the boss at a high speed. Then he crashed into the boss. Han Ying Xue had also activated her {Milkmaid Deity Transformation} at the same instant. Her pair of round and full breasts swelled out even more as the Transformation Skill activated. Apparently, the person who designed the visuals of this Inheritance must be a wretched, horny man!

Everyone got into position. Zhang Yang threw the first {Glare of the Death God} at the boss. The sooner he throws it out, the sooner it would become available again. By doing so, it would be possible for him attempt the skill three times.

Resisted!

Everyone cursed deeply in their hearts They got over it pretty quickly because they were used to such disappointment. They could only pray that the other two times would not be resisted as well.

"Kill!"

The party began to launch their aggressive assaults onto the boss. They even began drinking potions just to get their Attacks up! Well, it was now or never!

Having similar thoughts in their mind, Land of Savages and Hell Family were also starting to launch their assaults as madly as they could. The decisive battle was just beginning!

# Chapter 653: A Decisive Battle with the Ghost Dragon

---

"You insolent insignificant beings! Get lost!" The Frosty Ghost Dragon let out a series of roars that trembled across the entire surroundings. Gigantic dragons could take the shape of a human. So it would only be natural if they could speak the tongue of men. Although the Ghost Dragon had lost its ability to shift into a humanoid form, it was not hard for it to speak human's language.

The boney dragon stood up abruptly on its hind legs and reached out with one of its claws. Each of its claws was approximately 10 meters long. The claws reached out for Zhang Yang. The air was swept up by the force of the swing. It made contact. Luckily for him, he raised his shield just in time to shield himself from that blow. At the same instant, the boss released its frosty dragon breath across the surroundings. Zhang Yang's body was covered in fragments of frost.

Zhang Yang was instantly blasted back by that strike. However, he fluttered his wings and reengaged the boss. Without any hesitation, he swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] straight at the soft spots of the boss! His normal attacks could deal up to 200,000 damage. That amount of damage was actually much higher than the damage that the boss could deal to him! Zhang Yang was showing the boss who was the real boss there!

At that moment, the two Phoenix pets could still maintain their Transformed Forms for another 10 minutes. Therefore, everyone on the scene got the chance to see the two Phoenixes battling a dragon! The scene was most spectacular! Everyone was very



content with being able to view such a rare scene!

The Strength of these legendary beasts was usually determined from their sizes.

Initially, dragons and Phoenixes were of the same Tier. However, the Frosty Ghost Dragon was an Ethereal Tier boss. Therefore, it was so much larger in size compared to a Phoenix pet! Unless the two Phoenix pets are able to elevate up to Ethereal Tier, they would not be able to best a Frosty Ghost Dragon.

However, it would not be long before that happens. Phoenix pets could evolve into Ethereal Tiers when they reach Level 140. When they do, they would become almost as large as the boney dragons after they activate their Transformation Skills.

There were 4 players who had Inheritance Transformation Skills in the party. However, even though Han Ying Xue's Inheritance Transformation was Class S, she could only provide Healing support for the party. Because of her, Fantasy Sweetheart was delegated as a side character. She only needed to activate her {Regeneration} and {Holy Shield} from time to time. Other than that, she could contribute to the DPS. Although the amount of damage she could deal was not high, a mosquito could also cause an itch to a human even if it does not hurt.

Having 4 Inheritance Transformation activated at the same time was quite a scene to marvel at. The 4 of them were bombarding the boss with everything they had. The HP bar of the boss was dropping at a constant rate, though it was extremely slow. The boss had over 1,000,000,000 HP on it!

The other two parties were doing quite well. They were not really much far behind, compared to Zhang Yang's party. They were truly persistent!

However, what does it mean by having 'an arrow at the end of its flight,' then?

10 minutes later, the HP bar of the boss had dropped down to 92%. At the same time, the two Phoenix pets started shrinking. They shrunk from mountains down to the size of cabs --- the Phoenix Transformations had expired!

Well, Zhang Yang and his party were not the only ones who were facing that sort of trouble. The Hell Family and Land of Savages were also facing the same situation, or maybe worse. They have run out of Inheritance Transformation Skills to use!

Anyone could have made that calculation. Without Inheritance Transformation Skills at their disposal, they would need at least tens of hours in order to take down the boss! If the firepower of the party is just a little bit higher than the boss' regeneration, it could even take days to take down the boss --- if they could even last that long, and if the map had no such limits.

Without any Inheritance Transformations, the firepower of the other two parties were like ticks nibbling away at an elephant. The HP bar of the boss did not even seem to move! Even snails could move faster than that! What that was even worse was whenever the boss activates its {Dragon Wing Strike}, bodies would go flying.

The party would helplessly watch the boss recovery what little damage they have done. Of course, the players would cry in misery. After spending so much effort in dealing damage to the boss, they were blasted away, crawling back just to find out that all their efforts have gone to waste.

However, that pretty ancient-looking chest was just right in front of their eyes. Who would be willing to give up when the trophy is nicely placed in front of them?

Between the Stone Bridges, there was no land at all. If players were to fall in between the space of the bridges, only death would greet them. Fortunately, there were two air walls blocking the two sides of the Stone Bridges. Therefore, players would not be blasted off the bridges into the abyss when the boss uses {Dragon Wing Strike}. Because the entire area forbade anyone from flying, it would mean that players would still fall to death even if they are mounted on their flying mounts. That would be very unfair for all players when the monsters and bosses were so powerful in the first place. Therefore, designing two air walls to prevent something like that from happening was one clever move for the game developers.

While the other two parties had suddenly lost their ‘main’ source of firepower, the Lone Desert Smoke still had Zhang Yang and his {God of War Inheritance} to support on dealing damage to the boss! Although they also lost a powerful source of firepower when the two Phoenix ran out of juice, they were still able to maintain approximately 140,000 DPS. As long as they hold out long enough, they would be able to kill the boss, eventually.

"Everyone, get over and stand beside Zhang Yang now!" Han Ying

Xue suddenly shouted, "I can heal you all up!"

Zhang Yang was the only one who was standing right in front of the boss while the others were rounding up the boss from the sides and its rear. Why would the others still stand by the two sides of the boss and its rear even after knowing that the boss could use {Dragon Wing Strike}? The reason was simple. The rate of the boss activating its {Dragon Wing Strike} was much lower than the rate of the boss activating its {Frost Breath}. The boss would only activate its {Dragon Wing Strike} once every 45 seconds while it would activate {Frost Breath} once every 10 seconds! There was a large difference between the rates.

However, Han Ying Xue informed everyone that she could handle the heat in healing everyone up. After being on the same party as she was for so long, everyone would naturally entrust their lives to her. They ran straight over to the front of the boss without hesitation.

"Huh? Are those people trying to get themselves killed?!" When the players of Land of Savages and Hell Family saw what the players of Lone Desert Smoke were doing, they were shocked. Standing before the mouth of that powerful dragon could really avoid the impactful strike from the {Dragon Wing Strike}. Theoretically speaking, players would be able to be more focus on dealing damage to the boss without much interruption like they had while attacking the boss from the sides and its rear. However, the boss's {Frost Breath} would deal a great deal of damage to the players if they stand right in front of the boss! It was a suicidal act!

"Haha! They are the fastest team and yet they are still trying to

speed things up! If they are so eager to die, good for us!"

"They are trying to kill themselves so that we can have our chance to win? How noble of them!"

"Brothers, let's hustle up and get going! We still stand a chance to win! There's still hope!"

Phew! The Frosty Ghost Dragon opened its large mouth and spat out a frosty breath towards the front. Everyone including all Battle Companions, the two Phoenix pets and every single player in the party received a basic damage of 80,000 damage. The AoE attack of the boss was extremely terrifying!

Han Ying Xue humphed lightly and raised up her hand. In just 5 seconds, she miraculously healed up everyone's HP bars back to full!

That was just amazing!

That is what the Class S Inheritances are all about! That is why Class S Inheritances are so rare in the entire game! It was just marvelous!

The players from the Land of Savages almost popped their eyes out staring at Zhang Yang and his party. What just happened? Was that Healer really a Healer? Even the powerful Healers would not have so much juice in them to heal so much in such a brief period of time! So this is the true power of a 'Milkmaid Deity'!

Meanwhile, the Hell Family almost ground their teeth to ashes! That Inheritance would have been theirs to claim if it weren't for Zhang Yang and his guild. They still could not get over the fact that Zhang Yang 'cheated' and got the Inheritance for his own guild member! They were disgusted by the thought of it! Of all members of the Hell Family, Hell Priest was the one person that resented at it the most. He would have jumped over to the other bridge in an attempt to choke Han Ying Xue and Zhang Yang to death, if there were no air walls blocking the sides of the Stone Bridges --- of course, without the air walls by the sides of the bridges, he would have fallen to his own death first.

The 'Milkmaid Deity' had made her move! No one would be able to top her healing ability!

Now that the {Dragon Wing Strike} was out of the picture, the gang was able to focus on dealing damage to the boss efficiently. The DPS of the entire party had been restored to the highest theoretical damage output --- 160,000 damage per second! Their morale was boosted up and everyone was performing beyond their regular standards! They managed to raise the maximum amount of DPS from 160,000 damage to 180,000 damage!

"It doesn't matter if you're human, orc, elf, dwarf, goblin or whatever you are. You are just insignificant pests right in front of the great Giant Dragon!" the devilish spectral flames lighted up within the eye sockets of the Frosty Ghost Dragon. The two blue-green flames were moving around in the eye sockets like two huge lanterns while the boss spat out its {Frosty Breath}. It attempted to wipe out any existence of living beings right in front of it. However, these insignificant beings were like cockroaches! They

were really difficult to kill!

No! They were even harder to kill than cockroaches! If they were like cockroaches, they would all have been killed by the powerful blast of the {Frost Breath}.

"Haha! Stinky boss! Just give yourself in and drop all the money you have on you! Come on!" Wei Yan Er sounded like a robber as she swung her huge axe at the boss like a mad lady. Only God would know where she learned to talk like that.

Zhang Yang could not help but smile, and then he said, "Little brat, if you can OT now, I shall sponsor you a trip over to France! You can also have all the perfume and handbags that you want!"

"Stinky boss! You've activated your Inheritance Transformation! It's obvious that you're bullying me!" Wei Yan Er snapped. She was not an idiot, after all. Then she said, "Let's compare our damage output then! If I can deal 1/10 of your damage, then I win!"

"... why did you set such a low target?"

"1/10 is a lot, you know! After all, you've activated your Inheritance Transformation!"

"You damn pests! Just die!" Frosty Ghost Dragon let out a raging roar and said, "We're the first beings ever created by the gods! We are the Giant Dragons! We have the greatest power in the entire world! We are the representatives of the gods! We are immortals!"

With the falling of the gods, we are the new gods!"

"Disrespecting me means disrespecting the gods! You shall all be executed and your souls shall be imprisoned in hell, for eternity!"

"Stinky dragon! You're dead! You're just a stinky ghost! What's there to be proud about? Pui!" Wei Yan Er was most impolite, "You should look into a mirror and look at yourself! Just have a good look at the kind of sh\*t you've become! You're just a bunch of bones cobbled up together! Who would actually respect a bunch of bones that talks sh\*t! How dare you call us pests! You're the pest! You, a giant boney four-legged reptile who only knows how to crawl on your hollow belly like a piece of sh\*t!"

"Rawgh!" The Frosty Ghost Giant almost lost itself and went berserk after being taunted by the little brat. It kept roaring in anger. If there was no such thing as an aggro system, the boss would have taken out the little brat first. After all, this boss seemed to be an intelligent AI.

"Hahaha!" everyone was laughing. The little brat could always create such amusement for the people around her.

Another half an hour had passed, the three parties were now worlds apart.

The boss in front of Zhang Yang and his party only had over 60% HP left while the bosses on the side of Hell Family and the Land of Savages still had over 89% and 88% HP left. Such a difference shouldn't be dismissed as menial, or negligible. In fact, it had the



potential of covering the distance between heaven and earth!

Judging from the progression speed of the Hell Family and the Land of Savages, even if Zhang Yang and his party were being wiped out all of a sudden, even if there wasn't anyone to compete with them, they would still be having trouble taking down the boss. With their current firepower, they would need at least 12 hours to completely empty out the HP bar of the boss!

However, would they be willing to give up now?

Before true despair, they would still believe that miracles could happen anytime! The two parties were really starting to believe in miracles --- they still had a glimpse of hope that when Zhang Yang and his party takes out the boss, the air walls would vanish! Maybe they could take that opportunity to rush in and snatch the chest!

In terms of HP amount, Zhang Yang would definitely not be able to top the boss. However, Zhang Yang could have over 17,920,000 HP the moment he activated his {God of War Inheritance}. With the boss's 'insignificant' Attack power, it would not be possible for the boss to deal much damage to Zhang Yang at all. From that point of view, Zhang Yang was the boss, and this dragon was the player!

Therefore, the {God of War Heavy Axe} could work its best under that sort of circumstances! After all, this Skill could deal over 300% melee physical damage if the target has lower HP % than him. On the contrary, this Skill would only deal 100% melee physical damage if the target has higher HP % than him. That amount of damage would be like the amount of damage that a normal attack

could deal.

While he was in his {God of War Transformation} mode, each normal attack that Zhang Yang struck out could deal damage ranging from 193,607 to 210,284. The {God of War Heavy Axe} could deal up to 600,000 damage in one single hit! On top of those damage values, those were not Critical Hits and the {Lucky Strike} had not been triggered just yet. Truth to be told, Zhang Yang now had over a 15% Critical Rate and an 8% rate to trigger {Lucky Strike}. Those were not exactly low chances!

Unfortunately, the rate of triggering his most powerful Skill {Rising Dragon Strike} was far too insignificant. Zhang Yang could have dealt 2,000,000 damage with one hit! The boss could be pushed into deep sh\*t if that effect is triggered by a couple of times more!

‘-1,812,321!’

Although the {Rising Dragon Strike} did not trigger, Zhang Yang managed to trigger the effect of {Lucky Strike} with his {God of War Heavy Axe}! The 1,800,000 damage had the boss roaring in excruciating pain and suffering. Its entire body trembled violently. The two devilish spectral pair of flames in the middle of the boss’s eye sockets dimmed for one brief moment!

One hour later.

It was time to throw another {Glare of the Death God} at the boss.

Phew! A dark skull began to form on top of the boss's head. The skull began to smile wretchedly without making any sound.

Yes! Zhang Yang had finally succeeded!

"Kill! Kill! Kill! No time to lose!" Everyone was so joyful! With that effect in play, the boss was as good as dead!

‘-10,000,000!’

‘-10,000,000!’

Though the amount of HP the boss had was too much, it had turned around to bite it. The special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} was now amazingly effective because it worked based on the HP percentage of the boss! Every single trigger took out 10,000,000 HP of the boss! None of the players in the entire game could deal that amount of damage at the current stage of the game --- unless Zhang Yang could trigger {Rising Dragon Strike} while in his God of War Transformation mode. Furthermore, that strike would also be a Critical Strike, stacked with the effects of {Lucky Strike}. By then, Zhang Yang should be able to deal over 12,000,000 damage!

However, it would be almost impossible for so many coincidences to happen at the same time!

Under the bombardment from Zhang Yang and his gang, the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} had been triggered 10

times. By the time when they were done, the Frosty Ghost Giant only had 35% HP left. Meanwhile, the other two parties were still struggling with the bosses as the bosses on their sides still had approximately 85% HP left. Zhang Yang and his party were way ahead of the other two parties! From the looks of it, they had secured the winning position in this contest.

After all, the two other parties did a grave mistake of using up all available Inheritance Transformations. They should have reserved some as they cleared up the previous monsters and bosses. Now they could only stare at Zhang Yang and his party from afar.

"The great Giant Dragons will not be defeated by you pathetic worms! Begone!"

The boss on the same Stone Bridge as Zhang Yang and his party had a really bleak future. It was only capable of screaming some slogans and dialogues without posing any solid threat to the gang at all. On the contrary, the two bosses on the other two Stone Bridges with the other two parties were exhibiting their might as how Ethereal Tier bosses should be!

30%, 25%, 20%!

Another tens of minutes had gone by, the HP bar of the boss had dropped down to 20%. The battle had entered the 'Killing Cleave' stage!

Everyone timed it right, this time. They had been reserving all potions that could provide explosive effects on them, and also their

Skills that could deal a tremendous amount of damage. The moment the battle entered the ‘Killing Cleave’ stage, everyone unleashed everything that they had been reserving throughout the entire battle!

Zhang Yang activated {Indiscriminate} and gulped down a bottle of [Beginner Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)], followed closely by a strike of {Killing Cleave}!

Let the {Lucky Strike} trigger once this time!

‘-4,336,796’

{Indiscriminate} ensured that {Killing Cleave} would become a Critical Hit right after Zhang Yang activated {Indiscriminate}. Furthermore, Zhang Yang took down a [Beginner Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] which boosted his Attack power by 40%! His Rage Bar was full at the moment as well. So when he struck out with his {Killing Cleave}, the damage that he dealt broke through the damage cap of 4,000,000 damage!

"What the f\*ck! That amount of damage is a little bit too much! I can't believe my own eyes, man! I would be instantly killed even if I activate my Inheritance Transformation Skill!" Fatty Han squeaked.

"You're thinking way too much! {Killing Cleave} can only be used when the HP bar of the boss is below 20%. Furthermore, it would require a Critical Hit in order to pull off that amount of damage! It's not like I can just do it anytime I want!"

"But that amount of damage was really awesome!"

"Haha! So, you can die in peace now, my Boss!"

## Chapter 654: Dragon Slayer Battle Axe

---

When they saw that the HP bar of the boss on Zhang Yang's side was dropping down below 20%, the players on the two other parties started to discuss among themselves. They were trying to come up with a solution on getting the chest lying quietly on the stage.

"They've got the boss fight wrapped up. There's no doubt about it!"

"Let's try out our luck. I'm willing to make a wager. When the boss on their side dies, all air walls on all bridges would all disappear at the same time!"

"By then, we shall heal ourselves up first. Then we will kite the boss towards the Lone Desert Smoke and drag them into battle as well!"

"Most importantly, we need to get our hands on that chest!"

"That's right!"

Zhang Yang would never believe that the system would be so idiotic to take away all the air walls on all 12 Stone Bridges the moment he and his party kills the Frosty Ghost Dragon. If that's how it's going to be, there would be no point in them competing against each other in the first place.

He was pretty sure that whoever kills the Frosty Ghost Dragon right in front first, the air walls on the bridge they are on would disappear first. Everything that was going on on that Stone Bridge he and his party were standing on would have nothing to do with the other 11 Stone Bridges at all.

Although he was thinking that way, Zhang Yang could not take any risks and had also made the arrangement that everyone on his gang would charge straight in to snatch the chest the moment they kill the boss. As for the loots that drop from the boss, the little brat would handle it all by herself.

"I'm the great Giant Dragon! My dignity and my strength shall not be bested by a bunch of mortals!" Frosty Ghost Dragon began to roar to the sky in rage. It could not accept the fact that its life was about to come to an end. However, it also began to activate its {Frosty Breath} and {Dragon Wing Strike} even more frequently than before.

Fantasy Sweetheart had to fall back from the front line. She went to the rear and joined Han Ying Xue in supporting the rest of the party by healing them!

17%, 14%, 10%!

When the boss's HP bar finally dropped to 10%, the rate of the boss activating its Skills got even faster. The party faced even more challenges and threats because of that! Now, the battle had entered its most dangerous stage.



"If we would have known this earlier, little Yang should have kept the {Glare of the Death God} and used it now, not then!"

"But we have no way of knowing if the Skill would be resisted by the boss! Surely it's wiser to use it once the cooldown is over! Then we should still stand a chance to use it again!"

"F\*cking fatty just loves to beat his own sh\*t and let everyone smells it! He only knows how to talk useless sh\*t! Let's ignore that f\*cker and stop wasting our time. Let's focus on taking down the boss as soon as possible!"

Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight had also activated their {Vanguard's Aggression} to make things easier for Han Ying Xue. Even so, Han Ying Xue had not yet used her most powerful Skill --- the {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple}. It was obvious that she still had some reserves for emergency purposes.

9%! 8%! 7%!

It took them approximately 1 minute to take down 1% of the boss's HP bar. That amount of time could put a lot of strain on the Healers over time!

4%! 3%! 2%!

Buzz! Countless milk deities appeared right in midair and they started to pour gallons of milky white liquid across an area of 50-meter radius. Everyone within that effective range received a great

deal of health. Their HP bars were recovering at the rate of 10% per second!

--- the {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple} had finally been blessed upon Zhang Yang and the party!

"Keep it up! Hit harder!" Zhang Yang began to roar!

"Harder... hit harder... don't stop!" Fatty Han was imitating the screaming of those girls in the Adult Videos that he would watch every night while his 'wife' slept.

"... you f\*cking fatty... are you so itchy that you're so eager to get a beatdown from us?!"

1%!

9,000,000! 7,000,000! 5,000,000!

"Ready yourselves! Get in position! We're about to charge!" players from the other 2 parties had diverted their attention away from the boss. They only tried to heal as much as possible so that none of the party members are killed while waiting for the 'precise moment'. They were fully focused on staring at the remaining HP bar of the boss in front of Zhang Yang and his party. They were ready to charge in and snatch the chest!

3,000,000! 2,000,000! 1,000,000!

"Mortals, you have... defeated... me..." it began with the two devilish flames within the eye sockets of the Frosty Ghost Dragon dimming down. The gigantic body of the boss then collapsed heavily onto the ground. Most of the bones of the boss had been crushed into countless broken pieces as the impact of collapsing was too great for the bones to sustain.

"Charge! Now!"

The three parties charged towards the direction of the chest at the same instant.

Bam! Bam! Bam! Bam!

Players from Land of Savages and Hell Family smacked facefirst into the invisible air walls right in front of them. All they could do was to fall on their \*sses on the ground, staring at Zhang Yang and his party running towards the chest. They felt even more heart ache when Zhang Yang and his party jumped around the chest with joy.

"Argh---" they were pissed off. They were not willing to accept their defeat. But they could not do anything about it. They simply were not as powerful as Zhang Yang and his party. It would be best for them to admit defeat and do it better next time.

"Stopped in their tracks! Don't you dare open the chest without me! Don't you dare! I want to be the one who opens it! Let me!" Wei Yan Er was picking up the loot dropped by the boss as she

screamed out loud at Zhang Yang and the rest of the party. Then she jumped over to the chest.

Everyone laughed seeing Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue attaining a new level of obsession over the treasure chest. That witchy Snow had a pair of glittering eyes as she wrapped her arms around the chest. Her face looked almost just like the face that she would make before she spreads her legs and waits for Zhang Yang to stick his 'cannon' in! Zhang Yang felt a little troubled. Was he just like a treasure chest to that witch?

Seeing that the air walls on the other 11 Stone Bridges were not going to disappear anytime soon, everyone had no reason to rush anymore. It would take tens of hours before the Hell Family and the Land of Savages takes out the bosses right in front of them.

Fatty Han walked up to the edge of the Stone Bridge. Then he took down half of his pants and mooned the Hell Family and the Land of Savages. He even started twerking at them, his fat bum rippling along while revealing a wretched smile on his face! The two parties were infuriated to the point that they could have killed that fatty f\*ck in real life!

Wei Yan Er was done picking up the loot dropped by the boss. She smiled and said, "This time, the boss is very generous. It dropped three pieces of Ethereal Tier equipment and two Mythical Tier equipment!"

The number of equipment dropped from this boss was no different from the number of equipment dropped by the previous bosses. However, one piece of Ethereal Tier equipment could cost

10 times the cost of one Mythical Tier equipment. So the boss was indeed generous to them.

"Time to distribute!" Everyone was happy. After all the trouble they had been through, it was finally the time to get their rewards.

Wei Yan Er placed the three Ethereal Tier equipment on the ground. One of it was a pitch black axe that looked extremely sharp. The other one was a scarlet red Heavy Armor pair of pants. The third one was a bow made of bones. That bow was as tall as a regular person!

"Two-handed weapon! Little Yan Er is really hot and lucky! Come, let me give you a kiss!" Fatty Han put his lips up and he gave a gentle kiss on the smooth and small hand of Wei Yan Er. The next thing that happened was a large battle axe smashing straight into the wretched fatty's face, sending that fatty flying away from the little brat. Well, at least he deserved that, and no one would feel any pity for him.

"That's really a good touch, Yan Er! A two-handed weapon!" Everyone did not even blink after what happened to that f\*cking fatty. They just ignored him and carried on with their own business with the loot. Other than Tankers, a weapon would be the most important piece equipment. A weapon could bring about either a tremendous amount of damage or a substantial amount of healing points. Meanwhile, even though Tankers needed shields more to survive, a good weapon could largely increase a Tanker's ability to get more aggro value in a battle. It was the key for a Tanker to lure and fix the aggro of monsters and bosses before the Tanker can tank or kite.

"Let's have a good look at the axe first, then. Based on the length, this should be a two-handed weapon. Endless Starlight has no part in this anymore. But he can stare as long as he wants! Haha!"

[Dragon Slayer Battle Axe] (Ethereal, Two-handed axe)

Attack: 9,204 - 13,204

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 2,948

Equip: Increases damage by 21%

Equip: Increases Critical Rate by 3.5%

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 150

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Note: This axe once belonged to a Blacksmith that kept dreaming about slaying a dragon. You've come across this battle axe among the loots of slaying the Giant Dragon. So you can guess the fate of that Blacksmith with your common sense. So stay silent and pray

for the unlucky Blacksmith. Well, one must know your own boundary!

"This is just awesome, you know!" Zhang Yang praised, "My [Sword of Purging Devourer] only has an attack ranging from 7,400 to 9,672 even after I identified it. It's like comparing a blade of grass with a steel sword here!"

Only Wei Yan Er and Zhang Yang could handle two-handed weapons. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had reached the level requirement for him to take on the quest that could unseal the third seal of his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. Therefore, he decided to let Wei Yan Er have the weapon. This little brat was acting surprisingly generous today. She actually passed the axe over to Zhang Yang saying that she was just lending it to Zhang Yang for a couple of days.

--- Wei Yan Er had reached Level 128 at the moment. She would still need a few days before she reaches Level 130 and equips this axe. So, Zhang Yang gets to play with it for a couple of days before then. Truth be told, she passed the axe to Zhang Yang because she wanted him to identify the weapon for her. Even though she did not state her intention, Zhang Yang knew her very well. So, he had no choice but to do it. Well, he treated it as the fee for borrowing the weapon for a couple of days. By thinking it that way, he did not have much to lose either.

Wei Yan Er felt highly flattered by her own high intellect.

Zhang Yang shoved the [Dragon Slayer Battle Axe] into his backpack without any sense of care. Ever since the special effect of

his [Sword of Purging Devourer] had been nerfed by the officials, the weapon was no longer the godly AoE weapon. However, he recently obtained a Phoenix pet which could deal extremely powerful AoE attacks on his enemies. It would not matter much at all.

Wei Yan Er posted the attributes for the Heavy Armor pants up on the party channel so that everyone could see it.

[Frost Giant Dragon's Greaves] (Ethereal, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +320

Frost Resistance: +320

Vitality: +4,668

Strength: +1,586

Agility: +680

Equip: Increases both damage and healing efficiency by 5.6%

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 9,330 points.

Equip: Absorbs 679 damage when being hit.



{Unidentified}

Required Level: 150

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

"Give it to noob tank. He has not taken anything yet!" It was indeed a rare occasion for Wei Yan Er to act so generously.

Endless Starlight nodded as well. Previously, he got a pair of Ethereal Tier gauntlets because Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er did not roll for it at all. They just gave it to him for free. Furthermore, Endless Starlight and Wei Yan Er had not reached Level 130 just yet. So both of them could not equip the equipment yet. They thought that it was wiser to let Zhang Yang have it. By doing so, Zhang Yang could boost his attributes a little higher.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Thank you! I shall not hold back on this one!"

He was currently wearing Level 120 Mythical Tier greaves. Compared to that piece of Mythical Tier equipment, the [Frost Giant Dragon's Greaves] was an equipment of another Tier. Much higher, of course.

"Alright! Settle down! Now, for the final piece of the equipment! Let's give some applause to it! Come on! Bring up the heat!" Wei Yan Er was waving her hands around while she posted out the attributes for that bow made of bones.

[Giant Dragon's Strike] (Ethereal, Bow)

Range Attack: 7,618 - 9,618

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 2,268

Equip: Increases damage by 21%

Equip: Your ranged attack will gain a certain rate to trigger Critical Hit for your next 3 attacks.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 150

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

The Attack Interval of this weapon was similar to the one before it. The DPS of this bow was a little lower than that of a two-handed weapon's. This is due to the range of the weapon. Judging from that perspective, the DPS of the bow was considered to be similar to the DPS of a two-handed weapon.

The wretched fatty already had a Phoenix pet. So his capability of

dealing damage was much higher than Hundred Shots. As a brother to him, that fatty decided to let Hundred Shots take the bow without any hesitation at all. Endless Starlight sighed heavily and cried in misery. He cried claiming that Fatty Han had forgotten his love for him as Fatty Han had already found a new love. The way he cried had given the ladies a chill up their spines. The gayness was overloading the scene!

Other than the three equipment, Frosty Ghost Dragon had also dropped a piece of [Skill Point Crystal]. Everyone rolled for it because no one would complain about having an extra Skill Point.

Although the Frosty Ghost Dragon did not drop much good stuff for the party, they had not looked into the treasure chest yet! Everyone was not disappointed at all. They were hustling the little brat to come over and open the chest. Even though they were eager to look into the chest to see what's in it, but they did not dare to open it up. They knew the little brat would be twisting and turning on the ground like a crybaby if any one of them opened the chest before her.

# Chapter 655: Identifying Scroll

---

This treasure chest could not be put into the inventory. It could only be opened up on the spot. No takeouts! Wei Yan Er leaped over to the chest and grabbed Han Ying Xue like how an octopus would do to its prey. Then she pulled Han Ying Xue away from the chest and smiled like a little b\*tch. Well, she would always be the one opening the chest, anytime, anywhere.

The progress of opening the chest required 30 seconds. Not only were Zhang Yang and his party were staring at the progress bar filling up with their eyes widened, the players on the other two parties were also staring at the chest without blinking even once! They were curious to find out what Wei Yan Er would take out from the treasure chest.

"Aiyo... what a disappointment! Everything here is crappy!" Wei Yan Er screamed in misery after she opened the chest. She took out a total of 5 items: One piece of broken staff fragment, one Scroll, and three books with different colors.

Zhang Yang was not disappointed at all. Although these items were not unique or rare, he could always earn a lot of money by selling them! Remember the recipe for [Armor-Piercing Potion]? That was a really practical tool for Zhang Yang to make a fortune!

Everyone started off by putting their attention on the fragment of a broken staff.

[Succubus Inheritance Fragment] (Class: B)

Description: -

"Just a Class B? After all the trouble we've gone through, they gave us a Class B Inheritance as the final reward?" Fatty Han immediately complained. He believed that it was not worth it, after everything they have gone through.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Well, players can come into this mist once every 30 days. The bosses and the chest will be refreshed in 30 days as well. I think the game developer is very generous to give a free Class B Inheritance once every 10 days in real life!"

It made sense. Yes. The difficulty of clearing the monsters and bosses was extremely difficult at the current stage of the game. However, if players used and rationed their Inheritance Transformations wisely, a strong party could have been able to take out the final boss Frosty Ghost Dragon. They would only need enough Inheritance Transformations to spare for the final boss battle in order for them to win.

Furthermore, when normal players reach beyond Level 150, a normal party would have been able to clear the entire area without much of a problem.

By then, the chest would become something like a free gift. If the system had placed a Class A Inheritance fragment in there, then the value of having a Class A Inheritance would deteriorate.

"This is the first time this chest has ever been opened up. Yes, they only gave us a Class B Inheritance. But how about the second time, the third time and so forth? I believe others will only get Class C Inheritances!" Zhang Yang continued to say.

"Even if a Class C Inheritance came out just now, it would still be an Inheritance! It's still something powerful!" Hundred Shots added on.

"Well, this chest is valuable in its own right. Furthermore, we still haven't checked on the others yet."

"Fantasy, this fragment seems to be part of a broken staff. It looks like a Spell-type Inheritance. Do you want it?" Zhang Yang asked Fantasy Sweetheart.

She gave some thoughts about it and nodded. Although she would prefer more to get a Class A Inheritance for herself, the rarity of stumbling across one would almost be as rare as finding a Class S Inheritance. Up to this point, only Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream had managed to get Class A Inheritances. Somehow it made people feel that it was much more difficult to find a Class A Inheritance than it is to find a Class S Inheritance!

It is true that Class B Inheritance was a little less proficient, everyone in the party was more or less equal in power. So if she takes it now, she would no longer be the one holding back the party.

"Let us turn out attention over here, the scroll!" Wei Yan Er laid

out the second piece of the lot. It was a Magic Scroll.

[Forbidden Scroll: Absolute Binding] (Consumable)

Use: Binds a target, causing the target to have a 10% rate of being afflicted with Stun Effect for 10 seconds once every 3 seconds. Lasts for 6 hours. Absolute Binding will be effective on any target that is under Level 180.

Required Level: 100

It appeared to be a [Forbidden Scroll]!

"Yes! We hit the jackpot! Yeah!" everyone was cheering in tears of joy! At last, something worth fighting for!

Previously, Zhang Yang came across a Forbidden Scroll that could deal a tremendous amount of AoE damage to all targets within a vast area. However, this Forbidden Scroll could potentially be one of the best [Forbidden Scrolls] that could use to kill a boss! When being applied, the target would have a 10% rate of getting stunned. This effect would have a chance of kicking in once every 3 seconds. The boss might spend a third of the time immobilized, which would also reduce its DPS by that relative proportion!

On the other hand, such a wonderful effect could last for 6 hours long on the target! Imagine what this Forbidden Scroll would do to a World Class Super boss! It could definitely provide one hell of a

benefit to such a boss battle.

Zhang Yang and his party have slain quite a number of bosses in the past. They even killed a few big bosses in the Main Story Quests. However, they only came across 2 Forbidden Scroll so far. It could be deemed that Forbidden Scrolls are extremely rare in the game.

Naturally, Zhang Yang was the one who kept the scroll. There was no need for it if they were not going up against a World Class Super boss. However, they would really need what this scroll could offer them if they were going to battle against a super boss with extremely powerful AoE Skills, like Queen Serena herself.

"This should be the unique one-off item from the chest. The next person that opens this chest will not be able to get this anymore. Hehe." Zhang Yang smiled in joy.

"Indeed! Something we all agree on! It's extremely difficult to get one!"

Players from the other two parties did not know what Zhang Yang and his party got from the chest. Judging from the joyful looks on Zhang Yang and his gang's faces, they could deduce that the items they got from the chest must be something really good. They were so tempted to reach out and snatch everything from the chest over to themselves.

"So, what about the other three books?" Everyone looked at Wei Yan Er curiously. The books could be Skill Books, or they could be



Recipes for a specific Profession. Well, their looks were basically all the same. The only thing that varied was their colors. They would need to look into them to know which specification they belonged to.

"Alright! The first book!" Wei Yan Er shouted out loud as he put up the description of the first book.

[Engineering Recipe: Repairing Machine]

Use: Teaches you {Repairing Machine}.

Required: Master Grade Engineering

Anyone could just guess what the Recipe was about by looking at its name. Meanwhile, there was only one person in the entire party with the Engineering Profession, Hundred Shots. So the Recipe went to him without any debate. Hundred Shots learned the Skill on the Recipe and posted out the description for the Repairing Machine.

[Repairing Machine] (Consumable)

Use: Place a Repairing Machine beside you. The Repairing Machine can repair equipment for you and your friendlies. At the same time, the Repairing Machine will gather back some of the items that you don't need. However, the Repairing Machine consumes energy. The energy on the Repairing Machine is limited. Hence, you can only activate it for 5 minutes. Only the Engineers

who are good in Engineering will be able to sue this sophisticated high technology machine.

Required: Master Grade Engineering

"Nice! A machine that repairs your equipment for free! That's really neat!" Wei Yan Er was the first one who reacted to the description. It was not because she could not afford the cost of repairing her equipment. It was her miserly wretched self. Forcing her to spend her own money from her pocket would be like killing her slowly!

"Who says that it's free?" Zhang Yang laughed.

"Didn't the description say the machine will repair your and your friendlies' equipment?" Wei Yan Er began to get nervous.

"But it never stated that it's free! On the contrary, you need to pay for it! It's going to be very expensive as well!" Zhang Yang patted the little brat and gave a gentle punch to her face. Then he said, "You can still get discounts on the cost of repairing your equipment when you're in the Main City. However, you will need to pay the full amount of the cost of repairing your equipment. After all, the machine does not belong to any side."

"So does that mean that uncle Hundred Shots is going to be rich?!" Wei Yan Er widened her eyes, "He can just make one and place it anywhere he wants. Others will have to pay him every time they want to repair their equipment. Wouldn't he be earning a fortune?"

"Hahaha! You stupid little girl! Didn't I just explain it to you? The Repairing Machine does not belong to anyone or any side. So the cost that you pay for the repair will go to the system and only the system!"

"Then who would be so stupid to make such a thing?!" Wei Yan Er felt annoyed.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "For example, when you're challenging a dungeon, you need not go back to the Main City to repair your equipment anymore if Hundred Shots put a Repairing Machine in the dungeon. When you're out in the Open World Map grinding your levels, you no longer need to travel all the way back to the Main City just because your inventory is full or your equipment is busted. You can save a lot of time, you know?"

"... well... it's not that bad after all."

"Of course! Can't you see that this Recipe only came out of a rare and unique treasure chest like this one?"

Well, though the little brat understood, she was not happy with it. As long as anything that involves her spending her own money, anything or anyone would become her mortal enemy! The little brat muttered on in dissatisfaction before she took out the second book.

[Skill Book: Lure]

Use: Teaches you the Skill {Lure}.

Required Class: None

Required Level: 100

"Oh ho! I probably know what this Skill does!" Zhang Yang was feeling proud of himself. "When you use it on a target, there will be two different outcomes under two different circumstances. One, if your Strength is more superior than your target, you will be able to pull the target to you. Or, if your Strength is lower than the Strength of your target, then you shall be drawn to the target instead!"

"If that's the case, wouldn't it be only available to Warriors and Knights?" Fantasy Sweetheart asked out of her own curiosity.

"It all depends on how you will use it!" Zhang Yang smiled and said. "If you're not a Strength-type Class player, you can use the Skill on your friendlies and get away from the battle. It could get you out of a mess like an {Apparate}!"

"However, if you're a Strength-type Class player, you can save your friendlies from a serious mess or you can pull a target over to you while your friendlies could focus fire on that one target. The effect would be greater in that sense!" Lost Dream thought it through and spoke out his mind.

Zhang Yang nodded happily and said, "That's right!"

Everyone was looking at Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er. By the end of it, everyone decided that Zhang Yang should have this Skill Book. Whenever Wei Yan Er engages in a battle, she would go all out crazy without a thought. She would not use the Skill for the sake of her other party members. So giving her the Skill Book would be a total waste.

Zhang Yang learned the Skill and pasted the description of that Skill. As expected, the description matched everything that he said earlier on.

[Lure]: Attempts to lure a target over to you. If your Strength is more superior than your target, you shall be able to pull the target to you. On the contrary, if your Strength is lower than the Strength of your target, then you shall be drawn to the target instead. Range: 30 meters. Cooldown: 5 minutes

Well, what can you say? That Skill was given to the right person after all. Zhang Yang had never lack Attack power up to this point. However, a Melee Combatant would always have trouble battling against a Range Combatant. Well, they would be short on legs because they would only be able to cause damage to their enemies when they were near enough. Range Combatant like a Hunter would usually use tactics such as kiting. For instance, in the open world, highly skilled Professional players like Seductive Wild Pussy could whittle away at Zhang Yang's HP as she flits about and kites him to his death. Hence, Zhang Yang would not have to fear something like that ever happening in the future ever again. This Skill could make him fearless against Range Combatants because

he could use this Skill on any target within the range of 30 meters! So he would be having the absolute advantage in a battle against any player.

"This is the last book!" Wei Yan Er sounded a little dissatisfied.

[Alchemist Recipe: Create Identify Scroll]

Use: Teaches you the way to make Identifying Scrolls.

Required: Master Grade Alchemist

"Wow! It's an Identifying Scroll!" Zhang Yang was surprised and overjoyed at the same time.

"What does this Identifying thing do? Why are you so excited?" Han Ying Xue was curious. Why would he get so excited over a small piece of Recipe?

Zhang Yang laughed out loud before he explained, "You guys were complaining about having new equipment that only functions at 70% of their full attributes right? This so-called [Identifying Scroll] is like an Identifying master. As long as you have enough scrolls, you can identify any equipment or any weapon you like! That includes legendary weapons and equipment as well!"

"That's good stuff!" Everyone's eyes were glittering.

Every single equipment or weapon would require identification before they function at full capacity. For instance, Zhang Yang and his party members were currently wearing a few pieces of equipment that had not been identified yet. If they could use these [Identifying Scrolls] on their equipment and weapons before they engage with the monsters and bosses, they could perform even better!

"Haha! Now this is what I call to return from a heist fully loaded!"

# Chapter 656: Light of the Rainbow

---

After distributing everything, the chest slowly vanished. The other two parties were finally willing to give up on their thoughts. It had proved to be impossible to slay the Frosty Ghost Dragon under 24 hours. Hence, the two parties decided to give up on the boss battle. Upon releasing their souls after their deaths, everyone was sent back to the other end of the Stone Bridge they were on.

Since they had no hope of taking down the boss, it would be better if they focus on killing the monsters to earn some experience points while they could still remain in the mist. After all, it was not easy at all to get their \*sses over here. They had lost their chances of getting the treasure chest. If they also lose the opportunity to earn some experience points, they would have come here for nothing.

Zhang Yang and his party members did not leave the place immediately. They could still stay there for another 7 hours, more or less. Without wasting the opportunity to scoop up some experience points that lay before them, the gang started getting back from where they came in. On the way, they started slaying as many monsters as they could as they moved on. Everyone was violently collecting as much experience points as possible. After all, killing the monsters in this area would give them much more experience points.

However, the Inheritance Transformation forms of Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had both come to an end. Hence, their pace of moving forward began to slow down a little. They played safe by taking on lesser monsters in each attempt. After all, they had claimed the treasure chest. They no longer required slaying bosses



anymore. All they needed to do for the next 7 hours was to collect as much experience point as possible by using the safest method.

In the meantime, there were a few more parties entering the map as well. They were randomly assigned to each of the empty Stone Bridges on the map. However, these new parties were late for the 'party'. There weren't many bosses left for them to slay anymore.

The time was up. Zhang Yang and his gang were teleported out of the map. They reappeared at their initial spots.

Everyone set their priority to get back to the Main City at once. They wanted to identify their equipment and weapon as swiftly as they could. Meanwhile, Hundred Shots and Zhang Yang were also busy making their [Repairing Machines] and [Identifying Scrolls] other than identifying their equipment. They had acquired quite a number of high Tier equipment from their expedition in the mist. They had also received an abundant amount of experience points.

Even though they did not really earn a lot of experience point, those who had their experience bars over half managed to level up after they cleared the map. Zhang Yang had reached Level 133. It seemed that he would be staying on the top of the level ranking list.

Zhang Yang went over to the Identifying Shop first. He was very eager to see the attributes of Wei Yan Er's [Dragon Slayer Battle Axe] after it is identified. Well, after he manages to make his own [Identifying Scrolls], he would not be coming here to waste his money on this crooked Identifier anymore!

[Dragon Slayer Battle Axe] (Ethereal, Two-Handed Axe)

Attack: 13,006 - 19,006

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 4,212

{Level 5 Socket 1}

{Level 5 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases damage by 21%

Equip: Increases Critical Rate by 3.5%

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 150

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Note: This axe once belonged to a Blacksmith who kept dreaming about slaying a dragon. You've come across this battle axe among the loot of slaying the Giant Dragon. So you can guess the fate of

that Blacksmith with your common sense. So stay silent and pray for the unlucky Blacksmith. Well, one must know your own boundaries!

The [Sword of Purging Devourer] had the same Attack Interval as this weapon. However, its Attack only ranged from 7,400 to 9,672. The difference between these two weapons was huge!

Zhang Yang inserted all the sockets on the two equipment with [Level 5 Power Stones]. Upon all the power-ups, Zhang Yang's Maximum HP had reached up to 509,390 (With Vitality Aura). Meanwhile, his Defense had reached over 8,680 and his Damage Absorption had reached up to 7,796 points. The most significant boost was his Attack. Now, his Attack ranged from 81,018 damage to 96,138 damage  $((32,150 - 38,150) * 2.52)$ .

Unfortunately, he would have to return this weapon to Wei Yan Er when she manages to reach Level 130.

Hence, Zhang Yang decided to put his priority on unsealing the third seal of his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. Currently, his [Sword of Purging Devourer] was just a Mythical Tier equipment. So, he could guess that it would turn into an Ethereal Tier equipment at the least after he unseals the third seal of the sword. It was most probably not possible for the sword to turn into a Holy Tier equipment just yet. The reason was simple. The lowest Required Level for equipping a Holy Tier equipment would be Level 170. Meanwhile, the quest to unseal the third seal of the sword was located within a Level 120-150 map. It would be absurd if Zhang Yang gets a Holy Tier equipment by completing a quest in a Level 120-150 map.

The materials for making an [Identifying Scroll] were not hard to gather at all. No herbs were required. They could all be found in the Shop. Materials like Mythical Gold Wires and Ancient Gear Shafts were also available in the Identifying Shop. However, their prices were not cheap at all. The cost for each set of the materials to make one [Identifying Scroll] was 100 gold coins.

Zhang Yang attempted to compare the cost of letting the Identifier identify an equipment and the cost of using [Identifying Scrolls] to identify an equipment. He passed the Level 140 Mythical Tier equipment over to the Identifier to check on the price. Apparently, it required 500 gold coins in order to identify the equipment. On the other hand, it would require 10 [Identifying Scrolls] in order to identify the equipment. That was a total cost of 1,000 gold coins there.

Well, he had the title 'Hero of White Jade Castle'. So he just had to pay half of the cost for every equipment identification and equipment repair. From that perspective, the cost of using [Identification Scrolls ] to identify an equipment was the same as the cost of letting a [Repairing Machine] to repair an equipment. No more, no less. In other words, one must be willing to spend some money to get convenient.

However, Zhang Yang was currently rich enough to ignore such significant amount of money. So it was convenience that came first, before money.

Zhang Yang could keep 200 pieces of [Identifying Scrolls] in one slot of his inventory. Therefore, Zhang Yang only had to take two

slots of [Identifying Scrolls] to have enough for everyone in his party to use.

After making the [Identifying Scrolls], Zhang Yang traveled over to the Kandiya Grasslands on his Phoenix pet. The three quest items required to unseal the third seal of his [Sword of Purging Devourer] were located around that area. Well, Zhang Yang was required to find one [Rainbow Light], one [Mythical Dense Water], and one [Scepter of Fate].

Following the indication of the quest, he first arrived at the Rainbow Village to locate the whereabouts of the first quest item, [Rainbow Light].

It was a soothing and pleasant little village. Flowers were blooming everywhere. Green moss was spread across the land. The place looked like a fictional land of peace where anyone could retreat from the turmoil of the world. It was peaceful here. However, the villagers were not human. They were all Wild Boarmen!

These creatures had the bodies of humans. They were all muscular and strong. Meanwhile, they had the heads of ugly pigs with two long tusks coming out from beneath their lower lips. Their appearances looked wretchedly scary.

However, when Zhang Yang gazed from a high place down to the village, he realized that those Wild Boarmen were all green-named NPCs. So, it would be unwise to attempt murdering the entire village to get to the quest item.

Zhang Yang set his Phoenix pet down right by the entrance of the village. As the blazing bird approached the ground, the Wild Boarmen were startled by the appearance of a blazing giant bird. They thought that they were being invaded! So the Boarmen took out their weapons and pointed them at Zhang Yang and the Phoenix pet! They seemed very ready to engage in battle.

"Hey! I mean you no harm! Calm down!" Zhang Yang jumped down from the back of the big bird and unsummoned it. "Well, that big bird is always on fire. You'll have indigestion if you try to eat it!"

The Boarmen heard Zhang Yang and they looked at each other. Suddenly, they laughed out loud. Some of them were even rolling on the ground with their hands pressing against their stomachs while they were laughing hard.

Zhang Yang could not do anything other than frowning intensely. Did he say something that was really that funny?

"Human! Hahaha! You... haha... you're so funny.. hahaha! Are you a comedian that wanders around the world? Hahaha!" one of the Boarmen stood up to Zhang Yang and asked.

"My name is Zhan Yu. I'm a fellow Adventurer, a Mercenary. I'm here to see if I can get a job done for you!" Zhang Yang made a polite salute.

"You want to work for the great Wild Boarmen, us?" The same

Boarman was talking, "Alright, then you should go have a chat with our chief. He's just living by the farthest house in the west side of the village. Maybe, you can really do something for us after all! However, are you sure that you're not one of those comedians?"

"No!" Zhang Yang summoned his Whitey and rode over to the house he was told about. The house was in the middle of the village actually. If he goes into the village with his Phoenix pet, the blazing flames on the big bird might have set every corner of the village on fire! After all, the houses and the facilities were all made of wood and dried grass. If that happens, these Boarmen would no longer act like the audience of a stand-up routine. Instead, they would be acting like beasts!

In a brief moment, Zhang Yang had arrived at the house by the far end of the west. He could only see that there was one Boarman sharpening his tusks. As for his appearance... well... all the Boarmen looked the same to Zhang Yang. He had no way of telling the difference between them.

[Shabu Canaans, Chief of the Rainbow Village] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 135

HP: 36,600

Note: The Wild Boarmen believed in the God of Lightning Canaans. They also believed that they were the sons and

daughters, the descendants of Canaans! However, no one could have believed that a great and powerful, dignified god would actually impregnate a female piglet even if he accidentally takes a few hundred pounds of aphrodisiac!

"My respected chief!" Zhang Yang walked up to the chief and made a respectful gesture to show his respect. Then he got straight to the point, "I'm Zhan Yu, an Adventurer from White Jade Castle. I hope to earn some pocket money. So, I wonder if your village requires my service in any way."

"Zhan Yu from White Jade Castle? A human?" Shabu suddenly burst into intense laughter. He even flopped on the ground as he laughed. After laughing for what seemed to be half a day, he finally got back on his feet. "We are the great Wild Boarmen, the descendants of the God of Lightning Canaans himself! If we cannot solve the problem by our own, how would you, a human be able to solve our problems, then?"

Zhang Yang revealed a vague smile on his face. Then he said, "I can try! There's nothing to lose! If I can't get the job done, I shall not take a cent from you!"

"Humph! It's not that simple!" Shabu shook his head. Looking at the two tusks sticking out from his lower lips, he looked extremely ferocious. Then he said, "I can give you a chance, however! If you cannot get the job done, I will tear you into shreds and use your meat for our barbeque materials! The precious time of the great Wild Boarmen shall not be wasted by an insignificant human!"

F\*ck you! That wretched f\*cker was so free that he was



sharpening up his tusks! What was so precious about his time?

Zhang Yang faked a laugh and said, "Fine!"

"Alright then! Since you have such confidence in getting the job done, I'll give you a job! Venture into the jungle and hunt 100 Jalhodi Tiger and bring 100 of their hearts to me!"

'Ding! Shabu Canaans has a quest for you: Hunt for the Jalhodi Tiger. Will you accept? '

Accept!

After giving Zhang Yang the quest, Shabu Canaans continued to sharpen his tusks. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang patted Whitey as he rode out from the village. Then, he summoned his Phoenix pet, lunged into the sky and made his way into the deep mountains.

[Hunt for the Jalhodi Tiger] (Difficulty: Rank-D)

Description: The hearts of the Jalhodi Tiger can be used to make some booze for the Wild Boarmen to drink. Drinking booze can increase their productivity by at least 3 times! Each Boarman will have to slay a Jalhodi Tiger in order to prove themselves in their Adulthood Ritual. They will have to take out the hearts of the Jalhodi Tiger and take them back to make booze. They will be drinking the booze on their wedding night! Warrior, if you want to work for the great Wild Boarmen, hahaha, then prove yourself worthy of being deemed as an adult first!"

Completion: Collect the hearts of the Jalhodi Tigers 0/100

It was merely a Rank-D quest. Zhang Yang sighed heavily. He made haste into the jungle. He could hear the roaring of beasts all around him.

The Phoenix landed on the ground and opened up its beak. Then it began to spread hellfire across the surroundings. A yellowish beast that looked like a wolf but also looked a little like a leopard was caught up in the blazing sea of flames. Its HP bar was reduced down to 50% in just an instant. Before the beast could even react to what just happened, Felice struck out with her lance and took out the beast immediately.

[Jalhodi Tiger] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 128

HP: 33,920

Defense: 2,120

Melee Attack: 9,748 - 13,748

Skills:

[Pounce]: Pounces on a target and cause 100% Melee Attack of

Physical Damage to the target. The target will fall to the ground and the target will be interrupted in the progress of chanting.

Note: Jalhodi Tigers are not real tigers. They are actually the descendants of the mixture of two species, the Coyote and the Leopard. Their weak bodies allow them to defeat even the jackals and the wild dogs!

...so these were the beasts that the 'great' Boarmen needed to kill to prove themselves in their Adulthood Ritual?

Zhang Yang could not hold his laughter anymore. This tribe was really good at making people laugh! They were definitely one of the best!

Upon its death, that Jalhodi Tiger dropped a few pieces of [Tiger Fur]. However, there were no signs of any sort of hearts. Well, it seemed obvious that the drop rate of the quest item was random. If Wei Yan Er was there, she would definitely be scratching her head, wondering how could the monster have lived without a heart.

The Phoenix pet carried Zhang Yang on its back and flew forward. Zhang Yang's current Attack was high enough for him to kill a Jalhodi Tiger two times over with only one hit from his {Spear of Obliteration}. He had no problem at all in collecting the quest items. Although the drop rate was random, Zhang Yang had collected about 80 hearts after going around the jungle once.

Because of his divinely powerful equipment, pet and Battle Companion, Zhang Yang had no issues at gathering the quest

items. Well, normal players would not have such powerful equipment. Zhang Yang only took approximately 15 seconds to slay one Jalhodi Tiger! How the hell can normal players do that?

In less than 20 minutes, Zhang Yang managed to collect a total of 100 Jalhodi Tiger's Hearts. So he headed back to the Rainbow Village to claim his prize.

When ZhangYang handed over the 100 hearts to Shabu Canaans, he was extremely shocked to see that Zhang Yang was actually capable of completing the job. His face was filled with astonishment and he said, "Human, I can't believe that you have actually such great capability in you. I've underestimated you! Could it be that you're actually one of us, the great Wild Boarmen?"

What a narcissistic f\*cker! He was behaving just like the Red-skinned Orc!

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Hunt for the Jalhodi Tigers. You have received a reward: 500,000 experience points!'

As expected. The quest was simple, so the reward was simple as well.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "My respected chief, now that I've proven myself, can I be of service for the great Wild Boarmen now?"

"Yes! Yes, you can!" Shabu Canaans nodded immediately. He looked at Zhang Yang from head to toe, as if that he was trying to look for any sign of proof that Zhang Yang might be one of his 'pig'-kind. After putting in all his effort on trying to make a connection between Zhang Yang and the Boarmen for a moment, he suddenly widened his eyes and pointed his finger at Zhang Yang's eyes! "Your eyes! This must be it! You have the eyes of a Wild Boarmen! I've been wondering the moment I saw you! How could a warrior like you be one of those pathetic humans! Just think about it! The blood of the Wild Boarmen is flowing strong beneath your veins! There's no doubt about it! You're so strong because you're one of the Wild Boarmen!"

You are the boar! F\*ck! Zhang Yang launched out his fist straight into the face of that wild boarman with all his might. The boarman was sent flying into the wall of the room by the impact of Zhang Yang's punch.

Shabu Canaans rolled around the ground in pain for a while before he got back on his feet. However, he was not mad at all. Instead, he was smiling with joy! Then he said, "Zhan Yu! Your strength is really admirable! That's great! You shall be the pride of the Wild Boarmen! Maybe one day you might even get the praise from our ancestor himself! You might even get an audience with the great Canaans himself!"

"My beloved chieftain! Can we just get straight to the point now?"

"Alright! We shall do that! Listen carefully, Zhan Yu. I have a very important yet dangerous quest for you. The outcome of the quest shall bear the fate of the entire Rainbow Village!" Shabu

suddenly changed the expression on his face. He became surprisingly serious all of a sudden. "I need you to gather some feathers of the Crimson Fire Harpies!"

‘Ding! Shabu Canaans has given you a quest: Gather the Feathers. Will you accept?’

Zhang Yang accepted the quest without any hesitation.

"Zhan Yu, please be extra careful on this. Those Harpies are extremely ferocious and deadly! Those Jalhodi Tigers are merely little kittens when you compare them to the Harpies!" Shabu Canaans told Zhang Yang with caution and care. It was probably because he did not want to see this ‘piglet’ of his kind face any unfortunate fate.

"Rest assured, I will get the job done!" Zhang Yang felt a chill up his spine while Shabu Canaans was staring compassionately at him. He quickly rode on Whitey and left the place as swiftly as he could. Upon reaching the entrance of the village, he summoned his Phoenix pet out and made his way to the Scorching Amber Canyon.

# Chapter 657: Gathering the Feathers

---

The Scorching Amber Canyon was located by the north side of the Rainbow Village. While Zhang Yang was flying towards the canyon from afar, he could see Harpies gliding around the sky above the canyon. Their numbers was so shockingly high that they blotted out the sun! It looked like they were building an army or something.

These Harpies had bodies and faces of normal humans. However, their feet were the claws of the birds. The tips of their claws were so sharp that they could easily crush rocks! Their arms were actually their large wings which kept them in the air.

These Harpies were all female. They were basically naked. Some feathers covered up the vital parts of their chest and the part in between their legs. Well, it was an enchanting scene to gaze upon, for men! Well, their waistlines were perfect. Their boobies were simply glorious! Their hips were so desirable! The perfect curves were definitely present on every single one of them. If you omit the fact that they had those claws and wings, every single one of them could potentially be hot and beautiful women!

These Harpies were called after the name of 'Crimson Fire Harpy' for one simple reason. Their wings were so red that they looked like they were on fire, fire that was blazing hot that anything close to them might get scorched immediately. It was really a marvelous vision to gaze upon. However, they did not seem to be marvelous anymore when they are compared to Zhang Yang's Phoenix pet.

[Crimson Fire Harpy] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 135

HP: 2,700,000

Defense: 3,540

Melee Attack: 19,298 - 23,298

Skills:

[Wail]: Causes the target to run blindly in terror. Lasts for 10 seconds.

[Scorching Burns]: Scorches the target and afflicts the target with Burn Effect. Causes 30,000 Fire Damage to the target.

Upon reading the description of the Skills, Zhang Yang could only frown intensely. Those Skills had effects that could potentially give him a hard time if he lures too many monsters over to him. If the monsters could chain up a consecutive Status Restriction Effect on him, he would be as good as dead, even if he has over 1,000,000,000 HP!

From that perspective, the most difficult part about battling a boss was the fact that the boss would mostly not be affected by Status Restriction Skills.



{Spear of Obliteration}!

Zhang Yang struck one of the Harpies that was wandering by the bottom of the mountain. The Harpy was annoyed for being struck straight in the face. It immediately let out a screech and charged towards Zhang Yang, reaching out with its sharp claws.

Felice had already transformed into her Dragonhawk Form before Zhang Yang had launched his assaults on the monster. She launched her {Fire Missile} at the Harpy. The Phoenix pet did not stay idly by the corner. It also spat out flames straight on the Harpy and caused a tremendous amount of damage to it. With these two crazily powerful attackers, the Harpy lost approximately 90,000 HP in an instant!

"Argh!" The strike from the Harpy's claws was blocked by Zhang Yang with his shield. Well, he did activate {Block}. In the meantime, Zhang Yang swung his axe and caused nearly 84,000 damage to the Harpy the moment its claws made contact with Zhang Yang's shield. The Harpy was in so much pain that it screamed and trembled. Feathers were falling off its wings as the thunderous blow rolled past it.

{God of War Devastation}!

‘-258,902!’

The Rage Bar had hit its ceiling cap at the moment. Zhang Yang had no reason to hold back at all. He struck the Harpy with his {God of War Devastation} and caused a damage that was nearly 3

times of his Melee Attack. That was quite some damage he did there!

Even though the Harpy had over 2,700,000 HP, it could not sustain so much damage like how it did back there! It let out a deafening screech and a visible supersonic wave forced its way into Zhang Yang's brain. Zhang Yang felt a sting in his head. Immediately, he lost control over his own body and ran around while he was riding on the back of his Phoenix pet.

{Warrior's Will}!

Without a doubt, he activated his Skill to break himself free from the Terror Effect. Then, he carried on dealing damage to the Harpy that had gone berserk.

"Phew!" The Harpy did not cease its assaults on Zhang Yang. It immediately spat out endless flames. Unfortunately, it could cause merely 16,204 damage on Zhang Yang even though it had over 30,000 basic damage. Zhang Yang had over 800,000 HP after mounting onto the Phoenix pet. So, 16,204 damage was just a piece of cake for him.

Zhang Yang was launching his assaults on the Harpy like he was chopping vegetables. He was also supported by Felice and his Phoenix pet as well. With the three of them dealing a substantial amount of damage to the Harpy, the Harpy was losing its HP faster than it could breathe!

The cooldown of {Wail} was 1 minute. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang

only required lesser time than that in order for him to remove a total amount of 2,700,000 HP. Furthermore, he had help from Felice and the Phoenix pet. The Harpy was taken down to the ground by the three of them in less than half a minute. Zhang Yang earned quite a substantial amount of Experience Points after slaying the Harpy.

As the game progresses on, the difference between the performance of a normal player and the performance of a high Tier player would differ more and more. Usually, it would take about a party of 5 normal players to take on this kind of monster. It would be essential for the party to have a Tanker, A Healer and two DPS players in order to slowly deplete the HP of this monster. However, higher Tiered players do not need to worry about their own HP bars at all. They only needed to make sure they could deal as much damage as possible to the monster before their own HP bars go empty.

Under the current circumstance, Zhang Yang only lost approximately 110,000 HP. He only lost 14% HP as he was mounted on his pet. With that much HP, Zhang Yang could take on 7 of these Harpies before being forced to take some [Snacks] or [Bandages] to recover his HP.

‘Ding! You have acquired an item: Crimson Fire Harpy’s Feather X 3!’

The first few monsters he slew had dropped the very quest item he was searching for. However, the quest required Zhang Yang to collect 1,000 feathers. It seemed that this quest would get Zhang Yang going about in the jungle for quite a while.

Zhang Yang had also wondered if there was a possibility of a boss existing among these massive flock of Harpies. Zhang Yang went on to lure a second Harpy over to him as he had such thoughts on his mind. However, he soon realized that it was unlikely that a boss would exist among a massive horde of monsters.

If he takes on one monster at a time, it would not even be a challenge for Zhang Yang to take down that one monster. However, if Zhang Yang lures too many monsters over to him at the same time, he would be in deep trouble if the monsters chain up their Status Restriction Skills on him perpetually. {Wail} could last for 10 seconds, and it had a cooldown period of 1 minute. Hence, having 6 of these Harpies chaining up their Status Restriction Skills consecutively on him would be enough to lock Zhang Yang in until he is tortured to death!

No one could afford to challenge a bunch of monsters with Status Restriction Skills!

Zhang Yang shook his head and continued on gathering the feathers.

The quest did not request that Zhang Yang slays any specific monsters in order to get the feathers. Therefore, he did not go deeper into the canyon. He only wandered around by the outer skirt of the canyon. Well, as long as he slays a Harpy, there will be a possibility of the quest item dropping. He had no reason to risk his own life venturing deeper into the canyon all by himself.

More than three hours later, Zhang Yang finally gathered 1,000 Harpy's feathers. He headed straight to Rainbow Village to hand in the feathers.

"You indeed have the blood of the great Wild Boarman flowing in your veins!" Shabu tapped on Zhang Yang's shoulder and praised, "May the great Canaans bless you always!"

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Gather the Feathers. You have received a reward: 5,000,000 Experience Points!’

Although it was not much of a reward to receive, Experience Points were hard to come by these days. It would be better than getting nothing at all.

"Zhan Yu, we can't just stop here. Not yet! We must hustle up and do our best! I need you to collect 20 Complete Snake Bones of the Onibi Coastal Taipan. Well, they're snakes. By having their bones, I think we can finally get that Sacred Keepsake!" Shabu was filled with a sense of joy.

‘Ding! Shabu Canaans has a quest for you: Collect the Snake Bones. Will you accept?’

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "My respected Chief, just sit tight and wait for my return with good news!"

"You're the warrior of the Wild Boarmen, the pride of our Rainbow Village! I believe that you will prevail!" Shabu Canaans

raised his piglet nose while talking with pride. It seemed that he actually believed deeply in everything he just said!

Zhang Yang left in begrudgingly as there was no way for him to get through to that wild boarman. He made haste out of the village and went straight for the Blue Water Pond located by the east side of the village.

It was a vast water pond. The water of the pond was aquamarine in color and there was no telling down deep the pond would be, because the water was not crystal clear. The surface of the pond looked frosty, though. Cold vapor was rising from the surface of the water, freezing the air above the pool. The process formed a mist above the surface of the pool. The scene was spectacular to gaze upon. However, that spectacular scene was ruined a little by the 'infestation' of countless python-like creatures. The smallest of them all were at least tens of meters long. Their bodies were as thick as the mouth of a large bowl. Meanwhile, the large ones were about 40 to 50 meters long. Their bodies were as thick as the waist of a grownup man! They looked like small mountains when they curled themselves and rested by the water pond!

[Onibi Coastal Taipan] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 140

HP: 2,800,000

Defense: 3,780

Melee Attack: 20,834 - 24,834

Skills:

[Tail Whip]: Whips the target with its powerful tail of steel, causing 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

[Bind]: Binds the target with its snaky body. If the target cannot deal 300,000 damage to the Onibi Coastal Taipan, the target will die of suffocation. On the contrary, if the target could deal 300,000 damage to the Onibi Coastal Taipan in time, the monster will unbind from the target.

These monsters actually had an Ultimate Skill?! What the hell!

If a player gets themselves tangled up by one of the snakes, they would have to deal 300,000 damage to the Onibi Coastal Taipan or they'd be dead! That would require a DPS of 30,000 damage! It would not be a problem if there is a party around. However, if there are only one or two players in that situation, it would be extremely difficult to deal so much damage over the span of 10 seconds.

However, Zhang Yang was deemed to be one of the top Tier players in the world. A DPS of 30,000 damage was just a walk in the park for him! Phoenix and Felice could already deal 20,000 damage in one second. Even if he stays idle and does nothing at all, the two of them could get Zhang Yang out in no time!

Against such monsters, Zhang Yang was not stupid enough to lure too many monsters over to him. It was not a big deal if one Coastal Taipan came and binds him up. He could easily break himself free from the Coastal Taipan and slay it. However, if a few Coastal Taipans comes over and bind him up, the situation would be very different.

As usual, Zhang Yang started up by throwing his {Spear of Obliteration} at one of the Coastal Taipans and engaged in battle.

The Coastal Taipan was moving very agilely towards Zhang Yang. Its two aquamarine-color eyes were filled with murderous intent.

That Coastal Taipan was at least 30 meters long. Long before it could reach Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang could smell the foul breath of the snake. When the snake opened its mouth wide, two huge fangs emerged, and it was terrifying to look at!

For normal players, battling an Elite Tier monster is almost as hard as battling a boss. Just look at this Onibi Coastal Taipan. It had its very own Ultimate Skill that could potentially kill a player in an instant. The player would be required to deal 300,000 damage to the snake within 10 seconds in order to prevent the snake from killing anymore with that Skill. Well, 5 players were required at the very least to be able to deal such an amount of damage.

The moment when Onibi Coastal Taipan arrived in front of Zhang Yang, it activated its {Bind} straight away. The thick body of the snake curled around Zhang Yang and wrapped him up tightly.



Slash! Slice! Slash!

Zhang Yang swung the battle axe repeatedly at the body of the snake as hard as he could. The damage values popped out one after another, as Zhang Yang slashed the snake up. Meanwhile, Felice and Phoenix pet did not just remain idle. They also fired away.

In just 5 seconds, Zhang Yang, Felice and Phoenix pet managed to deal 300,000 damage to the snake. The Coastal Taipan loosened up its body and activated its {Tail Whip} straight away on Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang raised his shield and blocked the whip attack from the snake's tail. His Strength attribute was way beyond the Strength of the Coastal Taipan. Even though the Coastal Taipan came at Zhang Yang with an imposing figure, Zhang Yang did not flinch at all. He stood his ground firmly while battling against the monster.

"Stinky snake! Just die!" Felice imitated Wei Yan Er and scolded the snake as she was launching her assaults at the snake. She did not forget to add in some phrases and words in-between her attacks.

"Hiss!" The Coastal Taipan hissed out its tongue and launched its assaults on Zhang Yang once again.

As long as Zhang Yang is able to break free of the {Bind}, a Coastal Taipan appeared to be easier to kill than a Harpy. One main reason

was that when the Coastal Taipan activated its {Bind}, it would not be able to launch any other assaults. It would be standing still for others to hit it for free. Therefore, the Coastal Taipan could deal much lesser damage to Zhang Yang than a Harpy could!

Back then when he was battling against the Harpies, he would need to take his [Snacks] to recover his HP after taking down 7 of them. However, he could take down more than 10 Coastal Taipans before he is required to take his [Snacks]. His efficiency had increased by 50%!

However, even though every Coastal Taipan would drop a Snake Bone upon their deaths, not every snake would drop a Complete Snake Bone. Some were either broken or damaged. Although the quest only required Zhang Yang to collect 20 Complete Snake Bones, it still kept him going for more than 3 hours in order to collect enough number of the quest items. The quest was not much simpler compared to the previous one.

# Chapter 658: Hartens

---

Zhang Yang returned to Rainbow Village and submitted the quest, obtaining 5,000,000 experience points as a reward. Even though 5 million experience points was not a small amount, Zhang Yang EXP bar had merely budged by a tiny tick. Zhang Yang could not really do anything about it when it comes to leveling. It was really getting tougher and harder to gain levels.

"HAHAHAHA. snort You have to be a pig! A pig, I'd say!" Shabu was extremely delighted as he held Zhang Yang's tiny hands in his massive hooves – hand hybrid limbs.

Being called a pig by a pig...how does someone react to such a... comment? Should Zhang Yang be happy? Or angry...? With all the right mind, Zhang Yang would not want to be a pig...he quickly addressed another issue to change the topic. "Chief, I heard about something concerning a Sacred Keepsake?"

"Hahaha. That, my little piglet, is the secret of Rainbow Village! No one can know about! However, I'll willing to tell you, for you have the blood of the boar in your veins. As far as I can tell, you're one of us!" Shabu snorted happily.

"It was thanks to the Sacred Keepsake that the village was named Rainbow Village. It was a Violet-Platinum Pillar, inherited since the ancient beings roamed the earth. Placed in the Seven Color Pool, the Sacred Keepsake will radiate the colors of the rainbow!"

"After refining, the Rainbow Light can be made into Rainbow

Crystals. We sell the crystals to merchants to provide daily necessities for the village. To put it mildly, it's our only source of income!"

"Something must have happened then. Was the keepsake stolen?" Zhang Yang asked blatantly.

"That's right." Shabu sighed. "A few months ago. A Mountain Giant raided our village and took the Violet-Platinum Pillar! Without the pillar or the pool, there are no other means of producing the Rainbow Crystal! As of now, we have only enough crystals left for 3 days! After that, we will be out of resources!"

"We may be the proud sons of the god, but the Mountain Giant is just too strong for us to handle. We have carried out many raiding attempts, but we were never able to defeat the d\*mn stone golem! HOWEVER!" Shabu suddenly exclaimed.

"We have found a way to turn the tables around! Instead of defeating the stone golem, we only need to lure him out of the cave where he had stashed the keepsake!"

"However...sigh...That lazy \*ss stone golem is as lazy as us boars! He loves to laze around in his cave and he would never leave the place! Moreover, every time he leaves the cave, the golem would close the cave with a giant stone! We have no power or means of moving the door away!"

"After sometime, I have crafted a strategy. Since the stone golem loves weird, flashy things, we can make that sort of thing easily, to

lure him out of the cave. We can put the bait somewhere close to the cave, and he would not cover the cave, then!"

"We have never had warriors would could defeat the harpies nor the snake. Thus, we have never been able to craft the bait for the strategy! Until you came! Zhan Yu! The true warrior of the boars! In the name of Canaans and the savior who he had sent us! My plans to retrieve the keepsake shall be a success!"

While Shabu was happily indulging in his pseudo-victory, Zhang Yang was frowning madly. Since they had been battling for many rounds, could they not create a sneaky squad to steal the keepsake while the battle team keeps the golem occupied?

"Zhan Yu, Warrior of the Wild Boarmen, would you steal the Keepsake for us?" Shabu asked Zhang Yang with hopes in his eyes. Could he not? Sigh...

‘Ding! Shabu Canaans has a quest for you: Steal the Sacred Keepsake. Would you accept it?’

"I will do my best."

Shabu smiled with his tusks sticking out from his upper lips. "I like your response. Take this. Use it timely and lure the stone golem out of his cave! Zhan Yu, this mission requires speed like never before. I wish for your safe return."

‘Ding! You have obtained: Sparkling Bait!’

[Sparkling Bait] (Quest Item, Usable)

Use: Place it on the ground to lure the Mountain Giant out of its cave. The bait will create a loud noise to attract the golem out. You will then infiltrate the cave while it is occupied by the bait. Speed is the essence of victory. Slow, and you all be caught and killed by the golem.

All and all, Zhang Yang had no need to fight, but to steal and run!

Zhang Yang left the village and flew towards the mountain region with his Phoenix pet. Zhang Yang flew west and after two large and long mountain regions, he descended downward until he could already see the mountain giant's character.

Weirdly, the giant was not hiding in its cave hiding nor sleeping as what Shabu had told him. The golem was in the middle of a fierce battle.

[Hartens] (Ethereal, Elemental Being)

Level: 140

HP: 240,000,000 / 300,000,000

Defense: 9,410

Melee Attack: 70,044 – 90,004

Skills:

[War Stomp]: Sends a violet quake, deals 80,000 physical attack to all targets within 50 meters.

[Maiming Maul]: Deals 150% melee physical attack, causes the target to receive 20% additional damage for the next 10 seconds. Effects cannot stack.

[Elemental Constitution]: Restores 1% HP every 30 seconds, recovery rate cannot be affected by any skill.

Note: Hartens is an extremely lazy Mountain Giant. The only thing that could entice it to move are shiny objects.

How was there a war in the middle of nowhere...Could it be a guild attacking the boss?

Zhang Yang unsummoned the Phoenix pet and peeked carefully without exposing his position. The boss was fighting on flatlands and there were three squads fighting around the boss and three squads fighting elsewhere. The weird part was the fact that the players surrounding the boss were not just fighting the boss, they were also fighting amongst themselves!

Zhang Yang took a closer look and understood the reason. There were two guilds, The Myth, and Sengoku Daimyo.

The Myth was formed by Zhang Yang all-time enemy, while Sengoku Daimyo was a guild that had 99% Japanese players. Each player that belonged to Sengoku Daimyo had the tag "Japan-Korea Region", highlighted with a deep reddish outline.

If Zhang Yang were to guess correctly, the two guilds should be there for an Inheritance quest kill. Supposedly, the stone golem, Hartens was the Inheritance final boss, and they were there, coincidentally for the quest item. Zhang Yang understood the need for war. A quest boss cannot be allowed to be killed by another guild! Especially when the boss was one of the few bosses in a high leveled map! That sort of boss will only respawn after a month (real time). Who could wait that long! Furthermore, the Ethereal tier drops were so valuable right now! Since both guilds would not allow the other to have the boss, they had decided to have a fight till one emerges victorious.

The fight was between the boss, The Myth, and Sengoku Daimyo, with none of them, including the boss choosing either side. Every sides were attacking each other while they were constantly changing their formation to make sure they would have minimal casualties.

Zhang Yang stayed to watch and noticed that The Myth were not attacking as aggressively as their opponents. Even though he was unable to directly observe the damage dealt to each other, he could conclude that the boss was somewhat "sided" with the Myth. The boss was mostly attacking Sengoku Daimyo.

That sort of "cooperation" was intentional. Rather, the boss was



affected by the aggro system and had been attacking those with the higher aggro values. Despite that, Hartens had powerful AoE skills which caused damage to The Myth as well. In the beginning, or rather, when Zhang Yang had started to observe, the two guilds were roughly on the same level. With a little time, and the boss' help, The Myth started to gain advantage over the war.

It did not take long for Sengoku Daimyo to notice the oddity in the battle and immediately stopped their attacks towards the boss. Instead, they switch their attack target towards The Myth. The reason they had stopped attacking was to allow all the players that the boss was attacking to die, and after that, the boss would resort to attacking randomly!

The boss' {War Stomp} was an AoE skill that could deal a powerful 80,000 damage to all enemies. Right then, even a Level 120 with a full set of Violet-Platinum armor would have at most, 80,000 HP. At the very least, they would have 120,000 HP when mounting on a Yellow-Gold battle mount. That was the strength of an average guild. If the player wanted a full set of Mythical tier equipment...or rather...a team of 50 men with full set of Mythical tier equipment...that would be an impossible dream. Perhaps, not for someone like Liu Wei.

If the boss were to go on a rampage, both guilds would inevitably suffer! Zhang Yang did not agree with the actions of the guild. As he continued to observe from the top of the mountain, he noticed something amiss. A group of tanks and healers had peeled off the battle and moved towards toward the boss. They then kited the boss away, far from the war. It seemed that someone had noticed the downside of allowing the boss to rampage and decided to act. However, there was still one aspect that they had missed out on. If

the total DPS does not exceed the boss' regeneration, it would be a complete waste.

The correct method of solving the problem was to eliminate one problem at a time. However, the problem that was present at that time was the enemy of both guilds were a guild and a boss!

Zhang Yang shook his head disapprovingly at their decision. However, it was by far, the best situation for Zhang Yang! He could nonchalantly enter the cave and take the quest item with no trouble at all! Instead of the Phoenix, Zhang Yang chose to use the Violet Thunderhawk to travel. The Phoenix was just too grand and conspicuous. The Violet-Thunderhawk was different. Zhang Yang shot through the air like a missile across the sky and zoomed into the cave. With the great, intense battle going on, no one would notice Zhang Yang's sudden intrusion. If he were to ride on the Phoenix, the long trail of flame would be a beacon of light in the vast void, anyone would notice him immediately!

The cave was large, but not too deep. Zhang Yang only flew for a few hundred meters and had reached its end. There, he found the item he was seeking for. It was a long, shiny pole with a little sharp end.

[Violet-Platinum Pillar] (Quest Item)

Description: The best toothpick ever!

WHAT?

Zhang Yang did not bother to examine the item, for when he thought of how the giant was using it as a toothpick ultimately disgusted him. Now that the item was in hand, it was time to leave. However, Zhang Yang grinned like a madman when he observes the still ongoing battle.

When wars are fought, the vultures shall be fed.

It was impossible for Zhang Yang to kill Harthens alone, even if he uses the God of War Inheritance. He could, if the skill {Berserker's Heal} had not been erased from the game. But then again, one does not need to work hard, if he works smart! If he sneaks into the battlefield and reaches out to the boss at the very last minute, he could practically loot all the drops without them noticing! It wouldn't even be a difficult task, to begin with!

Zhang Yang had no reason to let them have the better end, for neither Liu Wei nor the Japanese were on his good side.

# Chapter 659: A Vulture

---

"This is boring..." said Zhang Yang as he yawned. He had been waiting for more than 20 minutes and the boss still had 82% HP left on its extremely long HP bar.

Luckily for the players down there, there were all above than Level 110. Or else, they would have been affected by the annoying Level Suppression system. Not that it mattered, since they were fighting the boss in such a chaotic situation! Either side would have to deal with the destructive attack of the boss.

On one side, Zhang Yang had forced himself to be awake, on the other, the players were having one of the most intense moment in their lifetime. As the battle continued to drag on, the two guilds had not wait for long to reveal their trump card. Many of them had used their Inheritance Transformation skills to speed things up a notch.

There were a total of seven players in The Myth who had used their Transformation while Sengoku Daimyo had only six. As such, the tide of war changed dramatically.

Inheritance players possessed the ultimate power to take down normal players and had high resistance towards non-Inheritance players' status effect skills. Plus, with their elongated HP and Defense, they would be invincible if they had a powerful team of healers to back him or her up. Furthermore, Inheritance players may have only 500% boosted single attack power, their card in the sleeves was their ability to attack in an extremely large area of 100 meters x 100 meters! Some may be only 50 meters, but it is still

overwhelming when compared to a regular non-Inheritance player.

After a few minutes of EP charging, players started to unleash their accumulated power and started casting powerful and rather beautiful AoE skill all over the battlefield. The death toll of both sides of the war had shot up so high that it could break the graph!

The best performing players all time was Death Arbiter. He was one of the few who had manage to gather a huge amount of popularity over an extremely short amount of time. His display of prowess was made even grander with the activation of his Demon Hunter Inheritance Transformation skill, along with the Mechanical Quad-Wing Tiger mount!

However, despite the flashy moves and bright skill animation, the one that had attracted Zhang Yang most was none other than Liu Wei.

The bastard had acquired the Demon Summoner Inheritance and was able to permanently have a Demon Lord by his side as a pet. Those who had been killed by Demon Lord will revive as a small devil to aid in him in battle. If he wanted to, the man could assemble an army of demon to do his bidding.

However so, he was just one man and one Demon Lord, the number of players that could fall in his hands were limited to a certain amount. Additionally, the man had assembled the same 12 Guardians by his side to chain cast the skill {Sacrifice}. The sort of stance, the posture he had right then, was enough to urge anyone in sight to kill him. The proud smug on that bastard had even

Zhang Yang's blood boiling. In fact, it was not just Zhang Yang! His posture and all was a public provocation! As such, a large army of players had rushed over to him with a strong killing aura! Sadly, the man had an army of Guardians to protect him with their {Sacrifice}. If that was not hard enough, there were still B class Inheritance players standing in front of him as the absolute defense line. With their superior HP and Defense, not many normal players would breach the line that easily.

Zhang Yang had to hold his anger back and praised the man for his ability to craft up such a cowardly strategy.

The heat of battle had risen again. This time, it was almost reaching its climax. Both guilds were losing more players that they could replenish them. At most, Zhang Yang predicted that the battle with last only for another 5 minutes before a winner emerges. As such, the losing side could never turn the tables around anymore. Those that revived had only 20% HP. Those who had their dead bodies guarded will inevitably be killed with a single strike.

In a battle between two sides, whenever one has more death counts than the other, the losing side would never have the ability to recover anymore.

From the top of the mountain, Zhang Yang could clearly see that The Myth had the upper hand in the war. One of the main reasons was due to Death Arbiter amazing performance. That, and the party that he had brought along with him. Alone, he was not able to do as much. However, with a team of cooperative players by his side, he was able to perforce more extraordinarily than the

Japanese players. With intense vigor on his side, players of Sengoku Daimyo had lost their morale. Slowly, but surely, the players of Sengoku Daimyo had turned passive.

Liu Wei had predicted this and changed the battle strategy once the enemy had lost the will to fight. He then commanded the guild to focus their main attack target towards the boss instead of the players. Even so, he had still left a few strong players to hold back the line to prevent players of Sengoku Daimyo from reaching the boss. The man was greedy. With one hand on the boss, and another on the enemy, he was not willing to allow neither of them to get away from him. At least, until he was sure that he could get the loot of the boss; there could be a possibility that the boss will be killed before Sengoku Daimyo falls back. If that happens, he would have to make sure the players that are surrounding the boss were all his and none of the enemy's.

However impregnable Liu Wei strategy was, he had seriously underestimated the boss' prowess. Harten's single stomp could deal 80,000 damage to all. 80,000 damage may seem low for Zhang Yang, but it was extremely painful for the rest of the world. Neither The Myth, nor Sengoku Daimyo was as strong as Lone Desert Smoke, for they had players with strong equipment that could tank the hits like it was a mosquito bite.

If neither side had chosen to start the war whilst attacking the boss, one of them would have already taken down the boss. But then again, both sides shared the same strong headed attitude. Hence, the outcome.

With the boss' wild attacks, both sides had already suffered from

massive casualties. Right then, most of the players from both guilds were attacking the boss instead of each other. White pillars of lights could be seen as the battle continued. Those light pillars were signals that indicated players were falling and had their souls sent to the graveyard.

70%...50%... 30%...

With haste, the boss HP dropped quickly, as well as the number of players surrounding the boss. The main reason why Sengoku Daimyo was unable to replenish their forces was due to the vast distance from the graveyard to the battlefield. Most players had chosen to sacrifice their dignity and chose to revive directly at the graveyard. That way, they could travel via their mounts instead of running back to their dead bodies in their soul mode. It would take close to an hour if they had chosen to run.

However the situation develops, it was hard to tell whether the players would succeed in killing the boss.

Zhang Yang waited impatiently. There were many times where he almost dozed off, and was lucky to be awake when the boss' HP dropped to 10%!

Zhang Yang made his move and hopped onto the Thunderhawk. Right outside the line of sight, Zhang Yang unsummoned the bird and entered the ground via {Burrow}. He then made his way towards the boss and waited underneath its stone giant feet.

As the boss started to reach its deathbed, the player counts of



both The Myth and Sengoku Daimyo was reduced down to only tens of players. The battle was headed towards a Pyrrhic victory. If either side wins, they would have done so at great cost. By then, Zhang Yang was deep within the earth. He was at least 20 meters beneath the boss. If he was any higher, he would be within the range of {War Stomp} and take damage from it.

9%...7%...3%...

Zhang Yang started moving upwards. Although he had already taken one instance of damage from {War Stomp}, it was a damage that he was willing to take voluntarily, in order to get close to be the first to grab all the loot when the boss is defeated! When the number of players started to drop even lower than before, Zhang Yang would emerge out the ground and deal a few hits to the boss.

8,000,000...

5,000,000...

2,000,000...

700,000...

Zhang Yang resurfaced and activated {Indiscriminate}. In a flash, he used {Blood Rage} gaining a large sum of Rage points. With the damage he had taken earlier from {War Stomp}, coupled with one more when he resurfaced, Zhang Yang's Rage gauge was full!

{Killing Cleave}!

‘-742,234!’

"AOUUURGHH!" The stone giant roared deafeningly and fell to the ground, dropping a mountain of loot.

In an instance, Zhang Yang experience bar expanded by a large bump. In a non-party battle condition, he had gained 50% of the total experience reward from killing the boss, since he was the player that had dealt the final killing blow.

Since the boss was too large, no one had witnessed Zhang Yang attacking. Since they were all in parties, the reduced experience points gain had led them to believe that someone from the other side had managed to land the killing blow.

"GRAB THE LOOT!" Liu Wei bellowed. "STOP THE JAPANESE!"

Both sides wanted to land a hand on the loots, hence, in a split second, the airspace was filled with flying arrows and magical arcane sparks that were meant to disable the opponent.

Zhang Yang was thrilled. He turned around to search for the loot pile and gobbled everything up.

In less than a few seconds, the place was swept clean, leaving nothing but dust and dirt for both guilds to cry about. However, even though both sides were blasting spells and skill to each other,

not everyone would take the hit. When Zhang Yang was reaching his hands out to grab the last pair of boots, another player's hands were in his way.

"HM!? You are...ZHAN YU!?" A startled voice was heard from the mouth of the player and it belonged to none other than the bastard Liu Wei!

"Ding ding! Correct, but no cigar for you!" said Zhang Yang with a grin and he slammed the 'Dragon Slayer' Battle Axe at Liu Wei.

‘-87,332!’

A powerful damage landed on Liu Wei, however, since the bastard was in his Transformation skill, the attack had made no significant damage to him. However, it was not meant to be. When he had used {Killing Cleave} earlier, he had used up all his Rage points to do so. Hence, with no Rage left, he had to start building up his Rage points again.

{Brutal Smash}!

Zhang Yang laid down a stunning skill and successfully stunned Liu Wei. The bastard had already used up all his status effect skills and status effect removing skills a few seconds back when the boss had fallen. Hence, with nothing left in his sleeves, Liu Wei the bastard had inevitably taken the hit. He could only stare in disbelief when he saw Zhang Yang picking up the last of the loot and waltzing away.

If Zhang Yang happened to have the sought-after Inheritance Fragment in his inventory, even the Inheritance quest item would have been snagged away!

"KILL ZHAN YU! KILL THAT MOTHERF\*CKER!" Liu Wei bellowed at the top of his lungs and almost destroyed his voice box.

Zhang Yang bit down the urge to continue the fight. If the bastard had not used his Transformation skill, Zhang Yang could have easily killed the bastard without breaking a sweat. Right then, although he was a little bit discontented, he laughed with the satisfaction of taking all the loot and disappeared in the middle of the war with {Shadow of the Void}.

A few seconds later, the greatly disgruntled players could only stare in disbelief as Zhang Yang soared away in the sky, riding on his fiery Phoenix pet.

The two guilds were left with nothing else but the Inheritance Fragment. Hence, the battle to kill for the trophy continued raging. When there was nothing else left, at the very least, they would not allow the enemy to take away the one and only drop left, and that was the Inheritance quest item!

Zhang Yang smiled from ear to ear as he rode the Phoenix, back to Rainbow Village. Without a doubt, when two guilds were at each other throats, the vulture, that is Zhang Yang, had won it all!

"Nishishishi." Zhang Yang snickered at his own devilish act.

Zhang Yang opened his inventory U.I and checked his loot.

For an Ethereal map boss, Hartens had only dropped two Ethereal tier and two Mythical tier equipment. There were also one [Skill Point Crystal] and one skill book.

Zhang Yang had no need to review the Mythical tier and examined the two Ethereal tier equipment instead. It was a Leather Armor glove, and a beautiful radiant cape.

With the [Identifying Scroll] in hand, Zhang Yang immediately used the scroll on the cape. Since it was a cape for physical attack types, Zhang Yang casually took it for himself and swapped it off for the old cape.

[Rocky Cape] (Ethereal, Cape)

Vitality: +1556

Strength: +532

Dexterity: +532

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 3,110.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 8%.

Equip: Absorbs 458 damage on attack.

Equip: Increases Critical strike rate by 2%

Level Requirement: 140

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Argh shuck...

Even though he was able to Identify the item right on the spot, he still needed to return to town to have the cape socketed with Gemstones.

# Chapter 660: Phony Crap

---

Quicker than Death Arbiter, Zhang Yang had gained instant popularity in just 5 minutes. Both guilds, The Myth and Sengoku Daimyo had resorted to vent their anger on the international forums. Naturally, the contents of their post were ill-voiced. Most of it was simple insults for stealing their loot, and running away without a fight. All in all, the sort of actions that does not befit a guild master!

The Myth had even hired a few members of Rogue Family to stand at the entrance of Morning Town to insult Zhang Yang. Naturally, without Zhang Yang's master approval, a few members had launched an attack to get rid of the hooligans. However, before they could even start gathering, someone had stood out amongst the crowd stating that Zhang Yang had successfully stolen the boss loot despite having more than 20,000 players from each guild. With so many eyeballs around, how could they not be on the alert? What was there to blame, anymore?

The situation would be different if the thief were out stealing the loot from a boss that was defeated by a team of 5 players. That sort of movement shall be condemned by all players! However, if someone were to have the balls to steal a boss that was being attacked by two guilds with a total player count of 40,000, it was no longer considered to be thievery, but rather a feat that was worth praising for. Which guild would not set up perimeters to prevent any Thieves from infiltrating their formations? If anyone is still able to infiltrate the perimeters, break past several blockades, and steal the loot right under their nose, it would be a feat that is worthy enough of being praised.

Hence, when the two guilds had blatantly "broadcasted" Zhang Yang's evil "feat", they were merely helping him to advertise his achievement! Zhang Yang had chosen to lay low until they realized what they have done and ceased their futile actions. That turn, it was really a fold.

...

By then, Phoenix was the one out of the only two Legendary Beasts that was turned into a pet. The other being, Fatty Han's pet. It may share the same tier as other Mythical tier mounts but this burning fiery bird was far superior in every way. One of which, its movement speed was the fastest by far. Like meteor in the sky, Zhang Yang zoomed through the skyline, leaving a trail of fiery trails that burned beautifully amongst the clouds. In a blink of an eye, Zhang Yang had returned to Rainbow Village.

After he had turned over the Violet-Platinum Pillar to Shabu, the older, fat Wild Boarman hugged the pole with a lover-like caress. While Shabu was having the time of his life, Zhang Yang cringed hard. The pig was rubbing his face on a monster's toothpick...

"snort sniff Hm? How is there some weird smell on the Sacred Keepsake? Perhaps the cave of the stone giant was extremely dirty!"

Whatever rolls your ball dude...

"Zhan Yu, Warrior of the Wild Boarmen, you have single-handedly saved the entire village. I, Shabu Cananns, hereby



represent the entire village to express our appreciation." Shabu bowed.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Steal the Scared Keepsake. Obtained 5,000,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Pillar of the Soul!’

Hoho. An item?

[Pillar of the Soul] (Accessory, Violet-Platinum)

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 3%.

Use: Purges all status effect debuff. Cooldown: 5 minutes.

Level Requirement: 130

Hmph. Not bad. It was a common anti-skill accessory, though the [Pillar of the Soul] had an extra 3% damage and healing increment. Sadly, it was merely a Violet-Platinum equipment. Most importantly, it was an accessory of which a dungeon boss would never drop. Right then, there perhaps were countless of level 100 players that were still using level 50 or 60 accessories.

Sadly, [Pillar of the Soul] could only purge debuffs, but not grant Invincibility. At least a second would have been great. Then again, the item was just a Violet-Platinum tier, to have such stats would

be considered good.

Zhang Yang bowed in return and asked, "Chief, now that the Sacred Keepsake is back in place, can it make the Rainbow Light?"

"Of course!" Shabu smiled. He then gestured for Zhang Yang to follow him towards the center plaza of the village. There, the chief called for the rest of the villagers to gather as he happily announced the return of the Sacred Keepsake. Everyone came closer and bowed towards Zhang Yang to express their thanks.

In the center of the plaza, there was a large water fountain that was spraying out water all over a pool. The light ray shone on it, emitting a beautiful rainbow. Shabu then placed the Violet-Platinum Pillar in the center of the fountain. With a little tremble of power, the rainbow that refracted out of the fountain grew brighter and wider. After the first wave of power trembled, a small piece of Rainbow Crystal dropped out of the air and fell into the pool. Shabu went ahead and picked up the thumb-sized crystal.

Zhang Yang interrupted Shabu and asked, "Excuse me Chief, could I have one Rainbow Light?"

It's called manners. If they would not give it to him, he could just snatch it and run.

"By all means. Now that the Keepsake is back, we can easily produce more than 10 Rainbow Light a day! You are the village savior! One? I'll give you 10!" said Shabu with delight. However, when Zhang Yang reached out his hand to retrieve the item, Shabu

had only given him a single piece. Shabu then turned away with no intention to give Zhang Yang anymore.

Zhang Yang was extremely disappointed. He should have known not to trust a pig, for their words mean nothing! He had genuinely believed that the pig would give him 10 pieces! Luckily no one was around. It would be extremely embarrassing to let anyone know that Zhang Yang was tricked by a pig.

After Zhang Yang had obtained the quest item, he left the village that was filled with pigs and boards (not literally), and headed to the next town called, Eskbeak Town. There, the item that he sought for was called the Mythical Dense Water.

Even though Eskbeak Town was located in the same map as Rainbow Village, the vastness of Chaos Realm had the two locations placed extremely far apart. Even with the super speedy Phoenix, Zhang Yang traveled for 4 hours before he reached the far, secluded town.

There, the town was filled with only humans. Occasionally, there were one or two dwarven explorers with a few more gnomes around. Zhang Yang paid attention to the dwarf that he was looking for, since the quest had indicated for him to search for a dwarf named Felma – Iron Hammer.

Zhang Yang switched to the Gold Eared Bear King to travel in town and asked for news of Felma. He then made his way to the west of the town and found Felma in a hardware store. The man was a red beard dwarf. Even his skin carried a certain reddish hue. Naturally, the man had a long bushy beard that was braided into

several locks. He wore a pair of round glasses that is usually worn by engineers. His style was completely self-contradictory. He looked like the kind of person who would not dwell much into studies, yet the ashen hands indicated that he had been tinkering on some mechanical contraption. On the other hand, the glasses and his tidy beard indicated that he was a meticulous man.

[Felma – Iron Hammer] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 130

Note: Felma Hardware Store! There's nothing that he doesn't sell!

"Welcome. Young human. What can I do for you?" Felma nodded as Zhang Yang came into his store. He then opened one of the display cupboards and started to promote his products. "Would you fancy a Snow Lotus Core? Or perhaps this Frost Heart. How about a roll of Silk spun from the Golden Silkworm?"

Zhang Yang shook his head as he examined the store. There were many weirdly shaped items placed on display.

"Perhaps...are you interested in the Miracle Root that could increase your ahem by 5 inches?"

Zhang Yang frowned and immediately found a seat and sat down. Even so, he was still taller by two heads!

"I'm looking for the Mythical Dense Water."

"MYTHICAL WHAT?" Felma exclaimed.

"Mythical Dense Water. You don't have it? Oh well. I'll look for it at the other store."

Felma coughed and stood up. "What joke is that? There's nothing that I don't sell in my store! Human! Are you humiliating me?!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Ah. In that case, can I have a bottle?"

"I have them. But they don't come cheap." Felma did not move. He glared into Zhang Yang eyes and hurled out his hands, demanding money.

"How much?" said Zhang Yang impatiently.

"Three...Wait. No. 500 gold coins." Felma twitched a little, and Zhang Yang immediately spotted it.

"Deal." Zhang Yang handed over 500 gold coins to the dwarf. He then went to the back of his store and came back out with a bottle of pale looking water.

Zhang Yang took the bottle into his hand and felt that something was extremely off. The quest should not have been that easy!

## [Mythical Dense Water]

Description: A valuable and rare item.

Something was indeed amiss. Even though he had obtained the item, the [Mythical Dense Water] that he had obtained from Felma did not contain the item tag {Quest Item}! In his quest log, the quest had indicated Rainbow Light as 1/1 yet the Mythical Dense Water was still 0/1! It was a fake!

F\*ck the dwarf! Greedy bastards!

Zhang Yang slammed the table and yelled, "Dwarf! What is this crap! You dare to cheat me with forgery?!"

"Fake?!" Falma yelled back. "Don't you dare try to spoil my reputation by imposing false accusations! I'll have you pay me 1,000 gold coins as compensation!" Felma jumped off the stool he was sitting on to stand toe to toe with the human. It only made him look even shorter in comparison.

Zhang Yang reached out and grabbed Felma's neck with one hand and grinned. "1,000 gold coins yeah? Here, have it in your face!"

WHAM! WHAM!

Zhang Yang slapped the cheater in his face so hard that it caused a powerful concussion to the dwarf. The dwarf was spinning around, disoriented!

"Hey! Is it enough? I have millions of gold coins here ready to be delivered to your face again!" said Zhang Yang.

The dwarf got a hold of himself and cried to stop. "No! Stop! Please!"

"Than, give me the real Mythical Dense Water!"

"URGH!" Felma cringed as he still trying to resist. However, when he saw Zhang Yang's face tense up and his right arm was ready to deliver his "money", Felma jumped and gave in. "I don't have the Mythical Dense Water! However, I do know where to get the real one!"

Zhang Yang waited for him finish his sentence, but he stopped talking and was rubbing his swollen cheek. "Well!? Continue then! Sit down! Tell me where is the Mythical Dense Water!"

"It's...somewhere far..."

"..."

Zhang Yang grew weary of his trickery and slammed the table. "I think you could still use a few more gold coins in the face to wake up."

"Wait! Wait! It's really in a place far away from here. In the

Xixiluca Sea, west of the deep oceans lie ruins that was once called the Karxilor Palace. There were many merfolk living there but they were mostly evil pirates! Roughly four years ago, I have managed to find a bottle of Mythical Dense Water there. However, when I was on my way back to land, I was attacked by the wretched beings! If you are lucky, you can still find the Mythical Dense Water in their leaders' hand. His name is Dormian." Felma gritted his teeth as he spoke.

Zhang Yang stood up with such speed that he had scared the little, red bearded dwarf. Zhang Yang turned around and left the store without saying another word.

"Hey! Human! Wait. When I was attacked back then, I was carrying many other precious items with me. If you do plan to attack their lair, could you..."

Zhang Yang interrupted him and said, "1,000 gold coins for each item I find!"

"...You robbing me!"

"What are you talking about?! I'm robbing them!"

Zhang Yang didn't wait for long and left the town with the fiery bird.

Felma was right about one thing. Karxilor Sea was really far away. From the town, Zhang Yang would have to cross a Level 120



– Level 150 map called Gilstein. The total time taken would be close to 10 hours! However, Zhang Yang was not worried about it. The Phoenix will never get tired and could fly forever if it had to. Two hours later, Zhang Yang arrived at a place called the Cindia Flatlands, which was within the Gilstein region.

"Big brother..." Zhang Yang turned around when he heard Felice muttering something. The little girl was sitting behind Zhang Yang.

"What's wrong?"

"Felice can feel something down there. Someone...is calling to Felice!"

# Chapter 661: Deep Sleep

---

It has been a while since he last talked to Felice. Right then, when Felice had suddenly said something that was completely out of the norm, Zhang Yang could not help but to think about her past. He had no idea of Felice's background.

She was a Battle Companion. Despite hatching out of an egg, the little powerful girl had a connection with the goddess of war! Whenever she goes berserks, she could even solo kill an S class Inheritance quest boss! If that is not weird enough, she also had the ability to morph into a Dragonhawk! What sort of being was Felice, really?!

Zhang Yang stopped the Phoenix and said, "Follow the voice that calls to you. I shall follow you from behind in case anything goes wrong."

"However, Felice thinks that Big Brother should go to Xixiluca Sea! Felice does not want to waste Big Brother's time." Felice shrunk in guilt.

Zhang Yang could have hug the little girl with love. The girl was so thoughtful! If Felice is an angel, the little Wei Yan Er would be the devil!

Zhang Yang smiled and pats her head gently. "Do not worry about Big Brother. Time is nothing for me."

"Okay!" Felice squeaked with delight.

She then morphed into her Dragonhawk form and shot downward to the land. Zhang Yang followed her closely from behind. As they reached a lower altitude, Zhang Yang noticed that he was approaching a sea of forest that spanned out as far as the horizons. The trees that grew in the forest were extremely tall; measuring up to at least 200 to 300 meters high! Aside from the color green, there was nothing else that Zhang Yang could see.

Felice flew freely and quickly, as if she knew where she was going. As Felice flew towards a fixed direction, her speed gradually increased to a point where Zhang Yang was unable to keep up. At a certain distance, Zhang Yang could have sworn that Felice's wings were emitting bright radiant colors of the rainbow.

What was going on?

Out of the sudden, Felice dived downwards and submerged into the thick forest, disappearing completely from Zhang Yang's line of sight. Luckily, she was not really gone. Felice's icon was still visible in the mini-map. Zhang Yang was still able to chase after her.

After 3 to 4 minutes later, Felice stopped at a position. Zhang Yang went through several thick trees and came to her position easily as the trees were gradually growing sparsely around her position. Felice was standing close to a statue. There were no trees around the statue for several meters, making it a light beacon in the dark thick forest.

The stone statue was at least a hundred meters tall. If the tree were not taller, the statue would be extremely easy to spot from the sky. If Felice had not sense it, no one could possibly notice its presence.

Zhang Yang got down and walked towards the stone statue. After close examination, Zhang Yang was thrown away. Although there were green moss growing at most of the status, Zhang Yang could still recognize the face. The statue was craft in the image of the Goddess of War!

Felice was already in her human form. She stood silently and stared at the statue with eyes that speaks of longingness.

"Felice..." Zhang Yang called out to her, worried that she might be sadden.

"...could feel....energy inside...power. Its calling for Felice..." In trance, Felice did not respond to Zhang Yang call. She then slowly reached out her pearl white arms to touch the statue.

Zhang Yang was not paying attention to Felice. By then, when he had, he was already too late. Felice had already had her hands placed on the statue. Right then, both Felice and the statue glowed with a bright radiant light, forcing Zhang Yang to shut his eyes.

When he come to, Felice had disappeared. The statue however had somewhat renewed itself into a marbled, polished appearance.

Zhang Yang panicked.

"FELICE! WHERE ARE YOU! FELICE!" Zhang Yang shouted manically. Felice's dot in the mini-map had disappeared. She was also not in her Battle Companion U.I. She was gone.

"Big Brother..."

Zhang Yang turned his head violently towards the direction of Felice's soft voice.

"I am here." Her voice echoed in his head.

"Felice?! Are you trapped in the statue?! Don't worry. Big Brother will get you out!"

"Do not fear. Felice is in a safe place. There is a feeling of happiness and sincerity from within. Felice is not in harm's way..."

"What are you saying...?" Zhang Yang could not help but to feel worried.

"Big Brother...Felice will go to sleep now...Fear not Big Brother. For when Felice wakes up. Felice will be stronger. Felice could not explain why...Please leave Felice alone for a while...Felice will search for Big Brother when the time is ripe..."

The soft, sweet voice of Felice died down and she stopped talking.

With the intimate connection between the Goddess of War and Felice, Zhang Yang took Felice's word for it. He believed that the goddess would do no harm to her. Zhang Yang was at a loss. Such an event had never occurred in his life nor his previous life. Perhaps, Felice was the one and only battle companion in the entire game with such a lore hidden.

Zhang Yang lingered for a bit and tried calling out to Felice. However, after several futile attempts, Zhang Yang brushed off some dried leaves that had settled on the statue and said, "You best take care of my little Felice."

Zhang Yang trusted that Felice will be true to her word and search for him when she was done with whatever that was going on within the statue. He summoned the Phoenix pet and shot to the skies, leaving the statue alone.

With Felice out of the picture temporarily, Zhang Yang was left alone in deafening silence. He then called the little brat out and teased her a little as a means of killing time. It was...rather fun to occasionally make fun of the little brat until she does her usual threat of unfriending you... biting your head off...or that sort.

After flying for close to seven to eight hours, Zhang Yang reached the borders of Xixiluca Sea. He continued towards the west to search for the palace under the water.

By the time Zhang Yang had reached where he was, Zhang Yang was only a dive and swim away from the Karxilor Palace, however,

he chose to log out and wake up, for the time was already almost dawn. He had personally set a timer to wake him up at 6am, sharp. Zhang Yang got up, changed into his jogging attire and ran out of the mansion. He jogged to the nearest food stall and bought large bags of breakfast for the girls in his house. After breakfast, Sun Xin Yu went to work in her office and Zhang Yang went to his.

When he arrived to the office, he wanted to hide in his office to play some games after he was done signing a bunch of documents. However, when he came to the office, his secretary approached him and informed him of some matters. "Mr. Zhang. You have a visitor today. It's Mr. Lin. The Deputy Section Chief of the City Municipal Council."

Zhang Yang frowned. Although it was unavoidable for him to mingle with a few government officials since he was involved in a multi-million dollar business, most of the matters that involved higher ups did not usually require his individual presence. Why would someone from the Municipal Council would want to talk to him? For worse, the Municipal Council was remotely related to the business world!

No matter how much he sighed, the person was already there waiting for him. There was no way that he could sent him away. Even though he had Sun Xin Yu supporting him, he could not afford to make new enemies when a few lesser devils were still haunting him!

Zhang Yang came into the lobby and into the guest room. There, sitting on the grand sofa, was a thin, scrawny middle-aged man who was puffing on a cigar. Sitting by his side was man with

glasses. He was carrying a suitcase and was extremely well-mannered. Zhang Yang could tell since the man sitting posture was stoic and bares no resembles to that of a ruffian. The man was probably a secretary.

"Mr. Lin. Happy to meet your acquaintance." said Zhang Yang as he tried his best to be friendly.

The middle-aged man smiled and stood up from the sofa and held his hand out to shake Zhang Yang's. However, before he could speak, the man with glasses raised his voice. "Mr. Zhang, how dare you allow Mr. Lin to wait for you! Do you know how busy is Mr. Lin?!"

Did the man just scolded him when he was the one who came unannounced?

Zhang Yang was not famous for being patient. In fact, since he had been playing too much games lately, when he feels a conflict that could not be solve by talking arise, he would use his sword to do the follow-up "talk". Zhang Yang eye widened with rage and he threw a killing glare towards the man who had just scolded him. Although he was not the kind of person that would pick a fight with random strangers, he would be the first to step on his head when he reaches his limit. Then again, as long as he is not the first person to throw the punch, Sun Xin Yu, the ultimate backup, would cover his sorry butt.

"Zhou!" Mr. Lin turned his head and silently muttered something towards him. The secretary immediately retreated to his back and kept quiet despite remaining visibly furious.



"Mr. Zhang. I am truly sorry for that. My visitation today was actually in a favor of another person. I'm inviting you to a tea party," said Mr. Lin.

Someone had sent a Deputy Section Chief from the City Municipal Council to send an invitation to a tea party to Zhang Yang. Whoever that person was, he was big time. It was a gesture to display his power.

Zhang Yang smiled. "Mr. Lin. You could have just make a simple phone call or let this Zhou guy to send me a message? I'm honored that you would willing to make some time just to visit me."

The man in glasses was still fuming with rage, and when he heard what Zhang Yang had just said, he was even furious! Mr. Lin was a man who was extremely powerful in the city! Him, being the secretary to such a man shared a portion of that power! Zhang Yang had purposely been provocative to shame him!

"Haha! Nonsense. The honor of serving the citizens, that is the greatest aim for me. Isn't that what a public official is supposed to do?" Mr. Lin laughed.

Zhang Yang was thrown, the man could perhaps be a genuinely nice guy. If he stills reject his invitation, it would be an obvious act of hostility.

The three men left the building. Zhang Yang personally led Mr. Lin and Zhou the secretary out to their own private car. It was a

black colored limousine and the car brought all of them around the city and arrived at a small upscale, uptown, grand, little tea shop. Although the little tea shop could seat not more than 10 people at a time, the place was heavily guarded with security. Zhang Yang knew about the place. It was only when he became the C.E.O of Silky Soft Holdings. Only those that are invited could visit the shop, and most of them were billionaire! Normal people like Fatty Han would not even have a chance to glance into the shop!

Inside the shop were hostess that beauty could rival Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue! They wore short little Qi Baos, fully emphasizing their voluptuous breasts and filled buns! Anyone could have mistaken this little shop for a 5 star grand hotel!

The beautiful hostess walked towards the car and opened the door. "Sir." The girl addressed with the utmost politeness. She then led all three of them towards the inside of the shop and towards the innermost part. Surprisingly, there was a room inside the shop which the lady gently knocked.

A manly voice roared from the inside saying, "Come in!"

Zhang Yang and the two other men entered the room and the hostess close the door behind.

The room was not big, but it was grand and was brimming with elegance. At the center of the room, there was a small tea table that Zhang Yang recognized that something that was handcrafted. Surrounding all corners of the room were four different types of sofa that spelled the word EXPENSIVE!

There were two young man sitting at the polar opposite of the room. In their embrace were hostess. They were indeed beautiful. Zhang Yang could not deny that perhaps his little john would love to have a little dig in their caves! One of them had even misbuttoned her clothing, allowing the fairness of her skin to expose to the men. If Zhang Yang were to guess, that particular girl just had her cavern system explored by the men in the room.

Sitting at the north of the room was a man that was roughly 26 to 27 years old. He had a handsome face. If he wanted he could have been a supermodel. When Zhang Yang came in, the man was still nonchalantly rubbing his hands underneath the girls' dress, which made them moan and twitched.

Sitting at the south of the room was the man that Zhang Yang could have killed not too long ago.

"My. My. What a crowd!" Mr. Lin laughed. "Allow me to introduce everyone here. This man here is Young Master Ma Zhi Hua from the Ma Family from Beijing. That man is Liu."

"LIU (motherf\*cking) WEI." Zhang Yang muttered his name. Zhang Yang clenched his fist. He interrupted Mr. Lin and raised his voice.

"I don't know why you have to put up with such a dramatic action just to have me invited here. Perhaps you want me to see how pathetic you can be?"

"HAHAHAHA!" Ma Zhi Hua laughed as if Zhang Yang's angry utterance was a joke. At that, his actions alone was a declaration that he was much powerful than Liu Wei. Liu Wei said nothing. He merely smiled awkwardly.

"Hm...Let's see. If we were to talk about age, I guess...you should be calling me your cousin brother!" said Ma Zhi Hua, as he laughed again hysterically.

Zhang Yang bit down his anger. "F\*CK YOU. If you're my cousin brother, I'd rather be the father of a donkey!" Zhang Yang mentally scolded.

# Chapter 662: Brain Dead

---

"I don't recall there being a branch family." Zhang Yang commented coldly.

"I don't see the reason that why she would tell you about it! After all, our family is the main branch!" Ma Zhi Hua denoted his statement with a stoic stance. "When I say "she", I meant my cousin sister. Sun Xin Yu."

Did he just claim to be Sun Xin Yu's elder cousin?

Zhang Yang examined his behavior and believed his words. Such a statement could either be true, or he had the balls to proclaim something as absurd as him being the ruler of China. However, even if he were to marry Sun Xin Yu, there was some sort of feeling that he was unable to shake off. Now that this self-righteous bastard was there talking bullc\*ck, Zhang Yang felt that he was no one being married into a royal family. Everyone will be looking and judging him.

"Zhang Yang...I...I'm asking for peace between us. Let us shake it off and forget whatever that had happened past." Liu Wei stood up and solemnly held out his hands. The look of regret and fear in his eyes were genuine.

Perhaps only then he had realized who Sun Xin Yu was and what she was capable off. Perhaps that was the reason he would voluntarily offer his "non-conditional surrender". Furthermore, would not be for the best of he make peace with his rival. Even

though he did not seem to have any sort of enmity towards Ma Zhi Hua. If he had not made peace with Zhang Yang, it will be Liu Wei himself be digging his own grave.

Even if he wanted to, he could not forgive what Liu Wei had done to him in his previous life. He would rather die than allowing Liu Wei to get the better of him! So far, he had even hired private investigators to dig out every past crime that Liu Wei had committed. As long as the investigators find the evidence, Sun Xin Yu could act and catch the bastard, red-handed.

Zhang Yang ignored Liu Wei's handshake and sat on an empty sofa. It was a deliberate move to declare that the war was not over.

Liu Wei sulked even harder and sat down to his seat with a long puff of angry breath. The girls that were his side attempted to console him but was awarded with a good slap to the face. Her fair white skin gained a red glowing palm mark.

"Fuh! Young Master Liu's quite the man, isn't he?" Zhang Yang scorned. He then lifted his index finger and gestured. "Come here, lady," said Zhang Yang with a soft, inviting voice. "Sit with me."

"You dare!" Liu Wei turned to the girl and snarled at her. He only dared to do so because the Liu Family was the dominant driving force in the region. Even if Sun Xin Yu was politically powerful, she had no power in the region. Her "reign" lay from afar and the Liu Family was the local dictator! With vast resources and fortune at hand, Liu Wei could do whatever he wanted there.

Liu Wei respected Sun Xin Yu even though she was generations after the real powerful members of the family. However, respect does not mean that he would surrender willingly and wait for his demise. Even the fish would struggle to break the net when it is caught.

The beautiful little hostess was conflicted. She knows that anyone who sets foot in the establishment was someone of power. Anyone of them would write her destiny. If she offends the wrong person, its either death or torture, figuratively and literally at the same time. Zhang Yang could see the look in her eyes that she had lost the will to stand on her own ground. She had become the toy that Liu Wei wanted, being thrown around like a valueless toy.

Zhang Yang felt the need to do something and he stood up immediately. Since Liu Wei had ordered the poor girl to sit by his side, she could not move without his permission. Hence, Zhang Yang waltzed over to the girl, dragged her by her hands, and brought her to his side without saying anything. He crossed his legs and threw a challenging stare at Liu Wei. If it was a fight of fists, no one in the room could take him, even if they were to jump at him at the same time.

Liu Wei was pissed. However, he knew when not to act. He too, had investigated about Zhang Yang and found out the man had been growing up with fist fights and street brawls. His martial arts was not something a man born with silver spoon sticking out of his butt could compete with. If he still insists on fighting, there will be a 90% chance that Zhang Yang would beat the living crap out of him, till his mother could not even recognize his face!

Furthermore, he had Sun Xin Yu supporting him! Even if Liu Wei is beaten senselessly, nothing would happen. He might only be the laughing stock among his peers! But back then, when he was in Shanghai, he was imprisoned for nothing! The memories of being in the cold dark cell still haunt him till this day. However, if he were to allow Zhang Yang to continue his insolent actions, he would lose his dignity!

As such, Liu Wei was thrown in between two difficult situations.

"HAHAHA! I like this man! As expected of the lover of my cousin!" Ma Zhi Hua laughed loudly. Ma Zhu Hua broke the tense up atmosphere by clapping happily. Liu Wei took the chance to back away from the "fight", allowing him to end his "move" with a mere scoff.

"Old Lin! Sit! Please sit down! Why are you still standing for?" Ma Zhi Hua was surprisingly proactive in reading the atmosphere of the room. He noticed that Mr. Lin and his secretary was shrinking away to a corner as Zhang Yang and Liu Wei were silently having their intense fight. Ma Zhi Hua was less than 30 years of age, yet he addressed Mr. Lin with such casualness that it expressed Ma Zhi Hua's higher position.

Mr. Lin was an old veteran. He knew clearly when to keep his mouth shut to avoid unnecessary attention. He smiled and sat down on the last empty sofa.

Right then, when everyone was at the very least comfortable with their own skin, the door was opened and three hostesses came into the room. However, out of the three hostesses, only two had



chosen to stay. Two of them sat at Mr. Lin and Liu Wei's seat. Because the man with the glasses was a nobody, the girl had left the room, leaving the poor soul crying in his heart.

The two fresh blood hostesses came and one of them sat beside Liu Wei and the other sat beside Mr. Lin. Both of them immediately embraced the two men. Mr. Lin played it cool and played with the girl. Zhang Yang read his movements and could tell that Mr. Lin had been here before.

Liu Wei was still angry at Zhang Yang then. He dove his hands into the hostess' dress and forcefully ripped the buttons of the Qi Bao. Her black laced undergarment was revealed to the world. Before she could do anything to fix her clothing, Liu Wei had brutally torn off her bra as well.

"Don't you dare resist." Said Liu Wei coldly. The poor hostess was so frightened till her cheeks were drain of blood. She sat still like a doll, allowing the bastard to play with her exposed breasts.

Zhang Yang knows that what Liu Wei was doing. He knew that Liu Wei was trying to force Zhang Yang to throw the first punch. However, Zhang Yang could not act. The women who decided to get a job here know very welllll what they were getting themselves into. Before, if Liu Wei had thrown the first punch, Zhang Yang could still retaliate. But now...the degrading acts...wasn't that what the girls have signed up for? Zhang Yang gritted his teeth in anger.

"HAHAHA! GOOD ONE!" Ma Zhi Hua laughed as he stared lustfully at the girl beside Liu Wei. He then turned to the girl by his

own side and smile innocently. "Strip."

The hostess flinched. She must have been hoping that Ma Zhi Hua would not do the same thing. Without resisting, she started to reach for the buttons on her clothes and pulled her Qi Bao off.

Zhang Yang grew tired of the disrespectful acts and roared. "Young Master Ma. If you have something to say, say it now. I'm extremely busy with other matters."

"Hahaha!" It seems that laughing before saying anything is Ma Zhi Hua's annoying habit. He did not turn to look at Zhang Yang, instead, he continued his demeaning plays with the girl beside him. "Recently, I joined the popular game 'God's Miracle'. And I've heard that you own a guild! A pretty powerful one at that!"

"That's true. His guild is China's strongest guild now," said Liu Wei.

Zhang Yang immediately raise an eyebrow. Was he expressing his wants to be invited to the guild? Zhang Yang mentally declined. Even if he had a full set of Celestial tier equipment, he would not allow such a troublesome fellow to be in the guild.

"Since you're my cousin sister's...consort? I'll assume you're one of the Ma Family. I'll be frank. I'm interested in expanding my business into the game. When you get back, I want you to hand over the guild master position to me. Ah right, those two territories you own, I'll take it as well." Ma Zhi Hua spoke his demands nonchalantly as if Zhang Yang's fortune was nothing but

worthless gifts.

Zhang Yang could have sworn that he had just popped a vein in his forehead. Was this man out of his mind? Was he brain dead? Doesn't he know that Lone Desert Smoke was the world's strongest guild? With the name itself, Zhang Yang could have gained countless of sponsorship requests! Doesn't he know that the territory is as valuable as an oil rig!?

There were approximately 70 million players who have already set foot into the Chaos Realms. If every player had used the portal once a day, he would have earned 70 million gold coins daily! The cost price of the Energy Crystal to power the portals were so low that it was negligible to the profit earned! 70 million gold coins is as much as 25,500,000,000 dollars!

It was inevitable that there would be new Territory in the Chaos Realm itself, players moving between the two realms will reduce. However, there will always be new players coming into the game! Although there are only 70 million players in the Chaos Realm, there was a total of 300 million players in China! At most, in the next year, the profit that Zhang Yang would be earning will only increase!

Just who was the bastard that could casually ask someone to gift them 300 million dollars worth assets?!

Zhang Yang smiled through his suppressed anger. "Young Master Ma. I think you have too much melamine in your blood stream. Did you eat too much deep fried food that have been fried with recycled oil? How else would you speak out of your \*sshole? No

wait. You're a young master that feeds off your parent's hard work. All the food that you eat should be those greens or organic hipster stuff! Oh I see. Perhaps you had your head kicked by a donkey on your way here. In that case, why didn't you go to the white house and asked to be a president for a few days?"

Everyone in the room froze. The secretary dude was sweating crazily. From his point of view, Zhang Yang must be someone out of a forest! Even he had to smile at every stupid comments and cold jokes of Mr. Lin. Even Mr. Lin would have to do the same to Ma Zhi Hua! Out of the blue, came a man named Zhang Yang that had insulted Ma Zhi Hua as if he knew no repercussion. Compared to that, the previous demeaning comments made by Zhang Yang back at Silky Soft Holdings were nothing!

"Acting tough now, eh?" Ma Zhi Hua uncrossed his legs and slammed the table hand. "Zhang Yang. I have you understand that Sun Xin Yu's mother is my aunt. I am her favorite nephew. I can squash your dreams to marry Sun Xin Yu easily by saying a few words to her mother. Remember this, you're nothing but a tiny weed. Without Sun Xin Yu's help, you're nothing!"

Zhang Yang scoffed. As expected a man who was born into a family of riches. The man was thinking with his groins! Since when did Sun Xin Yu marriage had anything to do with a mere cousin? This man's self-righteousness is over the roof! Did he really think that he could control everything?

Without having a proper discussion about it, the man had blatantly expressed his intention to take away his family! Zhang Yang was done. He could not even find the urge to have a rational

debate with the retarded, brain-dead, son of the beach. Zhang Yang stood up. Right before he was about to leave, he stopped his track and dragged the poor hostess out of the room with him.

Ma Zhi Hua crossed his leg and raised his voice one last time. "Zhang Yang. Don't think that you can walk away from this. I'll make sure that you'll regret it."

"You might want to check your privilege there. I pray that you're the one who will regret it." Zhang Yang walked out of the room and slammed the door.

Ma Zhi Hua slammed the table disgruntledly. Discontentment was written all over his face.

Liu Wei quickly consoled the man. There was a hint of a grin in the corner of his mouth. Liu Wei had paid the price, but he finally understood Sun Xin Yu's background. The name of Sin Xin Yu's real family was something that could shake the world of China's politic. Even Liu Wei himself found it hard to believe.

If Zhang Yang was serious in taking him down, she could have just use Sin Xin Yu's name and pressure the Liu Family easily despite having hundreds of millions of fortune in their hands.

Right then, he was extremely lucky to befriend Ma Zhi Hua, the branch family of the Sun Family.

Although the Ma Family shared a portion of the Sun Family

fame, they were but Beijing's lower tier. Their name and fortune were not something that would rival that of the Sun Family. However, due to someone in the Ma Family being married into the Sun Family, they had gained a boost in fame and power. Especially the new generations of the Ma Family, for they had used the Sun Family's name to do what they want! The overly self-righteous Ma Zhu Hua was one of them.

In fact, Ma Zhi Hua was the idiot. A man that who no will of his own and acts with his instinct. He thought he was the smart one but it was Liu Wei who had planted words into his mind to take what Zhang Yang owned in the game. He had also used Sun Xin Yu's name to trick Ma Zhi Hua to demand the things that he wanted from Zhang Yang. Liu Wei had made Ma Zhi Hua think that the things that he demanded were nothing but gifts. After all, aren't they all virtual pixels?

Zhang Yang's instant rejection was also part of his plans, but he had not expected Zhang Yang to bare his fangs at Ma Zhi Hua with such ferocity. However, Zhang Yang's actions had saved him some time, for it was also part of his plan to have the two men ready to tear each other apart. By then, there will be an internal conflict between the Sun Family and the Ma Family. As such, although Liu Wei was just someone doing errands for Ma Zhi Hua, he was the real mastermind.

Internal conflicts would have to be settled quietly and discreetly, hence, no matter how bad it gets, it would not affect the Liu Family's business.

In the end, Liu Wei was the smart person in the room. Or rather,

the cunning snake.

# Chapter 663: Death Moon Pirates

---

Zhang Yang dragged the hostess out of the room and gave her a name card. He had even pulled out his own name card and wrote a short message on it. "Take this, and if you want to find another job that pays well, try it. Someone will find and take care of you."

She had been unfortunately caught in the crossfire when Zhang Yang and Liu Wei was going on. Liu Wei had slapped her in the face just because he could not hold his anger in.

Zhang Yang patted the hostess' bare shoulders and bade her good luck before storming out of the establishment with rage. The girl teared up a little and followed him closely.

Although the tea shop was not established on the premise of prostitution, it was extremely hard for the hostesses to reject despicable customers when they are up to no good. Once, a hostess retaliated by running out of the room, only to be eventually caught by a few men and gang-raped for the entire night. The next day, the girl was found floating on the rivers, killed and thrown away after they were done having their fun.

It was customers like Ma Zhi Hua and Liu Wei who were the hooligans of the establishment. They were the kind that would act on a whim. Killing and raping were things they were not afraid of committing, since someone will always clean it up for them. The girl followed Zhang Yang out of the establishment and did not even bother to collect her belongings. She met Zhang Yang back in the streets and bade him farewell before running away towards the sidewalks. Perhaps she had thrown in her resignation letter on the



spot and planned to pay a visit to Zhang Yang's company for a change. She was familiar with Silky Soft Holdings' product because she was using them herself. She believed that if someone like Zhang Yang, who stood up to protect her when she was in need of help, would not betray her expectations.

...

Zhang Yang nodded at the hostess and after she ran off somewhere, he called Sun Xin Yu. Although he did not plan to put much attention on that incident, it was still best to have Sun Xin Yu know about Ma Zhi Yu. The woman was smart. When Zhang Yang had merely asked about who Ma Zhi Yu was, Sun Xin Yu quickly instigated a Q&A session with Zhang Yang.

After everything had been told about the incident, Sun Xin Yu fumed with rage and asked Zhang Yang not to get involved with the bastard. She would handle everything easily. Zhang Yang blew a kiss to her, only to have her hang up on him.

Zhang Yang was picked up by Mr. Lin's car, so he had to hail a cab when he returns. During the trip back home, Zhang Yang received a stranger's phone call. When he picked it up, it was Mr. Lin. He begs for forgiveness from Zhang Yang for he had not known of the context of the meeting, nor how would the man would behave. Although he did not directly ask for it, Mr. Lin subtly wanted to be on Zhang Yang's good side. Naturally, Zhang Yang did not blame the man for his invitation to the f\*cked up tea party. He told Mr. Lin that he was fine and he bore no enmity towards him.

From Mr. Lin perspectives, Ma Zhi Hua was just a branch family of the Sun family. Zhang Yang, on the other hand, was the future of the Sun family. Such an important role was crucial to determine in order to recognize the real potential. Perhaps, Ma Zhi Hua was the only imbecile who did not know the polarity in his position.

Zhang Yang would not want to stir up problems from thin air. After conversing with Mr. Lin for a brief moment, he hung up the call after Mr. Lin was satisfied with Zhang Yang's reaction.

Zhang Yang returned to the office. Although he was a little restless, Zhang Yang decided to log into the game and do a little quests.

When Zhang Yang appeared in the game, he was flying in midair above the waters. The place he needed to go was underwater and since the Phoenix was a fire elemental bird, it could not dive underwater. Zhang Yang switched to the Mythical Turtle and dove. Zhang Yang had no choice. The Mythical Turtle was the only underwater mount he had at the moment. It was weaker, now since Zhang Yang had removed most of the skills on it and applied it to the Thunderhawk. However, at that level, a Mythical tier mount could not do much damage, even if he had more or less skills on hand.

Zhang Yang dove deeper and deeper until the light above the surface slowly faded away. Deep under the sea, there was absolutely no light around, the only light source that could illuminate nearby environment was coming from Zhang Yang's own armor. It was cold and terrifying, for no one knows when will something pop out in the dark.

Half an hour later, Zhang Yang saw a bright area, in an area far ahead. As Zhang Yang swam further, the light grew wider and large. The illuminated area were the ruins of an enormous palace. Each of the fallen pillars was glowing with a soft warm light. From afar, the light emitted from the pillars around the palace made it look like a beacon in the dark night.

There were only a few of the pillars that were still in good shape. The rest were in pieces, albeit still glowing with the white light. Almost the rest of the palace was in ruins. Not a single construction was left in good shape. Cracks and holes were everywhere.

According to the quest's lore, the palace was originally from above land. Back then, the King of the palace had wronged a powerful magician. As retribution, the magician uprooted the entire palace and tossed it into the oceans. While the humans that once lived in the palace were all dead, the palace was now occupied by merfolk and they treated it as their paradise. There were countless numbers of merfolk that were roaming around the palace as they kept on making weird "gua gua gua" noises.

Zhang Yang frowned. Where was Dolmian? Zhang Yang looked everywhere and could not find an NPC that looked like a boss. He swam closer towards the palace and arrived at a large hall. In a normal situation, the boss should be in the biggest, brightest structure. It was expected. For the boss was the leader.

Zhang Yang approached the hall and angered two merfolk who were clad in armor and clutching pitchforks.

[Death Moon Merfolk] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 135

HP: 2,700,000

Melee Attack: 19,298 – 23,298

Skills:

[Heavy Pierce]: Pierces the target, ignores all Defense and deals 100% melee physical attack.

[Call]: When in danger, the merfolk will call for nearby allies to aid it in battle.

Note: Death Moon Pirates are the most brutal and cunning pirates in the Xixiluca Sea. Each of their members are fierce and strong for the blood of greed and grandiose flows within their veins.

"Hehehehe! We have fresh meat to feast on, today!" cried one of the merfolk there and he hurled his pitchfork towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang lifted his shield and parried the attack. Two elite tier monsters were nothing to Zhang Yang. However, the skill {Heavy

Pierce} was a little troublesome, for it is able to even ignore the godly defenses of his armor. Perhaps, there is a possibility of the attack being a Piercing type, which means that players standing behind the target would still receive the same amount of damage.

Still, they were nothing more than just elite tier. Zhang Yang had only lost a little over than 200,000 HP after killing them both. Since the environment does not allow for consumption of snacks, Zhang Yang only means of healing was potions and items. However, potions have cooldowns. Zhang Yang could only consume one bottle every minute. Luckily, the potions were handcrafted by Zhang Yang. Hence, all of the potions that Zhang Yang carries with him all the time were top tier Transmuted grades. If the potions are not enough, Zhang Yang could easily use the [Bandages] to heal himself quickly and easily.

After several more kills, one of the merfolk had even miraculously dropped an equipment for him.

[Merfolk's Armor] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +917

Strength: +262

Dexterity: +591

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 1,830.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 2.1%

Equip: Increases movement speed underwater by 7%

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 130

Merfolk Wonderer Set Effect: Merfolk Helm, Merfolk Armor, Merfolk Pants

Three Set Equipped: Increases movement speed underwater by 30%.

Increased underwater movement speed? Funny. However useful it may be, it was only temporary. Players usually avoid underwater battle hence the set equipment was not worth much. Zhang Yang tossed it aside in the corner of his inventory. If its value is too low, he would then give it to Han Ying Xue to break down into Rune Stones.

Zhang Yang proceeded towards the palace entrance and spotted four merfolk standing guard at the gates. To enter the palace, he must first defeat the four of them.

"Hey! Stinky piece of rotten fish! Come and get some!" Zhang

Yang tossed a {Spear of Obliteration} and hit one of them, successfully provoking all four of them.

With Felice and the Phoenix out of the battle, Zhang Yang's killing speed was greatly delayed. Although the Mythical Turtle was the best mount when it first debuted, but right now, it was nothing but a little speck of dust that could provide little to no help at all. Especially, when the enemies were high level monsters in high quantities. Killing and tanking are different cases. In his case, Zhang Yang was tanking and killing at the same time. It was extremely hard to move around, since his movement speed was restricted underwater. Supporting Attacks were also pretty useless, due to the dense water around them. Hence, at Zhang Yang was losing more HP than the monsters were.

Fortunately, Zhang Yang was able to defeat all four of them after losing close to 70% of his HP. As he progressed on, the number of monsters in one pack had increased. Since Zhang Yang could not rely on snacks to recover his HP, Zhang Yang would have to stop after each battle to restore his health. It was an extremely inefficient process. When he finally lost patience, Zhang Yang decided to summon Han Ying Xue over and have her help with his quest.

"Hm? Where is your little lover?"

"Huh?!" Zhang Yang was extremely surprised at her random jab.

"Felice. The little Felice!"

Zhang Yang sighed. The woman was even jealous of a fictional character. "Well... I can't really explain what happened to her, but I can't call her out for a few days."

"Haha! Finally, we can have some alone time without that little duck following you around!"

With Han Ying Xue supporting Zhang Yang, he was able to take on 20 to 30 monsters at the same time, without breaking a sweat. Not only had she increased his durability on the battle field – or battle waters in this case, she had also helped save a lot of time for Zhang Yang.

4 to 5 hours later, the two of them made it to the center of the palace. Sitting on the huge throne, was the boss that Zhang Yang had to kill.

[Dolmian, Death Moon Pirate Captain] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 140

HP: 42,000,000

Defense: 5,920

Melee Attack: 37,150 – 47,150

Skills:



[Heavy Pierce]: Thrusts the spear with penetrative power. Ignores all defense and deals 150% melee physical attack.

[Spearing Barrage]: Hurls countless of spears to all directions within 20 meters of the caster. Deals 100% melee physical attack to all targets within the skill range.

Note: The Captain of the Death Moon Pirates. The source of evil in all of Xixiluca Sea.

"Hah. It's just a Mythical tier boss. Both of us can take it easily!" Zhang Yang gently tapped the head of the Mythical tier Turtle and swam towards the boss. Right then, a Mythical tier boss' attack will be diminished to a safe point by his powerful defense. Though they may need to hold on for a long time, they could easily kill the boss, as long as it did not have any healing skills.

"Intruders..." Dolmian rose from his seat and thrust his right arm out. A long, Golden Platinum Trident materialized in his hands. With a powerful growl, Dolmian create a forceful wave that slightly pushed Zhang Yang away. He brandished his trident and created a whirlpool that charged towards Zhang Yang.

With a wide grin, Zhang Yang bellowed, "Time for a pirate to have a taste of their own medicine, eh?! I've come to rob you!"

## Chapter 664: Mythical Dense Water

---

Water – the habitat of the merfolk. Dolmian's speed underwater was much faster in comparison to Zhang Yang's when they were on land. In the blink of an eye, Dolmian lunged at Zhang Yang, with his trident aimed at Zhang Yang's chest.

{Block}!

Zhang Yang blocked the attack with sparks flashing out from the waters. Water bubbles sparkled on him, causing him to be knocked a few meters behind. Despite Dolmian's strength and power underwater, Zhang Yang was barely fazed. In a split second, Zhang Yang took the inertia of the blast and torqued it into a quick 360-degree pivot to hit the boss with his axe and dealt more than 80,000 damage.

"Weakling. The ocean is not for the likes of you! You land beings are so pathetic here! Beings that would succumb to mere water! You dare attack my lair? I will grant you your death wish here!" The Boss chased after Zhang Yang and thrust his trident at him.

"Heavy Pierce!" roared Dolmian as he pierced Zhang Yang's chest with his trident. As the skill suggested, the attack penetrated through Zhang Yang's armor, and the trident had literally broken through Zhang Yang's thick metal cuirass and plunged directly into his chest. The blue sea water was clouded red with the overflowing blood that was gushing out of Zhang Yang's wounds.

"Dummy!" shrieked Han Ying Xue in horror from afar. Although

it was just a game, sometimes the human mind will shape it as reality. Especially with the current scene of Zhang Yang's armor being skewered like a wiener by a fork-like weapon. It felt so real for Han Ying Xue who was watching from the sidelines.

"D\*mn you, fish-\*ss!" Zhang Yang grabbed the trident and forcefully pushed himself off the forks of the trident. Whether it was real or not, the game developers had done well in programming the sensory system. Zhang Yang could feel the edges of the fork moving through his lungs and windpipe as he pulled out the metal edges.

His Rage gauge was filled instantly and was ready to be used. Zhang Yang landed one clean strike of {Cripple Defense}.

At his current level, {Eagle Eye} was already at the level that grants Zhang Yang a permanent 85% Defense ignore effect. Alone, Zhang Yang would not have to even inflict five counts of {Cripple Defense}. Two of those were more than enough to have all 100% of the boss' defense ignored.

After 1 second of global cooldown, Han Ying Xue casted a healing spell on Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang resumed the fight promptly after his HP was out of the red zone, i.e having enough HP that could prevent a one-hit-kill situation. Zhang Yang struck the boss with the skill - {God of War Heavy Axe} and dealt 254,340 damage. The damage was so strong that it was nearly close to 1% of the boss' total HP.

Well, no reason to stop there.

{God of War Devastation}!

{Frost Strike}!

{Horizontal Swipe}!

All skills from the 300% melee attacks, to the 200% AoE attacks were thrown at the boss, dealing powerful damage that sent the boss reeling with pain. When all the skills had been expanded, Zhang Yang used {Cripple Defense} to fill in the empty gap in between normal attacks and the cooldown of the other skills.

Event though {Cripple Defense} could only deal 50% melee physical attack, it was close to 40,000 damage. Secondly, the effect of {Eagle Eye} could only be applied to Zhang Yang's own attacks. Using {Cripple Defense} was to increase the outclassed Mythical Turtle's attack. Be it insignificant, it was still an attack! Stack them up altogether as a whole and you'll get a mountain!

"Bastard! I'll cut you up and eat you raw! You'll taste fine with blood, what do you landwalkers call it again...steak?!" Dolmian bellowed as he flailed about.

Zhang Yang responded with laughter. "Hmm. I've never eaten raw fish before. Then again, I don't think your flesh would taste good. I'd save time rather than waste time gurgling my mouth later!"

"Spearing Barrage!" the Boss roared. The trident within the grip of his slimy hands glowed with an intense radiance as it hovers off his hands and multiplied itself in multiple directions. The Boss twirled out the multiplied spears into a fan-like trajectory.

‘-14,329!’

One of the projected spears hit Zheng Yang, causing Zhang Yang received a little tick on his chest. The damage was not deemed powerful as Zhang Yang had been 20 meters away from the Boss. Hence, Zhang Yang had only felt a tiny prick. The "Spearing Barrage" skill had only traveled as far as 20 meters away from him before dissolving in the water. Han Ying Xue, who was standing 30 meters away had not received any damage at all.

"Did you just attack? Hah! I could not feel anything! As expected of a fish, you can't do sh\*t!" Zhang Yang mocked. He laughed at the Boss, provoking the character to shreds.

"I am the Death Moon Pirates Captain! To mock me is to seek death! I shall grant your deathwish!" The boss started to ramble on about how he would kill and torture Zhang Yang if he refuses to die. It was paradoxical, but Zhang Yang did not care about it. The bosses in the game would say the exact same thing over and over again. Although the words quipped were different, the meaning in their utterances would carry the same semantics.

The battle dragged on. No sooner, neither of them verbally spoke anymore but just concentrated on throwing blows at each other. Zhang Yang had lost the powerful DPS of Felice and the Phoenix pet, yet his DPS alone had reached close to 90,000. It would take

roughly 8 minutes for Zhang Yang to kill the boss. It was not a tough battle, since Han Ying Xue was there to support him. In fact, if he uses all his ultimate skills, he could still fight the boss alone, even without using his Inheritance Transformation skill.

Dolmian's HP was whacked down by Zhang Yang like a poor dog. The match was completely leaning toward Zhang Yang.

"Impossible...A mere human... how could I lose to a mere human?!" When the boss' HP approached the 20% threshold, the boss speech had changed from threatening to self-doubting, though yet he remained as vigorous in his attacks.

In the map, a mere Mythical tier boss would not be difficult to defeat, since the real deals were the Ethereal tier bosses. Dolmain had no powerful killing skills nor healing capabilities. It was unfortunate for him to be Zhang Yang's target for he could not put up a real against with him.

Dolmain was so weak that Zhang Yang had not needed to use {Glare of the Death God}. The {Glare of the Death God} was a circumstantial skill. Even if the skill is not resisted by the boss, it would be fortunate if Zhang Yang is able to proc 3 to 4 hits to trigger the damage tick. Then again, 1% is nothing, since the boss' total HP was low, to begin with. Zhang Yang activated {Indiscriminate} and struck the boss with a full Rage of {Killing Cleave}.

‘-745,680!’

With a clean drop of his axe, Zhang Yang dealt enough damage to take away 2% of the boss' HP. The boss squirmed around, wailing as he bled out profusely, clouding the ocean waters with red blood.

"No! It can never be! A strong merfolk will not fall to a mere human!" cried Dolmain again. His attack speed gained a frenzied buff and the skill - {Spearing Barrage} was used more frequently.

15%...10%...5%...

Not long later, the boss was killed and his body was left alone to float upwards.

"Huh. Not bad. 20 million experience points for an 8 minute boss fight! I'll do this any day!" said Han Ying Xue happily as she skipped her way to pick up the boss loot.

Sadly, the loot obtained from the Mythical tier boss was scrap if compared to the drops of the Mythical tier boss in the Tibanya Wasteland! Still, the equipment found then were not powerful as they do not have the special effect to reduce the Level Requirement! Furthermore, its statistics were either leaning toward offense or defense. Neither one of them had both! Han Ying Xue was extremely disgruntled and almost had broken down if Zhang Yang had not stopped her by stating their value in gold coins.

Any quest item can only be interacted with the quest holder. While Han Ying Xue was picking up the equipment, Zhang Yang went ahead and picked up a bottle of water, and the quest helper

had indicated that it was the "authentic" Mythical Dense Water. What was left was the [Specter of Fate].

After picking up the required items, Han Ying Xue and Zhang Yang. The two of them swam up to shore and flew their way towards the next destination - The Maanya Castle. When Zhang Yang flew across the land, he made a detour on purpose to stop by the Forest of Gilstein. Zhang Yang descended downward and landed next to the statue of the Goddess of War. Zhang Yang sat down beside the statue and "talked" to Felice. While the statue continued to radiate with beautiful rays of light, Felice's voice was nowhere to be heard. Zhang Yang left after a little while.

Ten hours later, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue arrived at Kandiya Grasslands, where he continued his journey towards the east. Along the way, Han Ying Xue, being a pesky little minx, had continuously tingled and jiggled his little dong, teasing him as she pleased. Zhang Yang was not enjoying it one bit, and he had threatened her by saying if she continued teasing him unreasonably like that, he might get in the mood for some secretary office action on the table.

Maanya Castle was situated right at the edge of a cliff and was surrounded by strong walls. The only entrance to the castle was the gates. Even that was protected by a man-made trench and could only be crossed over if the castle guards lowered the drawbridge.

This strong defense also implicated a huge drawback. Neither could the enemies enter, nor could the defenders attack. If they are surrounded, the only means of attacking, other than siege engines,



would be coming out from the only way that they could come in. It would be bottle-necking both sides.

Then again, such a defense could easily be infiltrated by flying mounts. Since most cities banned the usage of flying mounts, Zhang Yang came down to the earth and requested to enter to the castle via the traditional means. Zhang Yang paid the 30 gold coins entrance fee and gained access to the castle.

The interior of the castle behind the huge monstrous walls was surprisingly medieval. At the center of the entire place was a beautiful castle that stood tall as it watched over the entire castle compound. The castle was situated on a higher ground, while the other clay houses and stone buildings were built on lower grounds, closer to the gates. Like any other castle, the region was filled with many civilians, peasants, merchants, and even NPC adventurers.

Han Ying Xue and Zhang Yang entered the area and came to the central plaza. There, they found a public bulletin board and with a large poster and they were both attracted to read it.

The poster contained news about Sheeny who had been plunged into a deep sleep by an evil magician named Brosh using dark magic. Sheeny is the daughter of the castle baron, Count Ropolly, Unless the count agrees to let the evil magician marry his only daughter, the magician will continue to use his magic to prevent anyone from waking the little girl up.

With such a threat looming over him, Count Ropolly had offered a large sum of reward to those who could kill Brosh and remove the magic on Sheeny. He would even allow the Hero to enter his

treasure vault to choose to his liking.

Zhang Yang took down the poster with his hands and flashed a smile, saying, "Let's kill the horny magician."

"Please..... You are not much different from that villain." Han Ying Xue said, rolling her eyes.

"Hey! You there!" A voice called out to them. It was a middle-aged man.

"Are you planning to take the quest to kill the evil magician?" the man said.

Zhang Yang nodded.

"I urge you to think twice, young man. Do not think over your head. Justice, honor, bravery. All those virtues mean nothing in the face of the evil Brosh! Don't you know how powerful he is? He could easily decimate an entire army with the flick of his staff! How else would even the count himself not kill the perpetrator when he owns an army of soldiers, himself?"

Another character appeared out of nowhere and interjected their conversation.

"I remember a while back when the magician appeared in the castle. He was riding a Ghastly Dragon! Oh my god. May the Lord have mercy upon us all. The count should have let the magician to

his daughter! The magician could use the evil dragon and kill us all off if he wanted to!"

According to the western legends, dragons were the source of evil. Hence, Dragon Knights or Dragon Slayers were those who were worshipped as saviors. However, in the game, it would depend on the lore of the location. For example, White Jade Empire uses Dragon Riders as guardians of the castle. As for Maanya Castle, dragons were evil.

At that moment, a group of guards came in and expressed that the count himself had requested for their presence in the castle itself.

Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue followed the group and went into the castle to meet the baron. He was a man roughly at the age of 30. He was handsome but was only a normal tier entity. His battle strength was only 5! Then again, it was for the lore's purpose, if he was someone like Queen Serena, the baron would have walked to the magician's lair and kicked his \*ss.

Zhang Yang frowned intensely when he noticed the baron's age. If he had a daughter that was kidnapped to be married, that would put her in the age of between 15 to 20. In that case, the baron must have bore the child at the age of 15 or 16!?

# Chapter 665: The Dark Magician Brosh

---

"Heroes, I appreciate that you have taken the job. But, I have to ask. Do you really have what it takes to defeat the Dark Magician?" Ropolly was sitting on a magnificent throne and asked Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue worriedly. Sitting beside him was a noble woman, dressed in the grandest lady with her thick dress and fur coat. She was slightly younger than the baron himself. The lady was probably his wife.

Zhang Yang nodded. "I may not be strong, but I do have a band of friends. Together, we have killed countless evil and strong demons. Count. Rest assured that we will kill this Dark Magician that you speak off."

"Very well." Count Ropolly smiled with relief. "In that case, allow me to ask of you, my selfish request. Please make haste, for my 7-year-old daughter's life rests in your hands."

'Ding! Count Ropolly has a quest for you: Kill the Dark Magician. Will you accept it?'

Both Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue exchanged a look.

7 years old? What?!

Was the Dark Magician Brosh a lolicon? If he was, its really high time to kill his head, for the man's brain is defunct!

The couple left the palace and Han Ying Xue asked. "Hmm...If you do put it in a different perspective, it's like those 50 to 60 years old sugar daddies sleeping with those young 16-year-old sluts!"

Zhang Yang cringed a little at her example. Though it was roughly correct, it was still morally bad. Zhang Yang could not even imagine how would a rich, old, fat f\*ck would manage to get a young girl to ... and she would even take his old, rotten, limpy... into her...

Zhang Yang felt a cold shiver down his spine and sighed heavily. "I guessed the world has changed...Many would rather choose to cry in a Bugatti than laughing happily, sitting behind a bicycle. Humans had changed their concept of love from soul, spirit, to materialistic love."

Han Ying Xue understood what he was trying to say but she could not refute his words for she too was a little materialistic at times. "What are you sighing about!" Han Ying Xue tried to change the mood. "With your money, you can buy 365 Bugatti cars and have 365 girls warming up your driver's seat. One car a day, 365 girls a year!" She slapped his back hard, although instantly regretting it since he was wearing a full metal plate cuirass.

They left the palace and rode towards the forest, west of the palace with the Phoenix. According to the quest guide, the supposed evil Dark Magician Brosh had set up his lair there.

"There's one thing that I could not understand!" said Zhang Yang randomly. "Prostitution is illegal, right? And those who are caught will be prosecuted. However, how is that someone taking in a lover

not a crime, but a mere morality problem? Could it be? After doing the big bam boom many times, it is no longer a crime?"

"...Hm..." Han Ying Xue went into deep thought.

"Perhaps...Ah. I got it. Having an affair does not involve monetary transactions! It is not a business!" said Zhang Yang as he had an epiphany.

"Dummy...! Are you thinking of having a lover?!"

"What are you talking about? I'm having two right now, aren't I?"

"Stupid fool! I'll bite you off next time!"

The two of them made dirty jokes at each other as they journeyed towards the forest. Following the quest indicator, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue arrived at a small wooden hut, deep in the middle of the forest. Unlike most evil villain's lair, the Dark Magician's "lair" was rather...profoundly beautiful and peaceful. There was even a small garden of beautiful flowers planting outside his hut. However, there will always be something that can easily pinpoint a person's true nature. In this case, there was a pair of bloodied hands sticking out of the earth, in the middle of the flower garden!

"Burn them all!" Zhang Yang patted the fiery bird's forehead and commands it to torch the entire garden, along with the wooden hut.

As the flowers caught fire, the flames spread all over the garden instantly.

"KIYAAAAA—" Weirdly enough, the flowers started to shriek out loud as they wiggled around, trying to uproot themselves to run away. However, before it could even move, the flames of the Phoenix were so hot that the plants were all turned into ashes.

"Wha—What have you done!?" A middle-aged man, dressed in a black magician's robe, with a dark purple-red magic staff in his hand, barged out of the house and roared at Zhang Yang in midair.

[Dark Magician Brosh] (Ethereal, Humanoid)

Level: 150

HP: 500,000,000

Defense: 9,950

Magic Attack: 45,314 – 55,314

Skills:

[Shadow Arrow]: Deals 200% magic Shadow damage to a target. Instant cast. Cooldown: 2 seconds. Range: 40 meters.

[Dark Magician's Curse]: Unleashes a condemning spell to inflict all targets within 40 meters. Has a chance to cause all target's HP to fall to 30% in 10 seconds. Will not affect targets with 30% HP or less. Last for 1 minute.

[Abyssal Blast]: Deals 10,000 Shadow damage to all target within 40 meters of the caster.

[Magician's Constitution]: Restore 1% HP every 30 seconds. Recovery rate will not be affected by any effect.

Note: A prodigy in magic. Excommunicated by the Arch Mages in the Magic Academy for dwelling too deep into the Dark Arts.

"Eat this! Shadow Arrow!" Brosh spun his staff around and blasted out a black skull that shot through the air and hit the Phoenix.

Zhang Yang was amazed. He had never seen a magic attack that could be cast at such a high speed. Zhang Yang did not even have enough time to dodge the attack and took 69,271 damage.

"Retreat!" Zhang Yang pulled back to create a large gap between him and the boss.

"Bastard! I will kill you all!" Brosh chased after Zhang Yang for some time before automatically turning back to the wooden hut as if nothing had happened.



After successfully escaping the battle, Zhang Yang returned to the wooden hut and equipped the [Party Summon Order] to bring in Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, and the others.

Even when others might think he could, it was quite an impossible task for Zhang Yang to kill an Ethereal tier boss with Han Ying Xue alone. When the party was gathered, he explained the boss' skills and shared the quest to kill the Dark Magician to everyone.

"Listen. When the boss uses the curse skill, he will also use the blast skill to instantly kill everyone around." Zhang Yang explained the crucial point to roughly pinpoint the boss' killing skill.

"It will be tough. Unless we use our Transformation skills, we would only have 200,000 HP or so. 30% of that would only be around 70,000 to 80,000 HP. One single {Shadow Arrow} could kill us."

Zhang Yang shook his head. "An open-world boss is designed to handle a sea of players. However, I trust that with the battle mount and my [Vitality Aura], everyone should have just enough HP to take one damage tick before dying for real."

Zhang Yang added, "Keep the potions on hold. Only use it when the boss uses his curse skill or when your HP is less than 100,000. In this battle, survivability is key. We are trading firepower for HP now. Do not use the [Power Potion]."

"Understood."

Zhang Yang soared to the sky and commanded the Phoenix to torch the house again.

"D\*mn you!" Brosh barged out of the house again and blasted a ball of black, arcane power. Miraculously, the fire was all sucked into the orb, immediately extinguishing all the flames and the amber that was on the wood. With malice, the boss glared at Zhang Yang and roared. "You won't be getting away this time!"

The boss whistled loud and long into the sky. A dark cloud gathered in the high skies and a large skeletal dragon came bursting out of the clouds and descended down to the party. The dragon landed gracefully beside Brosh and treated him like its true master. The Ghastly Dragon was slightly smaller in size compared to the Ghastly Frost Dragon they had fought a while back. Still, it was several hundreds of meters long as it laid down like a mountain.

Brosh leaped upwards and rode the dragon. The dragon flapped its massive boney wings upward. Luckily, the boss may have flight capabilities, but it did not gain the buffs like players do. Looks like the dragon was there, merely to provide flight power to the boss and not to increase the boss' power and HP.

Zhang Yang rose to the sky and charged towards the boss. Almost everyone's Inheritance Transformation skill was on cooldown. With that in mind, the only hopes to win the battle was through brute force and strong endurance.

Then again, the boss had only 500 million HP. The amount of HP recovered per second would be less than 170,000. Right then, Zhang Yang's party combined DPS was at least 370,000. Technically, they would have to last for 40 minutes to kill the boss. Again, that was theoretical. If any of the party members are killed by the boss during the fight, the battle will be dragged longer.

If the battle does get dragged longer, the number of factors that could effect the battle will increase. If the boss chains his skills on and on, the chances of the party being killed completely will be absolute.

Pew!

The boss soared to the sky and blasted a black ray, damaging Zhang Yang first.

"I'll turn you all into fertilizers for my precious flowers!" Brosh yelled with anger. He then spun his staff in midair again and cast a black skill on every player. Everyone was afflicted by the boss' curse.

"You pervy uncle! You wouldn't even spare a young 7 year old girl! I'll never forgive you! You son of a b\*tch!" Wei Yan Er brandished her axe and roared at the boss.

"Son of a what...? Where did you learn that word from?!" Zhang Yang frowned.

"Hahaha! What do you know, young girl!?" Brosh laughed manically. He then did the same thing that every villain does when they thought they had the upper hand, and that is to reveal their secret plan. "Sheeny...that young maiden is a rare specimen! A rare kind of human! If I can make her my bride, I can sacrifice her soul to the Dark Lord! He shall grant me the power of the abyss!"

So...it was made clear that the villain still had some dignity to him. He was not a perverted lolicon, but a man who was obsessed with power.

Wei Yan Er pouted her lips and said, "My dorm mates! She told me that a son of a b\*tch is a bad guy! Noob tank! I think you may have the potential to be a son of a b\*tch as well!"

Zhang Yang was a little pissed off at the little brat. However, he was more worried about the little girl's future. If she continues hanging out with the wrong crowd, she would be corrupted! Perhaps, its time to have her stay at home instead of the university dorm!

"Succumb to the power of the abyss!" Brosh raised his magic staff up high and blasted a dark shockwave towards all directions. Everyone was instantly hit by the skill and received 100,000 damage, dropping all their HP bellow the red line.

Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart got to work and quickly cast all their AoE healing skills. With three healer type Battle Companions participating in the battle, the party's HP was slowly

raised back up.

"Aiyayaya!" Just when Wei Yan Er wanted to swing her axe, her HP suddenly dropped down by a large amount. The HP that Han Ying Xue had just restored was all reduced down to 30%. Luckily, the boss had only just used {Abyssal Blast}, hence the little brat would not need to waste her health potion.

The curse's triggering rate was random, yet high. It was infrequent but players will have their HP suddenly dropped down to 30%. With the curse still in its active duration, both Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had to work extra hard.

"Don't bother to heal us to full! Just keep us all at 100,000 HP and above! Enough for one shot of {Abyssal Blast}!" Zhang Yang cried.

It was a good strategy since after the curse was inflicted, having 100% or 31% does not matter for the curse effect will reduce the affected players HP to a fixed 30% flat line. It would be a waste to have their HP fully restored. Hence, Zhang Yang had ordered Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart to keep an eye on everyone's HP and heal them up to at least 100,000 HP.

# Chapter 666: Abyssal Blast

---

The red zone of the HP will always be different in different battles. However, there is 99% chance that the higher HP you have, the safer it will be for a player to fight a boss. The remaining 1% chance was that of a fight with a boss such as this Dark Magician who could cast skills to reduce a player's HP by a fixed percentage. Having a full HP all the time would only be a complete waste of mana for healing.

In that battle with the Dark Magician, it will be efficient to have the HP at 100,000 and above. Not much higher, but never lower. If the healers can do that, the threat of the Dark Magician's curse would be nullified. Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart's burden would be slightly easier.

However, it was merely a little. With only 100,000 HP on reserve, the boss' skill, {Abyssal Blast} was not to be underestimated. Each blast could deal at least 100,000 damage. Hence, with all the Battle Companion and two pets participating in the fight, that totals up to 21 healing targets. Unless they had a Battle Companion with a full set of Mythical tier equip like Felice, those that were unable to deal too much damage would be better off kept in their owner's inventory than remain on the battlefield, taking too much damage and adding weight to the healers' burdens.

Hence, with a quick acknowledgment and command, the party kept away many of their Battle Companions. The only ones left were three healer types Battle Companions and Sun Xin Yu's strong DPS. Even Hundred Shots had removed his pet from the battlefield. Compared to the ones that he was using now, the future Red Dragon would be a god among all Hunters' pets!

With lesser characters that required constant healing, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart's burden were lightened even further.

However! They would still have to be extremely perceptive to immediate healing whenever someone's HP drops below 100,000. If they were to be late by 1 second, they might be attacked by a single blast of {Abyssal Blast} and will inevitably be killed.

Luckily, the boss' skill cycle was rhythmic. {Abyssal Blast} will be used once every 30 seconds. As long as the healer calculates the timing correctly, they would not waste time channeling healing spell, instead, they could just instantly cast a {Holy Shield} to absorb the damage.

Han Ying Xue had been a super healer since the beginning of the game. Fantasy Sweetheart had been joining the party in boss fights for many times now and had picked up several of Han Ying Xue's latent skills. Be it intuition or controls, she was able to "level up" her own capabilities. She was no longer the girl in the party that was harassed by Endless Starlight and Fatty Han by calling her "The badahonka without brains". Right then, she was already at the level of "badahongkerdongs with real brains!"

With the combined power of the healers in the party, they remained strong, without showing any signs of slowing down.

Zhang Yang was able to mount the Phoenix while fighting the boss, boosting his HP to at least 800,000. To save the burden on the healers, he had made sure to maintain his HP from getting bellow

200,000. Fortunately, he was not affected by the curse of the Dark Magician. However, it was extremely dangerous for him when he takes the boss' {Abyssal Blast} and the {Shadow Arrow} at the same time. Two hits from the skills will be catastrophic.

It all depended on the capabilities of the healers. Although {Abyssal Blast} may have a long cooldown time, the {Shadow Arrow} did not. For the boss could spam the skill every 2 seconds. Hence, at every 2 seconds, the healers would have to keep their eyes on Zhang Yang's HP to prevent an accidental {Shadow Arrow} from killing Zhang Yang.

If he falls, so does the party.

To heal Zhang Yang HP from the absolute extreme back to the green zone of 200,000 HP, the healers would take at least 20 seconds. From that perspective, it was extremely dangerous for the skill {Abyssal Blast} that takes only 30 seconds to attack once. It is known that whenever a boss had their HP dropped below the 20% threshold, the boss skill usage will be frequent. By then, if the cooldown of {Abyssal Blast} reaches 20 seconds at a time, it would be the very limit of the two healers.

It was inevitable. The curse was there to limit the players' HP to be at 30% at all times. It will be useless to have a mass party of healers to heal everyone to 100%. Now that it has come to this, the skill {God of War Heavy Axe} was rendered powerless. The requirement of the skill to be OP, depending on the HP % of both the caster and the target. Now that Zhang Yang was locked at 30% HP at all times, he would have to wait until the boss had a lower HP than he did to have the skill deal 300% melee attack instead of



100%.

...Annoying boss...

Zhang Yang had reserved all the life-preserving skills such as {Shield Wall}, {Last Vigor}, {God of War Radiance}, and the accessory effect of the [Medal of Bravery], and [Helena's Charm]. Now that he counted them all, Zhang Yang realized he had many healing and immunity skills! Even though [Helena's Charm] could only heal a maximum of 300,000 HP, he only needed 200,000 HP to be saved. Any extra would be a waste, since the Dark Magician's Curse would "eat" the extra HP away. Since the battle had been going on for such a long duration, Zhang Yang had already conjured 10 Life Orbs and could use them at any time he wanted to.

"I am the great Dark Magician! The world is mine to rule! All who oppose me that crumble in the power of the Abyss!" Brosh roared. "I shall have you all sacrificed to the Dark Lord as tributes!"

"Huh...seems like every villain we have fought wants to rule the world!" Lost Dream chuckled.

"Well...There have to be villains. How else could Ultraman be the good guy if there aren't any monsters out there?"

"Hahaha!" Everyone laughed at Fatty Han's retort which made the boss infuriated. His rage burned bright dark flames from his eyes, for he wished at that moment that he had a strong instant kill skill to kill all these insolent fools!

With a flawless cooperation between the tank, the healer, and the attacker, the coordination of attack was continuous. The boss was losing his HP quickly. Even if he had 500 million HP, it would be of no use to him, for the party was progressing slowly, but surely!

Zhang Yang still had the trump card, {Glare of the Death God} in his hands!

Half an hour later, the boss had finally entered the 20% HP threshold. Everyone activated their skills and rampaged on. However, even if they had skills that could increase their damage when the boss has less than 20% HP, prioritizing their survivability was still the first commandment in that battle. Besides Wei Yan Er, none of the party members had consumed any [Power Potions]! They knew, that by being alive, only can they deal damage! However, the little brat had always been a competitive child. She consumed a bottle of [Power Potion], activated the {Indiscriminate} and struck the boss with {Killing Cleave} at full Rage.

‘-498,552!’

Dealing close to 500,000 damage in a single strike, the little brat was satisfied and grinned like a spoiled brat. However, her luck might not be on her side that day, for when she struck the boss, the curse was triggered on her and instantly pushed her HP down to 90,000 HP.

Since the boss had entered the 20% HP threshold, the boss skill usage will be increased. At then, Brosh was already brandishing his staff in midair, seconds away from activating {Abyssal Blast}.

.

Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart was still adjusting to the new boss' rhythm and the little brat potion's cooldown was still ongoing. Fearing for her death, the little brat shouted. "Save me! Sister!"

Zhang Yang stopped his attack instantly and cast {Sacrifice} and {Shield Wall} one after the other.

BOOM!

The blast boomed out and the little brat was unscathed. Zhang Yang took the damage, but since he had {Shield Wall} activated, the damage he received was reduced greatly. However, the little brat selfish act had cost him two life-preserving and life-saving skills!

"Sigh...Why couldn't you just behave?" Zhang Yang sighed heavily.

"Nishishishi!" Wei Yan Er grinned stupidly and nodded her head. She knew that she had done wrong.

"As a lesson, I'll punish you. For the next 10 days, you are not allowed to loot the boss drops!"

"MYAA?!" The little girl squeaked and sulked solemnly. "Stinky noobie tank! I curse you! Your son will be a lazy bum!"

"Little brat!? Are you asking for a beating?" Han Ying Xue cringed.

"Ah."

Wei Yan Er had just remembered that her cousin sister was with Zhang Yang. If she were to curse his child, it would be the same as cursing Han Ying Xue! Just then, she realized that the child would be her own nephew, as well! She put up a cute face and said, "Ah heh~ My bad~!"

As the boss' HP dropped down, Zhang Yang could finally use his skill, the {God of War Heavy Axe}. With the enhanced damage dealt during the "Killing" stage (below 20%), the damage dealt by the skill skyrocketed!

"Could you not be that OP, little Yang?!" Fatty Han jumped when he saw how powerful Zhang Yang was, then. He could not even match up to his damage when he had the combined attack of his pet, the battle mount, and the Battle Companion!

"Heh. As expected of the big boss. Fatty Han, give up trying to be like him. There's no one like him!" Endless Starlight patted Fatty Han's shoulder.

"D\*m you all! I will end your life!" Brosh started to panic. Not

only the skill {Abyssal Blast} was used repeatedly, even the curse damage was triggered rapidly as well. It was almost impossible to anyone in the party to have more than 30% HP!

The battle had then entered the climax stage where anyone could get killed by the boss if they are careless.

17%...13%...11%...

{Glare of the Death God}!

Resist!

It was a shame that the skill could not properly land. Everyone had their hearts skipping a beat when Zhang Yang cast the skill, but raged when it failed to be inflicted on the boss. How could the skill have such high failure rate!? Now that the skill could not be inflicted, everyone was left with one means to kill the boss, that is to fight like madmen!

"Hmm hmm...ha..haha...HAHA...HAHAHA! YOU ALL SHALL FALL!" The boss grew stronger and faster with every HP he lost. With every pain he suffered, the vengeance grew tenfold and was unleashed back towards those who opposed him.

10%...

{Abyssal Blast}!

The skill had indeed been shortened to only 15 seconds cooldown. After a brief while, the skill {Shadow Arrow} had been upgraded into a volley of arrows came raining down from the sky. Everyone was inflicted by the damage. Both Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight were forced to unleash {Vanguard Aggression} to protect the entire party and gain a little breathing space.

8%...5%...3%...

Everyone in the party was forced to use their life preserving skills. Even all accessory skills were not spared. Right then, survivability first, attacking comes second! Its either do or die!

That was one of the reason why most open-world bosses required a sea of players to defeat. Either they had AoE killing skills, or the means to instantly disrupt the players attack! In such a situation, players would have to own an Inheritance or the battle tide would lean towards the boss. The only means of fighting such a boss without Inheritance players would be to fill in the extreme gaps with more players! And if the players die, more players shall be dispatched to fill in the gaps!

While Brosh could not be considered a final boss(1), spamming their AoE skills once every 15 seconds was considered to be only average difficulty. The most annoying and troublesome aspect was the curse.

Unlike most parties, who would instantly fail at killing, Zhang Yang's party consisted of elites amongst the elites. If it was them,

perhaps they could do it without even dying!

2%...1%...

"Remember this day! For you have defeated me! I shall be back once more!" Brosh's eyes glowed with an intense crimson red. "The power of the Abyss is infinite! I shall be revived once more! I shall return to this earth and lay waste to you all!"

"Yea...yea...remember to bring some gifts back from the underworld, yeah?"

0%

The boss cracked something and fell off the Ghastly Dragon. He shot down like a meteor and landed with a great crash. The dragon flapped its wings and soared to the sky, disappearing from sight after Brosh was defeated.

"Sigh...I do wish that we could catch that dragon!" said Wei Yan Er.

"Little Yan Er. It's no good sitting on a boney dragon. You will hurt your little flat bum bum!" said Fatty Han purposely, to tease the little brat. To have him keep his mouth shut for 10 minutes would either require him to eat a 50-inch sized pizza or a massive 10-foot-long German sausage.

"Shut up pervy bro! I have no time to deal with you!" Wei Yan Er

hurriedly ran towards the boss and picked up the loot. She had already forgotten that she was being punished. When the battle was still ongoing, Zhang Yang was paying full attention to fight the boss. He had no time to modify the looting arrangement setting and ended up allowing the little brat to loot all the drops.

"Nyahahahaha!" The little girl laughed as she collected all the drop in her inventory.

Zhang Yang shook his head and facepalmed himself. "Looks like you've cheated..."

"Nishishishi." Wei Yan Er counted the gold coins and after she was satisfied with it, she posted all the equipment out to the party chat.

There was a silvery gray heavy armor helmet, a blue colored ring, a red leather-bound skill book, and a piece of [Skill Point Crystal].



# Chapter 667: Breaking the Third Seal

---

The main item that was up for grabs was the [Skill Point Crystal]. It was rather valuable after all. Hence, using the rolling method was not too practical. Lucky players like the little brat or even Han Ying Xue could easily get them. Players like Zhang Yang and Daffodil Daydream had never been very lucky in that sort of thing.

Hence, items with high value were distributed via turns instead. This time, the crystals fell to Endless Starlight. Since there were only 10 of them, farming the next one should not be too difficult.

Zhang Yang had the [Identifying Scroll] in hand and he had the two Ethereal tier equipment identified. The heavy armor equipment was given to the little brat.

[Anti-Shadow Helmet] (Ethereal, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +320

Vitality: +6668

Strength: +2265

Intelligence: +972

{Level 5 Socket 1}

{Level 5 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases your maximum HP by 13,330

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 8%

Equip: Absorbs 940 damage on attack.

Equip: Increases Shadow Magic resistant by 10%

Level Requirement: 150

Special: Lower Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Anti-Shadow Set: Anti-Shadow Helmet, {Anti-Shadow Chest Plate}, {Anti-Shadow Greeves}

3 Equip set: Increases Shadow Magic resistant by 20%..

Note: Once belonged to a warrior who tried to defeat Brosh. Sadly, he failed to do so. He had spent a fortune to craft a set of heavy armor with strong Shadow Magic resistance. However, it was obviously not strong enough.

"Set equipment?!" Everyone had their eyes wide with delight. After Level 80, the number of set equipment appearing was extremely low. However, even if they had managed to find the set

equipment, it was a set equipment that was designed to counter a specific type of magic attack. It was too specific and not versatile enough to wear it all the time.

However, if every equipment set does come with a 10% Shadow resistant, three equipment, and the equipment set effect would total up to 50% Shadow resistance. It was good enough to counter a Shadow elemental magic monster such as Brosh.

Although the equipment stats were rather plain and average, it was still an Ethereal tier item at that. The stats were disappointing. In fact, the only benefit a player would get from equipping such equipment would be the high Shadow resistance. However, it was still a rather strong Guardian equipment!

"NUUUUUUU! Why! Why! Why must it have Intelligence stats!?" Wei Yan Er wailed sadly as she tossed the helmet to Endless Starlight.

"Pervy boy! Here's to you. May it give you a little more Intelligence in your empty brain!"

Endless Starlight laughed and said, "Little Yan Er, I have over 4,000 Intelligence points. How much do you have?"

Naturally, all Warrior, Hunter and Thief class players have zero!

The little brat rolled her eyes and said, "So? 4,000 Intelligence, yet you still have the brains of a pig! You've got some nerves to

show it off like that huh!"

Instead of being angry, everyone laughed at the little girl's petty attempt to pick a fight. She was, after all, a little girl at heart despite being 18 years old.

"Endless Starlight. I will take your tanking skill seriously from now on. You have the equipment now. I expect better performance," said Zhang Yang with a nod.

Wei Yan Er took out the blue colored ring and held it up high to the sky. Under the bright light, the ring gave off a bright, yet calming blue radiant. It was as if the ring was made from the ocean's water.

[Brosh Engagement Ring] (Ethereal, Ring)

Vitality: +1667

Intelligence: +566

Spirit: +566

Equip: Increases maximum MP by 1,130

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 8%

Equip: Absorbs 485 damage on attack.

Use: Turns a target that is facing you into your lover. Target that is inflicted will not attack you. You will lose the ability to attack the target as well. Effect lasts for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 4 hours.

Level Requirement: 150

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Note: After the kidnapping of Brosh's fiancé, the young man dwelled into the Dark Arts in order to search a means to have his revenge.

Seems like the item does have some flavor text concerning the boss.

Since the item was meant for magic classes, Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream, and Fantasy Sweetheart rolled for it. Daffodil Daydream won the item after rolling 87 points. She then equipped the ring and smiled as if it was her own engagement ring. Items such as rings, shield, and necklace do not have any sockets. Hence, after Identifying the equipment, the item will unlock its full potential. Weapons and Armor still have to be socketed before a player could use it for a real battle.

All equipment had been distributed, leaving the skill book last to be reviewed.

[Skill Book: Eagle Eye]

Use: Teaches you {Eagle Eye}

Class Requirement: Warrior, Knight, Thief, Hunter

Level Requirement: 20

After playing for so long, they had finally obtained the second skill book for {Eagle Eye}. For more than 2 years since the game had been launch, everyone in Zhang Yang circle knew about the skill and had kept on checking on the auction house for the book. However, for so long, they had never found a single book.

"WAHAHAH! The first {Eagle Eye} was stolen by the noob tank! Now I can have the skill as well!" Wei Yan Er jumped around happily.

"Hey...Since when I steal it?"

"Yeah! You did!" Wei Yan Er exclaimed and pouted. "Not only had you stolen the book, you have also stolen my cousin sister's heart! You evil man!" Wei Yan Er crossed her arms and gave Zhang Yang an evil glare. "Son of a b\*tch!"

Zhang Yang popped a vein in his forehead.

"What did you just call me?" Zhang Yang cracked his knuckle to

show his dominance to Wei Yan Er.

"Son of a--- AWWW!"

Zhang Yang grabbed her and pressed his knuckles against the top of her head.

"You use that word again and I'll put on my metal gauntlet next time."

Everyone laughed.

Still, the book was extremely precious. Even though they had a potion to grant them a 20% Defense ignore effect, it was not that they could 100% ignore all the Defense of the enemy! However, with the skill {Eagle Eye} at Level 1, they could pair with Zhang Yang or Wei Yan Er's {Cripple Defense} to completely ignore all the enemy's armor! It was exceptionally strong against high Defense enemy.

All physical attack class players then were getting their hopes up. Let the system decide for the roll!

After an intense session of rolling, Sun Xin Yu was the final winner. With everyone admiring her luck, they could do nothing but clap their hands as Sun Xin Yu patted the book against her mighty chest and learned the skill.

"Imagine that...Sister Sun's attack have always been high. Now

that she has the skill, her attacks would be even higher!" Daffodil Daydream smiled and praised. Even if the skill could ignore 100% Defense, it would do no good for her since her magic attack would already ignore all defense!

"Nyehahaha! Noobie tank has a proper rival now! Sister Sun will definitely kick your \*ss!" cried Wei Yan Er happily.

Zhang Yang smirked. "Perhaps she would. Perhaps she won't. However, I'm sure of one thing. You can never defeat me!"

"Grrr...It's your fault...for taking my S class Inheritance..." Wei Yan Er muttered disgruntledly and sulked at a corner.

As the quest was completed, everyone flew back to Maanya Castle and reported the successful mission to Count Ropolly.

As they approached the gates, Count Ropolly himself was there to welcome Zhang Yang and the party. Since everyone had accepted the quest from Zhang Yang himself, they obtained 10,000,000 experience points. However, the only person who could enter the vault was Zhang Yang alone. With the count walking by his side, Zhang Yang was escorted to the castle's treasure vault. The vault was extremely huge and was filled with chests. Zhang Yang walked casually and opened random chests. Most of them were just gold coins. Hanging on the walls on all corners were weapon and equipment. Even though the count had given Zhang Yang the freedom to choose, most of the equipment available there were junks that were so useless that Zhang Yang would not even consider putting them in the Little Merchandize Shop. Zhang Yang continued to walk deeper into the vault and found four equipment



that were radiating with a metallic luster. Zhang Yang sighed. Now those are the 'real' treasures. They were mostly boots of Leather, Heavy Armor, and Silk types. Hanging in the last compartment was a red colored magic staff which was the item that he needed. The Specter of Fate.

Since the rule only allowed an item, Zhang Yang had no choice but to pick the Scepter of Fate. However, at then, Zhang Yang had no interest in anything below the Ethereal tier.

After completing and accepted the quest reward, Zhang Yang disbanded the party and returned to Morning Town. He then went to the Ten Barren Seas, headed to the dungeon and had Margery break the third seal of the Sword of Purging Devourer.

[Sword of Purging Devourer] (Ethereal, Two-Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 12,006 – 20,006

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds.

DPS: 4,212

{Level 5 Socket 1}

{Level 5 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases damage dealt by 30%

Equip: Increases Critical chance rate by 5%

Equip: Grants a 4% chance to replicate a previous attack after a successful attack on a target

Equip: Grants a 15% chance to stun a target after a successful attack on a target.

Special: Consumes a weapon and absorbs the weapon special effect. Can only be use once.

Level Requirement: 150

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Bound.

Zhang Yang would not dare to use one-handed weapon as a sacrificial tool for the sword to prevent a chance for the sword to turn back into a one-handed sword. This time, the last of the seals was broken and there cannot be a second chance.

Since the consumed weapon only needed to have a strong special skill, the tier of the weapon was not need to be considered. Zhang Yang went to the auction house and search for any weapon with a better effect and tossed it to the sword to "eat" it.

The last sword special effect gained was: "Grants a 2% chance to receive a 10% damage buff for 10 seconds after a successful attack on a target. Effect cannot stack.

Even though the Sword of Purging Devourer had the same DPS as the Dragon Slayer Axe, Warrior had the passive skill to gain an additional 5% Critical rate and damage boost. Even with the sword, Zhang Yang could not gain the tiny boost of damage, his basic attack was already as high as 78,978 – 98,978. A single sword attack could reach as high as 100,000!

Zhang Yang had the two new equipment that he obtained from a while back socketed with a Level 5 Strength Gemstone and after enhancing the Gemstone, Zhang Yang was free. He had nothing to do, then. The only thing that he could find to fill up the time was to help Fantasy Sweetheart kill her Inheritance quest boss. However, the quest boss was so easy that even Endless Starlight could tank it with ease.

Zhang Yang then decided to fight in the Battle Team Professional League and the Individual Ranking Competition after that. When he was bored that those, he took of with the Phoenix to grind some monsters. He then came back to town and crafted some potions. When he was bored with even that, he logged out of the game to do some adult-leisure-romance-action activity with Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu. With the entire day well spent, Zhang Yang felt that it was one of those days that he truly was living the life. The next big thing that he should pay attention to was the Level 140 dungeon, the Death Abyss Grouped Dungeon.

# Chapter 668: Another Serious Blood Loss

---

There were a total of 6 sub-dungeons in the Death Abyss Dungeon. Two of the sub-dungeons were 10-player scaled dungeons while the other four sub-dungeons were 5-player dungeons. Each dungeon was similar to the previous dungeons that they had cleared before. There would be Normal Modes, Hard Modes and Hardcore Modes. Players would be required to unlock the next Mode by clearing the previous Mode.

However, one thing different in this dungeon compared to the others. This Death Abyss is located in the War Canyon. Meanwhile, players would have to go through so many battles in order to be deemed worthy to enter the War Canyon.

The details were as follow:

When the number of Level 140 players reaches up to 1,000 in the game server, the Region War in the War Canyon will be unlocked for players to take part in it. A great battle will be held once every 7 in-game days. 5 minutes before the war begins, all players that have reached Level 140 or beyond can sign up for the war. The system will then choose 100 players with the best equipment to enter the Region War zone.

The rules of the battle - there are no rules! There will only be 100 players from each Region joining the Region War, no more, no less. It is a measure taken to give everyone a fair chance in the war. Players will be allowed to use any items, including their Inheritance Transformation Skills during the great Region War! The main aim of the battle is to kill as many opponents as you can!

The duration of the battle is 2 hours.

What that breaks the rules, even more, was this. When players are dead, their Skills will all be resetted! Players will be able to return back to the battlefield at full power! They can return to the battlefield at their best state!

2 hours later, the party that manages to kill the most number of enemies shall claim victory over the battle as the Number One winner. When that happens, all players from the winner's Region will be able to enter the War Canyon to grind their levels. Furthermore, the players from the winner's Region will also receive an additional of 15% Experience Points. Players who have reached beyond Level 140 will be able to challenge the 6 sub-dungeons of the Death Abyss. They can choose whichever Mode they like --- under the circumstances that the Modes are all unlocked.

Meanwhile, parties in the second place and third place also have almost similar perks. All players from Regions where the two parties belong to will be able to enter the War Canyon to grind their levels as well. However, these players would only be able to get additional 10% and 5% Experience Points, respectively. Meanwhile, players from the Region of the second place winner will only be able to challenge the Normal Mode and the Hard Mode of the new dungeons. Players from the Region that the party who wins the third place have it a little worse. They could only challenge the Normal Mode of the new dungeons.

So, how about the rest of the players? Sorry, they will not even be able to even enter the War Canyon at all. They will have to do

better next time!

The new dungeons would all be reset once every 7 days. Therefore, players from every Region would only get one chance at clearing the dungeons before the next Region War!

Although they were sub-dungeons, every sub dungeon was independent on its own. There were no requirements whatsoever for which sub dungeon to be cleared first before the next. Players could just dive into any one of the sub-dungeons based on their liking. As for the equipment drops, Normal Mode would definitely drop only Yellow-Gold Tier equipment. The Hard Mode would only drop Violet-Platinum Tier equipment while the Hardcore Mode would only drop Mythical Tier equipment!

For normal players, Yellow-Gold Tier equipment was enough to support them in grinding their levels. Meanwhile, the Violet-Platinum Tier equipment was considered as the standard issue of the equipment the in the current stage of the game. As for the Mythical Tier equipment... well, Zhang Yang and his a gang are now wearing part Ethereal Tier part Mythical Tier equipment, aren't they?

Therefore, the dungeon of Death Abyss was something significant to any players from all Regions. Hence, every party in every Region would have to give their best shot in the Region War. Parties that can only get fourth place and so forth would only be watching the others farming good equipment, unable to enter the War Canyon.

After all, a dungeon could be repeatedly cleared as long as there

were players who were willing to do it. One reset would provide players plenty of opportunities for obtaining high Tier equipment in high-leveled dungeons. Whoever who can grab the opportunity would certainly become much more powerful upon obtaining new powerful equipment.

At the beginning stage of the current situation, only a few players managed to attain Level 140. So there was not much of an effect on the Regions yet. The main contest was in getting the First Clear title for the dungeon's Death Mode after all. Those sub-dungeons were just 5-player and 10-player scale dungeons. So, the difficulty of the sub-dungeons should not be too difficult for the players. Bringing along players with Inheritance Transformations would really be a game-changing move! They would definitely bring about an absolute effect on their dungeon progression!

After all, it was true that this dungeon was indeed designed, based on the power level of players with Inheritances. However, players with Inheritances were not the same as players with Inheritance Transformation Skills.

Truth to be told, the difficulties in each of these sub-dungeons were designed based on the power level of a Class D Inheritance. Meanwhile, a Class D Inheritance could only boost 30% on the Attack of a player. Hence, the difficulty of clearing these sub-dungeons would only be increased by 30%. Although 30% is not a low number, the monsters and bosses in those dungeons would still be bested by players who activate their Inheritance Transformations.

Therefore, whichever Region that could secure the position of

being Champions in the first Region War would definitely be getting the First Clear title for the new dungeon's Hardcore Mode. So naturally, everyone in the China Region hoped that they would be the one who wins the first Region War! They could not afford to have any margin of error at all!

Zhang Yang passed the relevant information about the Region War to Han Ying Xue and the rest of his gang. Everyone was very eager to take part in the war, apparently. It had been quite a while since they last battled with players from other Regions.

However, the War Canyon would only be opened to all servers when there are more than 1,000 Level 140 players in the game. Averagely speaking, every Region should have at least 125 players at Level 140. Although the requirement did not sound high at all, that number would require a certain amount of time to be assembled. As the Number One in the entire China Region, Zhang Yang was only at Level 133, currently. It would require at least two months to attain Level 140, even if he busts his \*ss, trying to grind his level up over the period of two months.

Zhang Yang was not anxious about it at all. Well, things would still be pointless if he is the only one who reaches Level 140 first. Furthermore, the higher his levels go, the farther he'll drift apart from reality. It was a rational fear that tugged at his heart, one that he could not put in words. Well, deep down inside, he was extremely worried that when he reaches Level 179, he would suddenly wake up and realize that he is lying on a bed in a hospital all the while. Would he really end up realizing that his 'current life' is all nothing but a fantastical dream?



Without Felice tagging along by his side while grinding his level, Zhang Yang felt much more bored than usual. However, Zhang Yang has not heard anything from that little lady. Zhang Yang have already visited Gilstein twice. However, the statue was still radiating in a soothing light. There was still no sign of Felice's voice at all.

Holding his urge to strike the statue down by force, Zhang Yang decided to wait in patience. Meanwhile, he also decided to camp by the site to grind his level, while waiting for something to happen. Grinding his level anywhere else would still be the same for him anyway.

About 7 or 8 days later, Zhang Yang suddenly received a call from his secretary. He was lying on his office couch while playing the game. His secretary told him that someone on the line would like to speak to him. After picking up the call, he heard a young voice filled with hatred and resentment, "Zhang Yang... you're ruthless! You're really a ruthless son of the b\*tch! I'm not going to let this slide, just like that!"

The moment the voice stopped, the person hung up.

Zhang Yang was unable to make head or tail of the situation. He shrugged and continued on with his game. However, he suddenly recognized the voice over the phone earlier on --- Ma Zhi Hua.

Zhang Yang did not even want to care about what that was all about. This guy was simply idiotic. Since Sun Xin Yu told Zhang Yang to let her handle it, Zhang Yang would, of course, entrust her with it to the fullest. It seemed that Sun Xin Yu got the issue

handled. However, he had no idea what Sun Xin Yu did to rattle the guy so hard that Ma Zhi Hua got so unhinged.

Truth be told, men were also very curious creatures. At night when they were busy in bed, Zhang Yang could no longer hold his curiosity. So he asked her about it, "What did you do to your cousin Ma? He seems like he just stepped on a landmine or something. He actually called over to tell me that he will not let this slide. Fill me in a little, will you?"

Sun Xin Yu humphed lightly and said, "I just gathered some intel about his former crimes and passed it to my superior. He got into the jail cell in the police station for a few days because of that! If it wasn't because of my uncle, I would have cut my ties with him and left him to be destroyed!"

Unfortunately, even though Sun Xin Yu was 'icy cold', she still felt for her relative. After all, they were kin. If they weren't from the same family tree, she might have done something far worse than that, based on her temper.

Han Ying Xue snorted and said, "You really are ruthless, ice queen. You didn't even let your own family go! You're just a witch as much as the wicked ones!"

Piak! Piak!

Suddenly, two smooth hands roughly reached out and clapped over the two busty boobies of Han Ying Xue. Sun Xin Yu smile coldly and said, "Milk cow, do you believe that I'll crush them to

bits?"

Speaking of 'battles', even if there were 10 Han Ying Xues, there was no way that they would be able to defeat Sun Xin Yu. She turned her head around and looked at Zhang Yang pitifully.

"Ice queen, these two are my private properties! You shall not bully them!" Zhang Yang pushed Sun Xin Yu down and put himself on top of Sun Xin Yu, "Not to mention that these two precious babes of yours are mine as well!"

The wonderful night was still young. The erotic utterances played together like a symphony throughout the night.

Zhang Yang waited for another 7 to 8 days. He managed to reach Level 135. However, he had not heard nor seen Felice yet! He began to feel anxious. So, he decided not to wait any longer.

Wait, a second! Just hold that thought!

Well, it certainly took a lot of his blood away when Felice was born from the egg.

Zhang Yang widened his eyes and finished off the monster that was bothering him. Then, he went back to the side of the statue with his Phoenix pet.

"It seems that I have to do it once again! This is going to be another serious blood loss!" Zhang Yang sighed heavily. Then, he

took out some [Snack] and placed them on the ground. At the same time, he pulled out his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and slit his left wrist. Blood oozed out from the cut. Zhang Yang quickly put his left hand over by the side of the statue and let his blood flow upon the statue.

A miracle happened. The statue began to absorb Zhang Yang's blood like a sponge!

It was working! It was definitely working!

Zhang Yang quickly took up a [Snack] and ate it. After all, he was losing his HP as fast as he was losing his blood!

In tens of seconds, his wound stopped bleeding and the cut recovered. However, the only change on the statue was that it was glowing a little brighter than before.

This statue surely had a large appetite!

Recalling back at the older days, it almost sucked him dry, trying to feed his blood to the egg when Felice was still Level 0. Now that she had reached Level 130... well...

Zhang Yang slit his wrist again with his sword and continued to 'feed' his blood to the statue. He could not help but think, if someone sees him doing this, would that someone freak out, seeing the Number One player in the China Region cutting himself in apparent pleasure?

First bar of HP, second bar of HP, third bar of HP ... Zhang Yang was thankful that he only needed to do this in the game. He could just recover his HP bar by taking some [Snacks] repeatedly. Or else, Zhang Yang would have died countless time by now.

"Difficult labor! Definitely a difficult labor! Should have used the cesarean section!" Zhang Yang sighed heavily. Even though his HP bar could be regained by eating a lot of [Snacks], he also took quite a toll for losing so much blood continuously for so long. His face was so pale that it had turned completely white! He was so dazed that he could even see stars and flowers flying around him.

The statue glowed brighter and brighter as he fed his blood to it. The light became so strong that Zhang Yang could no longer shield his eyes from the light even after he closed his eyelids. As it grew brighter and brighter, even the trees were not able to block the light from scattering out far into the surroundings. Others could see the bright radiating light from tens of kilometers away!

Currently, most players have reached Level 120. So they were eligible to be on the same map as Zhang Yang, many players nearby were attracted by the light source. So they came over, on their pets and mounts to take a look at what was going on. One, two, three ... more and more players were gathering around. Even though Zhang Yang had hidden his character information, the Pheonix pet by his side had betrayed his identity to everyone in the surroundings --- there were only two Phoenix pets in the entire server. One was owned by some half-baked fat Hunter that was constantly asking to be beaten up. The other one was owned by the Number One player recognized by the entire world, Zhan Yu!

So that was Zhan Yu?

What the f\*ck was he up to, cutting himself and splashing his blood on a statue? What did it even mean? Why would he make such a big fuss out of it? Did he overdose on an aphrodisiac and was now trying to make out with a statue? Did he find masturbating no longer fun and he wanted to try releasing the other kind of liquid from his body?

Even though more and more players were gathering around him, none of them launched any sort of assaults on Zhang Yang. Other than the players from Japan-Korea Region, Zhang Yang had no beef with normal players. Furthermore, the Number One player in the entire world was standing there, doing some weird stuff now! So no one was daring enough to try something on him.

Just when the situation could not get any weirder, Zhang Yang suddenly felt the statue vibrating with a gentle hum.

# Chapter 669: Felice's Advancement

---

Zhang Yang felt a rush of joy up his chest. He continued to let his blood flow on the statue while eating [Snacks] like a joyful madman. He also took a glance at his surroundings once in a while. He did not seem to care about how people looked at him at all.

If such a facial expression was seen on a normal player, that player would have been surrounded and beaten up for good!

However, the circumstances were different for Zhang Yang. He was the Number One player in the entire game. He had all right to do that! Those who crossed eyes with Zhang Yang could not even look him straight in his eyes. They either looked at another direction or looked down to their own feet. Well, Zhang Yang looked intimidating just by standing there. So there was nothing to be said about it.

"Little Yang, rumors say that you're masturbating to a statue! You masturbated so much that blood came out instead?" the voice of Fatty Han squeaked in his ear.

Zhang Yang frowned intensely after hearing Fatty Han's stupid words, as usual. Then he asked, "Who said that?"

"The rumors are all over the place! Some people even opened up a post and discussed it on the forum page! They are discussing about what you're really up to!"

... what are rumors? Any information or news that are added in

with some 'spices' of their own would definitely be twisted into something it was not meant to be, especially when the rumors had gone through tens of people's mouths! The 'taste' of it would change significantly!

Oh, my poor reputation!

Zhang Yang could only mourn for his reputation by shaking his head over and over again. As he continued on with what he was doing, the statue continued to get brighter and brighter. He could vaguely feel that he was almost at the most vital moment. There was no way that he would back down from what he was trying to achieve now! Well, he would not want all his blood to go to waste after all. If he is ever going to be forced to 'masturbate' again, surely he would be suffocated to death by the people surrounding him.

"Haha! It really is Zhang Yang!"

An arrogant voice came by his ear. It was the voice of Liu Wei! Liu Wei came with Death Arbiter and his 12 'Suicide Squad' members. Of course, he wouldn't have forgotten to bring along his army of Healers as well. He at least brought along 40 to 50 players with him this time.

They had been occupied with grinding their levels nearby when they heard about Zhang Yang's 'masturbation'. So they came over to take a look at what was really going on here. Although there were some discrepancies between the rumors and the real situation, Liu Wei was overwhelmed with joy --- first of all, Zhang Yang was alone here all by himself; secondly, Zhang Yang was



obviously doing something he could not afford to stop at that moment!

Wrecking Zhang Yang's business was everything that Liu Wei ever wished to do! Now, he was presented with the greatest opportunity of all time. How would he let the chance slip away, then? Without any hesitation, he commanded his men to launch their assaults on Zhang Yang. He wanted to take this super rare opportunity to take out Zhang Yang.

On the other hand, Zhang Yang was on the verge of success!

He did not intend give up on it. He continued to release his blood onto the statue. He commanded his Phoenix pet to activate its Transformation Skill just in case. The big bird instantly turned into a 30-meter tall creature with a long tail that turned it into a hundred-meter long blazing bird. The Phoenix pet dove at Death Arbiter and spat a blast of blazing flame straight upon him.

Although the Phoenix pet was the only one who was engaged in battle, some of the 'stray bullets' from the battle still found their way to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was forced to engage in battle after he received the damage. The moment when he was engaged in battle, he no longer had the chance to take his [Snacks]. Without getting the support to recover back his HP, Zhang Yang's HP bar began to drop steeply.

Liu Wei instantly laughed with joy when he saw that. Then he said, "Zhang Yang! Does it feel good knowing that you're going to die and there's nothing you can do about it?"

He led his 12 'Suicide Squad' members and charged at Zhang Yang.

Just when things got a little messier than expected, the statue suddenly started to tremble more violently with each passing second. A flash of blinding light surged through the entire statue. Right in the middle of the statue's chest, a white radiating barrier appeared. There was the vague shadow of a girl curled up in the middle of that white radiating barrier.

Boom!

The radiating barrier suddenly trembled and exploded violently, sending shards of light to the surroundings. Everyone could not help but shield their eyes from the light.

When everyone opened their eyes again, they only saw a humanoid lady levitating in midair with her valiant appearance. She was holding a long lance while her black silky hair was floating about naturally even though the air was still --- It was Felice!

"Big brother!" The little lady turned her angry eyes over to Liu Wei. Then she transformed into her Dragonhawk Form and descended down from the air. Not long after she transformed into her Dragonhawk Form, she transformed again into a new form --- the Spectral Tiger Form!

Upon her transformation, the little lady used some other unknown Skill. Its size changed tremendously! Initially, the

Spectral Tiger was only about seven to eight meters long. After breathing in some air, the Spectral Tiger spread out into 30 meters tall and hundreds of meters long! It was almost as large as the transformed Phoenix pet!

‘-181,478!’

Felice struck with her claws out and instantly caused over a terrifying damage of 180,000 damage to Liu Wei. She took out about 70% HP of that guy with just one hit! The attack did not end there. Felice struck out again at high speed.

Switch!

‘-214,322!’

In the nick of time, one of the bodyguards that came along with Liu Wei finally did his job. He threw a {Sacrifice} onto Liu Wei and saved Liu Wei at the last moment!

Although he did a great job on that, the Attack power of Felice was just too terrifying!

Everyone in the surrounding dropped their jaws when they saw the damage values that popped out on top of Liu Wei and his bodyguard. Even though they were not clear about how powerful was Felice’s Attack power, they could still see how much damage Felice could deal to her foes by looking at the damage values that popped out on top of Liu Wei and his man. Well, the Attack power

of Felice was definitely on the same standard as the Attack power of a boss!

They had no idea that Felice was initially Zhang Yang's Battle Companion. They only thought that Felice was just a powerful being that just got 'hatched' from the statue! Well, it was normal to have that kind of thoughts. Logically speaking, why would a top Tier player like Zhang Yang be bleeding himself out miserably to 'feed' a statue then? There must be something worthwhile in doing it!

Apparently, one could also obtain a powerful Battle Companion by doing such an absurd thing!

Everyone in the surroundings was beginning to feel an itch in their hearts. After witnessing the might that Felice exhibited, would anyone still be content with their current Battle Companion?

Zhang Yang laughed out loud. He commanded his Phoenix pet to flap its wings and get going into the sky. Then he leaped onto the back of the Phoenix pet. The moment he mounted himself onto the Phoenix pet, his Maximum HP shot past 6,000,000 HP. Right before he mounted onto his pet, Zhang Yang had only approximately 70,000 HP left because of what he did for the statue back there. However, he got a huge boost in his Maximum HP after mounting himself onto his pet. So all the HP he lost back there became an insignificant factor.

"Felice! Let's work together and take out these bastards!"

"Yes, big brother!"

Zhang Yang had a Phoenix pet at his side. Who would dare to stand up against him? The royal-blooded Phoenix fluttered its wings and lunged into the sky. It went straight towards Liu Wei! Upon reaching Liu Wei, the Phoenix pet began to spit fire upon him without any signs of mercy! The flames danced about and caused tens of thousands of damage upon Liu Wei and at least 7 others of his men!

After all, they were engaged in battle with a fully transformed Phoenix!

Coincidentally, Liu Wei and his goons had activated their Transformation Skill as they were grinding their levels and taking down bosses not long before they came here. Hence, their Transformation Skills were still under cooldown period. They were all in grave danger right now!

Felice assessed the situation and transformed into her Humanoid Form. By doing so, her Attack was similarly powerful as the Attack of the Transformed Phoenix. No... her Attack was actually much more powerful than the Attack of the Phoenix! The two of them joined forces and caused a tremendous mess to Liu Wei and his men. With their AoE attacks bombarding Liu Wei and his men, the tactic that Liu Wei loved to implement had lost its effect. His goons could not even save themselves from the blazing attacks thrown at them. How would they still be able to throw {Sacrifice} on Liu Wei to keep him alive, then? In the beginning, they were barely holding on. After a brief moment, his men began to die one after

another.

Players with an Inheritance Transformation had an absolute advantage over players without an Inheritance Transformation. Now, the Phoenix pet and Felice were both transformed. Zhang Yang was a skillful and powerful player all by himself! The three of them brought hell upon Liu Wei and his men.

As expected, the Number One player in the entire world is not to be trifled with!

Everyone was amazed to see how Zhang Yang was preying on Liu Wei and his men like how an eagle was picking up little chicks one after another. It did not take long before Zhang Yang took out the entire 50-player scale party of The Myth. Well, now they had really faded into 'myth'! A large scale party was taken out single-handedly by one player!

A number of other players went up to the statue and bled themselves as well. They were fantasizing that they could also get a powerful Battle Companion as well by doing what Zhang Yang did awhile before that.

"Zhang Yang! You better not be so cocky about this! You're not going to be so lucky every time!" Liu Wei left his final soaring words before he was slammed to his death by Felice. He only got to survive so long because he had been so well protected.

Unfortunately, Zhang Yang could not get a grip on any evidence about Liu Wei's crime in real life just yet. Even though Liu Wei had

done quite a number of terrible things back then, it was almost impossible to get a hold over any solid evidence about all his crimes. Back in the day, he actually attempted to get a beautiful girl in his secondary school. After he was rejected by the girl, he raped the girl. However, he was from a very rich family. Everything was 'settled' with money. The girl and her family left the city and disappeared into the wind. It would require time to locate their whereabouts. Furthermore, it would also be another big question if the victim would be willing to step up and testify against Liu Wei.

Back in his University days, Liu Wei was not behaving well at all. Rumors had that he killed a few people back then and got everything 'settled' with money as well. The family members of the victims were compensated with a substantial amount of money. They also left their initial places and vanished into the wind. So, it would be extremely difficult to look them up one by one.

Therefore, it would still be impossible for Zhang Yang to checkmate Liu Wei with one solid move. However, Zhang Yang had hired several extra private investigators to dig deeper into the matter. He would not be worrying about money anymore because he got rich good time! Furthermore, getting rid of Liu Wei with hard solid evidence would be the best thing he needed to make his life complete.

Felice had returned to him. There was no reason left for Zhang Yang to stay at the site. So, he hopped onto the back of his Phoenix pet and left the place, leaving behind tons of players who just witnessed his battle with The Myth. Those players were idiotically trying to do what he did, cutting their wrist and trying to 'feed' the

statue with their blood. Thousands of players cutting themselves in the public ... was a spectacular scene to gaze upon...

Zhang Yang turned his attention towards Felice. He was extremely surprised to see that Felice went through a Level Advancement!

[Felice] (Humanoid)

Level: 133

HP: 599,920 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 8,870

Melee Attack: 64,714 - 84,714 (Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds)

Skills:

[Blazing Dragon's Spear], [Dragon's Spear Barrage], [Dragonhawk Form]

[Spectral Tiger Form]: Transforms into a Spectral Tiger. While in the form of the Spectral Tiger, Felice can use a new set of Skills of the Spectral Tiger. However, she will not be able to use the Skills that she can use in her Humanoid form.



Special: {Seal 2}{Seal 3}{Seal 4}

Note: Player Zhan Yu's Battle Companion.

[Felice] (Spectral Tiger Form)

Level: 133

HP: 451,980 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 1,850

Magic Resistance: 8,870

Melee Attack: 64,714 - 84,714 (Based on Physical Attack, however, deal Nature Damage) (Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds)

Skills:

[Claw Attack]: Attacks the target with a beastly claw. Deals 150% Melee Attack of Nature Damage. Consume: 50 Focus Points.

[Spectral Tiger Berserk]: Enters into a berserk state. The body will expand in size. Maximum HP will increase by 20 times. Attack will increase by 300%. Defense will increase by 300%. Magic Resistance will increase by 300%. While in the berserk state, Felice will gain 1 Berserk Energy Point in every 10 seconds. Duration: 2

hours. Cooldown: 72 hours. Note: Upon activating the {Spectral Tiger Berserk}, the {Dragonhawk Berserk} will also enter the same cooldown state.

[Frenzy Talon Strike]: Reach out her claws and attack the target with a series of flurry attacks, causing 100% Melee Attack of Nature Damage to all targets within the range of 50 meters. Consume: 3 Berserk Energy Point.

[Berserk Recovery]: Immediately recovers HP. Requires 10 Berserk Energy Points to activate. Basic amount of HP recovery is set as 50% HP. Each additional Berserk Energy Point can increase additional 5% HP. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

So that was the reason why that little ladies could perform with such ferocity. Zhang Yang had suspected it to be something similar to a Transformation Skill. He was right after all!

However, what was {Dragonhawk Berserk}?

Zhang Yang looked further down on Felice's attributes.

[Felice] (Dragonhawk Form)

Level: 133

HP: 376,650 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 1,850

Magic Resistance: 8,870

Magic Attack: 38,884 - 48,884

Skills:

[Pulverizing Flame]: Spit blazing flames from the sky upon an area of 30 X 30 circular area, causing 50% Magic Attack of Fire Damage to all targets within the effective area of the Skill in every second. Last for 10 seconds. Require aiming. Cooldown: 30 seconds. Consume: 100 Focus Points.

[Fire Missile]: launch a Fire Missile at a target, causing 200% Magic Attack of Fire Damage to the target. Chanting time: 2 seconds. Consume 20 Focus Points.

[Dragonhawk Berserk]: Enters into a berserk state. The body will expand in size. Maximum HP will increase by 20 times. Attack will increase by 300%. Defense will increase by 300%. Magic Resistance will increase by 300%. While in the berserk state, Felice will gain 1 Berserk Energy Point in every 10 seconds. Duration: 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours. Note: Upon activating the {Spectral Tiger Berserk}, the {Dragonhawk Berserk} will also enter the same cooldown state.

[Berserk Recovery]: Immediately recovers HP. Requires 10 Berserk Energy Points to activate. Basic amount of HP recovery is

set as 50% HP. Each additional Berserk Energy Point can increase an additional 5% HP. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

Addition: Have the ability to fly.

# Chapter 670: Charge Up Strike

---

Upon visiting Gilstein, Felice had advanced up to the level of an Ethereal Tier. She looked almighty from all sides. The scene of her wiping out a large number of players from The Myth mesmerized the players who witnessed her actions in the surroundings. They truly believed that Zhang Yang had acquired this powerful Battle Companion by giving his blood to a statue.

The rumors spread on. Countless players went to the Goddess of War's Statue and cut their wrists as well. They even needed to fight their way through in order to get close to the statue!

Some players who knew about the lore of 'God's Miracle' immediately pointed out that the statue was actually the statue of the Goddess of War who had fallen during ancient times. After confirming the fact, the players became even more obsessed than they ever could. Was this the reason why Felice was so powerful? Was it because she had a direct connection to the gods in the ancient times?

Most players actually believed that there was a chance to get a similarly powerful Battle Companion and become all powerful like Zhang Yang!

For the next few days, countless players died from blood loss. White lights were seen flashing one after another because players were sent to the Graveyard upon their deaths for being total idiots.

As time passed, most of the players finally recovered from their

insanity and obsession towards the idea, because no one ever succeeded in summoning a second 'Felice'. However, there was still a small number of players insisting that the method they used might not be correct. Or maybe they were not giving enough blood to the statue. Rumors about using different methods spread across the server like cancer. A few days later, so many versions of methods had been told across the server: For instance, a player must give blood to the statue while masturbating. Well, this was thought true because Zhang Yang was rumored to be masturbating at the statue while he was giving his blood to it at the same time...

The ridiculous farce went so far that the official was forced to step up and make a statement. The official had to post an official announcement on the forum just to end the farce.

...

Not only Zhang Yang could transform himself into his {God of War Transformation}, his Battle Companion and his pet could also transform themselves! Would there still be someone on equal ground with Zhang Yang when he is so much more powerful than he already was?

The slight kink of the current situation was that the two Transformation Skills on Felice shared the same cooldown period. In other words, she could not activate both of her Transformation Skills consecutively right after her first activation. Because the cooldown for each Transformation Skills was 72 hours, Felice would have to wait for that long before she could activate another Transformation Skill on her. Well, if she could just activate one Transformation Skill and activate another one after the first one

ended, Felice would be too broken for the game! She would become too much to handle for anyone, including Zhang Yang! Anyway, if the three of them activated their Transformations at the same instance, would anyone still be able to handle them?

On the ranking board, Zhang Yang had become absolutely invincible. When he activates his Transformation Skill at the same time as his Phoenix, no one could defeat him. With an additional Felice who could also activate a Transformation Skill? Her presence had just secured Zhang Yang's Number One more firm than ever! Of course, only Zhang Yang and Fatty Han could attain a double activation of Transformation Skills in one battle. In the not so far future, maybe Hundred Shots would join under their ranks. Although players with Transformation Skill were powerful, they would still be taken out cold if they were to battle an army of hundreds of thousands.

Felice managed to unseal another one of her seals after she came out from the Goddess of War's Statue. Her Tier had advanced up to the Tier of Ethereal while her Attribute Growth Star points had increased from 10 stars to 11 stars! In other words, Felice would receive an additional 10% effect on the attributes that any Battle Companion equipment had to offer. The perks she now had were so many times better than before when she only had 5 stars or 6 stars!

With Felice joining his team again, Zhang Yang managed to grind his level at an even faster rate. However, those lazy bumps like Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were beginning to rely on him after seeing Felice's performance. They kept requesting Zhang Yang to join their party in grinding their levels. Even though their Attack powers were not weak, who could compete with Zhang Yang in

term of Attack power! So instantly, these b\*tches held Zhang Yang back and reduced his efficiency in grinding his level.

Even so, Zhang Yang did not mind it at all. If he is the only one who reaches Level 140 first, he would have to wait for the others to reach Level 140 as well. There would be no fun in that at all. Regardless of whether it was the big battle coming up in the War Canyon or the dungeons, everything involved team effort.

Under the supervision of Zhang Yang, his gang was improving at a monstrous rate. Their levels were increasing rapidly over a short period of time! Well, it would not be a surprise actually, because they were pretty actually pretty good players, to begin with. In the meantime, Fantasy Sweetheart finally acquired her Succubus Inheritance. The party became complete with everyone having their very own Inheritances! Moreover, the lowest Class among their Inheritance were Class B! The lineup of the party had now become formidably strong and powerful!

Time passed quickly. They did not even realize that it was already the beginning of May. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang became the very first who reached beyond Level 140. His Strength alone did not improve much. After all, he had not been able to get higher Tier equipment for himself to equip. However, his Phoenix pet had reached Level 140 and its power level had advanced up to the Tier of Ethereal. That was some quality change happening there!

Currently, the DPS of Phoenix pet had reached up to 40,000 damage. Its Maximum HP under the influence of the {Vitality Aura} had reached up to 645,870 HP! On the other hand, the highest HP and Defense of Felice in her Humanoid Form could



reach up to 710,450 HP and 9,419 Defense. When she is in her Dragonhawk Form and her Spectral Tiger Form, her Maximum HP could reach up to 446,010 HP and 535,200 HP respectively. Her DPS while in both forms was approximately 50,000 damage. The difference was not that big.

When Felice is in her Dragonhawk Form, she could be treated as an individual existence of a Spellcaster. Her Maximum HP would become the lowest among her attributes while her Damage output would become the highest among all her attributes. While she is in her Spectral Tiger Form, she could be treated as a Berserker on the battlefield. Her Maximum HP could become higher than the Maximum HP that she would have when she is in her Dragonhawk Form. At the same time, her Attack power would be a little lower than her Attack power while she is in her Dragonhawk Form as well.

Most importantly, these two Transformation Forms could solve the issue for Felice while she battles Natural-type and Fire-type bosses. With her weakness out of the way, she could unleash her potential to the fullest! Zhang Yang also believed that Felice would be getting more Transformation Forms when her third Seal is unsealed!

Currently, the Attack power of Felice had exceeded the Attack power of the Phoenix pet by a large gap. However, Phoenix pet excelled in normal Attack, Defense, and higher HP. If the two of them clashed in battle, there was no telling who would come up top just yet!

When Zhang Yang reached Level 140, the Officials immediately

introduced the topic of the War Canyon. They introduced the details and entry requirements of the War Canyon to everyone on the public forums. Therefore, everyone understood that they must acquire Number One in the Region War in order to get a chance of acquiring the First Clear of the Death Abyss's Hardcore Mode!

None of the players were slacking off after knowing about the criteria to enter the War Canyon. They were grinding their levels harder than they could. The War Canyon would be unlocked once the number of Level 140 players hit 1,000. It did not state that each state must contribute in such regard. However, if one Region could become significantly powerful that they could gather 1,000 Level 140 players before the other Regions, then all they needed to do was to allocate 1,000 players into the War Canyon and stand there for 2 hours long. They could just easily claim victory over the Region War staying idle in the War Canyon!

Of course, that scenario was too unreal to even think about it. Well, whichever Region with the most players reaching Level 140 would stand a higher chance of winning the Region War. Players from all around the world were trying to reach Level 140 to unlock the War Canyon. It did not matter how many Level 140 players each Region could contribute. As long as the number of Level 140 players in the entire game hits 1,000, the War Canyon would be unlocked. When that happens, only be 1,000 players from all Regions could join the Region War in the War Canyon. Hence, the Region with the most Level 140 players could join the Region War with more players. Because if they could allocate more Level 140 players into the War Canyon for the Region War, they could easily triumph over the other Regions. Meanwhile, the other Regions would be facing a deficit in the number of Level 140 players on their sides. Maybe they could only allocate 80, 70 or even 40 players in the Region War. They would not even stand a chance if

that is really the case!

No one would want their Region to face that sort of crisis. Therefore, every available Top Tier player on each Region worked extra hard. They tried their best to reach Level 140 for their Region. After all, one man's loss is another's gain. It would not matter the number of Level 140 players from which Region surpass the requirement by the end of the contest, the War Canyon would be unlocked when there are 1,000 Level players in the entire server.

Upon reaching Level 140, Zhang Yang went to see God of War Ares to learn new Skill. Ever since he reached Level 120, Zhang Yang could only learn one new Skill every time his level increases by 20 levels. It was so long ago since he last visited Ares. He almost forgot the exact location of the cave!

The new Skill that Ares was going to teach Zhang Yang was called 'Charge Up Strike'. However, the name did not suggest what the Skill had to offer.

[Charge Up Strike]: Feints a blow on the target. Target will receive no damage at all. Charges Strength. Gets prepared for the next attack. The next attack will certainly be a Critical Hit. Increases additional 50% to Damage Dealt as well. Effect lasts for 2 seconds at most. Cooldown: 1 minute.

Although this Skill also shared the same cooldown as the other Skills, the next hit would be guaranteed a Critical hit. It could really give Zhang Yang some benefit in some sense. Moreover, the Skill could also increase an additional 50% damage!

...

As each day passed, there would be more notifications about new players achieving Level 140. Without anyone noticing, the number of Level 140 players soon reached 1,000!

May 26th, 8:45 p.m, the server began to post the notification saying that there were now 1,000 Level 140 players in the entire server. The great Region War in the War Canyon would be held at 9 p.m on the next day. Players who intend to join the Region War must sign up, 10 minutes before the event.

Snow Seeker, Greensleeves Prince, One Sword Stroke and the other guildmasters of the Top Tier Guild went to see Zhang Yang. They had a meeting to discuss about strategy and tactics to use for the Region War and to find out the benefits of cooperating with each other --- with the current number of players with Inheritance in each guild, they could easily conquer a Hardcore Mode of a dungeon. If they could determine the benefits they were signing up for, they believed it would be wiser of them to cooperate. Each of the guilds was one of the best in the entire China Region. If they organized and delegated on the clearing up the sub-dungeons, they could acquire the First Clear of the dungeon in no time. However, if they competed against each other to clear one dungeon, they would waste too much time on slaughtering their own while the other weaker guilds might snatch the First Clear of the dungeon under their noses.

Zhang Yang did not have much experience on managing strategies for large-scale battles. Fortunately for him, he had

Mountain Mover on his guild. Moreover, Mountain Mover had also reached Level 140 under the guidance of Zhang Yang. Although he was not particularly skilled in single combat, Mountain Mover was extremely good at arranging strategies and commanding troops. Because of him, Zhang Yang did not have to torture his brain to think something up.

He pushed Mountain Mover out to the front as he sat back with his arms folded around himself. Well, all he needed to do was to be the best fighter on the battlefield, nothing more!

The Battle Royale in the War Canyon would just be like the Individual Ranking Competition. Upon entering the battle, the cooldown of all Skills would all be reset. Moreover, the cooldown of Skills would not be brought out of the battle as well. In simpler words, after a player activates a Skill, the Skill would be under cooldown. However, if the player gets out from the Region War, the cooldown of the Skill would be reset. Or else, the situation among the guilds would be filled with doubt. Because if that wasn't the case, everyone who takes part in the war would not be able to use their Transformation Skills after using them for the Battle Royale.

"I want a fight, right now!"

"Why is it not beginning yet?"

"Hmm, you look like an ugly horse, noob tank!"

The grand battle was about to begin. Wei Yan Er could no longer

hold herself back. She ran out of patience and muttered on and on. She even tried to ridicule Zhang Yang with her immature words. Zhang Yang had returned the {Dragon Slayer Battle Axe} back to the little brat some time ago. However, the party only managed to slay a small number of high Tier bosses. Even though their equipment had improved, but the improvement was not much to tell.

‘Ding! You can now enter the War Canyon to join the battle!’

Zhang Yang’s vision blurred for a second. Instantly, he found himself in the middle of an unfamiliar canyon. He brought up his map to take a look. The interior of the canyon was actually similar to the design of the Gagaro's Mist map. However, there were only 8 paths instead of 12.

Every path led to the central point. There, players would find some defensive facilities such as mini Magic Cannons. Each blow could deal 100,000 Chaos Damage to anyone who gets caught in the middle of the blast. The blast from the cannon could spread out to an area of 10 meters squared. The cooldown of these Magic Cannons was only 30 seconds. The best thing about the cannons was that they had unlimited ammo!

Whoever who conquers the central point of the map could secure those defensive facilities for their own usage. They would be able to deal even more damage to their opponents. The winning party would be determined based on the number of players they kill. The party that could kill the most would be deemed as the winner. Therefore, these defensive facilities would play a significant role in aiding the players in claiming victory over the war.

Moreover, Graveyards were located on either end of the pathways. Whenever a player from any Region is killed, they would be sent back to their respective Region's Graveyard. They would need to run all the way to central point all over again just to kill or be killed once again.

There was also a special Graveyard located right in the middle of the center point on the map. Whichever party that conquers the central point would be able to use the special Graveyard to resurrect. By doing so, they would no longer have to run all the way back from the start when they die.

Therefore, the key to winning this war would lie in whether a party conquers the central point of the map, or not.

# Chapter 671: Exposing the Atrocious Side

---

Of course, it would not mean that victory is claimed after a party managed to secure the center point. They would still have many other problems to worry about.

Yes, they would take control of the defensive facilities and the special Graveyard which would enable them to jump straight back into the battle without having to run through the entire pathway. However, the Region who gets hold of the center point would have to face the assaults from the other 7 Regions! The players able to stand on this map were all players that had been filtered out by the system, based on their equipment Tier. The system would only deem those who had higher Tier equipment on them to be eligible to enter the War Canyon. Therefore, the standard of the players from all Regions should not differ greatly among themselves.

By taking the advantage of the defensive facilities and the special Graveyard at the central point, one Region could possibly perform a 1 vs 2, or even 1 vs 3. But 1 vs 7? That would be...

The situation of this battle would be similar to playing a game of chess. One would need to adopt and discard a pawn with a critical eye. Even though one Region might take down the center point, it would not mean they would have to defend the spot to their very end. After all, the criteria of winning the first place in the contest was to kill as many enemies as they could.

Slaughter, that was the main theme of this war, after all!



Furthermore, defending the central point would not be the only way to win. They could also send a small strike team and ambush players at their Graveyards. The weakened players will surely be massacred before they can fully recover! Unless the numbers of players resurrecting far outnumbered the strike force, the strike team would be able to camp at the spot, leisurely killing off everything that spawned there!

Moreover, it would be extremely difficult to snatch out a few Thieves in their Stealth Mode in a canyon that was at least 50-meters wide!

In a nutshell, there were multiple means of claiming victory in the battle.

This would be the first grand battle in the War Canyon. Although there were actually more than 1,000 players beyond Level 140, it would not mean that each Region would be able to allocate 100 players to join the war. Powerful Regions such as China Region, Europe Region, North America Region and India Region would allocate about 120 or even 130 players to join the war. From that excessive number, the system would pick the 100 players with the best equipment.

However, Regions that were 'wretched' such as Japan-Korea Region could only afford to send 76 players. They had no choice at all but to send as many good players as they could. That number was the best that they could do for the moment.

It was only 5 minutes before the beginning of the battle. The 100 players from China Region were listening to every command of

Mountain Mover. Everyone could only stay by their respective Graveyards before the battle begins. There was no way that they could head for the center point now.

Mountain Mover had checked on the information that the Officials provided. Hence, he had a deep understanding on the terrain of the area and the competition rules. With sufficient information, he could work his brain to his fullest potential.

However, the 100 players from the China Region might not be on the same page. After all, they were cobbled together from many top Tier guild in China Region. There were also 7 to 8 players who did not belong to any guild. They were feeling superior of themselves. They actually believed that they could take down the world on behalf of China Region all by themselves. Even though they could not leave the beginning point just yet, they were already staring far into the sky. They were not listening to everything that Mountain Mover was saying.

A tough rival beats you and a piggish teammate f\*cks you up!

Zhang Yang did not expect anything from these piggish people. If each of them could just contribute by killing a few players, that would be more than sufficient.

After preparing for the battle, the grand battle finally began! Upon the system notification ‘Ding!’ -- the air walls right before everyone vanished. Everyone could now move around at will.

The map restricted players from flying. However, they could still

get on their Flying Mounts and perform a close-to-land glide. It would not break the rule as long as they keep themselves at a low level. However, it would be impossible for players to fly over to another pathway where the other Regions were on.

The only way to get over to the other pathways was by going through the center point of the map.

Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were leading the others in the front. They were on their Phoenix pets, so they were able to glide forward at a super high speed! Currently, no other players had an Ethereal Tier pet mount. Mythical Tier pet mounts were extremely hard to come by. In the meantime, the Phoenix pets were actually much faster than the other pets of the same Tier. Now that their Tier had been advanced up to the Tier of Ethereal, their speed had increased even further. Though the increase was not significant, it was enough to showcase the advantage that the Phoenix pets had over the other pets.

On the large map, players from each Region were represented by flash dots of different colors. China Region players had their names in red, Europe Region players were yellow, North America Region were blue, Japan-Korea Region were orange, Australia Region were green, South America Region were purple, Africa Region were black, and India Region were white.

Everyone who was looking at the map could see clearly that two red dots approaching the center point at a speed so fast, that everyone was shocked!

According to information that the Official provided, the method

of securing the center point was to plant a flag in the middle of the Graveyard. The players should protect the flag for two minutes without having the flag removed from its position. Any intrusion on the process would cause the progress to reset. The players would have to do the whole thing all over again when that happens. Furthermore, only one flag could be planted in the middle of the Graveyard at a time. If other players wished to plant their flags in the middle of the graveyard in the center point, they would be required to destroy the first flag before you could do that.

The process of planting a flag would require 10 seconds. If the player who is planting the flag ever receives any damage while he is in the middle of doing it, the process would be interrupted immediately.

However, even though Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were able to be the first to plant their flag, they were still not up to the standard that they could go 2 minutes ahead of everyone. After planting their flag on the center point, they would not be able to use all the defensive facilities and the neutral Graveyard just yet. At the same time, they would have to face the full assaults from the other 7 Regions!

That was one big issue that everyone attempting to secure the center points for their own use would have to face. After all, the center point was the one neutral point that everyone would want to secure for themselves.

Fortune favors the bold. Even though the process of acquiring the central point was extremely challenging, whichever Region that could get the central point would acquire a large advantage over

the other Regions. That was a reason that was worth risking for!

Nevertheless, Mountain Mover did not put all his hope on securing the center point. In the meantime, he arranged a small and agile task force to infiltrate the Graveyard on the pathway of Japan-Korea Region. Well, the task force would be able to stay hidden the moment they entered the center point. Moreover, 19 players standing by at the Graveyard of the Japan-Korea Region was enough to wreck havoc on the players of Japan-Korea Region.

The moment Zhang Yang and Fatty Han entered the central point of the map, they quickly took out their flags that were given by the system earlier on and planted it right in the middle of the neutral Graveyard.

‘Ding! China Region is taking over the neutral Center Point. If their flag is not destroyed within 2 minutes, the neutral Center point will be secured by the China Region!’

The 10-second process of planting the flag was over. The system immediately notified every single player on the War Canyon map with a notification.

Zhang Yang let out a roar and activated his {God of War Transformation}. His also had his Phoenix pet activate its {Phoenix Transformation} while Felice activated her own {Dragonhawk Berserk}. On the other hand, Fatty Han also activated his {Vampire Transformation} and his Phoenix pet activated its {Phoenix Transformation}. By doing so, they had increased their forces from having 2 Inheritance Transformations activated to having 5 Inheritance Transformations activated. Nevertheless, the lineup

was 1 Class S and 4 Class B super powerful Inheritance Transformations!

It would take quite a toll before anyone takes down such a powerful lineup!

Other players did not have a Phoenix pet of their own, but they were not too far behind. About 40 seconds after Zhang Yang and Fatty Han planted their flags, players from other Regions were already within the visible range of Zhang Yang and Fatty Han.

"Fatty, our priority will be guarding this flag! Not killing our enemies!" Zhang Yang did not charge towards the enemies. Instead, he was levitating 2 meters high up from the ground, fluttering his wings. He stayed low above the ground so that he won't be too far from the flag.

"You still cannot trust me? I'm your brother-in-arms!"

"That's right! I can't!"

"F\*ck you! You're a bad friend, you know!"

While the two of them were teasing and laughing at each other, the first wave of the enemy assault reached them! The players charging from other 7 pathways were not of the same Region. However, they were very united in doing one thing right now, to lay waste on Zhang Yang and Fatty Han only! They did not slaughter each other, for now.

Everyone began to activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills. There was no reason to hold back anymore! The battle would only last for 2 hours. The duration of Inheritance Transformation Skills were 2 hours as well. Moreover, players who are killed will have the cooldowns of all their Skills reset upon their resurrection on the Graveyards. Therefore, everyone sent their most powerful Skills they could use at their enemies. Everyone would definitely have enough time to perform to their fullest potential with their Inheritance Transformation Skills activated!

Zhang Yang let out a battle cry and swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and charged towards an unwitting Spellcaster. With his wings spread open, he moved extremely swift. In just a blink of an eye, he already arrived before the Spellcaster was ready to strike! He thrust his sword straight at the Spellcaster, leaving no quarter for the Spellcaster to dodge. As the momentum of his sword struck the Spellcaster in his face, and he received approximately 260,000 damage.

The Rage Bar was filled up instantly. Zhang Yang struck out again with another swing of his sword upon activating his {Charge Up Strike}!

The sword swung by without hitting anything. No damage was caused upon the Spellcaster. Of course, the Spellcaster was extremely shocked, followed by a sense of joy. He thought that Zhang Yang had missed! The Spellcaster was a Pyromancer. He immediately began chanting his spell, trying to activate his {Heart of Flame}.

{God of War Heavy Axe}!

Right after the 1-second shared cooldown, Zhang Yang thrust his weapon again at the Spellcaster. With his most powerful Skill which could let him deal the most damage, he caused an immense damage to the poor guy.

‘-2,393,055!’

What the hell was that? The Spellcaster had a Class B Inheritance that could increase his Maximum HP by 20 times, but his Base HP was approximately 170,000 HP. Upon activating his Inheritance Transformation, he could boost his HP up to 3,400,000 HP. With the additional boost of his mount, he could get another boost which could provide him an additional 80,000 HP at most, leaving him with a total of approximately 3,500,000 HP.

However, Zhang Yang took out 76% of his total HP with merely two strikes! That two strikes almost got the Spellcaster into the ‘Killing Cleave’ stage! The Spellcaster was terrified of what just happened to him. He had no choice but to stop his chanting and activate his {Ice Barrier} instead. Powering himself up with a 10-second invincible effect, he managed to keep himself alive for now.

Other players in the surroundings had no way of seeing the Spellcaster’s HP bar and the damage that Zhang Yang dealt on the poor Spellcaster. They thought that the Spellcaster was just a half-baked player that did not activate his Inheritance Transformation Skill. They looked at the Spellcaster with scorn: Inheritance



Transformation Skills would require no money to activate, why would this imbecile be trying to save it then?

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and fluttered his colorful wings again. He made his way to another Berserker. That Berserker was attempting to reach the China Flag that was planted in the middle of the center point.

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang clashed into the Berserker and stunned him. With his [Sword of Purging Devourer] swinging again, he was ready to strike down his enemy. Right before the sword could reach the Berserker, Wei Yan Er arrived at the center point in her 'dark mist' form. With her {Strength Aura} kicking in at the perfect moment, Zhang Yang's Strength received a boost of 14%! Immediately, the Berserker received a damage of 290,000 damage.

{God of War Devastation}!

'860,961!'

Unfortunately, it was not a Critical Strike. There was no additional 50% damage on that strike as well. It was just normal Skill attack with additional 300% damage. That strike only managed to deal approximately 860,000 damage to Zhang Yang's target. It was 3 times weaker than the initial amount of damage Zhang Yang could have dealt.

Zhang Yang could only shake his head and sigh. In the meantime, the Berserker from Europe Region was cursing the 'f' word repeatedly in terror. Well, he also had a Class B Inheritance like the Spellcaster. Although the HP of a Berserker was a little higher than the HP of a Spellcaster, this Berserker only had approximately 4,100,000 HP. One simple strike from Zhang Yang had managed to take out 25% of his entire HP bar! One word... ouch!

He quickly reacted and began to strike back. Swinging his battle axe straight towards Zhang Yang at his full strength, he managed to land his axe on Zhang Yang's body. However, he only had a Class B Inheritance and his equipment were basically Mythical Tier. Let's give him some credit and say he has one or two pieces of Ethereal equipment on him, his Basic Attack could only reach up to 130,000 damage at its best. On the other hand, Zhang Yang already had over 43,400 Defense! That strike from his axe only caused about 60,000 damage to Zhang Yang. The HP bar of Zhang Yang did not even move a little! Well, how significant could a 60,000 damage be for a 20,000,000 HP? Insignificant!

What the hell... that is really insane!

This was a battlefield. Zhang Yang would not play some 1 VS 1 match with his opponents. He commanded Phoenix pet and Felice to join in the battle as well. The three of them pummeled the Berserker.

The poor Berserker was now in a 3-on-1 fight against 3 transformed entities! The worst part of it was that one of it was a Class S Inheritance while the firepower of the other two were as powerful as a Class B Inheritance! Truth be told, Felice and the

Phoenix pet were both as powerful as the Tier of Ethereal. They could have completely oppressed 99% of the players in the entire game in terms of 'equipment Tier'. Only a small number of players who had obtained Ethereal Tier equipment could stand against the two of them in terms of DPS.

Under the insane bombardment of the assaults from three powerful beings, the Berserker got beaten up to death within tens of seconds even though he had over 4,000,000 HP! Well, he did activate his Healing Skill. However, his Healing Skill was more of a heal-over-time effect than a huge lump sum. Hence, his HP bar was emptied out after the Healing Effect only got to tick once!

Atrocity! It was necessary to reveal the atrocious side!

Everyone in the surroundings immediately felt a chill up their spines for good!

## Chapter 672: One Trouble after Another

---

Zhang Yang single-handedly took out a player with a Class B Inheritance who already activated his Transformation Skill in merely tens of seconds! Judging by the looks of it, Zhang Yang could do the same to 90% of the players in the surroundings in a brief period of time! After all, the number of players with Class A Inheritance and Class S Inheritance was extremely low. The majority of the players who made it into the War Canyon were basically players with Class B Inheritances.

"Take out Zhan Yu first!" Players from all other Regions immediately agreed on one thing.

It was futile for Zhang Yang to hide his character information at that point. Every single top Tier player already knew that there was only one player in the entire world who could raise a shield while holding a two-handed weapon in the other hand. Furthermore, his Phoenix pet had given up his identity to whoever was in the surroundings.

Zhang Yang had no fear at all. He activated his {God of War Shield} immediately. By doing so, his Damage Immune had reached up to 40% while his Defense acquired another additional 40,000 Defense. Meanwhile, he also acquired additional 40% Resistance. Upon getting boosted up by all those effects, Zhang Yang became the very existence of a Human Weapon! There were only 6 Class S Inheritances in the entire world. Not to mention that each of those Inheritances could be obtained by only one player. Once the specific player has obtained the specific Class S Inheritance, there would not be a same second specific Class S Inheritance for others to grab. Based on its uniqueness, the power

of the Class S Inheritance was of course not a joke at all. The power level of a player with a Class S Inheritance would be significantly higher than those who wield Inheritances of lower Classes.

The full force of the China Region had caught up at the center point. Zhang Yang could finally release himself from the duty of guarding the flag. It would be a squander of talent if Zhang Yang remained alone to defend the flag. Just take a good look at his lethality!

Zhang Yang charged into the crowd of his enemies like a tiger lunging into a herd of sheep. The moment he landed among them, he unleashed every possible assault that he could do to them. A normal attack from the swing of his sword could cause at least 250,000 damage! Furthermore, Felice and Phoenix pet were not standing idle at the side. They were also supporting Zhang Yang in causing havoc to the enemy players! The assault from the three of them was so aggressive and deadly that even players with their Inheritance Transformations activated could not hold themselves up against them.

Regardless of how high Zhang Yang's Damage Immune was, he could not hold long against the bombardment of assaults from so many players at the same time. Not to mention that these players have already activated their Inheritance Transformations! Though players were not allowed to fly in the War Canyon, the players could still keep their heads low and glide across the area on their Flying Mounts. They could still float themselves in midair while launching their assaults at Zhang Yang. With appropriate formations, they could utilize the space and launched their assaults at Zhang Yang at the same time without any other players blocking them. Therefore, even though he only received approximately

20,000 to 30,000 damage in each hit he took, he would not be able to take hundreds of hits from hundreds of players at the same time and feel nothing!

It was possible for Zhang Yang to tank against so many players with their Inheritance Transformation Skills activated because he had over 20,000,000 HP. Even if someone else were to have a Defense as high as Zhang Yang's, they would only be able to last for two to three rounds of assaults from so many players at the same time before they go down dead.

Suddenly, streams of white milky light flashed across the entire body of Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang's HP was struggling to recover. Although that did not stop his HP bar from reducing any further, at least the rate of Zhang Yang losing HP was under control. His HP bar was reducing at an extremely slow rate at the moment.

The sexy body figure of Han Ying Xue appeared right behind Zhang Yang. The appearance of her face may seemed to be very normal in the game setting. However, she looked elegantly differently from her initial appearance when the holy light from the heaven chiming down on her constantly after she activates her Inheritance Transformation. Appearing elegantly and compassionately, she looked glamorous in her own fine way.

Well, that was the appearance of a Healer who has already activated her Class S {Milkmaid Deity Transformation}. Upon casting her {Milkmaid Deity's Protection} on Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang receive a boost of 20% on his Healing Efficiency. Furthermore, Han Ying Xue had upgraded her {Healing Aura} up to Level 7. The effect of the aura could now increase a 21% of Healing

Efficiency on every friendly unit within the effective range of the aura. Her Healing Capability was already impressive enough as it was. With the support of her Skills, her Healing Capability had just been powered up even further now!

Zhang Yang was acting very carefully to avoid Warriors as he was slaughtering his way across his enemy crowd. He had never been touched by any {Destructive Smashes} up to this point. Without the effect of the {Destructive Smash} in the way, Han Ying Xue managed to heal him at full capacity. Zhang Yang had his own radiating wings. He could move and fly around freely, giving no quarter to his foes. Moreover, he also had a sharp awareness of his surroundings. Not to mention that he had his 'Supporting Attack' trained to the grade of Master now. Whatever he was doing right now, it was like a walk in the park for him.

Under the crazy bombardment of assaults from the enemies for almost a minute, Zhang Yang Maximum HP had dropped from 20,000,000 HP down to 9,000,000 HP. Though it seemed that the circumstances showed a possibility that Zhang Yang could be killed, every Inheritance would definitely have life-saving Skills of their own. Normally, Class S Inheritance could allow the player who wields it recover a few full bars of HP! So, what good would it bring for others to be able to take out one bar of Zhang Yang's HP then?

Players who made it in here were all professional players after all. Even though they were making a grave mistake at first by focusing their assaults on Zhang Yang, some of them eventually realized that they would have to take out Han Ying Xue first before they could take out Zhang Yang. So they were beginning to shout at each other, "Hit that Priest! Hit her first while some of you go get

the flag!"

When the number of players are this abundant, it would be natural to see AoE attacks raining across the battlefield.

On the other hand, however, although the players from other 7 Regions were on the same page to focus their assaults on the China Region, the system would not allow different Regions to form Alliance among themselves. Therefore, the impacts of all AoE attacks would hit any player regardless of the Regions they were from, as long as they were not on the same Region as players who activated the AoE Skills.

Any super AoE skill that becomes available when the Transformation of an Inheritance is activated, would cover a radius of 30 meters, 40 meters, sometimes even 50 meters. Those super AoE skills would always cover extremely vast areas. Every single activation of such Skill would definitely hurt their 'allies' from all other Regions. Such a situation had caused the players from 7 other Regions to feel depressed about it. If they decide not to use their AoE skills, they would lose out on opportunities of dealing tremendous damage to their enemies. On the contrary, if they decided to use their AoE Skills, they would be dealing damage to players from other Regions as well. It would also be like aiding the China Region in dealing damage to their newly formed 'alliance'. So now everyone, except the players from China Region was caught up in the knot of whether they should use their AoE Skills or not.

On the other hand, the situation did not affect the players from China Region at all. For them, all other 7 Regions were their foes.



They would need as much AoE Skills as possible for them to deal immense damage to all of their enemies. Therefore, the more clumped up their enemies were, the more suitable it was for them to activate their AoE attacks. They could really spread as much hell as they could unto their enemies!

Even though Han Ying Xue became the primary target of the enemies, she was a Ranged Combatant. As she could heal the others and support her own people from a distance, Han Ying Xue hid among the crowd of the players from China Region. In other words, she was well protected by her own people. Meanwhile, the Melee Combatants from other 7 Regions were not daring enough to charge and attempt to bring her down. After all, they did not possess insanely high Defense like Zhang Yang did. They would be wasted right away if they try to squeeze themselves into the crowd of the China Region players, trying to make their way to Han Ying Xue. Hence, they could only launch their assaults on Han Ying Xue by launching their ranged attacks.

Because of that, their tactic created a significant flaw for all of them. None of them would be able to cast {Destructive Smash} on Han Ying Xue. Because of that, none of them could restrict the powerful Healing Capability of Han Ying Xue.

Although Han Ying Xue did not have super high Defense or super high Damage Immunity, she still made it through the difficult times that lay upon her with the help of Mountain Mover's wise strategies! Mountain Mover allocated 3 Guardians to stay by her side. Whenever she got in danger, the Guardians would take their turns to activate their {Sacrifice} on her, followed by their {Vanguard's Aggression} to help Han Ying Xue get through her difficult times.

Moreover, she also had [Banshee's Howl]. Upon activating that accessory, everyone who launched an attack on her would be afflicted with Terror Effects and they would run around without having control over their own body for a period of time.

Two minutes had passed without anyone's knowledge. The system notification came in with the news that the neutral center point had been secured by China Region. The 16 Magic Cannons immediately let loose their cannonballs at the enemy units, showing no mercy at all!

"Hundred Shots, Hannibal, Jurassic Lover, Martin and West Snow! Remember the plan! Stick to the plan! Guard the flag no matter what, and let no one touch the flag! The others, head to the blasting range of the Magic Cannons and begin your slaughtering! Show no mercy!" Mountain Mover gave the command to charge.

"Forget about Zhan Yu and that Priest! Nothing good comes from killing them now! They've already taken down the neutral Graveyard. Killing them would only help them more than harming them now! Focus on the ones with lower HP now! The condition of winning the war is not taking down the neutral point but killing as many enemies as possible! Kill as much as you can, you idiots!"

It seemed that there was at least one commander-like player from each Region was screaming in the battlefield. Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue could feel that the boulders on their shoulders suddenly lifted the moment when they realized that they were no longer the main targets of their enemies. Scattered attacks such as arrows and fireballs would sometimes come at them from here and there,

though they were not frequent at all.

The Magic Cannons were extremely powerful. However, they were not as powerful as the strength of approximately 700 players combined together. In just a brief moment, the death count for players from other Regions hit the number of 84 while the death count for China Region had reached 197!

Judging from the statistics, China Region was suffering a tremendous loss which shamed them pretty deeply. However, first of all, players who die during the battle would not receive any form of punishment. They would not lose any Experience Points nor drop any equipment upon their deaths. Even the durability of their equipment would not drop. Whoever who dies during the battle would be automatically resurrected by the Graveyard once every 30 seconds. Their stats would all be replenished while the cooldown of all their Skills would be reset. They would rejoin the battle in their best forms.

Second of all, the headcount of 80 deaths on the 7 Regions' side was counted as the score of China Region --- the other 4 got killed because they got caught up in the middle of the powerful bombardment of AoE attacks activated by players that were not from China Region. On the other hand, the headcounts of 197 deaths of the China Region would be divided down by 7 because there were 7 Regions. That being said, each Region only scored approximately 20 headcounts, on average. From that sense, the score of China Region was still much higher than the scores of the other Regions.

Moreover, Sun Xin Yu and her 'Stealthy Strike Force' had begun

their killing spree at the Graveyard of the Japan-Korea Region. 19 Thieves forming a chain of consecutive Status Restriction Effect so the players could torture any player slowly to their deaths with ease!

"This is really fun! I'm so contented!" Wei Yan Er's face was filled with joy and content. She continued to wield her battle axe as she charged into the enemy crowd slashing up people like an intimidating general on the battlefield. Her Class A Darkness Inheritance provided her quite some immunity against Physical Damage and Shadow Damage. Although she was not as tough as Zhang Yang, at least her HP was abundant enough to keep her alive for a long time.

On the other hand, the Attack of the little brat was almost as strong as the Attack of Zhang Yang --- of course, it would only be similar if her Attack is compared only to Zhang Yang's individual Attack. If the Attack of his Phoenix pet and Felice are included, the total Attack of the three combined would be so powerful that no one in the game could match their standard just yet. Even Sun Xin Yu would have to admit defeat in such regard!

As Wei Yan Er's performance was atrociously outstanding, of course she would become the next main target of their enemies. Everyone was focusing their attacks on her.

However, she did not have a tough Defense like Zhang Yang did. Furthermore, she did not put any effort in avoiding the Warriors on the enemy side at all. By carrying the effect of {Destructive Smash} which reduced her healing efficiency, even Han Ying Xue could not maintain her HP bar. The little brat was taken out after

going wild for a brief moment.

Upon her resurrection, the little brat was infuriated. She once again swung her battle axe around like an insane lady and charged straight back into the fight. The agitated face of hers got 'amplified'!

For 99% players in the game, they battled in order to win. They battle in order to acquire the First Clear of a dungeon. However, the situation was different for Wei Yan Er. She only strove to get the drive and rush that she could get from killing players and monsters in the game. Those were the things that cannot be acquired in the real life.

Taking advantage of the Graveyard at the central point, Zhang Yang and his fellow China players barely secured the center point. However, it did not mean that they were so powerful that they could carry out a 1 VS 7 battle. They managed to do it because the other 7 Regions were lacking communication and mutual understanding. They only killed for their own Regions by the end of it. When most of them died and they were required to start all over again, their pace of launching their attacks at the China Region was out of sync.

Small waves could not possibly punch down a large dam. However, if the small waves were combined into a huge tidal wave, would it be able to destroy the dam then?

The current situation for the 7 other Regions was similar to the metaphor described. The players were battling only for their own Regions. Instead of pressuring Zhang Yang and his fellow China

players, they actually gave them plenty of room and opportunity to breathe and kill players to increase their score. Well, the situation was unavoidable, anyway. The only way for players from different Regions to communicate with each other is to shout as loudly as they could at each other. There was no other way for them to communicate from a far distance. Meanwhile, who would stop and listen to other people's shouting when the heat of the battle only got worse in every passing moment?

100, 200, 300!

The number of kills the China Region scored was increasing rapidly. On the other hand, the number of kills the 7 other Regions could get was not that great. The strongest, Europe Region only managed to score 145 kills while the weakest of all, the Japan-Korea Region scored as low as 23 kills. The main reason was because the number of players from the Japan-Korea Region had been reduced by one third the moment they were spawned at their Graveyard. Some of them already got killed even before they could get their chance to activate their Inheritance Transformation!

## Chapter 673: A Bottled Up Battle

---

Sun Xin Yu and her 'Stealthy Strike Force' was rather crafty. When the number of Japan-Korea players that got resurrected was too great, they immediately went into Stealth Mode and fled the scene. They only needed to activate their {Vanish} to get away for the worst-case scenario. On the contrary, if the number of Japan-Korea players was small, then the Graveyard would become their 'Slaughtering Feast'!

Many of them were only able to open their eyes after they were resurrected before they are killed again. Those poor souls would have to repeatedly wait for the 30-second countdown to end before they could get resurrected by the Graveyard again.

Players from Japan-Korea Region hated the 'Stealthy Strike Force' to the point that they could tighten their teeth so hard that their teeth might fall off eventually. Despite that, they were also inspired by it. They also sent a small 'Stealthy Strike Force' over to the China Region's Graveyard! What a bunch of smarty-pants! However, what they tried to do was pointless. The China Region's Graveyard was basically abandoned at the moment. It was a futile act to go all the way there, trying to set up an ambush. In the meantime, the neutral Graveyard by the center point was too near to the chaotic battle that was occurring at the moment. Furthermore, it was within the blast range of the Magic Cannons! So, the notion of going over there to set up an ambush would be suicidal!

Without having any other resolution for it, the Japan-Korea players were forced to put their worst enemy aside. Instead, they sent their 'Stealthy Strike Force' into the Graveyard of the

Australia Region to set up their ambush. Currently, the Australia Region was ranked at the second last in their kill counts. Well, stealthy assassinating was far more efficient than they had expected it to be. In just tens of minutes, the kill counts of the Japan-Korea Region had actually exceeded the kill counts of the Australia Region! They managed to prevent themselves from becoming the last in place...

"Zhan Yu!" Suddenly, Zhang Yang heard a squeamish voice calling out to him, followed by an arrow hitting straight on his chest. He instantly received a damage of '-468,802!' without any sign of warning! That was also the most painful hit Zhang Yang had ever received throughout the entire battle up to this point.

His eyes were frozen for a moment before he turned his attention towards the direction where the arrow came from --- it was a beautiful lady elf with mesmerizing features, it was Hourglass Figure!

Indeed, only another player with Class S Inheritance like herself could deal such immense damage to Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang did not 'entertain' her. He continued to pick on players with only Class B Inheritances with the intention of wrecking them up. After all, they were here not to compete against each other to see who was the bravest or strongest of all. They were here because they had a war to win, a war that would affect the future of the entire Region! Therefore, killing more players was the only important thing throughout the entire war. There was no other way of winning the war!



Being one of the most significant players in the entire China Region, Zhang Yang had to make sure that he does his part in setting an example for the others to follow. If he ignores the arrangement of Mountain Mover and goes on to do whatever he liked, would the others still be listening to the commander then?

Seeing that Zhang Yang took no notice of her, Hourglass Figure was infuriated. She humphed with her soft voice and continued to shoot arrows at Zhang Yang. Well, her attacks did bring quite a handful of problems to Zhang Yang, especially her {Concussive Shot} and {Breaking Shot} which had the annoying Status Restriction Effects. Those Skills did some great job in holding Zhang Yang off from going about with his killing spree. It held him back to the point that he no longer looked intimidating! That was really some achievement over there! After all, Zhang Yang's {Warrior's Will} could only be activated once per minute.

"You really are persistent!" Just when Zhang Yang was having a headache trying to battle against Hourglass Figure, Seductive Wild Pussy suddenly appeared out of nowhere and joined into the battle as well! The two of them joined forces together to take Zhang Yang on. Now that the two Top Tier players in the entire world had joined forces to spam their Status Restriction Skills on Zhang Yang, they were able to distract him, even though they could not kill him. Well, one of the reasons they could not kill Zhang Yang was that Han Ying Xue was supporting Zhang Yang with her super healing capability.

Without the most powerful 'cannon' supporting the China Region, the firepower of China was reduced steeply. After all, one of the China players with Class S Inheritance was busy reaping souls at the Japan-Korea Region's Graveyard while the

other China player with Class S Inheritance was a Healer who could not do much of a damage in a battle. Therefore, the China Region only had players with Class A Inheritance such as Wei Yan Er, Daffodil Daydream and Snow Seeker to contribute to the number of China's kill counts.

Obviously, there was no one else who could replace Zhang Yang!

First of all, Zhang Yang's focus attack was so powerful that they did not seem to be humanly possible! Secondly, he was good in both Offense and Defense! He could just charge into the formation of the enemy and destroy their Defensive line like a monster tearing up a piece of paper! Now that Zhang Yang was completely occupied with two strong and dangerous ladies at the moment, the death rate of China Region had increased tremendously. Without Zhang Yang charging at the front, the formation of the China Region began to scatter. Even the 30-second cooldown of the resurrection period at the Graveyard could not keep up with the death rate of the players from China Region!

"Damn it!"

Zhang Yang cursed and raced straight towards Seductive Wild Pussy. If he doesn't take out one of these ladies first, he would eventually be locked dead in the corner!

"Darling --- are you finally thinking about f\*cking me? But you look fierce and terrifying now! I'm a little scared!" Seductive Wild Pussy had not changed her habit yet. She still attempted to tease Zhang Yang with her dirty words while giggling all the way throughout the battle. Her hands remained busy, firing arrows at

the same pace.

Zhang Yang had encountered her several times in the Individual Ranking Competitions. So he had a glimpse of understanding towards her Inheritance. This woman acquired a Class A Inheritance called the 'Arachnid Inheritance'. Other than the trap Skill that she initially has when she signed up as a Hunter, she could also litter her webs anywhere she went. More annoyingly, those sticky webs could slow down a player's movement speed upon touching them!

Speaking of Attack power, the power-up that the Class A Arachnid Inheritance could offer would definitely not as good as the power-up that the Class S Shadow Striker Inheritance could offer to a player. However, the Arachnid Inheritance could offer much more Status Restriction capabilities than the Shadow Striker Inheritance could ever offer! In other words, a Class S Inheritance might sometimes not be as good as a Class A Inheritance. A Class S Inheritance could provide an overall power up on a player, where the player would get a tremendous boost on both Offense and Defense. On the other hand, a Class A Inheritance could only provide a support more suited for Player vs Player matches.

So did she really believe that Zhang Yang was a mud figure who does not know how to get angry?

"Little Wild Pussy, you're running around so far away from me. How am I going to show you my love!" Zhang Yang laughed gently and activated his {Lure}. Instantly, that wild little pussy was pulled straight over to Zhang Yang's side!

Initially, Seductive Wild Pussy wanted to tease Zhang Yang with a few more of her foul words. She had never thought possible that she would be pulled over to Zhang Yang's side all of a sudden! Her reflexes were extremely fast as well. Just when she was attempting to leap away from Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang smacked her head with his {Brutal Smash} and stunned her for 4 seconds.

She knew that she could not afford to let Zhang Yang unleash his damage unto her. Well, the Attack power of that insanely powerful being could no longer be deemed as a being on earth. Hence, Seductive Wild Pussy activated her accessory to become invincible over a brief period of time without any hesitation. Then she threw an {Frost Trap} right beside herself. Would Zhang Yang be avoiding this? Or would he step onto it straight away?

If Zhang Yang decides to dodge, she could take advantage of that one brief moment to get away from Zhang Yang. By doing so, she could shake Zhang Yang off her tail.

At the same time, Hourglass Figure was also launching her attacks at Zhang Yang as aggressively as she could. Unfortunately, her Status Restriction Skills also had cooldown periods. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang had been waiting for that moment ever since they began battling each other!

Zhang Yang had made up his mind to gut up and send the little wild pussy to the Graveyard. He went around the {Frost Trap} and continued to stick himself on the back of Seductive Wild Pussy.

As he was going around the {Frost Trap}, Seductive Wild Pussy was given a brief moment to pull herself away from him. Without

wasting any of the precious time the god had provided her, she quickly ran towards the opposite direction from Zhang Yang. However, she could not do a {Leap Shot} because she could not pull herself 3 meters away from Zhang Yang, yet!

Zhang Yang flapped his wings and pursued on. The greatness of a Class S Inheritance player was instantly exhibited to whoever that was watching the battle in their surroundings. His speed was so fast that Seductive Wild Pussy could not even react to it. His speed had also exceeded the speed of a Hunter and even a Thief! Those two Classes were deemed to be two of the fastest Classes in the entire game!

8 seconds of invincibility was over in just a blink of an eye. Upon seeing the golden light on Seductive Wild Pussy vanishing, Zhang Yang swung his sword straight towards her. However, the blade missed her and went through the air --- {Charge Up Strike}!

Seductive Wild Pussy froze for a brief moment before she began to regain control of her body. It was extremely rare to see a top Tier player miss an attack. Furthermore, Zhang Yang was the top of the top sort of players in the entire game! She could feel that something was extremely off. So, she immediately activated her {Leap} and flipped 10 meters away from Zhang Yang.

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang did not give any quarter to Seductive Wild Pussy as he had already reacted to the situation. He clashed into the wild pussy hard. Followed closely with a swing of his [Sword of Purging Devourer], he gave the wild pussy a normal slash and a powerful

{God of War Devastation}.

‘-278,320!’

‘-2,393,073!’

Poor little Seductive Wild Pussy. Even though she had over 9,000,000 HP, she still lost approximately 30% of her total HP after taking two solid hits from Zhang Yang. She freaked out after seeing the damage values she received! Fortunately for her, she had Healers backing her up. They quickly attempted to heal her up with their best Healing Skills they had. However, Zhang Yang had afflicted her with the 75% reduction of Healing Efficiency with his {Destructive Smash} earlier on. Hence, she could not heal efficiently at all!

Felice and the Phoenix pet had approached Seductive Wild Pussy at a most opportune time. They joined up with Zhang Yang to lay waste on the wild pussy. That moment was the moment Seductive Wild Pussy realized that Zhang Yang had made a firm decision to kill her.

The three of them were not joking around as they were attacking their target at the same time. The damage that the three of them could deal to their target was substantial! Furthermore, the 75% reduction of the Healing Efficiency of Seductive Wild Pussy had put her HP recovery to work rather poorly. Because of that, the rate of her HP recovery could no longer catch up with the rate of her losing her HP. She activated all of her ultimate Skills and life-saving Skills. She even transformed herself into a giant female arachnid and drained Zhang Yang’s blood to recover her HP.

However, everything that she did was futile. She was no longer in control of her own fate!

With the three of them transformed, no one would stand a chance to best the combined force of Zhang Yang, Felice and Phoenix pet in any 1 VS 1 battle!

Other than that, Seductive Wild Pussy did not have any space or chance to escape because she was closely surrounded by Zhang Yang , Felice and the Phoenix pet. She was pinned down like a helpless doll.

{God of War Battle Axe}! {Horizontal Sweep}! {Frost Strike}!

Zhang Yang consecutively activated all his deadly Skills and sunk the HP level of Seductive Wild Pussy down to 20%, forcing her to enter the most dangerous 'Killing Cleave' state.

"Big brother Zhan Yu! How can you be so cruel to me!" The little pussy revealed a pitiful expression, trying to soften Zhang Yang up.

"Save it and get going! The Graveyard is waiting for you!" Zhang Yang was not swayed by her pitiful appearance at all. He activated his {Indiscriminate} followed closely by his {Killing Cleave}!

‘-2,441,298!’

"Argh!" Seductive Wild Pussy let out a miserable cry while her remaining 20% HP was taken away by Zhang Yang's 1 hit!

After he was done with that little pussy, Zhang Yang fixed his eyes upon Hourglass Figure all of a sudden. That Indian girl felt a chill up her spine the moment she realize Zhang Yang had diverted his attention towards her. She quickly kept her fear in check and continued with her role in restricting Zhang Yang's movement. Because the other 7 Regions had obtained an absolute advantage over the China Region, they managed to suppress the defensive line of China Region down to the neutral Graveyard!

When they could finally breach the defensive line of China and set foot onto the ground of the neutral Graveyard, it would become much easier for them to remove the China's flag and rid the control of China off the neutral center point! By then, there would be another chaotic battle among the Regions to reclaim control over the center point again.

No one could afford to have Zhang Yang step in to ruin their efforts at that crucial moment. After all, that crazy son of the b\*tch could ruin any favorable circumstance for anyone with his oppressive firepower! Zhang Yang was more than just intimidating by just standing there. His very existence was purely frightening! So far, not many had seen him battling at his full power just yet!

It had been more than 20 minutes since the battle began. The battle had hit it's hottest point that it was currently. The defensive line of China was on the brink of being breached. It would only be a matter of time before the defensive line falls. Everyone went on securing the center point, knowing that would happen eventually. However, the main point was, how long could they hold on to the center point while scoring as many kill counts as they could for their own Region?



On the other hand, the other 7 Region had suffered quite significant losses in order to take down the defensive line of China Region. Players from China Region got the opportunity to blast their enemies with the defensive facilities. By doing so, their kill count was increasing so rapidly that it kept them on top of other Regions!

Although Zhang Yang had taken care of the little pussy problem, he was still under the suppression of Hourglass Figure. He only managed to work under 50% of his initial efficiency in supporting his fellow China players. He could no longer stand firm as a rock in mid-stream for the moment. Finally, 25 minutes had passed. The China flag had been removed from the middle of the center point. With their flag gone, China no longer had control over the center point. Every single one of the Magic Cannons was no longer under the control of the China Region as well. Any China players who died afterward were resurrected at their regional Graveyard. They would have to run over a long distance before they could engage back in the battle.

However, the moment when the center point had no ownership once again, the 7 other Regions who once joined forces to take on the China Region turned against each other immediately! It was a battle of chaos! Everyone was attempting to plant their Region's flag right in the middle of the center point --- whichever Region that got to secure the center point would become the public enemy number of the other Regions. However, the priority would be killing as many players as possible. The China Region had proved that securing the center point could really boost their kill counts!

Under the command of Mountain Mover, everyone from the

China Region did not rush into the chaotic area of the battle to attempt planting their China flag. Instead, they took advantage of the chaotic situation. They went on to pick on those players who were on the brink of death and ended them to increase China Region's kill counts. If the situation gets even messier, it would definitely give China Region an advantage. It would be even better if there aren't any Regions securing the center point. With the current advantage they had over the others, they could easily claim victory over the war!

The fact that Zhang Yang and his fellow China players no longer required to defend their flag meant that they could finally focus fully on launching their attacks onto their enemies with nothing to worry about. All they needed to do is to attack whoever that was holding the center point, regardless of their Region. No one should be able to secure the center point! No one!

# Chapter 674: Strike Back on the Japan-Korea Region

---

Speaking of tactics, the China Region was undoubtedly the most successful among them all. It only took approximately half an hour for them to collect a large amount of kill count to gain an advantageous head start over the others. As long as they maintain their pace until the battle ends, they should be the one claiming victory over the war.

As mentioned previously, taking control over the center point was merely one of many ways of attaining victory over the war. It was not necessary to take down the central point in order for the Region to win. However, everyone was blinded by the killing and slaughtering right before their eyes, that they lost track of the main objective. They were so eager to take control over the center point, that they lost track of everything. Even though there were a few who were clear-minded enough to stop and inform the rest by shouting and screaming, no one seemed to care about it at all.

Just kill them! Just slaughter them all!

Players of China Region no longer went to compete with the others at planting their flags on the center point. They were no longer the public enemies who had to take all attacks from all directions. The battle situation was a total chaos for the other 7 Regions in the middle of the center point. Everyone was killing each other in such a frenzy just to plant their flags in the middle of the place to claim control. Those who die had to run all the way back from their regional Graveyard to the center point just to get back into the battle. They were suffering major losses in their

numbers as the battle progressed on.

Zhang Yang and his fellow China players continued to increase their kill counts at a constant rate keeping themselves ahead of the other Regions. At the central point, they also had more players remaining in the center of the battle. They managed to retain approximately 40 players at the center point over time. Meanwhile, the other Regions could only retain approximately 20 players of their own from time to time. The other players were seen running down the pathways.

There were still 19 Thieves lurking in the shadows by the Japan-Korea Region's Graveyard. If they were included in the headcount, the China Region should have an even greater advantage over the other Regions in terms of numbers.

The fierce battle continued on. There was nothing to lose in death. Instead, players who died would get all their Skills reset back. Hence, everyone had nothing to worry about at all. They could just go all out without any need of holding back. They would just spam any ultimate Skills they had. If they die without doing that, they would have died for nothing.

Zhang Yang took advantage of such battle with his AoE attacks. His AoE Skills could reach out within a radius of 50 meters. He could easily take people's heads off from afar. Basically, he was far sharper and more efficient than most of the Hunters and the Spellcasters. Compared to the range that his assaults could reach, the AoE attacks of Class A Inheritance could only reach 40-meter radius out. The AoE attacks of a Class B Inheritance could only reach out to 30-meter radius while AoE attacks of a Class C

Inheritance could only reach out to a 20-meter radius. How about Class D Inheritances then? Well, Class D Inheritances had no Transformation Skills for them to amplify their power levels.

Of course, Hourglass Figure was also one of the best 'head collectors' in the war. After all, she had a Class S Inheritance. Her AoE attacks could reach out to as far as 50-meters. Furthermore, she is a Hunter, well-versed and a veteran at fighting from afar. Her ranged attacks had reached up to 40 meters thanks to her Inheritance. She could actually kill more players with extremely low HP, faster than Zhang Yang could!

Now, they were all competing to see which Region could score the highest kill counts, not the amount of damage they could deal. Therefore, the kill count that Hourglass Figure scored slowly caught up to Zhang Yang's progress, even though his Attack power was number 1 in the entire game. Fortunately, Zhang Yang had Phoenix pet and Felice to back his firepower up. With the two of them spitting fire across his enemies, Zhang Yang still managed to stay number two on the Kill Count Ranking list.

--- the first on the ranking list was Sun Xin Yu! She was born a Thief. Hence, she was earning kill counts as easily as breathing!

However, individual efforts would not change the outcome of the strategy. Players of China Region followed the tactics that were initially laid out by Mountain Mover. No one took out the China flags. No one even attempted planting their flags on the center point. They were just sniping and picking off players from other Regions. By doing so, not only could they increase the kill counts for their own Region, they could also reduce the rate of casualties

of their Region.

They could only deal more damage efficiently if they stay alive all the time. The same theory applied to their current situation. They could only kill more players if they keep themselves alive all the while.

However, 60 minutes into the battle, the situation of the battle suddenly changed. One of the China player suddenly went up and planted a China flag right in the middle of the center point. Instantly, Zhang Yang and his fellow China players once again became the primary targets of all other Regions. Other than Zhang Yang and his gang, a large number of players instantly being sent back to their regional Graveyard.

Meanwhile, that player who planted the flag was one of those arrogant, yet idiotic players who thought they were the best. Although he overheard complaints and cursing upon him, he acted like he did not care about them at all. He did not even realize that he did something wrong there. He also attempted to debate with the others, saying that taking down the center point was the only key to winning the war because they could have used the Magic Cannons to boost their kill count number up! His filled his face with disdain while thinking ‘You bunch of idiots, can’t you see that that’s the only way?’ sort of idea.

The China Region had put themselves way ahead of the other Regions by getting a very high kill count for themselves initially. As long as they take control of the neutral center point and let no one else take over it, then their victory should become certain! However, the kill count of China Region had not been increasing

significantly after that idiot planted the flag. Ever since the China Region was almost wiped out earlier on in the battle, they had not been able to progress smoothly. On the other side of things, other Regions, especially Europe were increasing their kill counts rapidly. They took that opportunity that the idiotic China guy provided them to catch up.

As expected! It's true when they say that a tough rival beats you; a piggish teammate f\*ck you in the \*ss!

It would still be alright if that idiotic son of the b\*tch did only once. It would still not be able to shake the fact that the China Region was ahead of everyone on the Kill Count Ranking list. However, things would become different for them if there are more of those idiotic people. They might be the key to crippling every effort that Zhang Yang and his fellow China Players had produced all the while, throughout the war! What concerned Zhang Yang and the others, even more, was that son of the b\*tch did not even reflect on his own mistake made! If he gets another chance, he might just repeat the same mistake all over again!

The worse part of this was there were more than just one like of him!

The most hateful thing in the entire world of gaming were these sorts of people who always feel that they are much more superior than the others. They would always believe that they were the correct ones. They would never listen to others and do whatever they wanted. This was a real live example of one rotten spoils the whole barrel! Furthermore, there were more than just one rotten one!

"When a China man is alone, he could perform like a dragon! But when a bunch of China fellows are together in a team, they will only perform like a bunch of lazy worms! These are the kind of people that would cause the entire team to lose!" Lost Dream sighed in anger.

"If Brother Fatty finds him in real life, his \*ss would be prodded over a thousand times!"

Nothing much could be done to these idiotic people who will never listen to anybody. Zhang Yang could only request the Healers to stop healing them. Let them rot fast and resurrect fast, then let the cycle go on! At least they would not be able to accomplish anything if they die a quick death! The China Region would be better off without them around.

Everyone raced towards the front line and continued on with the battle. While everyone was working their \*sses off trying to earn as many kill count as possible, the Europe Region and the North America Region actually joined forces. The system would not recognize their 'Alliance'. Their AoE attacks would still spread across anyone who was within the effective range of the attacks. However, these two Regions no longer battled against each other. When the Europe Region planted their flag in the middle of the neutral center point of the map, the North America Region did not try to destroy their flag. Instead, they were aiding them in guarding their flag!

The two Regions were very powerful, to begin with. Upon joining their forces into one, they managed to defend Europe's flag for 2



minutes!

Instantly, the neutral center point fell into the hands of the Europe Region. Their firepower became tremendously insane. Not only did they gain support from the Magic Cannons, they were also able to substitute the number of players who died on the battlefield much faster than they could anticipate!

Zhang Yang had to guess that the Europe Region had laid out the conditions with the North America Region for helping them. They must have agreed to certain terms such as the two Regions taking turns of taking control of the neutral point for 30 minutes. They were willing to put aside their pride just to squeeze China Region down from being number one on the ranking! And now, other Regions would stand a fair chance to work for number one and number two!

Taking part in a battle royale was basically like playing a game of chess.

Unfortunately, China Region had taken over the neutral center point for over 30 minutes in the early game. So they would not be worried even if the center point was taken over by other Regions. They became concerned because of that idiotic son of the b\*tch who went in and planted the China flag previously. That had really delivered a blow into the face of China Region, because they had lost quite a lot of numbers back there, thanks to that moron. It was now possible that the Europe Region might be able to catch up with the China Region now!

Well, shit happens. No point lingering over it for so long. It

would be dumb to actually start a war among themselves, right?

Upon gaining control over the neutral center point, the Europe Region had naturally become the public enemy number one of all Regions, except the North America Region. After all, they made a deal under the table with each another. The two main Regions joined hands in defending the flag on the center point. With the advantages of having Magic Cannons at their disposal and having a Graveyard extremely close to the center of the battlefield, the Europe Region managed to increase their kill counts rapidly.

It was a totally different situation where 1 Region had to defend themselves against other 7 Regions. It became 2 Regions versus 6 other Regions which was equal to 1 versus 3. The pressure on them had been reduced by god-knows how many times! Since Europe Region had managed to stabilize their control over the center point, they began to focus on killing as many players as they could.

Without any hesitation at all, Zhang Yang made a crucial decision. He said, "Everyone, charge over to the Japan-Korea Region's pathway!"

Killing anyone could contribute to the kill count of their own Regions as long as the players they kill are not of their own Region. If 6 Regions could combine their forces in taking on the Europe Region and the North America Region, they might be usurped.

However, the Japan-Korea Region would never cooperate with China Region. Never! Well, after every humiliation that Zhang Yang did to them, it would need more than just a miracle for them to join forces with China. Without the chance of them working as

one, charging towards the center point would only be giving free kill counts to the Europe Region!

Since that is the case, why not put their focus on slaughtering the Japan Korea Region instead? After all, they were one of the main reasons why it was impossible for the other 6 Regions to join forces in the first place! By doing so, they could also stem the flow of forces charging at the Europe Region and reduce the kill counts that the Europe Region could score. Though it would reduce even more pressure on the Europe Region, Europe Region would not be able to collect as many kill counts as they initially can!

Zhang Yang took the lead and charged straight towards the base of the Japan-Korea Region. Upon charging forward for a brief moment, he could see a bunch of Japan-Korea players, approximately 30 players, heading towards the center point. ---their number were that low because Sun Xin Yu and her Stealthy Strike Force were doing a hell of a job. They could not even step out of their own Graveyard before they die again! Zhang Yang let out a battle cry and flapped his wings. He charged towards the enemy base like a flying general.

{Charge Up Strike}!

Zhang Yang engaged in battle with those Japan-Korea players. They were already rounding up on Zhang Yang. They planned to instantly kill Zhang Yang while the Healers from his rear were still too far away from Zhang Yang to provide any support. Well, their hatred for Zhang Yang boiled the moment they saw his face. Everyone was dreaming off becoming the person who 'slays' Zhang Yang. They even came up with a title called 'The Slayer of Zhan

Yu'. Whoever who does that would definitely be sculptured and praised as the hero or idol of Japan-Korea Region!

{God of War Devastation}!

Zhang Yang had over 100 EP at the moment. Instantly, 37 strikes flurried out and caused a basic damage of approximately 2,600,000 damage to those players!

That was insane! What the f\*ck!

Combining the attack of {Charge Up Strike} with {God of War Devastation} could allow Zhang Yang to deal up to 101 hits with an amount of damage that was 9 times higher than his initial normal attack! Furthermore, that was not the end yet. The special effect of Zhang Yang's [Sword of Purging Devourer] was triggered, causing another wave of approximately 2,600,000 Basic Damage to the players of Japan-Korea once more!

"Argh! Argh! Argh!"

The total amount of damage dealt to them exceeded 5,200,000 damage! Even players with Class B Inheritance would be instantly killed by the two strikes if they were not well-equipped! As Zhang Yang's sword flashed across the battlefield, the Japan-Korea players screamed in misery. More than 10 of them were instantly killed!

Zhang Yang could instantly kill players who have already

activated their Inheritance Transformations? What the hell was that?

The Japan-Korea players were staring at Zhang Yang as if they just saw a monster. Even Han Ying Xue, Snow Seeker and his other fellow China players were so badly shocked as if they had just seen a ghost! What the hell! That was just purely terrifying!

Zhang Yang was a player from another dimension! He was just too powerful!

Although more than half of them had survived the two strikes, their HP bars were now extremely low. Just as they were attempting to fall back, the China forces had arrived at the front line. They easily took out the remaining players and sent them all back to their Graveyard!

Push on!

Even though the pathway was long, it only took them about 5 minutes to clash into another two batches of Japan-Korea players. The Japan-Korea players had stopped charging forward. They were waiting for everyone to get resurrected at the Graveyard first before making any move. They have decided to go head-on with Zhang Yang and his fellow China players!

After all, their regional Graveyard was extremely close to them. They could rely on that to cover up their forces. They would not need to worry that they would run out of men to fight against the China Region.

However, it did not matter which Region claims victory over the other. The most important thing would still be the kill counts that each Region gets.

Well, Zhang Yang and his gang were here to kill, after all!

When Zhang Yang and the China forces pushed the Japan-Korea players back to their Graveyard, Sun Xin Yu and her Stealthy Strike Force no longer need to stay in the shadows. They revealed themselves and joined the great battle.

Zhang Yang, Endless Starlight, One Sword Stroke, Sword of Light and the other Tankers held their shields up, tanking against their enemy on the front line. They were driving through the Japan-Korea players' defense line back, like a huge powerful tidal wave. The two sides met and the battle devolved into an all-out melee.

# Chapter 675: The True Pushing Technique

---

Mountain Mover did not join the battle. He remained on a Flying Mount. He was levitating 3 meters above from the ground while observing the situation of the battle and giving commands to the other players.

In any 1 VS 1 match, the important thing was a player's strength and skills. In any 2 VS 2 match, collaboration becomes crucial and important if you wanted to win the match. When the number of players in a match reaches a certain height, collaboration would become so significant that strengths, equipment no longer matter much.

In terms of Strength, Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er and his other gang were way much more powerful than the players from Japan-Korea Region. For instance, the standard of the Japan-Korea players' equipment were the worst among all thanks to the China Region. They had been cornered and bullied by Zhang Yang while the others had snatched the good equipment out there. They only left the weak and lousy equipment for the Japan-Korea players to salvage. How about collaboration?

Under the command of Mountain Mover, the 100 China players were collaborating in a perfect sense that they were able to outdo the effect of 1 plus 1 equals to two. The complex combination of tactics and collaboration that the China players were implementing left the Japan-Korea players confused. They did not even know how to react to the situation. They did not even know where to start!

The Japan-Korea players would need to send out 10 players on their side just to kill one China Region player. Even though they had the advantage of having their Graveyard close to them, it did not seem to be enough for them to hold themselves up against Zhang Yang and his fellow China players. They were basically being cornered up and slaughtered now!

Meanwhile, their Stealthy Strike Force had also been wiped out. Japan-Korea Region had a total of 76 players. All of them were now being cornered up by their own doorstep! Once they are killed, they would be resurrected once in every 30 seconds, only to be killed again. The cycle went on. Well, they were contributing to the kill count of the China Region in a way. Meanwhile, the China Region was not backing up as well. They were performing outstandingly at increasing their kill counts. Their momentum could almost match the momentum of the Europe Region at that rate!

As long as they keep their current pace up, they should be the ones claiming victory over the war!

The players from Japan-Korea Region were beginning to cry their eyes red. What the actual f\*ck! The China Region did not just push them back, but also cut off their escape routes! Why don't they just attack the other Regions? Why must they come at them? Kill, kill, kill! Killing one China player is better than killing none!

Some say that a cornered foe would be at its most dangerous state. However, desperate courage is not always enough win the battle! These Japan-Korea Region players had outdated equipment and low levels. Furthermore, they were not organized at all. They



intended to fight the battle with only courage alone. Such a mentality would just place them in an even more difficult situation than they already were in! Furthermore, the resurrection system on this map was automated. In other words, players would automatically release their souls 30 seconds after they died. Furthermore, they would be set to be resurrected on the Graveyard of their own Region. They could not stop themselves from resurrecting even if they wanted to.

Moreover, although players would regain full HP status upon their resurrection, they would still need to activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills manually. If they react just a little slower right after they are resurrected, they would be instantly killed by the bombardment of AoE attacks in the area.

One time, ten times, thirty times! The rage of those Japan-Korea players were starting to lose its heat after countless times of being killed. Instead of being angry, they felt more desperate as they hoped that the battle would just end right away. They had suffered enough and they were now hoping that their suffering would end as soon as possible.

The only thing that would be fortunate for them was that there was no live broadcast of the situation in the War Canyon. So no one would be able to see their miserable faces as they are being slaughtered up like pigs. However, if any of those god damn China players decided to record the entire situation down with their 'record' function on the game, then...

The battle had entered its 90th minute. Zhang Yang had received a system notification saying that the neutral center point had been

taken over by the North America Region! Obviously, they were right about their guesses back then. The Europe Region and the North America Region really did strike a deal under the table. Unfortunately, the China Region could maintain their pace of staying ahead of every other Region by slaughtering up the Japan-Korea players as many times as they like. They need not even care about who was controlling the center point.

However, the Europe Region was not stupid at all. They took advantage of the North Americans by wanting to be the first to take over the center point. Now that the center point was passed on to the North America Region, they could finally focus their assaults on the China Region.

The Europe Region sent out a team of Assassins over to the Graveyard of China Region. They intended to kill any China players who were newly resurrected from death.

The situation had definitely become unfavorable to Zhang Yang and his fellow China players. Because not only they would lose some manpower, they would also be pushed back by the Japan-Korea players once their numbers drop to a certain level.

All they could do was to hold on for as long as they could. They only needed to last for another 30 minutes before they could finally claim victory over the war!

Healers that were stationed on the front line were being extra cautious. The Tankers had their eyes peeled on their own UI and healthbars, moreso than the fight before them. They were not stingy at all in activating their Skills on their comrades who were

in grave danger. They were focused completely on minimizing death counts.

Fortunately, the spirit of the players from Japan-Korea Region had been extinguished awhile ago. They were just trying to get by without putting up much of a fight. That was probably why they had not noticed the number of players from the China Region decreasing steeply.

100 minutes! 110 minutes!

The China Region still remained number one on the Kill Count Ranking list. They scored 120 more kill counts than the Europe Region. Well, they scored 287 more kill counts than the North America Region who was ranked number three on the list.

If that pace goes on, China Region would definitely be getting number one by the end of the battle!

The Europe Region decided to take a risk. Other than putting a stealthy team by China's Graveyard, they also sent out their remaining forces into the Japan-Korea Region pathway. They intended to sandwich the China Region in between themselves and the players of Japan-Korea Region. They intended to trap the forces of China Region, leaving no place for them to escape!

By doing so, they should be able to score another 50 kill counts to surpass the kill counts of China Region. After becoming the number one on the Kill Count Ranking List, they could move on to ravage the players of Japan-Korea Region to earn even more kill

counts. After killing Zhang Yang and the other China players, Zhang Yang and the other China players would have to run all the way back before they could reengage in battle. It would be another 10 minutes later when they get back into the fight. The battle would have ended by then!

Theoretically speaking, the tactic should work splendidly.

After a brief moment, the main force of Europe Region began to march forth on the pathway of Japan-Korea Region. They came at Zhang Yang and the other China players like they had nothing else to lose.

Mountain Mover immediately made some arrangements to counter the tactic that the Europeans were implementing at the moment. His tactical commands had finally been brought into play in the crucial moment of the battle. The 100 players were utilized by Mountain Mover so brilliantly that they were performing at 200%, maybe even at 300 % effectiveness!

The Japan-Korea Region did not strike back with much vigor. They were all acting like men who just got their \*sses poked multiple times over. Although a stronger party had come to push the bullies on them away, they were so broken by then that they only knew how to cry.

Without the cooperation of the Japan-Korea Region, the Europe Region did not gain any advantage. They were only sent back to their own Graveyards. Well, speaking from the perspective of time, they did not have enough time to walk all the way back to get back into the fight.

The numbers on both sides were decreasing steeply. Their combat capabilities were almost similar. Hence, the advantage of having a good commander was beginning to reveal. The China Region had crushed the delusional dream of the Europe Region and took out the entire force of the Europe Region! Of course, the China Region had also sacrificed almost two-thirds of their forces just to eliminate the threat posed by the Europe Region!

"Retreat!" Zhang Yang did not hesitate to call off their attacks. Their number had been reduced so significantly that they did not have enough men to push back the Japan-Korea Region to their starting point. They were beginning to feel the pressure from the Japan-Korea Region. Therefore, it would be wise to retreat at the moment. Truth be told, the outcome of the war had been decided. After getting a beat down from the China Region, there was no way that the Europe Region would get back on their feet and catch up with the progress of the China Region. Meanwhile, the kill count for the next runner-ups, the North America Region, was too far off from the kill count of the China Region. Hence, they could only strive for number two on the Kill Count Ranking List.

Seeing Zhang Yang and his monstrous China players retreating, the Japan-Korea players staggered for a moment before they realized what was really going on. They quickly pursued the China players in an attempt to kill them.

Unfortunately, everyone from China Region were on their Flying Mounts. The Japan-Korea players were left behind without much of a problem. Unless they had a super speed Flying Mount like Zhang Yang's Phoenix pet, it was not possible for them to catch up with players on their Flying Mounts.

116 minutes, 118 minutes, 120 minutes!

The battle was over!

On the Kill Count Ranking List, China Region had scored over 1,278 kill counts to be ranked Number One. Europe Region scored over 1,144 kill counts to be ranked as Number Two while North America scored over 1,097 kill counts to be ranked as Number Three on the Kill Count Ranking List. As expected, Japan-Korea Region was the last on the list. Being the bottom feeder on the ranking, the Japan-Korea Region could only score over 345 kill counts. This time, they were truly shamed for good!

The moment when the battle was over, the system unlocked the War Canyon. The three Regions who earned their tickets into the 'promised land' could now enter the map through the new portal. However, the portal would stay open for only 7 days. After 7 days, the portal would be closed and no longer be available to the three Regions. Players would have to join another battle royale and decide which three Regions would be able to enter the War Canyon.

Monsters in the War Canyon were ranging from Level 120 to Level 150. There was no quest available on this map. However, because players could enjoy 15% additional Experience Points, their leveling up efficiency was way better than they were when they were on other maps!

Of course, the main thing a large-scale guild would focus on

would be clearing the six new sub-dungeons!

Keeping the promises they made earlier on, Lone Desert Smoke would be taking the 10-player scale Death Swamp. Crimson Rage would be taking the 10-player scale Death Jungle. Meanwhile, the guilds of Imperial Sky, The Radiance, Sunset Amber and Rolling Rocks would take the remaining 4 5-player dungeons. These 6 guilds were the most powerful guilds in the entire China Region for the moment. Each of these guilds at least had Class A Inheritances to back their power level!

Of course, guilds like Floating Clouds and Brilliant Star were also very powerful. But they would be a little off compared to the 6 most powerful guilds in the entire China Region. They had allocated the dungeons much earlier on to prevent any unnecessary competitions among their own Region. Well, conflict is always inevitable.

For instance, Zhang Yang had clearly stated that he and his guild would be clearing the Death Swamp. Therefore, when the other guilds heard him loud and clear, they would avoid going over to that dungeon to compete with them. Lone Desert Smoke's Dungeon Exploration Party contained 3 players with Class S Inheritance, two players with Class A Inheritance and 5 players with Class B Inheritance! Furthermore, they also had two Phoenix pets and a Battle Companion which could also activate Transformation Skills! Who would want to go up against a party with such an intimidating lineup?!

It would be suicidal to even think about going up against them!

Therefore, Imperial Sky and the other powerful guilds had to endure the pain of not being able to take down the First Clear for the 10-player scale dungeons, even though the First Clear for those 10-player dungeons were extremely beneficial (Each First Clear could give each player 1 Skill Points! 10 players would be able to benefit from it at the same time!). Whoever who tries to clear the same dungeon with Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage would not only lose the chance to get 10 Skill Points, but also lose the 5-player scale dungeon to someone else as they would be too busy fighting either one of the two powerful guilds. After all, there were already a large number of guilds, powerful enough to clear a new dungeon, these days.

After the system had teleported everyone out of the War Canyon, Zhang Yang quickly assembled his party of 10. Then they reentered the War Canyon through the temporal portal. This time, the 8 pathways in the dungeon were no longer empty. There were hordes of monsters swarming up the pathways! It seemed that players could enjoy the perks to grind their levels by killing these monsters now!

Of course, the dungeon no longer restricted players from flying. They could just ride on their Flying Mounts and fly to the center point of the dungeon. That was where the entrance to Death Abyss was located at.

Because the modes of the dungeon were locked, players would need to unlock the modes consecutively from Normal Mode to Hard Mode before unlocking the Hardcore Mode. So they had to start with Normal Mode. Zhang Yang had the two Phoenix pets activate their Transformation Skills. They lured all monsters in the surroundings towards the first boss and took out everything,



including the first boss! Then they used the same tactic on the second boss, third boss, forth boss, and the fifth boss! Zhang Yang and his party cleared the Normal Mode of the dungeon in under 17 minutes!

Well, the difficulty of the dungeon was too easy, to begin with!

Upon entering the Hard Mode of the dungeon, Endless Starlight, Wei Yan Er, Lost Dream, Hundred Shots and Fantasy Sweetheart activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills. Then they also used the same tactic to clear the entire dungeon. The better part of it was they managed to shorten the time required to clear the dungeon down to 16 minutes 34 seconds! They took even less time than they took to clear out the Normal Mode of the dungeon!

Lastly, it was time for them to clear the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon and seize the 'First Clear' title of the Death Abyss! Everyone activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills at the same instant. Zhang Yang made a mad decision. The moment they step foot into the dungeons, they lured everything including the first boss, second boss, third boss, forth boss, and the fifth boss all together in one spot. Then, they unleashed hell upon them with everything they got! Everything was done in one single motion! It was an absolute massacre!

11 minutes 34 seconds!

The Hardcore Mode of the dungeon had been cleared by Zhang Yang and his party! The moment when the server announced the result, the 20,000,000,000 players from all around the world had to recheck their bearings with reality!

# Chapter 676: Eternal Flame

---

Too fast!

That happened too fast!

Was it because there were no monsters at all throughout the entire dungeon? Could it be that there was just one boss in the entire dungeon? Normal players were having similar thoughts on what just happened. Meanwhile, One Sword Stroke and the other Dungeon Exploration Parties had a chill up their spines after hearing about it. They quickly hustled up and killed the monsters as soon as they were able to. They were pretty worried that Lone Desert Smoke might just enter the other dungeons as well to get the First Clear of the other sub-dungeons! They might just rush in to snatch for the second, maybe even the third 'First Clear' for the sub-dungeons on the map!

--- well, they did not say that any guild that already cleared their own dungeon could not continue on with the other dungeons.

Truth be told, Zhang Yang had already on the move. He divided his party into two. Him alone, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream were on the same party while the others were grouped as the second half of the party. Each party went on to clear two of the 5-player scale dungeons. Zhang Yang did not intend to gather his party to take on the other 10-player scale dungeon because the relationship of Crimson Rage with Lone Desert Smoke was very good. First of all, they felt awkward to even think about competing with Crimson Rage especially after they had agreed to let them take one of the dungeons. Second of all,

Crimson Rage was extremely capable and powerful on their own. If Crimson Rage and Lone Desert Smoke started out on the dungeon at the same time, Zhang Yang and his party would still be able to win. However, now that the party of Crimson Rage was already halfway through the dungeon, there was no way that Zhang Yang and his party could catch up with their progress. Needless to say, they would never get to overtake their progress!

Although the Lone Desert Smoke had split up, the difficulty of the dungeons that they were in had dropped from 10-player scale to 5-player scale. Furthermore, the party Zhang Yang was on had a total of 3 players with Class S Inheritance and two players with Class A Inheritance. There was no other party in the entire world that could have such a powerful lineup.

They cleared the Normal Mode of the dungeon in about 11 minutes. Then, they cleared the Hard Mode of the dungeon in approximately 13 minutes. Finally, they cleared the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon under 15 minutes!

Unfortunately, while they were battling against the final boss of the Hardcore Mode for the dungeon, the Rolling Rocks had coincidentally taken out the boss before them and the system began to make the announcement. It was extremely close! However, after one minute had passed, the system began to refresh again --- Zhang Yang and his party had earned the qualifications required for them to clear the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon!

The Rolling Rock's party of 5 were left in cold sweat. If Zhang Yang and his party had managed to clear the dungeon just a little faster, then they would have to give up on the dungeon. They were

extremely lucky this time!

What an unfortunate thing for Zhang Yang and his party!

After about 1 hour, all the Hardcore Modes for all 6 dungeons had been cleared. However, there was an unexpected twist of events! The Sunset Amber did not get the 'First Clear' of the dungeon they were promised to take on. Instead, a guild called 'Eternal Flame' took down the 'First Clear' for the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon!

The China Region had taken down the 'First Clear' of all six dungeons in a row. It was natural that everyone was pumped up! The Eternal Flame had also become famous over one night because of what they achieved. Everyone was wondering. Where have they been all the while? They were actually capable of overtaking one of the top Tier guilds!

Truth to be told, that was not the real strength of the entire Eternal Flame. Well, their best players may have the capability to pick a fight with the Sunset Amber. However, if they were to compare their core players, the newly risen guild would not be able to match a well-established guild that had been there over the years!

Looking back at the history, the Lone Desert Smoke was not powerful at all in the beginning. They were not worthy of being compared with Crimson Rage, Imperial Sky and other Top Tier guilds. They could not even match The Dominators! However, after building up their names upon clearing dungeons after dungeons, the Lone Desert Smoke became more powerful than they ever could imagine. They had also recruited many top Tier

players before they became the world leading guild. Now, they were at the top of the top in the entire world!

For a newly risen guild, taking down the 'First Clear' of dungeons would be the best way to build their names.

Undoubtedly, the Eternal Flames had succeeded in doing so. They would soon become a large-scale guild if they keep their good work up. However, it remained unknown if they could become one of the top Tier guilds. It would depend on whether they could actually keep their good work up, or not.

Zhang Yang and his party had taken down the 'First Clear' of a dungeon. So, every one of them acquired 1 Skill Point for themselves. Although breaking two records of Hardcore Mode for two dungeons did not give them extra Skill Points, the system had rewarded them with some Level 5 Gemstones. The Gemstones that each of them acquired were all compatible with each of their Class.

However, Zhang Yang was dissatisfied. Now, he was beginning to go down on the path of Strength. He would be needing as many Strength Gemstones as possible. The system gave him a Vitality Gemstone. He could not do anything with it unless he intends to focus back on powering up his Vitality attribute. So, he could only pass the Gemstone to Endless Starlight. That wretched guy was screaming in joy while praising Zhang Yang. He even suggested that Zhang Yang give him the [Sword of Purging Devourer] as well. Instead of getting the sword, he got a kick in the face for demanding the impossible. What a greedy f\*ck!

Although Zhang Yang did not mind about having more

competitors, he still sent a spy over to have a check on the Eternal Flame's background. The spy was really good at getting information without people noticing. He came back with some news very quickly --- actually, the Eternal Flame had nothing to hide as well. They publicly announced that anyone who had the skills and strength could join their guild. Players who decided to join their guild would also get quite a sum of money as their allowance. The stronger the player, the more allowance the player would get for joining the guild.

They classified players into 5 rankings: Top class players, high-class players, middle-class players, Collector class players and Production class players.

Collector class player and Production class player had it much easier. As long as the Collector class player could provide the guild a fixed amount of Ores, Herbs and other necessary items, they would be rewarded. They would reward the Collector class players based on the grade of the items they bring in. They classified the items in three different grades. The High-tier, Middle-tier, and the Normal-tier. The rewards based on the tiers would be 5,000 gold, 3,000 gold, and 2,000 gold respectively. On the other hand, the Production class players would need to produce a fixed amount of items for the guild as well. The rewards for the items they made would be based on the grade of the blueprints they had. They also categorized the grade of blueprints into three different grades. The rewards would also be 5,000 gold, 3,000 gold and 2,000 gold respectively based on their grade.

This mechanism was not that bad at all. Normal players could go to work in real life during the day and earn some pocket money in the game during the night. However, Production class players

would have much lesser things to worry about once they have their hands on a certain number of blueprints. On the other hand, Collector class players would have to work their \*sses off to gather items and herbs. After all, the guild is not stupid enough to give you free money. Even though they could get 2,000 gold for Normal Tier items or Herbs, they would need to provide a fixed amount of the items and Herbs. It would be extremely difficult for them to do so. Upon spending time on gathering items and herbs, these players would not have time at all to grind their levels up.

As for the top class players, high-class players and middle-class players, the Eternal Flame guild had implemented a very simple test to determine the class of the players joining them. They allocated their core players of 6 different Classes as the Examiners. Those who wishes to join the guild would need to battle against these Examiners. Those who can defeat the Examiners would be deemed as top class players. Those who could get a tie with the Examiners would be deemed as high-class players. Meanwhile, those who could last over a certain time frame of the battle with these Examiners would be deemed as middle-class players.

The guild would still give 3,000 gold to the players every month even if they were just middle-class players. High-class players would get 10,000 gold per month. As for the top class players, they would be signing contracts with the guild and their allowances would differ based on the strength and performance of the individuals.

If the calculations are based on the Level 4 Guild of 40,000 players, the guild would have to throw a total of 1,200,000,000 gold coins into the guild expense each month, even if each of the members only get 3,000 gold coins! About the production part, the

guild would only be able to earn through their collection and production class players. At the same time, they could not afford to have too many players become those classes of players. Because if they do, it would definitely affect the strength of their guild. Most of their players would be too busy collecting and producing instead of grinding their levels!

Holy god! Which man or woman would be so rich to burn their money like that?

However, if they do gather enough men with that standard of recruitment, the Eternal Flame would definitely be capable of becoming one of the top Tier guilds in the entire world, eventually. After all, the strength and capability of Eternal Flame seemed to be able to rival the strength and capabilities of top Tier guilds like Imperial Sky and Rolling Rocks, sooner or later. The most important thing in getting the guild up to standard would be to gather as many top Tier players into one's guild as possible.

The core players of the Lone Desert Smoke's core players were actually on the same standard of the core players on the other large-scale guilds. However, Lone Desert Smoke had quite a number of top Tier players on their side. For instance, Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream and his other gang members were absolutely powerful!

Just look at the Leaderboard of China Region. Lone Desert Smoke had occupied 12 names on the list! They had 5 or 6 names more than Crimson Rage and Imperial Sky which were known to be number two and number three! On the Leaderboard of Classes, Lone Desert Smoke had also occupied 10% of the total players on



those lists. They had the most number of top Tier players in the guild, after all.

Eternal Flame had just been founded 7 days ago. The Death Abyss dungeon was their first 'First Clear' ever acquired! They had never thought possible that their guild would 'bloom' overnight! They had never thought possible that they would step on Sunset Amber and reveal themselves into the public eyes of the China Region. Currently, the Eternal Flame was highly prolific. Many high Tier players from their guild were beginning to appear on the Leaderboards of China Regions.

Well, it seemed that a guild could really dig out powerful players from the abyss as long as the guild is willing to throw in a substantial amount of money!

There were numerous high Tier players in the China Region. However, many of them were still hiding in the shadows because of various reasons. Zhang Yang was also a powerful player in his previous life. However, because his level was not up to the standard of the majority and he was without any support from any powerful guild, he never got the chance to get good equipment. All he could do was to perform regularly as a high Tier player. He could not unleash his full potential under his previous circumstances.

However, the guildmaster of the Eternal Flame was a mystery. No one had ever met him, up till this point. Everyone knew his name by looking at the guild member list. His name was called 'Dragon Marquis'.

Upon acquiring their first 'First Clear' for the Hardcore Mode of the Death Abyss, the Eternal Flame began to recruit new members for their guild, riding on the elevated profile of their victory. They were recruiting at the arena in Crimson Sky City. Players could sign themselves up for the test provided by 13 Examiners of each type to determine whether they were worthy of joining the guild or not.

"Noob tank! I'm a top Tier player, wait, no! I'm a top top top tier player! How come you've never pay me any salary then?" Wei Yan Er was forcing Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the gang to check out on the battles in Crimson Sky City. She then raised her cute little face and put her hands up on her waist as she questioned Zhang Yang.

"Oi, little brat! You should talk without fooling yourself! You must stay clear, for the sake of your conscience, you know? Touch your heart and tell me! Didn't I already give you 5% of my entire earnings from my Little Merchandize Shop every month? Just count and see! It's way more than that! Or do you prefer to get the same amount of money a month as they do?"

Wei Yan Er was very obedient this time. She actually put her right hand on her left chest. Her face suddenly frowned. She was obviously annoyed. Then she complained, "You noob tank! How can you be so bad!"

Zhang Yang was muddled. What happened to the little brat? Why did she sulk?

Han Ying Xue laughed out loud and put her hand on her huge

boobies, then she said, "Yan Er can only touch her 'airport'! That must have triggered her pain in her heart! Hahaha!"

... Zhang Yang instantly understood! Well, he did mentioned 'touch your heart' back then.

"Han Ying Xue! If you even dare to say the word 'airport' again, I'm going to cut my ties with you!"

The big screen in the arena would show the situation of every battle. Meanwhile, a large number of players found it very interesting to see how the Eternal Flame was recruiting members for their guild. Therefore, they stopped everything that they were doing --- truth be told, ever since the developer had begun implementing the frequent Individual Ranking Competitions, the arena had been so quiet ever since.

Therefore, whoever win or lose was clearly announced on the big screen of the arena. However, there were not many high Tier players out there. Half an hour had passed, and no one that could beat any of the 13 Examiners. Only a small number of players managed to join the ranks of Eternal Flame as 'middle class' members. They had to accept that they would be treated as middle-class players then.

Among the 13 Examiners, some were very well-mannered, while some were not at all. Those who were ill-mannered were beginning to curse and scold. They were really demeaning those players who had failed with rude words. They even told them to stop wasting their time and go home, cry in their mothers' arms and so forth. Although they were indeed professional players, their attitudes

were... at least Zhang Yang would never want these sort of scumbags in his guild.

As he was tired of watching all the boring drama and sh\*ts, he said, "Little brat... you asked us to waste our time watching some rude monkeys trying to show off? We're better off grinding our levels you know?"

"Hehe... don't you think those bastards are trying to pick a fight with us?" Wei Yan Er waved her battle axe around, "What kind of stupid guild is this? They even claimed that they will defeat the Lone Desert Smoke! Humph! I'm here to destroy them today!"

Well, it would be normal for any guild to shout out their slogan. Furthermore, there were numerous guilds who had claimed that they would defeat Lone Desert Smoke, so that they could become Number One in the entire China Region. Zhang Yang would never go and bully them just to scare them off. It would be immature to do so. If they want to come, let them come! However, this would be the first time that a guild would recruit members with the intention to defeat Lone Desert Smoke! This Eternal Flame was the only guild that was daring enough to do this sort of things.

# Chapter 677: Mar Gaia Forest

---

If they really had that kind of capability on them, why don't they just take out Zhang Yang or Sun Xin Yu, or any other core players of Lone Desert Smoke from the Individual Ranking Competition list then? They could just prove by doing so, right? However, even though they were afraid to lose, they were actually making themselves loud and clear as they were recruiting. The little brat was infuriated immediately upon hearing it.

The little brat had always been clear about her preferences. She would never let a thorn stay in her eye. So, she decided to stir up some trouble.

"Humph! Humph! Let me go and tell them what a high Tier player is!" Wei Yan Er leaped down to the side of the arena and challenged the Berserker from Eternal Flame.

"I'll go too!" Sun Xin Yu said coldly. Then, she vanished into thin air. She went into her Stealth Mode immediately.

Zhang Yang frowned intensely when he saw Sun Xin Yu going straight into her Stealth Mode. There was no point for her to go into Stealth Mode in the middle of a main city, because PvP was not allowed in the first place! It seemed that she did it out of her professional habit.

"I'll go as well!" Han Ying Xue also went into the arena without as hesitation.

The three ladies selected an Examiner and signed themselves up. After a brief moment, six players entered the arena. Upon the end of the 5-minute preparation time, the battle had finally begun!

Wei Yan Er clashed into her opponent with her {Charge} while Sun Xin Yu activated her {Shadow Step} and slid herself over to the rear of her opponent. The two ladies were beginning to attack their opponents as aggressively as they could.

The battles ended much faster than anyone had anticipated. Well, first of all, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er had powerful equipment. Furthermore, their Skills were much more powerful than the Examiners. They only took approximately 10 seconds to defeat their opponents. Their opponents were kneeling on the ground begging for mercy not because they were scared or useless, it was because of the arena's design! Whoever loses would kneel and beg for mercy, automatically.

Han Ying Xue did not drag the battle too long as well. With her {Putrefying Poison} and her {Punishment Ray}, her high Spell-damage and her additional Damage would tear through the thickest defenses. She took out her opponent like he was nothing!

Eternal Flame, 3 battles, 3 losses.

Some bystanders who could not stand the arrogant tone from the few 'Examiners' immediately opened their mouths and ridiculed them. Didn't they say that they wanted professional high Tier players? Now they've got it! So why are they performing worse than a rookie? Was that the best they could do? If they're just so noobish, why don't they just bang their heads into the wall and

die?

Those arrogant Examiners were not willing to give in just yet. They challenged Sun Xin Yu and the other two ladies to another round of battles. The three ladies were not going to back down on them of course, so they accepted their challenges one after another. They basically tortured them round after round! With everything that was happening around, the remaining 'Examiners' had to step in to uphold their dignity for their guild. So they also went up to challenge Sun Xin Yu and the other two ladies in an attempt to save their guild's good name. By the end of it, they were all beaten up so badly that their mother could not recognize them anymore!

The most infuriating part of the incident was that the three ladies rejected their invitation to become one of their guild members!

What the f\*ck! If you're not going to join, why would you challenge the Examiners in the first place? Well, they were not aware of the ladies' real intention at first.

At first, they were trying to take advantage of the momentum they gained by getting the 'First Clear' of the dungeon to recruit new members into their ranks. However, they went too far and got their faces kicked in instead. Therefore, the Eternal Flame was too embarrassed to carry on with their recruitment at the arena of the main city. They only decided on whether a player was worthy to join them or not by looking at their rankings on the Individual Ranking Competition Leaderboard.

Just like an old saying, generous rewards rouses one to heroism! Even though the Eternal Flame tripped themselves over Sun Xin Yu and the other 2 ladies and fell over while they were on the peak of their momentum, they were still known to be a new rising star in the China Region. Furthermore, they had a wealthy foundation to support them with endless gold and money. Hence, they were able to expand their power and influence wide over a brief period of time. In just a short while, they had become a newly emerging force in China Region. A strong one too, at that!

Zhang Yang and his gang went on to clear the 6 new dungeons once. Their equipment were not at the standard of Ethereal Tier just yet. They still managed to replace some of their older equipment on with some new Mythical Tier equipment they got from clearing the Hardcore Mode of the dungeons.

Well, even though the War Canyon would only provide 15% additional Experience Points to the players from the one Region that won Number One back in the war, but the map would require over 2,000,000,000 Level 120 players from across 3 main Regions! After all, Level 120 players were the majority of the population in the entire server. So how could this little War Canyon fit so many people in then?

Just like what Fatty Han would say, this is what they say about having a female's three holes occupied from the top to bottom! It would be almost impossible to even move!

Grinding levels in that map would mean more Player VS Player battles for everyone from different Regions. Well, players from different Regions would forever stay as foes. They would try to kill



each other, the moment they see each other out there. There was a saying, hit him until he does not know what got him! In a nutshell, the War Canyon would be packed with players from all different Regions, and everyone would be out for blood, killing each other from time to time. In a harsh environment like that, grinding levels in the War Canyon would not be a wise move, after all.

"Everything would have been perfect if, only the players from the Region that got Number One can come in here to grind our levels!" Han Ying Xue and the others were 'hurt,' seeing that they could not take advantage of the additional 15% Experience Points that the system provided in the War Canyon.

Zhang Yang laughed it off and said, "Even if only China Region players are allowed to enter this map, there would still be over 60,000,000 or 70,000,000 players. There would be more players than the monsters as well. Things would not become much easier, though. Now that we have foreign players invading our space, there are no battles among our own people. If there aren't any foreign enemies, I believe conflicts would still arise among the guilds in China Region."

Everyone gave some thoughts on what Zhang Yang said. Then they nodded to agree. Well, if they ever encounter The Myth or The Dominators, they would charge at them and start a battle with them without a second thought.

The War Canyon was currently full of people. There were too many people squeezing into the Level 120-150 map. The good spots for grinding levels had been occupied by others. Hence, Zhang Yang assembled his party of 10 and headed straight to a new map --

- Mar Gaia Forest.

The Mar Gaia Forest was a Level 150 - 180 Map. A new boss with a next-level Tier would emerge, a Holy Tier!

Because the monsters would have a minimum Level of Level 159, many Level 120 players would not be able to come to this map. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang and his party had surpassed Level 140 at the moment. Unless they would be so unlucky to encounter a monster that is beyond Level 170, they should not have to face the annoying Level Gap Suppression function of the game. They should be able to kill most monsters on the map.

The place was sparsely populated with players. Compared to the previous maps, a player would have met another player upon walking a hundred meters. While Zhang Yang and his party were entering the map, it was like they were entering a primitive forest that no one had set foot on before.

Avoiding the crowd of troublesome players was one thing. Another more important reason why Zhang Yang picked this map was because, there was a new Territory in this map!

The time required to travel from Morning Town to a Level 120 - 150 map would still be reasonable. However, it would be too far for any players to travel from Morning Town all the way to a Level 150 - 180 map. There must be a new checkpoint for players to actually teleport themselves to the map! More importantly, this kind of Territory is most unlike the Territory Gateway where each Region could claim one for themselves. There was only a total of 4 of these Territories!

That being said, 4 Regions would not have access to the checkpoints. They would need to travel all the way across half the earth from their Territorial Gateways to the maps of Level 150 - 180. That would definitely cost them a lot of time that could otherwise be spent grinding their levels. In Zhang Yang's previous life, the owners of these 4 new Territories were constantly changing. Well, all Regions needed the Territories for their own convenience. Therefore, they would have to launch a war over to snatch the Territory for their own benefits, from time to time.

Meanwhile, the Sauron's Castle in the Mar Gaia Forest was actually the Territory that was taken over by the China Region in Zhang Yang's previous life. Although the Territory was snatched and taken over by other Regions before, the Territory was under the control of the China Region, most of the time. Therefore, Zhang Yang brought his party over to the place without realizing it was his subconscious calling out to them. Well, he felt a deep connection with the place, after all.

This time, the circumstances were not like how it was when the Chaos Realm was first unlocked. During that period of time, only Zhang Yang alone could enter the new maps. He could just conquer as many Territories as he wanted to! Well, Zhang Yang was not the only clever man on earth. Many players had expected the possibility of new Territories spawning across the maps of Level 150 -180. They could also form a link between the new Territories with their Territory Gateways. Some players might already be on their way to the other new Territories at that instant!

Well, the early bird catches the worm! Everyone would stand an equal chance of getting a Territory. If the opportunity presents

itself, grab it or lose it!

With the guide of a veteran like Zhang Yang, the gang did not get lost in the process of getting to the Territory. They went over the mountains and arrived nearby a small river. However, because there were too many high Tier players in Zhang Yang's previous life, Zhang Yang would only leave a map after he reaches the level cap of the map. Therefore, this Level 150 -180 map was the last map that Zhang Yang had experienced before he came over to this new life.

That being said, Zhang Yang no longer had any knowledge of the maps beyond this map. Maybe the names of the maps would ring a bell to him in the future, but nothing more. Well, he had never gone beyond the map of Mar Gaia Forest.

So Zhang Yang would no longer have the advantage of knowing ahead over everyone else, soon! However, Zhang Yang had no fear towards the future at all. His strength alone and his guild was already number one in the entire server! So he was confident at accepting any challenges that come at him in the future!

Upon seeing the river right in front of them, Zhang Yang descended from the sky. He split the party into two teams. Then he told one of the teams to follow the current of the river as he leads the other team to go against the current of the river. They went on according to Zhang Yang's plan in order to know more about the place.

After a brief moment, the team that went against the current of the river reported back to Zhang Yang with some news. They

discovered a human on the verge of dying. When Zhang Yang heard the news, he led Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and the other ladies to meet up with the rest of the party.

When they arrived, all they saw was a middle-aged man lying on his stomach, with blood all over the ground. His face was so pale that he looked like a corpse himself! It was obvious that he had been poisoned.

[Col Garson] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 151

HP: 1/97,960

Note: One of the members of the fellowship that opposes Sauron. Col Garson is well known at covering his tracks and getting the information he needs.

"Please... you... must get this letter... to... General Turkin Han!" Col Garson handed out a small piece of paper over with his shaky hands before he exhaled his final breath and died.

‘Ding! Col Garson has given you a quest: A Super Urgent Message. Will you accept it?’

Accept.

Upon Zhang Yang nodding at the NPC, everyone received the same quest at the same time.

[A Super Urgent Message] (Difficulty: Rank-C)

Description: You have accepted a request from Col Garson right before he died. You have decided to go to the Hannier Valley and deliver this message which had been stained with blood to the hands of General Turkin Han. You have tracked the direction of where you should head. The Hannier Valley is confirmed to be located at the far Northwest from where you stand right now.

Completion: Hand over the message to General Turkin Han 0/1

This quest was merely the first and simple quest that would trigger a wondrous series of quests. It should be a walk in the park for Zhang Yang and his gang. The quest was ranked as Rank-C, instead of a Rank-D because Zhang Yang and his gang had not reach Level 150 just yet. The monsters ahead of them were a technically overleveled.

"Super urgent... Speaking of which---" Han Ying Xue brought up her quest list and had a look, "Silly Yu, when are we going to complete this 'A Super Urgent News' quest of ours then?"

'A Super Urgent News' was a quest given to them by the soul of Spider Queen Catarina when they were in their Level 60s. The Spider Queen had urged them to travel over to the Spider Kingdom and report the urgent news to the Spider God. However, because the Spider Kingdom was located in the Chaos Realm, they had not

touched the quest ever since. Well, they could not have entered the Chaos Realm when they were still around their Level 60s.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "The Spider Kingdom is also located on the Level 150 - 180 map. Let's finish up with the linking quests here and solve that 'forgotten' quest! Haha!"

Everyone hopped onto their Flying Mounts and headed towards Northwest. After traveling for over half an hour, they arrived at the Hannier Valley.

The entrance to the valley was well hidden. If it weren't for the few NPCs who were standing guard at their outpost, Zhang Yang and his gang could have missed the spot. Of course, these NPCs were stationed there on purpose by the developers to make things easier for the players. They did not do it because they thought players were stupid.

## Chapter 678: Getting Back The One Ring

---

Zhang Yang and his party descended to the ground. The NPCs were startled. They thought that they were ambushed by enemy forces! So, they quickly raised their weapons up, ready to engage in battle. After seeing the faces of Zhang Yang and his party members, they put down their weapons and put themselves at ease. Then, one of them asked, "Who are you?"

"We're Adventurers who have traveled from a faraway land called the White Jade Castle!" Zhang Yang made a salutative gesture of an Adventurer and showed the NPCs the badge on his chest.

"White Jade Castle?" Those outpost guards were confused. But it did not take long before they recovered and asked, "What do you intend to trouble us with?"

"While we were traveling across the land, we came across a man called Col Garson. He requested us to deliver a letter to General Turkin Han with his dying breath!" Zhang Yang answered politely. Should he be angry at an NPC? Wouldn't that make a fool out of him to get angry at an unreal NPC?

Well, fools exist though. Wei Yan Er bared her teeth as she already lost her patience awhile ago. She would not be able to differentiate between reality and game when she began to play the game. She would only act based on her instincts. She would just fight if he wanted to, and just say whatever she wanted to say. If Han Ying Xue had not been holding her off, she would have jumped before everyone and began to scold the NPC with her



finger pointed at him.

"Garson!" The guards by the guard post were shocked to hear Garson's name. Their attitude immediately changed and one of them said, "Fellow Adventurers, please forgive us for being extra-cautious. However, we can only be as careful as possible as the land is under the abusive influence of the Shadow Demon Sauron!"

"We express our gratitude to all of you for completing Garson's final wish. Please follow us!"

Two guards stood up to them and saluted at Zhang Yang and his gang. Then, they led the gang into the valley.

Because the terrain of the valley was deep, the valley seemed to be extra dark and gloomy, even though it was daytime. Wei Yan Er would have said that only bad guys would live in the valley. This place was ghastly!

There was a military camp in the middle of the valley. No wonder the guards at the outpost had been so nervous. If their hidden mother base was found by their enemies, they would all become an easy prey for their enemies! As they passed by the base camp, Zhang Yang and his gang could see that there were soldiers of different races. There were humans, dwarfs, Centaurs and at least a dozen other races.

Finally, the two outpost guards had led them to the front of a tent. After reporting to a few guards, Zhang Yang and his party were invited into the tent. The tent was huge. There was a war

table right in the middle of the tent, a large, strategic map laid over it. A middle-aged man in a full-set armor was pinning military flags all across the surface of the strategic map. He was frowning. His face was filled with anxiety and worry.

[General Turkin Han] (Ethereal, Humanoid)

Level: 155

HP: 5,000,000,000

Defense: 9,950

Attack: 75,468 - 95,468

Note: The Commander that leads the force against Sauron. He is heroic and fierce, a very prestigious individual.

"I would like to express my gratitude for fulfilling Garson's dying request!" General Turkin Han turned around and looked at Zhang Yang and his gang. Then, he bowed to them.

"It's not a big deal at all. Don't worry about it!" Zhang Yang smiled and said. Then he took out the letter that Garson had passed to him right before he died. Then he passed it on to General Turkin Han, "This is the letter that Garson handed over to us!"

"Hmm!" Turkin Han accepted the letter. Then he immediately

opened up the envelope and read the contents of the letter.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: A Super Urgent Message. You received a reward: 500,000 Experience Points!’

After reading the letter, General Turkin Han was agitated. Instantly, he slammed his fist onto the table and scattered everything that had been arranged on the strategic map. The sand on the surface of the strategic map was swept up by the force of the impact from his fist.

Sometimes, players must take the initiative to trigger a quest instead of waiting for the quest to trigger itself.

Zhang Yang immediately asked, "What's the matter, general?"

If it was one of the general's guards or soldiers, Turkin Han would have denounced them without a doubt for speaking out of turn. However, Zhang Yang and his gang were special. Therefore, Turkin Han only hesitated for one brief moment before he replied Zhang Yang. "Malindor betrayed us! He's carrying The One Ring, and heading towards the Sunfall Volcano as we speak!"

Zhang Yang and his gang were confused. Han Ying Xue quickly said, "General, we hail from a land far from here. We're here to seek for some job opportunities. Can you enlighten us on the current situation?"

"Seeking for job opportunities?!" Turkin Han immediately shook

his head and said, "You shouldn't have come here! The Shadow Demon Sauron is on the brink of returning the darkness to the entire land! The entire land shall tremble before his shadow! You should leave this place at once and find your job opportunities somewhere else!"

"We're the bringers of justice! We shall take out any pests in our way!" Wei Yan Er could not hold her tongue anymore. Finally, she opened her mouth and said, "General, we shall take out whatever shadow monster lord for you! You can count on us!"

Turkin Han had no idea what they meant by the bringer of justice. However, he roughly understood the meaning of what Wei Yan Er tried to tell him. He laughed out loud and said, "Little girl, did you read too many fairy tales before bedtime! It's not that easy to be a shadow demon slayer! You better go home now!"

"General, please tell us the situation about this Shadow Demon king! We would like to know!" Everyone had joined in to convince the general.

"Alright!" Turkin Han nodded and said, "It's too dangerous to travel across this land now. I should the situation to you to prevent you guys from throwing your lives away!"

He closed his eyes and took a deep breath. He seemed to be recollecting his thoughts. Then he said, "The Shadow Demon Lord is the embodiment of evil. He is terrifyingly powerful. 70,000 years ago, he built an invincible army and wiped out the world!"

"By the end of it, a Wizard wearing a white robe called Saruman sacrificed himself and forged The One Ring from the lava of the Sunfall Volcano! That ring could greatly weaken the power of the Shadow Demon Lord. Finally, the ancient ones were able to slay the Shadow Demon Lord with the aid of the ring and bury the entire army of the Shadow Demon Lord underneath the ground so deep, that no one could ever find it anymore!"

"However, Sauron is the embodiment of evil, afterall. As long as there is evil in the world, he can resurrect repeatedly, as many times as he wants to! After 10,000 years of resting in the dark, he would bring forth his large army and march across the land once again. Well, he would be slain every time he comes back! Now, Sauron is about to be resurrected for the 7th time. His army of darkness has emerged from the darkness. They are ready to serve their master and destroy their master's enemies! The only way of subduing the Shadow Demon Lord is to use The One Ring! The One Ring is supposed to be under the possession of Rogue, the White Wizard. However, his apprentice Malindor has joined the dark force! He stole The One Ring and he is on his way to the Sunset Volcano as we speak!"

"The One Ring is forged from the lava of the Sunset Volcano. The only way of destroying the ring is to use the lava of the same volcano! When the only weapon that can subdue the power of the Shadow Demon Lord has been destroyed, there will be no one left, able to stand up against Sauron! The entire world will tremble under his shadow!"

Wei Yan Er immediately jumped up and said, "Just let us handle this Shadow Demon Lord for you!"

Turkin Han shook his head and smiled bitterly, then he said, "Little girl, the Shadow Demon Lord is much more terrifying than you can ever imagine! However, if you really want to do something about it, you should just kill Malindor the traitor and bring The One Ring back!"

‘Ding!, General Turkin Han has given you a quest: Getting Back The One Ring! Will you accept it?’

After wasting so much saliva, they had finally received the continuation of their previous quest!

Everyone accepted the quest. Since that Turkin Han had no interest in ‘entertaining’ them anymore, Zhang Yang and his gang left the valley. They summoned their Flying Mount and flew back into the sky.

[Getting Back The One Ring] (Difficulty: Rank-A)

Description: Malindor is taking The One Ring to the Sunset Volcano. If you cannot kill him and take back The One Ring before he arrives at the Sunset Volcano, you will fail the quest. Please be aware that the army of darkness that Sauron commands will not stand by and let you take The One Ring back just like that! This is a quest that has to be completed within a limited time frame. You can check the location of Malindor by looking at the large map.

Completion: Get back The One Ring and hand it back to General Turkin Han 0/1

Upon bringing up the map, everyone could see a small red dot on each of their own map. The red dot was located right in the middle of their location and the location of the Sunset Volcano. It seemed that Malindor was already halfway to the Sunset Volcano!

"Let's hustle up, then!"

Everyone rushed on, atop their Flying Mounts. Fortunately, even though they had not reached the Level Requirement of the map, they were at least Level 140. Zhang Yang was already Level 144. Furthermore, they were flying across the sky. It would be unlikely for them to run into monsters.

They only ran into some Level 170 flying monsters once in every blue moon. However, those Normal Tier monsters were taken out by Zhang Yang and his gang without much of a problem. Upon flying on at an insane speed for over 30 minutes, they finally managed to cut off Malindor on a pathway by one of the mountains.

However, Malindor was not alone out there. He was protected and escorted by a bunch of guards, riding on wolves. Though there were only about 10 of them, every one of them was an Elite Tier monster!

[Malindor's Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 155

HP: 4,650,000

Defense: 6,200

Melee Attack: 40,070 - 50,070

Skills:

[Net]: Throws a metallic net to trap the target, immobilizing the target for 10 seconds. If the target is a flying unit, the target will descent onto the ground. Range: 30 meters.

[Strong Penetration]: Heavily impales the target and cause 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. If the target receives this attack when the target is stunned, the damage caused by this Skill will increase by another 100%.

[Charge]: Charges into the target at an extremely high speed, stunning the target for 1 second. Aggro value will be reduced to zero. Range: 3 – 10 meters.

Note: A member of the army of darkness that Sauron commands. They are now escorting Malindor to destroy The One Ring.

"Protect Mr. Malindor!" These guards were not acting like regular monsters that would get triggered by the aggro. Instead of charging at Zhang Yang and his gang, they pulled out their weapons while surrounding a young man clad in a grey robe. They seemed to be trying to protect him.



[Malindor, Magic Apprentice] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 153

HP: 81,720

Defense: 4,020

Magic Attack: 11,545 – 17,545

Skills:

[Fire Ball]: Throws a fire ball at the target and cause 200% Magic Attack of Fire Damage to the target.

Note: Malindor was born in a poor family. His parents had passed away since he was small. He was raised by his sister alone. However, when he was 12 years old, his sister was abducted by a rich old man and she was forced to be his slave. Malindor almost died because he was beaten up trying to resist. Fortunately, he survived because Rogue saved his life. Malindor had planned to become a Grand Magus so that he could go back and rescue his sister. However, he was lack of the gift to master magic. Hence, under the seduction of the dark force, he chose to stand on the side of Sauron.

"... this is what we call, ‘misgovernment makes the people rebel’,

right? Haih..." everyone sighed heavily when they found out what happened to Malindor.

However, a virtual story would always be fake. Although there might be a similar tragedy happening somewhere on earth, completing the quest would be their uttermost important task right now!

"Kill!"

Zhang Yang and his gang descended to the ground, and a chaotic melee ensued.

# Chapter 679: The Dark Rider

---

As usual, Zhang Yang was at the head of his gang. Right before he stepped foot onto the ground, his Phoenix pet had already opened up its mouth, spitting out a stream of blazing flames! The flames caused impressive damage values to the monsters.

However, these wolf guards had the ability to throw nets at players. They were throwing nets at Zhang Yang and his gang without stopping. The Flying Mounts were falling onto the ground one after another after being entangled in the nets. Even the legendary beast Phoenix pet could not escape such fate! Fortunately, they were just trapped. The nets did not affect their assaults at all.

However, it was not a pleasant experience to be trapped! Zhang Yang immediately leaped down from the back of Phoenix pet. Well, he had the Skill called 'Beast Taming' after all. His pet mount would not disappear even after he is separated from his pet mount.

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang clashed straight into the center of the horde and whirled his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. Even without his Transformation Skill activated, his Attack power was still as deadly as hell! Furthermore, Zhang Yang was well known to infuse his 'Supporting Attack' into his attacks while he was battling against his enemies. He broke the monsters, one after another like they were made of thin paper!

After he managed to lure the monsters' attention to him, the rest of his gang began to unleash everything they had. AoE Skills were spammed over and over again by each of them. The HP bars of the monsters were reducing steeply. That really showed them how powerful the entire party was.

However, the Elite Tier monsters on this map were not comparable to those Elite Tier monsters in the previous maps that they had encountered before. The Attack power of these monsters were as powerful as the Attack power of a Mythical Tier boss! Even Zhang Yang would frown in misery as tens of these monsters could round up on him and beat him up.

Fortunately, these monsters were not on the same level as a boss after all. Any Status Restriction Skills were still effective. Zhang Yang only had to use his {Thunder Strike} in order to slow down the monsters' Movement Speed and restrict their movements. However, these wolf guards were not easy to take on either. Their [Net] could also restrict the players' movement. It would basically stop players from moving at all! Zhang Yang had to take his [Mobility Potion] to regain his movement again before he could make another move on the monsters.

However, the wolf guards also had {Charge}. They would randomly seek for one of the targets within range, and charge at the target. By doing so, their aggro values would be cleared out, completely. In other words, Zhang Yang would have to lure the monsters over to him again. Meanwhile, right after the aggro list of the monsters was cleared out completely, the monsters would immediately activate their {Strong Penetration,} causing a damage that would be 2 times higher than the damage they could cause with their normal attacks. Their Basic Attacks had reached up to

90,000 damage. They could still cause approximately 60,000 damage to Zhang Yang, even though Zhang Yang had Damage Immunity and other attributes!

If tens of these wolf guards could activate their {Strong Penetration} on Zhang Yang at the same time, Zhang Yang's \*ss would definitely be penetrated if he was not mounted on his pet mount!

The cooldown for {Charge} was the same as the cooldown for {Strong Penetration}. The monsters would use their {Strong Penetration} right after they used their {Charge}. Furthermore, the cooldowns for the two Skills were only 30 seconds. It could prove be fatal to take the explosive attack that could happen once in every half a minute head on!

Even Zhang Yang could not afford to be careless at that point. He had all his life-saving Skills on standby. He wanted to avoid any of his party members from being killed.

{Lure}!

Zhang Yang pulled Fantasy Sweetheart over to his side. That pretty little lady with two huge tits was almost hit by 5 monsters with their {Charge} at the same time. If Zhang Yang was just one split-second later, Fantasy Sweetheart's tits would have been crushed to jelly.

"Thank you, guildmaster!" Fantasy Sweetheart was speaking rather shyly. Well, that was her personality after all.

Zhang Yang replied her with a simple 'Hmm' and he continued to swing his [Sword of Purging Devourer] around. He activated his {Blast Wave} and stunned most of the monsters in front of them. He was working on luring the monsters over to him once more.

These monsters were really causing them a great deal of trouble. No wonder the quest was ranked as a Rank-A quest!

Well, Elite Tier monsters were merely Elite Tier after all. They only had a limited amount of HP. Furthermore, they did not receive any HP recovery support. Hence, the monsters began to die, one after another under the oppressive attacks of the gang. The guards that were protecting Malindor was getting lesser by the second! After killing the last guard by his side, Malindor became the last man standing in front of Zhang Yang and his gang.

Compared to his guards, Malindor was so much weaker than them. He was only a Normal Tier monster. Normal attacks would be more than enough to take him out.

"Master Sauron's plan must not be ruined by anyone! Especially by the likes of you!" A low pitch voice rumbled across the surroundings. When Zhang Yang and his gang turned around to look, all they could see was a skeletal horse racing towards them. There was a warrior wearing a full black set of battle armor sitting right on top of the horse. There was no way to differentiate which race the warrior belonged to. His body looked like he was in his prime.

[The Dark Rider, Sauron's Servant] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 160

HP: 10,000,000,000

Defense: 1,000,000

Magic Defense: 1,000,000

Melee Attack: 42,892 – 52,898

Skills:

[The Dark Rider's Kiss] Gives the target a fatal blow. If the target is hit, the target will die immediately, allowing The Dark Rider to recover 10% of his HP. If the Skill misses, The Dark Rider will be devoured by the force of darkness instead and lose 1% of his HP. Chanting time: 1 second. Range: 5 meters.

Note: The Dark Rider is one of the bodyguards of Sauron himself. There were nine of them in total. Every time Sauron is resurrected, they will rise from the depth of the death abyss and resurface to serve their master.

"F\*ck this sh\*t! Is this still considered an Elite Tier monster? That's 10,000,000,000 HP! Are you kidding me?!" Fatty Han screamed like a sissy girl.

"If the monster only has 10,000,000,000 HP, we can still take it down without much of a problem. Look at his Defence! That's a total of 1,000,000 Defence, 1,000,000 Magic Defence! Is this some kind of sick joke? How are we going to defeat that thing!?"

"Only noob tank and sister Sun can hurt that monster, because only both of them have {Eagle Eye}!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "We don't have to slay the monster! We just have to slowly make the monster kill himself! Look at his Skill. When any one of you gets locked on with {The Dark Rider's Kiss}, just immediately run 5 meters away from the monster. The monster will cause damage to himself and lose 1% of his HP! We just have to repeat the process for 100 times before he dies!"

"However, it's not easy at all to run 5 meters away from the monsters in 1 second!"

"Yes, that's why the quest is a Rank-A quest!"

Zhang Yang glanced at Malindor and said, "Daffodil, just kill Malindor instantly and get our quest done!"

"Roger!"

While they were talking to each other, The Dark Rider had arrived before them. Because the monster had overly high Defence



and Magic Defence, the gang had no other way but to make the monster kill himself slowly. The monster came to Han Ying Xue and marked her as his first target. With the long sword of his arm raised high in the air, A chilly radiance flashed across the monster and a progress bar suddenly appeared right beneath the head of The Dark Rider! The progress bar was filling up fast!

{The Dark Rider's Kill}!

As everyone had no idea how the sign would look like right before the Skill is activated, and the witchy Snow could not react in time. When she began to move away on her mount, the progress bar on The Dark Rider had filled up by 70%! Although the movement speed of a Flying Mount was extremely quick, it would only require one brief moment for the Flying Mount to get a starting step before it gains speed on moving around. Hence, the movement speed of the Flying Mount was not fast to begin with! So it was impossible for anyone to avoid the monster's strike!

{Lure}!

Zhang Yang quickly pulled Han Ying Xue to her side. By doing so, he managed to get Han Ying Xue out of the way of the attack! Coincidentally, the cooldown for Zhang Yang's {Lure} was over.

‘-10,000,0000!’

With The Dark Rider hitting nothing but air, a huge damage value popped up right on top of his head! The monster started to do a number to itself!

Daffodil Daydream began to pursue Malindor closely to prevent him from getting away. She was a ranged player. She threw out a {Fire Ball} swiftly at Malindor, without any hesitation. With her current Attack power, she only needed to strike Malindor twice with her attacks.

The moment the {Fire Ball} hit Malindor, the attack was nullified by a transparent barrier that shielded him. Instead of torching him, the fireball spread across the barrier and into the surroundings without touching Malindor at all!

Ineffective! It was as if Malindor had just activated an Invincibility Effect on himself!

Malindor only had one Skill on him, {Fire Ball}. He did not have any Skills that could grant him Invincibility Effect. So, he must have activated some sort of item or accessory.

--- The One Ring!

The entire body of Malindor was beginning to fade, as if he was activating a Skill similar to the Thief's Skill {Stealth}! Then, he vanished without a trace!

It was the ability of The One Ring, again!

"You shall not hurt My Lord's guest!" The Dark Rider let out an intimidating roar and charged towards Daffodil Daydream. The

horse was moving eerily fast! In one split second, the horse had arrived right behind Daffodil Daydream! The blade struck out again as The Dark Rider was activating his {The Dark Rider's Kiss}.

{Apparate}!

Daffodil Daydream instantly moved away from where she stood. She activated the one special Skill that Spellcasters could use. She moved 10 meters forward and got herself out of the effective range of the monster's attack range.

‘-10,000,0000!’

The monster had once again hurt himself and caused an immense damage to himself. The Dark Rider roared again and pulled his horse up. The horse also neighed clearly. Then it began to charge towards Zhang Yang. The monster once again struck out his blade!

It was another {The Dark Rider's Kiss}!

Zhang Yang patted his Phoenix pet immediately, the Phoenix pet fluttered its wings and began to move. Although they only had 1 second to get away, as long as the reaction is fast enough, anyone could get out of the effective range of The Dark Rider's attacks without using Skills like {Apparate} or {Tumble}.

‘-10,000,0000!’

"The Dark Lord shall rise again! The living shall tremble before

the dominion of the Dark Lord! Do not resist! Rest for eternity, in the arms of death!" The Dark Rider continued to shake the air and the surroundings with his voice, while he was whirling his blades aggressively. Although his normal attacks could not instantly kill anyone, players would still feel the pain after being attacked for multiple times. Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had to activate their Healing Skills whenever they were able to trying to maintain everyone's HP bar at maximum.

Malindor had vanished without a trace. So, everyone focused their attention towards the monster.

All 10 of them were high Tier players. Everyone was acting carefully to avoid the assaults from The Dark Rider. None of the {The Dark Rider's Kiss} had succeeded in landing on any of them. The long HP bar reduced steeply every time The Dark Rider missed. The rate of The Dark Rider activating his Ultimate Skill was not fixed, at all. Sometime, the monster would have activated it after 5 seconds. However, sometimes, the monster would only use his Ultimate Skill after waiting for over 20 seconds.

So, the monster would on average, activate his {The Dark Rider's Kiss} once every 10 seconds. 16 minutes later, the monsters only had over 3% HP left. Victory was within grasp!

Everyone did not lower down their guards at all. Upon activating 3 more {The Dark Rider's Kiss}, The Dark Rider with enormously long HP bar finally collapsed heavily onto the ground and died. Unfortunately, the Experience Points they earned by killing the monster was not 1,000,000,000 Experience Points. Instead, they only acquired 400,000 Experience Points!

Well, that should make sense at least. After all, they did not really kill the monster all by themselves. They were only making the monster kill himself without expending much effort, to be honest. So they should not have too much expectations towards the reward, from the beginning.

Upon bringing up the map, they saw that the red dot that represented Malindor had traveled quite some distance away. The gang quickly hopped onto their Flying Mounts and flew towards the direction of Malindor.

Half an hour later, they caught up to Malindor. When the Magic Apprentice saw Zhang Yang and his gang, he was shocked and angry at the same time. Then, he hustled himself forward without having the intention of stopping.

"You shall not hurt our Dark Lord's guest!" Another Dark Rider appeared from afar, charging straight towards Zhang Yang and his gang. With a swing of his hand, Zhang Yang and his gang were pulled down to the ground. Then the monster began to attack them aggressively.

Meanwhile, Malindor had vanished without a trace once again!

"What the f\*ck! Not again!" Fatty Han sighed heavily. "My hunch is telling me that the same thing would repeat itself the next time we catch up again!"

"There are a total of 9 Dark Riders. So there's no surprise that we

need to take them all out before we can get The One Ring!"

"This is outrageous! F\*ck!"

Everyone sighed miserably as they got themselves ready for another 'hide and seek' battle.

Fortunately, everyone had enough experience of dealing with this kind of crap after their first encounter with a Dark Rider. They could survive the onslaught of the monster at the least, now. After the repetitive 'hide and seek' game over 17 minutes, the second Dark Rider had also died of 'suicide'.

They went on to pursue Malindor, based on the map. As expected. Whenever they caught up with Malindor, there would be a new Dark Rider cutting in between the gang and Malindor. Upon repeating the same process over approximately 6 hours, Zhang Yang and his gang finally took out the ninth Dark Rider. They finally caught up to Malindor for the tenth time!

# Chapter 680: The One Ring

---

"Malindor!" Zhang Yang roared and dove downward. He jumped off the fiery bird before the Phoenix could reach ground level. He sustained a little fall damage but got up and immediately grab Malindo's shoulder. "You were once a human like us all! Do you wish for the fall of the earth?! Do you wish for all that is living to fall to evil!?"

"What do you know!? I'm doing this for my sister!" Malindor snarled at Zhang Yang. The ring in his finger gleam with a bright radiance.

The ring was so weak in battle, yet it possessed powerful protection powers. The attack that should have killed Malindor had failed to do so, for he had used The One Ring. Even if the Dark Riders does not make an appearance, it would be hard to even kill Malindor alone.

"You would allow the Darkness to swallow earth. This is the price you would willing to pay? Just to save your sister?! If you have even the slightest decency in your soul, you would know that it is wrong! Your sister would be greatly disappointed in you!" Zhang Yang continued trying to wake him up. "The needs of the many is far greater than the needs of you! Do you wish to let your sister see her one brother becoming a demon!?"

"Woah. Zhang Yang might have the potential for Hollywood. He's got them gifts, yo!" cried Fatty Han.

Malindo staggered a little. The ring in his fingers started to dim down a little.

Zhang Yang took this chance to attack. He commanded the Phoenix to attack and dealt 92,122 damage to Malindor, instantly killing him.

Everyone sighed with intense relief. Malindor was extremely difficult to defeat. If Zhang Yang had not tried to use words to sway him, Malindor might have just used The One Ring and escaped!

"URGH! ARGH! ARRRGHHH!" When Zhang Yang thought it was over, Malindor's body jerked. Whether he was dead or not, his eyes flung open and glowed. Dark light blasted out of his eye sockets as he screamed in horror. Dark smoke gushed out of his mouth and solidified into a humanoid outline. It shared the same appearance as Malindor and was equipped with razor sharp nails.

[Malindor's Vengeful Spirit] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 155

HP: 4,650,000

Defense: 6,280

Melee Attack: 40,070 – 50,070



## Skills:

[Echo Scream]: Howls and deals 100% melee physical damage to all targets within an area in front of the caster.

Note: Malindor was unable to rest in peace, as he was unable to let go of her sister.

Once the Vengeful Spirit formed, it lunged itself at Zhang Yang at a sonic speed.

"Malindor! I'd promise you! I will save your sister! In the name of Queen Serena, I will make sure that she will live a happy life!" Zhang Yang roared as he lifted his shield to block his attack.

"Lies...You...lie...Cannot believe...Empty...promise..." Malindor's mouth was not moving, yet his demonic voice could be heard echoing through the place.

"Little Yang, waste no time. Kill him again." Fatty Han drew his arrow back and shot the spirit, dealing powerful damage despite having high Defense. Everyone else joined in the attack and quickly attacked the spirit until it was almost dying.

"STOP!" Zhang Yang shouted and stopped everyone else from attacking the near-dead Vengeful Spirit.

"Look at this! If we want to kill you, we can do it easily! I understand you. Trust me. I do. We understand your pain. We can kill you and end this fight right here, right now! But we choose to understand, to empathize you! I-No! We give you our word. We will save your sister!"

Malindor's Vengeful Spirit staggered. Right then, he knew that the party had the ability to finish him off easily and erase his existence. He could no longer lie to himself and chose to surrender. "Believe...you. Sister...love...so much..."

"Rest in peace. Your sister will be saved. I promise."

"Promise..."

'Ding! Malindor' Vengeful Spirit has a quest for you: Save my sister! Will you accept it?'

Everyone accepted the quest and nodded at Malindor.

The black clouds on Malindor's Vengeful Spirit started to glow brightly with a warm yellow light. The malicious spirit in his soul was cleansed and turned the adult, hostile being into a young boy. Malindor smiled innocently in his white spirit form and slowly floated to the sky before scattering into particles.

Malindor turned into a Spectre for he was unable to let go of the will to save his sister. Now that he was able to entrust the mission to Zhang Yang, Malindor had set himself free and was able to

release himself and depart for the afterlife.

"The RING! THE RING! I bet it's a Celestial tier!" Wei Yan Er jumped at Malindor's dead body once the spirit had disappeared. Malindo's defeat had given the party only one drop, which was a deep crimson ring that ended up in Wei Yan Er's possession.

[The One Ring] (Quest Item)

Description: Forged in the fires of Sunfall Volcano. Possesses absolute power over evil.

The little girl was astonished. The ring was not an equipment!

'Ding! The Shadow Demon Sauron has found the ring in your possession. He has dispatched a large force to reclaim the ring! Make your way back to General Turkin Han with haste, for the war will soon erupt!'

Everyone in the party received the system notification.

"Well. Let's go, then." Zhang Yang jumped on his Phoenix pet and soared to the sky with haste. Everyone else followed speedily and followed Zhang Yang back to Hannier Valley. In just 2 hours, Zhang Yang and the party had arrived and they spoke to General Turkin Han.

"I had doubts that you cannot make it back alive! Hah! You have proven me wrong! Well done, brave ones!" General Turkin Han

was surprised when Wei Yan Er handed over the ring to him and praised the entire party.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Fight for The One Ring! Obtained 20,000,000 experience points!'

Even though the quest nor the boss fight had any equipment rewards, 20 million experience points made it all rather worthwhile.

"The Shadow Demon Sauron will send a large army to have this ring back," said Turkin Han. "Hm. In that case, the defenses of Sauron's lair will be left bare! Brave adventurers, I plead to you all. For all the beings that live and breathe, please take the ring with you and defeat the Shadow Demon at his own lair! Defeat him and cast all of his evil followers into the abyss!"

'Ding! General Turkin Han has a quest for you: Strike the Heart. Will you accept it?'

Accept!

'Ding! You have received an item: The One Ring!'

After everyone accepted the quest, Zhang Yang, as the party leader took the ring from General Turkin Han. At then, The One Ring's true powers was revealed to the world.

[The One Ring] (Celestial, Ring)

Vitality: +30876

Strength: +3889

Dexterity: +3889

Intelligence: +3889

Spirit: +3889

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 15%

Equip: Absorbs 3,374 damage on attack.

Use: Nullifies certain power of the Shadow Demon Sauron.  
Cooldown: 60 seconds. Range: 30 meters.

Level Requirement: 300

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 300 Levels.

Note: The One Ring will only be active in the Castle of Sauron. It will disappear from the world after the Shadow Demon is defeated.

A real Celestial tier equipment!

Even Zhang Yang, a man that came from the future, had never laid eyes on a real Celestial tier equipment!

The ring was extremely beautiful for its glow radiant with everchanging colors of the rainbow.

"Argh! Too bad the ring can only be used in Sauron's Castle!"

"And it will be deleted after the quest ends!"

Everyone was saddened by the fact. As a result, they took turns equipping the ring just to get a chance of it.

"Hehe! Noob tank! This ring belongs to me now!" Once Wei Yan Er got hold of the ring, she ran away and put up a defensive guard.

Fatty Han laughed manically for a while and said, "Little Yan Er, the ring cannot simply be taken like that? Are you trying to upgrade yourself from an aunt to a wife?"

"Pfft! Eat dirt!" Han Ying Xue stabbed Fatty Han with her blunt staff.

Zhang Yang was fine with Wei Yan Er holding the ring. Since the ring was just a tool, it would not have a long-lasting effect. In fact, based on the ring's description, the strongest aspect of the ring was the HP boost. Without {Vitality Aura} Zhang Yang would have

35,498 Vitality point. The ring's Vitality boost was extremely high! However, the Strength value was not as strong as everyone thinks it would be. Without {Strength Aura}, Zhang Yang would only have 10,319. It is true that the ring could boost Zhang Yang's damage by a notch. but not to an overwhelming extent. Whoever holding the ring would only contribute to the overall party DPS. He would only need to control the aggro, and he was good at it.

Hence, after equipping the ring, the little brat had gained a massive boost to her HP. Her attack was raised up to be on par with Zhang Yang. However, despite both of them dealing the same amount of damage, Zhang Yang had the tanker additional aggro generation skill, hence, he was not afraid of the little girl going OT on him during a boss fight.

While others would also have liked have to have the "feel" of using a Celestial tier equipment during a boss fight, they had failed to win over little Yan Er's heart.

"Little brat, I'm fine with you taking the ring SELFISHLY, but don't forget to use the ring's special effect. Even though it is unknown, based on the lore and the description, it will be important to decide our victory during the boss fight!" said Zhang Yang. He was really afraid that the little brat might get over her head during the battle and forget to use the ring's effect.

"Relax...Chill!" said Wei Yan Er as she patted her chest with confidence. Han Ying Xue had taken the chance and startled the little girl by rubbing her chest and said, "Tch...I thought I saw some curves there. My mistake, it's still as flat as an ironing board."

The little girl was infuriated and started twisting and kneading at Han Ying Xue's chest forcefully. Naturally, while Han Ying Xue was fighting off the little girl, Fatty Han, Lost Dream, and Endless Starlight were rooting for Wei Yan Er.

General Turkin Han gave Zhang Yang a piece of leather skin map which displayed a long pathway that was a detour that had lengthened the journey to Sauron's Castle. However, as he had mentioned earlier, the pathway was meant to be longer for it was an alternate pathway that could help the party to completely avoid the army of Sauron.

"Brave ones, I wish you good luck! May the Goddess of War favor you all! With our current battle strength, we are completely outmatched by 1000 to 1. However, that doesn't mean that we would not fight. We will stand ground and fight to buy you some time. Once the Shadow Demon is killed, all of his followers will be sent back to the abyss. The world will be saved only if you can kill the heart of evil!" General Turkin Han saluted.

Zhang Yang saluted back. The party then took off to the sky with their mount and continued their journey to kill the demon.

According to General Turkin Han's explanation, the army of Sauron would have flying units patrolling in the sky, including Wyverns. Hence, Zhang Yang and his party would have to avoid using the main pathway of the castle to avoid being detected. If they are found, they would be forced to fight on land by the dragons and would be killed by the overwhelming numbers of soldiers.



"Say...even monsters would have flying mounts. Why didn't Malindor just get himself straight to Sunfall Volcano by flying straight there? Wouldn't it be easier and fast!?" said Endless Starlight as he discovered the massive plot hole.

"...Well, there had to be some stories and dramas...opportunities for us to get quests..."

"Yeah! If the enemy is so smart, all the main characters in the story would not even survive for a single day!"

"Then again, since The One Ring have such a powerful anti-evil energy thingy, the Wyvern might have reacted badly when the ring is close to him!"

"...In that case, he could have just rented the Griffon taxi service!"

"..."

"Are you done talking c\*ck?"

# Chapter 681: Sauron's Castle

---

Sauron's castle was located at the center of Mar Gaia Forest. Be it from any direction, it was the same distance from any direction in the thick forest. It was both easy to move around, and hence was one of the major factors of any Territory which made it easier to defend.

The little party flew for 2 hours before they approached the castle. From afar, they could already see the silhouette of the castle. Zhang Yang could roughly guess from the sheer size of it, that it was at least 10 times the size of Morning Town. The castle walls were thick and tall. There were many magic cannons situated on top and around the castle. Inside the castle compound were tall buildings that were built extremely close to each other. However, despite the congested towering structure, there one tower that stood tall, overshadowing all other structures. Located dead center was a towering structure that had to be at least 300 meters tall. On the top of the tower, the single shaft of the tower split into two like a fork, and there was a large magical black orb that hovered between the forks.

Zhang Yang scoffed. That would obviously be the Shadow Demon Sauron.

Sauron had only managed to resurrect his one eye. However, according to General Turkin Han's explanation, the Shadow Demon will have the rest of his anatomy follow, soon after. If that is to happen, darkness shall envelop the earth. Rains of blood and fire shall befall and all that live and breathe shall cease to be.

Zhang Yang led the entire party and tried to infiltrate the fortress through the airspace. However, once they were close to the castle wall, the giant orb opened its eye lid and revealed its burning fiery red pupil to the world. With one quick beam of light, the entire party, including Zhang Yang was killed.

[Eye of Absolute Obliteration]: Blasts a death ray and deals 200,000 damage to all targets within 30 meters around. If the target is far away, damage will be increased by 100% every 10 meters. Longest Range: 10 kilometers. Unable to attack targets at ground level.

The eye of Sauron had 10 kilometers range of attack, that would mean that its aggro range was also 10 kilometers long. The airspace was completely sealed off as a death zone. If either one of them tries to fly, it would be an instant death. The only way to enter the castle was to knock on the doors!

Everyone revived and got on their battle mounts. However, instead of flying, they rode the mount and galloped across the ground. Even though they were now free from that laser beam of death, the magic cannons on the castle would still be able to bombard them.

Pew!

A bright beam blasted off the cannons and created a small crater at the point of attack. Lost Dream and Hundred Shots had taken exactly 200,000 damage. When the attack struck, the party happened to be spread out. Hence, the cannons' small radius of attack had only managed to hit two of them. Fantasy Sweetheart

and Han Ying Xue quickly got to work and healed the two of them back.

Pew! Pew!

Two more cannons blasted and attacked the party once more. Small craters started to form all around the battlefield, and Fatty Han nearly fell into one of them.

Zhang Yang immediately activated {Vanguard's Aggression} to protect everyone and headed towards the castle wall. When {Vanguard's Aggression} ended, Endless Starlight cast the same spell and protected everyone. Two skills, 20 seconds, should be enough for their mounts to travel as far as 1 kilometer, however, since they were not flying but galloping, their speed was not too fast. Hence, they merely traveled close to 500 meters.

Since the magic cannons had a range of 300 meters, by the time Endless Starlight's {Vanguard's Aggression} ended, everyone had managed to get cover behind the blind spot of the cannons.

Now that they had arrived at the enemy's front line, the defenders started to retaliate. The large stone slabs opened up and a sea of monsters rushed out. Amongst the monsters, there were orcs. However, unlike the Red-Skinned orcs and the Green-Skinned orcs, the orcs inside Sauron's Castle were deep, mud-like green.

[Demonic Orcs] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 160

HP: 104,440

Defense: 4,260

Melee: 20,992 – 30,992

Skills:

[Instant Rage]: Increases attack power by 20% for 15 seconds.

Note: Created by merging the life of orcs and treants. By trading off their Intelligence, they possess powerful fighting capabilities.

Fatty Han raised an eyebrow and asked, "How did an orc and a treant merge?"

"...Do you really want to know?"

"Urr...Perhaps not. Not even if you pay me."

"Kill!" The Demonic Orcs wielded many different types of weapon. They had long swords, clubs, pike, spear, and even something as oddly shaped as a broken limb of another orc! However, they seemed not to care of their weapons as the red glow in their eyes burnt with a berserked rage and a lust for battle!

"Fufu! What maniac!" cried Zhang Yang as he swung his sword vertically and dealt over 80,000 damage. With a little Rage points gained, Zhang Yang cast {Blast Wave}.

WHAM! WHAM!

'-29,410!'

One cone shaped wave of compressed air blasted out and dealt damage to more than 10 monsters. The sword procced and repeated the attack once more. Seeing that only one additional blast was created, Zhang Yang sighed heavily. If the sword's Echo effect had not been nerfed so greatly, Zhang Yang's single blast of {Blast Wave} could have procced over and over again until 30% of the monster's HP are gone before stopping.

But then again...It was for the best. Zhang Yang could not bear to think that if a similar weapon with a similar effect existed somewhere else in the world. It would be extremely broken!

However! A stronger "broken" killer machine had just arrived! The Phoenix drew in a deep breath and blasted out a 20 meters long flame that dealt more than 80,000 damage to all monsters that was in front of it. In that situation, the Phoenix was definitely much stronger than anyone around!

Die! Die! Die!

The Demonic Orcs only had 100,000 HP. With the combined power of Zhang Yang AoE attacks and the Phoenix's normal attacks, the monsters were killed almost instantly! Hmph, as expected of normal tier monsters, they did not stand a chance against the Phoenix! Come one come one million, they would all face the same fate!

And that was just one! Fatty Han's Phoenix was much stronger! Fatty Han had positioned his Phoenix right next to Zhang Yang's, allowing the two birds to cover most of the frontal attack position. With both Phoenixes attack simultaneously, no monster could get close to them without dying. While the rest could only land one to two hits, more than a hundred orcs would have already died.

"Nice! Farming experience points had never been so easy!" said Fatty Han happily.

"Fatty bro is so strong~ I'll leave myself in your care~~" Endless Starlight posed as a girl and tried to catwalk towards Fatty Han.

After acquiring the Phoenix, Fatty Han's leveling speed had skyrocketed to a point where he could be faster than Sun Xin Yu if he does not slack off like a pig! Zhang Yang had always lectured him about it, yet Fatty Han felt no need of being the highest level. As long as he is the same as the average level of players in the core party member, he would not spend extra time to grind.

"F\*ck off! If I were to take care of someone, I would have asked for Little Sweetheart there!"

When Fantasy Sweetheart heard Fatty Han's sudden confession, she blushed madly and said, "I'm so sorry Fatty bro. I...I...I've already have someone I like."

While they were joking around nonchalantly, the party had made their way into the castle walls and proceeded to kill their way towards the tower. Out of the corner, a mysterious figure flashed across the street. Zhang Yang reaction was fast. Much faster than average humans around. With quick reflexes, the shadowy figure glided through the floor and struck Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang already had his shield ready and the sudden attack struck his shield.

PANG!

Based on the sound of the metal, Zhang Yang felt it was something light and flat, yet possessed such a powerful force that he was pushed a few steps back. He lowered his shield and saw the weapon that had attacked him was a long swirly whip.

The whip flashed around in the air before returning to the hands of the owner. The figure walked out of the shadows and revealed itself to be a slender woman tightly wrapped in leopard-skinned tights. She was a beautiful elf with skin as fair as snow. Her eyes were radiating with life and her long, emerald green hair swayed like the whip itself. The tight leopard skin tights were so tight that it squeezed her chest upward. Every step she took sent the upper portions of it jiggling!

[Anita – The Light of Stars] (Ethereal, Humanoid)



Level: 160

HP: 160,000,000

Defense: 10,490

Melee Attack: 80,772 – 100,772

Skills:

[Iron Whip]: Strike hard and fast, dealing 150% melee physical attack to a target.

[Shadow Whip]: Flash the whip at super-sonic speed, dealing 100% melee physical attack to all targets within 30 meters. Knockback.

Note: Once a brave fighter of the Elves. Possessed and subdued by the power of Sauron and became a faithful follower.

"Phew~" Fatty Han whistled. "That's one smexy elven chick right there! How could I lay a hand on her!" said Fatty Han as he stared at the boss' perky bouncing while drooling like a deranged dog.

"Fatty bro...When you say you can't lay on her. Could it be that your little wee wee has failed you!?" Endless Starlight pretended to gasp.

"...Ask Xiao Wei about it then. Or better yet, ask your mom!"

By then, everyone level and equipment tier were not the same when they initially fought the first Inheritance quest boss. They were, in fact, far stronger than before. Plus, even Mythical tier bosses were nothing but scraps for the party! Though Anita may have strong attacks, she lacked the one skill that made any boss a tough fight. That is, the HP recovery skill.

Since the aggro was already on him, Zhang Yang picked up his sword and charged towards the boss on the back of the Phoenix. The first attack that landed on the boss was the {Spear of Obliteration}. It was to build more damage based aggro.

"Little Yang, do we need to activate any Transformations?" said Fatty Han.

"Nope. Not needed really. This boss is not that strong anyway. We can still kill it easily. Reserve the Transformation skill for the final boss. Who knows how strong would he be!"

"There's no need to think about the future, for all of you will die here!" Anita voice rang like a train horn. True to her race and appearance, she moved at such speed that perhaps, only Zhang Yang could follow. She jumped into the air and lash out her whip, binding Zhang Yang's throat tight like a viper's talon.

"URGH!"

Zhang Yang had used {Block} earlier from the first attack and could not block the incoming attack. The whip wrapped around his neck so tightly that he could not breathe for a second. Luckily, when she attempted to choke Zhang Yang, he was smart enough to rush over to her side to loosen the tension of the whip. When the whip was loosened off, a deep red mark was imprinted on his neckline. Such an attack had caused Zhang Yang difficulty in breathing! Not to mention the loss of the ability to consume potions.

Although the attack was not a skill, it does carry an additional effect. For example, attacks that hit a player's eyes could cause temporary blindness and the inability to lock on to a target. Asphyxiation would cause temporary immobility. There were various effects that would not cause damage but would greatly inconvenience players.

Luckily for Zhang Yang, he does not need to consume any potion! For he has the great Milkmaid Deity around to heal him with her "milk"! All he had to do in the fight was to maintain his attacks and keep the boss to himself.

Everyone else surrounded the boss in all directions and landed earth, fire, and storm-like attacks.

Anita remained unfazed and smirked coldly. With a quick swing of her whip, her hands made movements that was unlike what anyone had seen before. Everyone was instantly blown away.

Zhang Yang held his shield up high despite {Block} still being on cooldown. He knew that the attack was the {Shadow Whip} that deals AoE attacks and knockback effects.

Zhang Yang jumped off the Phoenix and activated {Charge} right at the moment when his foot touched the ground. With incredible speed, Zhang Yang glided across the floor and struck the boss.

"Your fight will be for naught! Master shall return to walk on this world soon. Everything that exists shall be his to rule!" Anita's eyes turned cold. Her face stiffens as it slowly became devoid of emotions. Her whip lashed out again. This time, it was targeted directly at Zhang Yang and had a slight metallic luster!

Pishh!

The whipped had dealt more than 70,000 damage on Zhang Yang, even when he was already activated {God of War's Shield} that granted him 20% additional damage reduction. D\*mn...Never should have underestimated the boss. Even though Anita was just a side character in the entire map, her damage power was still deadly.

In that case...

{Charge Up Strike}!

{God of War Devastation}!

'-869,283!'

Zhang Yang dished the same pain that Anita had served him. In fact, by multiple folds! The instant of damage that reached as high as 800,000 damage sent fear returning to her facial expression.

"Nyehehe! Watch me, noobie tank!" Wei Yan Er ran up to the boss and wanted to show off as well. They were already within the region of Sauron's dominion, hence, The One Ring had its stats and effect active. The little brat struck out a normal attack and dealt 127,400 damage. Zhang Yang smiled as her normal attack had already exceeded Zhang Yang's.

"YEAH!" Wei Yan Er cried happily and lunged at the boss.

{Dark Vengeance}!

'-318,500!'

Sadly, the little brat did not have the skill {Charge Up Strike}. Even though her normal attack may have surpassed Zhang Yang, her attack burst via skills was still far from Zhang Yang.

# Chapter 682: Orc Leader Grandlar

---

By having higher upper damage limit, does not mean the Zhang Yang would have higher DPS than Wei Yan Er. After all, Zhang Yang's {Charge Up Strike}'s cooldown time was 60 seconds. He could not confirm that all of his skills would deal Critical strikes!

Then again, as expected of a Celestial tier equipment, even though the stat boost was just from a single ring, it had nearly increased Wei Yan Er's overall performance by 30%!

Anita was greatly pushed back. Despite having strong AoE skills that could deal high damage and possessing knockback effects, the skill was suppressed by having a long 30 seconds cooldown. Under heavy fire, the boss could not even retaliate in a proper manner.

When it comes to this, the boss was still in fact, a main character from the villain's perspective. Now that the boss had taken a toll, many orcs came out rushing from nowhere and attacked the party. Although the orcs did not have strong attacks nor HPs, the monsters do have the numbers. With sheer volume alone, they could even kill a tank as strong as Zhang Yang!

Finally feeling frustrated with the sudden appearance of the orcs, Zhang Yang cried, "Starlight! Take the monsters!"

"Roger that!"

Endless Starlight rode off with his mount and activated {Devotion}. Once the monsters were all effected by the Aura

damage, Endless Starlight triggered {Saint Storm} to deal massive AoE damage and aggro to all monsters.

Once the monsters were all drawn to Endless Starlight, Zhang Yang changed the Phoenix's attack targeting to assist Endless Starlight. Since the Phoenix's normal attack were AoE types, it would be extremely efficient at killing normal monsters in a large amount! Fatty Han joined the fray and sent in his Phoenix as well. With two Legendary Beast and one strong tank in play, no menial monster could survive to tell the tale!

Once all the random orcs were taken care of, the boss had nowhere else to run nor rely on. She had to take all the damage like a good punching bag from the party.

Although 160,000,000 HP seemed a lot, the boss was not a match with the massive DPS rainfall of the party. They merely took 5 minutes to kill the boss! It was all due to the newly obtained weapons and armor, not to mention the new Celestial tier ring that Wei Yan Er had!

Once Anita fell, Wei Yan Er was the first to jump to the dead boss' body and loot the items as fast as she could. She feared that Zhang Yang might remember about the punishment that he had imposed on her earlier on.

"Woohoo! We've hit the jackpot! Three Ethereal tier equipment, yo!" Wei Yan Er screamed. With the three equipment in her embrace, she rubbed her face all over them like they were her precious babies.

Zhang Yang did not spare any time to entertain her but yelled sternly, "Time to make a move on!"

"Hey hey hey! Noobie tank! Isn't it time for us to check out the goods for a moment, at least?" cried Wei Yan Er as she was still slobbering all over the equipment.

"Check out what? You think we're still in Kandiya Grassland or Gilstein?! The bosses here are not even the strong ones yet! All the drops would not be special! Just take a look at them! I'm 100% sure that they would have no reduced level special effect!" Zhang Yang snapped.

"Ah--" Wei Yan Er stuttered and took a look at the acquired equipment. As Zhang Yang had mentioned, all the equipment were Level 160 and did not possess any reduced level special effect.

"Tch!" Wei Yan Er clicked her tongue. With a greatly disgruntled facial expression, she kicked a tiny fallen helmet to the side and scorned. "What a useless boss! Making me all hyped up and all! Tch!"

Everyone could not spare any tiny attention to Wei Yan Er's acts and pressed on.

The number of monsters appearing on were continuous, without stopping. Eventually, they had reached to a point where the monster's tier was upgraded from normal tier to elite tier. Instead of orcs, they were wolf riding soldiers.



The wolf riders were a little troublesome due to their skills. They had a skill that could throw a net to immobilize a person. They could also rush over and stun someone like Zhang Yang's {Charge} skill. After stunning, they could follow up with a powerful blow which was the real threat to the party. As they proceeded onwards, Zhang Yang was careful not to draw in too many monsters at one go. They would all have to be careful since if they are all killed in this part of the quest, they might as well give up fighting the boss.

However, despite the increasing difficulty, the monsters provided the party with luxurious experience points which everyone enjoyed greatly. They were even wishing for the route to be endless so that they could all grinding effortlessly without running around too much, until they reach Level 160!

However, wishes were wishes after all, for the reality was shortly revealed. After the long pathway onward, the party reached a large plaza and found the second boss.

It was a similarly dark-green skinned orc but instead of standing on its own, the orc was seated atop an abnormally large wolf! He was scouting around casually, with a shield in his left arm and long spear in his right.

[Orc Leader Grandlar] (Ethereal, Humanoid)

Level: 160

HP: 160,000,000

Defense: 10,490

Melee Attack: 80,594 – 100,594

Skills:

[Net]: Tosses nets at all directions, 30 meters around the caster. Traps and immobilizes all targets for 10 seconds.

[Sloth's Punishment]: While moving, targets will be inflicted with 20,000 Natural damage every 3 seconds for 15 seconds. However, every second the target stops moving, the damage inflicted will increase by 100%.

[Bone to Dust]: Ignores all Defense value and deals 150% melee physical damage. If the target is stationary, damage inflicted will be increased by 100%.

Note: During his birth, Grandlar had bitten down and mauled his own biological mother to death. The creature was born vile and vicious to the core. The lust of war and battle was born in his soul!

"Noobie tank! Look! Look! Even the ugly butt orc could equip a shield on one hand and a two-handed weapon on his other! Looks like the so-called God of War Inheritance is not something so rare after all! Nishishishi!" Wei Yan Er casually gave Zhang Yang a backhanded slap.

Zhang Yang shrugged and laughed. "Yeah. It might be. However, I seem to recall that a certain little flattest girl would die to have the Inheritance!"

"Ouuuu! Burn!"

Hundred Shots interjected in as he was trapped by the net. "What a troublesome skill! Paired with that DoT effect, the overall damage is extremely painful!"

Hundred Shots was right. Since the first tick of the DoT skill was 20,000 damage for the first instance. Once the net has successfully trapped someone, they would be considered to be stationary even though it is involuntary. Once they are rendered motionless, the 100% increase effect will kick in, hence, increasing the DoT damage to 40,000 damage. At the 10 seconds, the damage will be increased to 100,000 damage! It was indeed powerful for a DoT effect. If the skill {Net} is casted more frequently, the party would sustain a lot of damage.

"Don't be stingy on the Mobility Potion! Use them immediately if you are trapped! Do not let the skill kill you!"

Zhang Yang hurled himself towards the boss while spamming {Blast Wave} on the boss while mounted on the Phoenix.

"Here it comes!"

The boss snarled, exposing his massive fangs and growled.

"Hahaha! Free food for me! How long has it been since I last craved for the flesh of Human and Elf!" Grandlar brandished his spear like the blades of a helicopter and lunged at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang anticipated the attack and raised his shield, facing directly at the boss. However, he had made a grave mistake, for the boss did not use the spear as a thrusting attack, instead, the boss used the spear like a huge pole and smacked Zhang Yang from the top and hit his head. Zhang Yang had a split-second movement to shift his shield upward and managed to block the damage successfully. However, he had also seriously underestimated the boss' strength. The attack had created a massive impact and vibrated the shield like a cymbal in a music band. Zhang Yang could have sworn that his fingers had almost given up! Even the Phoenix pet was slammed downward.

Infuriated, the Legendary Beast squawked with rage and made a quick turn and blasted the orc with a strong flamethrower attack.

"ARGH! I hate fire!"

At then, the boss was enraged and retaliated by thrusting, piercing, bashing, and many more unorthodox methods of using the spear.

Zhang Yang returned every attack he received to the boss with additional fury! His attacks were brought up at the battle, especially since the skill {Charge Up Strike} is paired with {God of War Devastation} could deal at least 9 times the normal attack damage. His attacks were so powerful that no one else but Zhang Yang could make the boss squeal in pain! Felice and the Phoenix

were also Ethereal tiered hence, their attacks were no weaker than the boss himself, albeit having much lesser HP.

"I will kill! I WILL KILL ALL UNTIL THERE IS NONE LEFT!" The boss bellowed with might and fury. He flicks his hands and sends rays of blood-red light to the party members. It was the skill {Sloth's Punishment}!

"Stand still!" Just a few seconds later, the boss bellowed again and unleashed a fan of nets to all directions, entrapping everyone, including their Battle Companions.

Spellcaster and Hunters had skills to "teleport" away to safety. {Apparate} and {Tumble} both had only 30 seconds cooldown, hence it would be the first skill to use during scenarios like that. On the other hand, Warrior and the other class' status removing skill had a long, 1-minute cooldown. (Note: Warrior's Will cooldown will be 1 minute only if it is maxed out). Hence, when everyone was trapped by the nets, Zhang Yang and the others had immediately used their Mobility Potions to free themselves immediately.

It was the first {Net} skill. Besides the Battle Companions, the skill was not a threat to anyone else. Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were able to focus their healing power on the Battle Companions, hence their load was eased off greatly. Even though the Battle Companions DPS were so insignificant, every bit of help counts during a crucial fight, hence it was practical to rescue them.

'-160,654!'

Zhang Yang was a little slow. Right after the boss tossed out his nets, he made a preemptive strike on Zhang Yang and used {Bone to Dust} on him. The damage dealt to him was extremely powerful, and everyone had to gasp in horror. Even the wielder of the God of War Inheritance had taken more than 160,000 damage! Imagine if it were someone else...

It was inevitable. Consuming potions brought out the slow process of taking out the bottle and gulping down the magical liquid down a person's throat. It was a process unlike skills that could be activated with a single thought.

After a series of rounds, Zhang Yang had calculated the frequency of the skill {Sloth's Punishment}. It will be used once every 15 seconds. It was as if the skill had a permanent Aura DoT effect. On the hand, {Net} will be cast once every 20 seconds which had surpassed the limit of all players around. At that moment, the overall party's HP was being hacked off speedily. Right then, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had to make a choice. They could either sacrifice the Battle Companion, or to bet on it all and heal everyone...Felice and Ankh were the only two Battle Companion that had the strongest DPS...

The boss was extremely troublesome and had so much HP that the entire battle was rather annoying. If Grandlar had 100 million HP, and had recovery skills, the battle will inescapably be dragged to more than an hour. If either Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart is unable to keep up with the healing, either of them would have to activate their Transformation skill!

However, the battle had only been 5 minutes, with no choice in hand, the party would have to bite down their frustration and consume potions for the moment.

Even though it was troublesome, the boss was not exactly tough. For Ethereal bosses were not the strongest bosses then!

Under the massive attack of fire and fury, the boss was killed in the end, leaving the entire party panting raggedly like a mad dog.

Although the experience points and loot were aplenty, Wei Yan Er solemnly picked up the loot as if she wanted to cry. Everyone had to laugh at her comical act.

After a good tease and rest, Zhang Yang pushed on and pressed forward.

After they proceeded, the number monsters appearing to obstruct their way increased in number. However, that was not enough to stop the demolition party from making their way to the tower! After a tiresome 3 hours of killing, the party had all arrived at the tower's basement in one piece.

rumble

"Did anyone felt that?"

"Yeah. It's a microquake."

rumble

"It's getting stronger now..."

"Ok. It's a proper earthquake!"

Right when Zhang Yang and the party had stepped on the floor of the tower, the entire castle quaked, like a massive earthquake was about to hit. Cracks formed in the ground and light burst out from them. The light all shot up and bent miraculously into the tower. The quake continued to rumble on violently, as if something was about to burst out from the ground like a monster from an eggshell!



# Chapter 683: The Dark One, Sauron

---

CRACK!

The earth split apart violently and out came a massive humanoid creature from within the creases. The monster crawled out and stood at nearly 30 meters tall. Fully clad in armor-like scales, the beast had a long, spiky tail, and a horn as long as its head, that stuck out of its forehead. The beast had only one eye which had taken almost half of its face's surface area. The dark, orange and black stripes pupil glared at the party with a killing aura so strong that it made a little visible crack on the rusted helmet on the ground.

[Shadow Demon Sauron, The Dark One] (Holy, Demon)

Level: 170

HP: 1,700,000,000

Defense: 17,660

Melee Attack: 140,086 – 200,086

Skills:

[Death Glare]: Blasts a powerful death ray towards a target within 30 meters. Deals 200,000 damage. Damage will be increased by

100% for every 10 meters a target is away from the caster.  
Maximum Range: 10,000 meters.

[Rotting Strike]: Wastes away a target's defenses and deals 150% melee physical attack.

[Shadow's Touch]: Deals True Strike damage to all targets within 50 meters. Deals 100% Shadow melee damage.

[Demon's Constitution]: Restores 1% HP every 30 seconds. Recovery amount would not be affected by any effect.

[Demon Unleash]: Becoming the demon that all fears. Increases damage by 1000%, movement speed by 1000%. Note: A certain item could dispel the effect.

Note: The embodiment of evil, shadow, and destruction. The Shadow Demon was born from the left eye of the Shadow God. Possess part of the Death God's power.

Holy tier!?

"Don't waste time! Use your Inheritance Transformation now!" Zhang Yang screamed at the top of his lungs. Zhang Yang was the first to transform and he unmounted the Phoenix to allow the beast to fly freely. Now that Sauron had entered the battle field, the Eye in the sky had changed, instead of only attacking units in the sky, it now attacked units that were also on the ground. Hence, there was no sense in anchoring oneself to the ground. Zhang Yang

instructed everyone to move around and not leave the boss' range. As long as they are within 30 meters, they would only receive 200,000 basic damage.

Zhang Yang sighed painfully. The boss had over 1 billion HP and could restore 1% or close to 570,000 HP every second! If everyone does not rely on their Inheritance, the total DPS of the party would not be able to even match the heals per second! The few methods of defeating this boss were the same as it was with any other open-world boss. You could either gather a small team of powerful DPS and healers, or two, to have a sea of players attack the boss in waves.

All sorts of Inheritance was used. Shadow Dancer...Milkmaid Deity...Darkness...Frost...

Everyone, including the two Phoenixes and Felice had used their Inheritances at once. It was one of the first few times the entire party, including the Battle Companion and the Pets, had used their Transformation skills altogether. It was, after all, their first battle with the game's first Holy tier boss!

Fortunately, the boss was only Level 170. If it were slightly higher, all of them would have suffered from the Level Suppression System!

"The world...is mine." Sauron raised his right hand to the sky with his palm opened wide. Storm clouds form at the top of the sky at the direction of his palm. With a powerful clench of his fist, the storm clouds crack a thunderbolt to the ground everywhere! It was merely a display of power. The sort of power that could change the

world at his will! The power of the Death God!

"Alright, guys. No time to admire his fancy tricks. It's time for us to kick his butt!" Zhang Yang soared towards the boss and launched his first barrage of attack.

'-278,383!'

Reserved Swing! {Charge Up Strike}!

'-2,687,166!' God of War Devastation!

Although the attack is good enough to kill anyone over and over again, the boss felt nothing but a tiny tick on his HP bar. It is expected, since the boss had over a billion HP. 1 million attack damage was nothing but a tiny prick. However, Sauron was still mad and glared at Zhang Yang with fury. His eyes glowed with an intense red hue and Zhang Yang knew it was time to dodge. However, the attack was instant and could not be evaded. A long beam of black ray blasted Zhang Yang, dealing 152,002 damage.

Zhang Yang took a direct hit but it was only a tiny bit of damage since he had over 20,000,000 HP. 100,000 damage was nothing but 1% of his total HP.

"Looking at the boss and our boss. I feel like big boss is the monster! Phew..." Endless Starlight cried.

"Yeah...Zhang Yang has always been a monster!"

"Noobie tank is not a monster! He is a meanie!"

Zhang Yang frowned and yelled. "What are you doing!? Stop talking and start fighting for god's sake!"

Everyone gulped down a mouthful of saliva and charged towards the boss with everything they had. At such a battle, those who had no Inheritance Transformation skill could only fill in the odd numbers up for their damage was too low. Players like Lost Dream and Hundred Shot had their mounts active since they could at least help their master deal a menial amount of damage. On the other hand, players like Sun Xin Yu or Daffodil Daydream had to unsummon their mounts since their Inheritances did not allow mounting. It's either keep or be killed by the boss in one hit.

{Shadow's Touch}!

Souron used his first AoE attack skill and unleashed countless waves of black, floating skulls around. The attack was of Indiscriminate attack type, which means, the attack will also deal damage to Souron's own lackeys, if they are within the area!

170,000 basic damage is strong enough for a hit. Even though everyone had already activated their Transformation skills and had their HPs boosted, the damage received was significant enough to put a toll on the healers. If Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had not obtained strong Inheritances, regular healing powers would not be enough.

After the first round of {Shadow's Touch}, everyone prepared themselves. However, just after 10 seconds of breathing room, the boss used {Shadow's Touch} again.

The prowess of a boss depends on its AoE skill prowess. Other factors, including the AoE skill was the most prominent. Sauron's 10 second {Shadow's Touch} frequency rate was not as powerful as Princess Serena with her rampaging. However, it is still strong enough to cause all 13 members of the party to take more than 220,000 damage a second. The amount of healing required to make sure everyone continue breathing would be extremely taxing.

The main point of the battle was that the boss does not have one skill. Sauron had been keeping Zhang Yang extremely busy by continuously bombarding Zhang Yang with attacks. Occasionally, he will also use {Death Glare} to harass other players around which causes a small disruption to the healers. If they were to lose just one member, the tide of the battle might shift dramatically towards the boss' side. The battle could be ended in a flash!

"Zhang Yang! Use the Forbidden Scroll!" Lost Dream panted tiredly.

The entire party had only possessed one [Forbidden Scroll] and it was the Absolute Bind. It would be effective to any targets under Level 180. The effect of the scroll is to bind a target at a certain chance every 3 seconds for 10 minutes! Zhang Yang contemplated for a while and decided to use the scroll since the scroll had an "expiry date" at Level 180.

"Alright. Get ready!"

Zhang Yang flipped open his Inventory UI and used the scroll to the boss.

CRACK! BOOM!

Not too long ago, when Sauron conjured the dark storm clouds out of nowhere, it was only within the vicinity of the tower while the rest of the skyline was still bright. However, when Zhang Yang used the [Forbidden Scroll], the entire skyline from horizon to the other horizon darkened immediately. Dark clouds swarmed in from all directions and crack a thunderbolt that was far larger and louder than Sauron's. The thunderbolt blasted down at Sauron and formed pillars of black pillars that were taller than Sauron! The pillars formed in a circular manner surrounding Sauron like a cage.

"What is the meaning of this!" Sauron growled. He then ignored the pillar, since it did not deal any damage to him, instead, he focused his attention on Zhang Yang and landed a {Rotting Strike}.

'-209,431!'

The skill was the boss strongest and most annoying single target skill. With almost 250,000 basic damage, it could kill 99% of all tanks in the world! However! It depends on the player's status, if they had a Transformation skill activate, it would be a whole different story.

Sauron pulled back his arms and crossed them boldly.

"Hmph. Such a pitiful being. The battle should have ended a long time ago!" Despite his demeaning speech, the boss was clearly disgruntled for dealing too weak of a damage on Zhang Yang. After a loud roar, Sauron's mono-eye glowed with an intense blood red hue. As he roared to the heavens, the horn on his forehead grew longer and larger.

"HMM!" With glowing red eyes, Sauron hurled his fist at Zhang Yang.

'-1,517,264!'

Zhang Yang lifted his shield, but it was useless. The attack crushed his legs into the earth.

Groaning with pain, Zhang Yang yelled. "Little brat!"

"Huh? Oh yeah! The ring!" Wei Yan Er aimed her ring at the boss and mentally activated its effect.

SHRING!

The ring glowed with an intense golden luster and blast out a golden ray. The light bent in midair and blasted Sauron's eyes.

"GRAH!" Sauron retreated as he covered his eyes. The horn on his forehead shrunk back to its normal size as he retreated.



The skill {Demon Unleashed} was casted by the boss. That was the reason why he could deal more than a million damage in a single strike.

"THE ONE RING!" Sauron snarled through his teeth. "How do you possess The One Ring!? D\*mn! D\*mn it all! So be it! The One Ring is just a ring! A tiny piece of metal from the gods! I am the King of the Shadows! I am the Dark One! I am Invincible!"

{Glare of the Death God}!

Zhang Yang jumped in heroically and casted the skill. However, the skill immediately bounced off the boss and rewarded Zhang Yang with one sad word. "Resist!"

"Feeble mortal! Weep in despair as you succumb to my powers!" Sauron roared and clawed Zhang Yang in midair as he fell back to the ground. However, just as he was about to touch Zhang Yang, black chains formed from nowhere and bound his movements, pulling Sauron back and locking him from moving!

The [Forbidden Scroll] effect had kicked in!

"Hmm...No matter from what angle I see it from. I just couldn't shake the feeling that the skill looks a lot like the fifty shades of BDSM," said Fatty Han as he smiled with a perverted expression.

Everyone took the chance to attack while the boss was

immobilized. Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had even tried to make use of the 10 seconds binding effect to recharge their MP and to heal everyone back to their full health.

Zhang Yang smirked. As expected of a [Forbidden Scroll]. Its effect was truly something powerful!

"D\*mn it all! I will kill you! I will consume your souls!" After 10 seconds, the chains broke off the boss and released the boss from the binding shackles. He then chased after Zhang Yang to attack. The boss was mad. How could he not be? He had been sleeping and accumulating his powers for ages. And when the time was ripe and it was his time to wreak havoc, he is being toyed with by a bunch of insects!

{Demon Unleashed}!

In less than a minute, to be precise, in just 50 seconds, the boss had used his ultimate power again. His eyes glowed with rage, his horn grew with power, his attack, speed, grew exponentially! Unfortunately, The One Ring effect had only a 1 minute cooldown! The boss had gained 10 seconds of advantage over the party!

In that 10 seconds, the boss could wipe the entire party clean! Hence, all they could do before the ring was ready to purge the boss' berserk state was to hold on as long as they can.

Just when the boss was about to land his attack after gaining a huge buff, the dark chains materialized again, binding the boss in place. Not even the boss could do anything about it by having

godlike powers! It was unfortunate for the boss. When the shackles were off and the boss was freed, Wei Yan Er blasted the boss with the ring's golden light.

"GRAH!" the boss cowered again. Blinded temporarily, the boss lunged himself blindly at Zhang Yang. He was the embodiment of Evil and Destruction! Even though he was not formed perfectly, he still a powerful entity! To be ridiculed by mere mortals with power of a piece of paper...

"Aiyayaya! What a poor boss." Fatty Han winced as he attacked from the side.

The skill {Demon Unleashed}'s cooldown countdown started counting down the moment the boss was "out" of the effect. Hence, The One Ring's cooldown will always be 10 seconds slower than {Demon Unleashed}. However, 10 seconds buffer period would not always be danger-free, since the chains from the [Forbidden Scroll: Absolute Bind] could not always proc at the right time. Hence, Zhang Yang had to use skills like {Shield Wall} to buy some time for the ring. If {Shield Wall} is on cooldown, there was nothing Zhang Yang could do then but to take the hit like a champ.

Luckily, his HP was that of a real champ. {Shield Wall} had only 2 minutes and 30 seconds cooldown. So, tanking 10 seconds of brutal punches from the boss was nothing to be worried about.

## Chapter 684: Dark Star Shield

---

The match goes on strong. As long as Zhang Yang could hold on for as long as he could, the healers stop death in its tracks, and members of the party do not get killed by {Death's Touch}, and nothing else could factor the fall of the party, in the end, the boss fight would only be a matter of time.

However, even if after activating Inheritance Transformation and gain 300% or 500% attack boss, it does not mean that their DPS would increase by 3 times or 5 times. It was a matter of calculation.

Take Zhang Yang for example, before any buff, Zhang Yang's raw attack power was 31,612 – 39,612. After adding up the equipment damage buff and the God of War Inheritance of 100% and 50%, the basic attack was increased to 79,030 – 99,303. After activating the God of War Transformation, the damage calculation would take the raw attack power into account. Which was  $(31,612 - 39,612) \times (250\% + 500\%) = 237,090 - 297,090$ . If he consumes a bottle of [Power Potion], the calculation would take the resulted attack power and multiply it by 140%.

Hence, technically, after activating the Transformation skill, Zhang Yang had only gained 3 times the attack power instead of 5. In his case, the stronger the equipment buff, the less percentage of the Transformation buff would add, since Zhang Yang himself was already at his peak. Taking into account the DPS of the other members, the ETA for the boss' defeat would be 53 minutes.

53 minutes would allow the boss to enrage 53 times. That leaves the party members 53 times of heart-stopping moments. The boss

would not only target Zhang Yang alone, but also deal AoE damage to everyone with the skill {Shadow's Touch}. Wei Yan Er was the only one in the party who had an extremely high Shadow resistance, allowing her to negate a large sum of damage. Other party members would also have a certain increased elemental resistance, however, there were players like Lost Dream, with only B class Inheritance who would take so much damage in a single hit that would deduct 25% of their total HP. Luckily for them, there were not many B class Inheritance players around, or else Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart would be having a tough time handling them.

The boss was just merely a Holy tier boss and not a world class open-world boss. Still, Sauron was still tough to defeat. In fact, everyone present there had equipment slightly lower than the "recommended" equipment tier. They were only able to hold on for so long, due to three S class Inheritance players and many A and B class Inheritance as well. Although B class was the lowest tier in their party, it was still strong enough to hold off the boss' attack. C class or lower Inheritance players would probably have fallen in the first two minutes. Han Ying Xue, being the one and only S class Healer Inheritance was able to heal everyone as if she was the Goddess of Healing. Thanks to her powerful healings and Fantasy Sweetheart helping out, the battle was made much easier.

They had also used the [Forbidden Scroll] to further ease off the difficulty of the battle. To put crudely, the boss will be stunned for 10 seconds every 30 seconds. 10 seconds was more than enough to provide breathing room for players to rest and recuperate. They could either take the chance to readjust their skill cycles, or to allow their skill to finish its cooldown.

80%...50%...20%...

A good amount of time was spent fighting the boss and everyone had burst into a killing frenzy when the boss' HP was left with 20%. Especially the little brat. She had the Darkness Inheritance and gained a natural high resistance to Shadow attacks, hence, she had not needed to waste her potion cooldown time on consuming health potions. Instead, she took a bottle of [Power Potion] and charged at the boss with all she had.

The little girl's normal attack had far surpassed Zhang Yang's due to The One Ring in her hands. However, skill wise, she was not able to keep up with Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang had various skills, passive and active alike, that could increase his overall DPS! However, the little girl's DPS had gained a massive boost after taking the [Power Potion].

Sun Xin Yu's attack was on a whole other level. After acquiring the skill {Eagle Eye}, she was able to narrow the gap between Zhang Yang and her. In fact, she was winning by a tiny nudge. She was equipping two types of weapons to be exact, after all. Just one of the weapons was an Ethereal tier which had granted Sun Xin Yu a massive 30% increase in attack, allowing her attacks to be 4% higher than Zhang Yang!

However, that was comparing a player's attack. Zhang Yang still had the Phoenix pet and Felice! The two god-like entities even possessed Transformation skill! It was like having Lost Dream and Hundred Shots linking their attacks to Zhang Yang! How could anyone compare their total DPS with Zhang Yang!? The man is a beast!

Hence, to compare normal attacks alone, Zhang Yang would rank at the third place. However, to put it in all, Zhang Yang's DPS would rank out of the entire chart!

"Meanie tank! I challenge you to a proper fight! Unsummon the fire bird and Felice and fight fair and square!" said Wei Yan Er, dissatisfied. It was a rare chance for her to be able to "defeat" Zhang Yang in a DPS match, but she was "interrupted" by Felice and the Phoenix.

Zhang Yang laughed, "Aww. Don't be too salty. This is my fate! And yours? You'd just continue being the little brat that we all know you are!"

"WHAT!? Noob tank! I'll bite you!" Wei Yan Er snarled like a palm-top tiger; fierce, but harmless.

"Mortal...mortal power...are you really just mortals?!" Sauron finally accepted the truth. After his long HP was drained down to 15%, Sauron movement and speech changed from demeaning to frightened. Although 15% or 200 million HP was considered to be quite long, the party's anxious and restless fighting prowess had treated the 200 million HP as nothing.

"There's nothing to hide! We are mortals! You may be a god or demon, but you're nothing but an enemy that we will destroy! You have but one eye. Though you can see and destroy humans as far as 10,000 km away, what you did was nothing out of the ordinary! You could at least use your incredible foresight to peek at girls!"

said Endless Starlight nonchalantly.

It was not clear to whether Sauron understood Endless Starlight provocation. However, the boss was a demon. Even though it may have been born from a single eye of the real God, he was still of a god's essence! Would a god peek at girls? Perhaps Zeus would. Sauron roared in anger and increased the casting of {Shadow's Touch}, sending out countless of black skulls to fly around and attack everyone.

Luckily, it was not the skill - {Demon Unleashed} that was used rapidly. Or else, the team might be knocking on death's door!

"How could a few pesky rats have infiltrated my army! Cunning souls! You have lured my army to fight a meaningless war elsewhere!" Sauron roared to the sky; and even the dark clouds started to lose their color.

"Haha! You couldn't even defeat a few of us rats! What makes you then? A large cockroach!?" Fatty Han laughed manically.

"You think you could last this long without The One Ring in your hand!?" Sauron roared back.

"Fight us without your eyeball then!"

"Enough with the boss! Stop talking!" Zhang Yang finally snapped.



13%...11%...9%...

Every time the boss fell below the 10% HP threshold, the usage rate of {Shadow's Touch} would be increased. As long as the skill is not used during his {Demon Unleashed} state, everyone should be fine. Furthermore, the effect of the [Forbidden Scroll] was still in effect. The boss will be chained at every crucial moment for him to attack, rendering him useless at times.

3%...2%...1%...The boss was about to be defeated.

"Hm...hm...you may have won this round, but I am eternal. As long as there are the living amongst the land, I shall return! You have defeated me today, but I am only going to sleep for another 10,000 years. I shall be back, and when I do, the earth shall scream in terror! The sky shall rain blood! The world shall be mine!" Sauron gave his last speech before falling back into the earth. His massive body crashed and turned into dust. What that was left was only an overly large eyeball, which exploded into a pile of loot.

'Ding! Congratulations on killing the first open-world Holy tier boss. Your glorious deeds will be recorded in the Hall of Fame! As the Party Leader, please state your party designations to be recorded!'

A system notification rang and Zhang Yang received an additional command box. Zhang Yang keyed in the usual advertising slogan and the server channel was flooded with the red colored text. Additionally, everyone in the party received 1 Luck attribute, Reputation points, and gold coins.

The standard procedure next was Zhang Yang to received many other guild master's congratulations. While others send them their regards and warm praise, Snow Seeker had moved beyond that, she had even asked Zhang Yang for a few good Holy tier equipment to buy! Naturally, the buying price should be lowered to a point where no one would believe their eyes!

Zhang Yang had not much time to handle the other replies. After some quick appreciation messages, Zhang Yang went on to the little brat and slapped his back hard to give her a chance to loot the drops. It was the server's first ever Holy tier boss. If the boss had not dropped any good items, Zhang Yang might as well abandon the quest line, right there and then.

Wei Yan Er roughed Zhang Yang up a little before rubbing her back to pick up all the loot. While everyone else was anxiously waiting for the loot, the little girl took her slow sweet time to pick them up as a means to show her retaliation for Zhang Yang slapping her back. She organized the loots by rarity and displayed them all.

The boss had dropped three counts of Holy tier equipment. A dark golden magic staff, a shining metallic triangular shield, and one silvery swirly dagger. There was also a [Skill Point Crystal], three counts of books, a black color command order, and a bunch of Level 6 Gemstones.

Zhang Yang took out the [Identifying Scroll] and went through all the Holy tier equipment before distributing them. The first was the magic staff.

[Dark Lord's Wand] (Holy, Magic Staff)

Magic Attack: 18,481 – 24,481

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 40%

Equip: Increases Critical strike rate by 8%

Equip: Chance to generate a Shadow Barrier after every successful cast. The barrier will nullify all types of attack.

Level Requirement: 170

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

The magic staff was rolled by Han Ying Xue, Fantasy Sweetheart, and Daffodil Daydream. As a result, Daffodil Daydream trumped over Han Ying Xue - the lucky queen and claimed the staff. However, Daffodil Daydream would have to wait for a least 9 more levels to equip the Level 150 staff. It was not too long, nor too short either. She would have to put her back into grinding for the next coming days.

The next item was the triangular shield. Since the only players around that could use the shield was Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight, Endless Starlight quickly muttered, "INT! INT! INT!"

If the shield has Intelligence attribute, it will automatically belong to him.

Wei Yan Er snickered and waved her hands, gesturing a demeaning move. "Tch tch tch. Are you lacking Intelligence that much that you're asking for a little brain for your empty skull?"

[Dark Star Shield] (Holy, Shield)

Defense: +13770

Vitality: +26449

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 52,890

Equip: Absorbs 5,091 damage on attack.

Equip: Grants the ability to inflict reduced 10% Magic Resistant for {Cripple Defense}.

Level Requirement: 170

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Endless Starlight shed manly tears as he turned his back and sobbed quietly. The shield was incredibly strong. However, since Endless Starlight did not have the skill {Cripple Defense}, Zhang Yang had gained the right to take the shield. The man had even wiped away a tear as he watched Zhang Yang inserting the shield into his inventory U.I.

# Chapter 685: Legendary Tier

---

The shield alone had provided a total of 26,000 HP. With the {Vitality Aura} stacked with the shield's HP bonus, the total HP it provided was 36,000! Right then, Zhang Yang had over 510,000 HP, giving him a significant boost of HP!

What a loot! Sadly, Zhang Yang would have to wait until he reached Level 150 before he could equip it. Right then, he was Level 144, with a little push, Zhang Yang could reach Level 150 in just one month's time!

"Little Yan Er's hands are really lucky! Two weapons and a shield? That's better than striking the lottery!" Fatty Han gave her two thumbs up. "It's a shame that there's no Hunter's EQ though."

Zhang Yang pretended a cough. "Giving you a weapon would be a major waste."

"Hey! I heard that! How could you say this to a bro!" Fatty Han puffed.

Everyone ignored the fatso and paid their attention to the last dagger.

[Shadow Totem's Dagger] (Holy, Dagger)

Weapon Attack: 8,465 – 12,465

Attack Interval: 1.9 seconds.

DPS: 5,508

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases damage dealt by 40%

Equip: Increases Critical strike rate by 8%

Equip: Grants a chance to reduce a target's movement speed by 50% after a successful strike. Last for 8 seconds.

Level Requirement: 170

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Ever since Sin Xin Yu had acquired the Shadow Dancer S class Inheritance, she had changed her weapon of choice to swords. Hence, with no competitor around, the dagger fell into Lost Dream's hands easily.

"It's sad that the dagger normal attack would be affected by strong Defenses. If only Lost Dream could learn the skill {Eagle Eye} as well...." said Zhang Yang.

"Ooi! I want that as well!" Wei Yan Er jumped up like a bunny. She was afraid that Zhang Yang might steel his decision to let Lost Dream have the next {Eagle Eye}.

Everyone finally laughed as there were no more equipment for them to feel anxious about. Still, excitement remained in the air. Weapons would be the greatest buff to any players, while Shields would be the greatest asset to a tank! Sauron might be an enemy, but he had been generous enough to reward his killers with awesome equipment!

The next person to receive the [Skill Point Crystal] according to the cycle, was Hundred Shots. There was no rolling needed, for there was a 100% chance for all of them to receive it in the end. It was not that difficult for them to find and kill an open-world boss! Especially when Zhang Yang is known to be a boss fight magnet!

Amongst the books found, one of them was a recipe. Wei Yan Er straight away threw the book at Zhang Yang for him to learn. It was an Alchemy recipe. Even though many players in the party had learned Alchemy as well, they did not possess the Alchemist Intuition. For them to learn new recipes would be a waste since Zhang Yang could concoct potions with Transmuted grades!

Zhang Yang took the recipe and learned it immediately.

[Temporary Invincibility Potion] (Usable)

Use: Gains Invincibility to all attacks, skills, and disabling effect.



Last for 5 seconds. Cooldown: 5 minutes. Using this potion will place all other potions into the same cooldown time.

Level Requirement: 120

Invincibility Potion!

Everyone widened their eyes with delight. If it is a Transmuted grade, it would increase the duration length! Even though it was just a second long, it would be the thin line between winning and losing! Furthermore, this potion is incredibly useful in boss fights! For example, if they had already possessed this potion during the fight with Sauron, they would not have needed to fear him in his {Demon Unleashed} status.

"Jackpot!" Everyone screamed in delight. Zhang Yang had the [Herb Foraging Familiar,] he would never be short on materials, ever!

"Hehe, I'm going to show this to Snow Seeker! We'll sell her all the normal potions and keep all the Transmuted grade for ourselves!" Zhang Yang snickered evilly. Others joined in on the evil masterplan!

As expected, Snow Seeker, Greensleeves Prince and other guild masters quickly begged Zhang Yang for all his supplies of the potions! With a large demand and low supply, Zhang Yang could be monopolizing the potion, for good!

Wei Yan Er took out the second book and displayed it. It was not a recipe, but a skill book.

[Indistinct Skill Book: Fake Death]

Use: Teaches you {Fake Death}

Class Requirement: Unrestricted

Level Requirement: 30

Bound on Obtained.

Everyone gasped with both surprise and joy. Since the start of the game, up until that point, the only Indistinct Skill Book they knew was the Beast Taming skill of Zhang Yang. It allowed Zhang Yang to use his battle mount as a Hunter's pet, giving him the upper hand in battles, dungeons, and PvP Arenas!

"Tch! I already have the skill!" Fatty Han puffed disgruntledly.

"Indistinct...That means that skills from other job could be learned by other class without any restrictions! It would be incredibly game-breaking if the skill is OP!" Zhang Yang smiled with satisfaction. "Little brat. You take it. Everyone here has skills to clear their aggro easily. You would benefit best from it!"

Hunters had {Fake Death}. Thieves had {Vanish}. Although

Spellcaster had no skills of that sort, they could at least use {Ice Barrier} to gain 10 seconds of Invincibility to allow tanks to grab the aggro back to them. Berserkers were different, if they are not careful enough, the boss would come after them whenever they go OT, with no way of rectifying the situation themselves. When that happens, strong bosses could easily wipe them out with a single puff.

Now that Wei Yan Er has the skill, she can kiss goodbye to the fear of OT'ing Zhang Yang!

The little girl patted the skill book on her pitiful chest and jumped around joyfully. The next second, she screamed "Ack!" and fell to the ground lifelessly.

{Fake Death} allows the caster to mimic a real death animation to allow monsters to ignore your presence and to break free of the battle.

Everyone waited for the little girl to get back up, but she continued to lie there.

WHAM!

Han Ying Xue walked over to Wei Yan Er and gave her a tight slap on her butt. "Enough! Get up you stupid, flat chested girl! People are still waiting for you to show them the loots!"

"ARGH!" Wei Yan Er finally got up to her feet and screamed at

Han Ying Xue for calling her a flat chested girl. They fought for a little while and Zhang Yang had to separate the two females.

The third book was weird. It was neither a recipe nor a skill book. It was a whole new item that no one, even Zhang Yang, had ever seen.

[The Book of Revelation: Third Chapter] (Legendary, Unique)

Description: The holder of the book shall grant a 100 meters range 5% damage buff to all players. Similar effects do not stack. If the holder of the book is killed, he or she can choose revive at the same place with 10% HP and MP. The effect can only be used once every 10 hours. Similar effects do not stack. If the holder of the book is killed during the revival cooldown duration, the book will drop with a 100% rate. This item can only held in the holder's inventory. Cannot be destroyed.

Use: Combines this Chapter with [The Book of Revelations: Chapter 2] or [The Book of Revelations: Chapter 4].

"Legendary tier? What is that?" Everyone started to asked question and directed their quirk looks towards Zhang Yang. Were not there only 10 tier? Black-Steel, Green-Copper, Gray-Silver, Yellow-Gold, Violet-Platinum, Mythical, Ethereal, Holy, Ascended, and Celestial! When was there a Legendary tier!?

Plus, the thing could not be equipped. Like an Inheritance Fragment, the item could only be stored in the inventory.

However, the item tier aside, the item effect was truly strong, it could provide 5% attack boost to all players around. It was almost similar to that of a damage buff aura effect. Furthermore, the item could grant the holder the ability to revive at the same spot after death! It could be extremely useful in a boss fight when it comes to landing the killing blow!

On the other hand, it could be extremely dangerous to use it during a PvP session. If the holder is killed once during the PvP fight, the next imminent death could result in the loss of the item. If the player is truly killed twice in a PvP Arena, it might be a center of attention. A laughing stock!

The item had an additional tag. A Chapter to be precise. Based on the item description, there could be more than three chapters left to be found! Even though it was not stated that the effect of the Chapters could be stacked, that glimpse of oppression still lay at the end of this path!

If the complete book is assembled together, what would the effects be!?

"Don't look at me. I have no idea what is this!" said Zhang Yang when he noticed that everyone was waiting for him for a response.

Truth be told, all of Zhang Yang's experience that had been brought forth to this lifetime had almost been used. That aside, the item was extremely useful, for it could be used as a secret trump card! Secondly, the item had never been announced to the whole world! Who would want to let anyone know about the item - they might be hunted and killed for it!

That was probably the main reason why Zhang Yang had never heard of the item before, in his previous life! Then again, he had never been able to "mingle" around with pro players, back then...

"If the effect could stack on each other after combining...this item might be able to live up to its Legendary name!"

Still, just having one Chapter was not truly a whole 'Revelation'. It was still a helpful hand. A 5% attack boost might be tiny, but it was still an aura effect; everyone could gain from it. In the end, the book was thrown to Zhang Yang for safe keeping. The man was a walking boulder! No one could kill him!

With {Burrow}, {Shadow of the Void}, the man was practically un-killable! If someone is still able to track him down, Zhang Yang's Turtle shell defense could defend him, and paired with his world destroyer-like attack, he would kill anyone before he is killed!

The last item was the black command order.

[Territory Command Order: Sauron's Castle]

Use: Incites a Territory Conquest War on Sauron's Castle.

Level Requirement: 100

Zhang Yang panicked for a moment there when he saw the Territory Command Order. He thought that the bastard system will announce it to the world again! However, after what seemed to be the longest one second ever, the channels were still empty. The system did not announce anything. Perhaps, the developers had already patched it to help players. To be able to hunt this Command Order, players would most likely have used their Transformation skills to defeat the boss. Hence, considering the fact that many players had already obtained their Inheritance, the developers decided to provide players a breathing room to allow players to make preparations for the war. Since it has come to that change, the Command Order was changed from interact to activate, to manual activation. Zhang Yang could now make proper preparations! Since the Command Order was found by Zhang Yang party, it would be fair for them to have the upper hand as a reward!

Zhang Yang then switched to the guild channel and commanded all players with Inheritance Transformation skills to not use their Transformation skill for the next three days. He announced that there would be a special guild-wide event where he would require the support of all players with Inheritance. He had not announced that it was a Territorial Conquest War since he was afraid of spies. Instead, he had fed them hints of fighting something else. If the real news about the new Territory is leaked, other players from other Regions might rush in to start another Nation War!

Alone, Lone Desert Smoke could never handle the simultaneous attacks from all Regions! Luckily, the number of players that could set foot in Mar Gaia Forest was not many. Hence, the estimated number of participants in the upcoming war should be not more than the war in the canyon some days back.

After careful consideration, Zhang Yang decided to ask for Snow Seeker, Greensleeves Prince, and other local guild masters for their help. Although Lone Desert Smoke would be the guild and Zhang Yang would be the owner collecting the transport fees, the ones that would also gain from it would be the players of China! It was a matter of Regional pride and glory. He believed that the fellow guild masters he trusted would not let this chance slide.



# Chapter 686: The Fight for Sauron's Castle

---

All Level 6 Gemstones were instantly kept in the guild warehouse, since only Level 170 equipment would have Level 6 Sockets. Whoever who gets their Level raised to that level may take the Gems for themselves.

After all the items were distributed, the party returned to Hannier Valley to submit their quest to General Turkin Han. Back at the valley, the party was warmly welcome not just by the general, but almost by everyone present. The party was surrounded by NPCs congratulating them for their deeds. Naturally, Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were at each other throats, trying to grab the limelight!

After obtaining 20,000,000 experience points as their reward, they also obtained an equipment.

[Mark of the Demon Slayer] (Mythical, Ring)

Vitality: +1889

Strength: +635

Dexterity: +635

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 3,770.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 8%

Equip: Absorbs 539 damage when attacked.

Use: Deals additional 20% attack on Demon type targets. Lasts for 15 seconds. Cooldown: 3 minutes.

Level Requirement: 170

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Note: A token of appreciation for defeating the Shadow Demon Sauron!

The reward ring given differed from class to class. However, all of them had the similar special effects of reducing level requirement. The ring was both defensive and offensive, which was awfully rare and sought-after. Sadly, the ring had to wait as well. Until the party reaches Level 150, it would have to wait in the warehouse.

Zhang Yang and the party left the valley to complete the promise they had made to Malindor. They headed straight towards Nordinja Town and demanded that the old nobles release the poor girl. By then, the party was wearing the hero's halo over their heads, making the quest easier to complete. Even though it pained them to do so, the nobles had no choice but to comply to Zhang Yang's demands.

Zhang Yang left Vinitha at the town's inn until they are able to take down Sauron's Castle and have her to set up a new home there. Before leaving town, the grumpy little Wei Yan Er had swung her axe and beheaded the pompous old fart for keeping Vinitha against her own will.

The next thing to do for the party was to make preparations for the upcoming war. Everyone was both anxious and excited for the war. By normal means, when the declaration of the Territorial War is announced, the battle will only start on the next day, at 7pm. However, since it was a crucial matter, he would not allow anyone to make any mistakes. Hence, he waited for everyone's Inheritance to be ready and only then, did he announce the war.

The server channel flashed with red text and everyone was notified about a new Territory appearing in the Mar Gaia Forest and the battle to claim the land will be held the next day at 7pm.

Everyone around the world was notified and got to work almost instantly. A territory that has appeared in a Level 150 – 180 map is new and unguarded. However, being a Territory, it still held great value to its lands. Even though not a single player in the entire game had reached Level 150, it was just a matter of time before the Territory would have visitors from all over the world. When that time comes, the Teleportation fees would be the one that earns the big bucks.

Zhang Yang contacted all guild masters that he was close to, Snow Seeker, Sword of Light, and even One Sword Stroke to call for their aid. As a means to reason with them, Zhang Yang got them to fight for him in order to bring glory to the nation of

China. However, while his voice might be inspiring to others, the guild masters were not stupid enough to fall for something as lofty as that. Everyone was smart enough to ask for something in return for them to provide aid.

As such, Zhang Yang and the other guild masters sat together and discussed their demands. It was an unavoidable move. Mar Gaia Forest was a Level 150 – 180 map. Players who dared to set foot in this map must be at least Level 130. Any lower, the monsters in the map could crush them with a single finger.

As per calculation, the number of players in China that reached Level 130 were about 3,000. The globe, however, had amassed as much as 20,000 players. Not many of them may have Inheritance Transformation skills, but surely, each of them possessed Inheritances of their own. Lone Desert Smoke had only over 100 members that were over Level 130. How could 100 players fend off over 20,000 players?

Even though the main goal was to protect the player carrying the Territory Command Order, the chances of survival were extremely low! How could 100 players endure constant bombardment of 20,000 players? Hence, Zhang Yang had called for all China players to unite. Naturally, since the order was found by Zhang Yang, he would not allow any of the helping players gain any advantage over the Territory! It would not make sense! However, despite the unbalanced discussion, everyone was not too greedy. Everyone reached to settlement and left with extreme satisfaction. The one-person left being greatly annoyed was none other than Zhang Yang.

"What greedy bastards! How could they make me concoct such a large amount of potions! Don't they know I need to eat and sleep as well!? For god sake, I only have a pair of hands! Sheesh!" Zhang Yang blew off some steam.

"Hahaha! Little Yang! I shall help you get that billionaire chick Snow Seeker as your consort! Might as well add her into your harem!" said Fatty Han with great determination.

"Yea Yea! That chick called Frost Sparks is not bad as well! I see that she's got some real hongkadongs!"

Frost Sparks is the new guild master of the guild Rolling Rocks. She is beautiful and well-endowed. Her poise was that of a noblewoman. An ever-stoic stance. It was unknown as to how she had managed to step up as the new guild master. Everyone knew that the previous guild master had left her with the post and disappeared elsewhere.

"Are you guys nothing but boobs, jugs, and honkers?" Lost Dream laughed manically.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Please get yourself ready for the war. Anything from bandages to potions. Get more than enough for the sake of it!"

For the next three days, Zhang Yang was in town, crafting potions endlessly. As a result, he was able to concoct a large batch of potions and even Transmuted potions, as well. Each ascending grade of Transmuted [Temporary Invincibility Potion] will provide

an additional 0.5 seconds extended duration. The strongest, Grade 10 Transmuted potion would provide a total of 10 seconds of Invincibility to the user!

Sadly, despite having only 10 seconds of Invincibility, the cooldown time was just too long. They would have to count the cooldown time for that! If they are debuffed by status effects, they could use Mobility Potions to overcome the maim. If they are surrounded from all corners, they would have to use the Invincibility Potion to survive long enough to kill a few players before running away to safety.

As a wage for requesting help from other guildmasters, Zhang Yang had personally forked out 20 million gold coins and a bunch of potions to each guild participating in the war. Snow Seeker was kind enough to reject the offer, however, she came up with an even outrageous demand, that was to ask for a 20% profit claim from the new Territory Teleportation fee. Zhang Yang said no almost immediately to her and had even smacked her on the head for asking it.

20 million gold coins might be a large sum of money, however, anyone smart enough would know that it is a one-time payment. Snow Seeker had asked for 20% profit as a life-long agreement! She knew that when the game matures a little, Level 150 maps would gain a large influx of players! Zhang Yang knew that the woman was the most difficult person to deal with, despite being surrounded by female hooligans! However, he knew her weakness. Simply by playing as a pervert man around her, he could baffle and embarrass the eyebrows out of her! It was extremely effective when Zhang Yang jokingly said that he would even date her! With that, she stopped demanding for much and settled her agreement

with the 20 million gold coins and potions.

Naturally, not all members of the guild will receive many gold coins. But that was not a priority. The main aspect was to get as many strong members that could contribute to the war.

Zhang Yang could have sworn that if Han Ying Xue or Sun Xin Yu were present then, he would have lost his life...

With one more day left to prepare, Zhang Yang spent an entire day to craft as many potions as he could. It was crazy enough that he had managed to craft enough potions for every single member in his guild to have an endless supply of potion until the war ends.

The dawn of a new day broke into the skyline and everyone who was ready to fight entered the Mar Gaia Forest to await the horns of war to be blown. The location of the territory was not known to all. However, according to several experiences, a Territory would normally be situated in the center of a map. That narrows it down to three places, Sauron's Castle, Baya Town, and Castle Shandar. The furthest one would be only 20 minutes flight away. Naturally, Zhang Yang and his guildmates were all standing by inside Sauron's Castle. At 7pm sharp, when the horns of war were blown, all non-Lone Desert Smoke players were teleported out of the Territory. It was a little service advantage to the guild of the player that holds the Command Order.

The battle started, but Zhang Yang and his lot had not used their Transformation skill immediately. The battle will last as long as 3 hours. Hence, it would not be wise to use it at the start. Within the castle, there was a large church that could fit in a large number of

players. Zhang Yang led his guild towards there.

Those that could participate in his war were all strong players. At least 90% of them possessed flying mounts by then. Since the Territory was owner-less, the castle defenses were left empty. Hence, anyone could fly around without any difficulty. Those who dare to have their battle in the castle gates would face attacks from both the ground and the sky!

Zhang Yang had formulated a plan and moved the battle towards the church instead. By bottlenecking the enemies to only a small entrance of the church, where airborne players had no means of attacking. Zhang Yang could survive by fighting and defending from inside the church!

The plan had been formulated long before the war was announced. Hence, when the signal was fired, not only Lone Desert Smoke, but Crimson Rage, Rolling Rocks, Radiance, and other guilds had complied to Zhang Yang's advice and followed him inside the church.

"D\*mn, it would be nice we could use a [Forbidden Scroll] now," said Fatty Han. It was true. Since all of the China forces had already set the church as their stage and the battleground was just the size of a regular 10-meter wide gate. Most of the attackers would have to cram their way in to attack them. Imagine having over 20,000 players squeezing their way into the gates...

Overall, the entire Castle was rather huge. However, it was not too huge. A single piece of [Forbidden Scroll], like Scrounging Doomsday would hit all within the confines of the castle! There is



an 80% chance that players without Transforming could die within 30 seconds.

Zhang Yang shook his head. "It won't be that effective. For example, Scrounging Doomsday's effect was 10% HP DoT. However, there was a maximum damage that could be dealt, which was 100,000 HP. At most, the [Forbidden Scroll] could deal over 3 million HP. Right now, most of the players with B class Inheritance would have over 3 million HP. That scroll best not be our best bet."

"You're right. But...what if we use the scroll after...say...2 hours or 2 and a half? If there are survivors still fighting in the castle, the [Forbidden Scroll] could surely kill them all, right?"

"True. But do we have a [Forbidden Scroll]? No. That is why we are betting on our Inheritance Transformations. At least, we should try and survive for as long as 1 hour before using them!"

In a few minutes, all players from the other 7 regions of the world server had gathered around the church. As predicted, due to the narrow pathway of the entrance to the church, all incoming players were bombarded with powerful AoE skill from all players inside the church. After a few sacrificial lambs, no one else was brave enough to charge in blindly. Those who were killed can never get back there within 3 hours to re-group with their comrades. It was literally a sudden death stage. Those who die can never come back.

Zhang Yang wanted that sort of outcome. If they were to continue coming in without plans, the main attack party would not have to go out of the church until the war ends! However,

unlike Wei Yan Er, the little impatient girl who was held back by Zhang Yang, the rest of the players were not holding back. After a few silent moments, one player started activating his Transformation skill and changed into a large humanoid tiger. With nothing but flowery pants left covering his groins, the human-tiger charged into the church.

It was B class Inheritance, the Mythical Tiger Inheritance. Besides gaining a boost of HP and Defense value, it had gained just one AoE skill. The {Feral Roar}. It was an AoE skill that could inflict the status {Fear} on players which would cause them to run away from the caster.

# Chapter 687: Spamming the Forbidden Scroll

---

Now that someone had taken the lead to charge into the church, the others followed closely behind. Other players had also followed his footsteps and activated their own Inheritance Transformation skills. While the commotion was happening, many other stronger, famous guilds stood aside and watched the action from the sidelines.

It was not a war that sought to destroy the Territory's main hall. It was a war to kill the player carrying the Command Order and to hold on to the item until 3 hours end. Even if someone is able to hold onto the Command Order until the very last minute, someone else might sneak up on him, kill the player, and claim the Command Order!

Even though Hourglass Waistline was not the guild master of Land of Savages, however, the power she held due to her background had given her the authority, instead of the real guild master which was Savage Lord. She stood on the sidelines, smiling as if she was watching her plans being carried out. Her plan was, to have all other players beside her own guild use their Transformation as soon as possible and fight the meaningless battle. She would then, use a [Forbidden Scroll] after 2 hours to kill 80% of all players around to eliminate her competitors. Even if players with active Transformations survive the attack, they would definitely be left with little to no HP left. And her own team of elite players would easily take them out and claim the Command Order for herself!

Little did she know, others were thinking the same thing!

Seductive Wild Pussy of Judgement guild, Dusk Phoenix of Hell's Family, Captain America of the Justice League, and many other foreign guilds were not moving an inch! However, if each of the guild master has a piece of [Forbidden Scroll] in hand, the situation might be chaotic when all of them use it later!

Zhang Yang, Endless Starlight, One Sword Stroke, Sword of Light, and other strong tanks were in charge of holding players behind the entrance. When they saw the large human-tiger character charging into the church, Zhang Yang was the first to rush up to him and attack. He was extremely familiar with the Inheritance, since he had fought many other players of such Inheritance in his past life.

When the human-tiger player came into the vicinity of the church interior, Zhang Yang used {Charge} to stun him for a second. After gaining enough Rage points, he then waited until the first stun ended and landed a {Brutal Smash} to further stun him for another 4 seconds.

During that that time, all the DPS behind had frantically blasted the player with attacks and skills. Facing with such a concentrated attack, even if he was in his Transformation status, the player had lost 30% of his HP in a blink of an eye! He would have lost even more HP if the Inheritance had not provided him with magic resistance! The player was still shocked and had immediately used his accessory skill to dispel the stun.

However, not all dispelling spells carried an Invincible effect as

well. As such, Zhang Yang smirked and blasted the player with a {Blast Wave} to stun him for another 4 seconds.

The poor player could literally cry right there and then. Just how many stunning skill did Zhang Yang have!? He had literally zero seconds to react!

WHAM BAM BOOM!

Another barrage of skills and attacks landed on the player, causing him to lose another large portion of his HP. Even though there were some fearless healers who had used their Transformation skill to rush to the front to heal, they too were forced to suffer a heavy rain of attacks! On the China side, many players had also activated their Transformation skill!

The human-tiger player was a Guardian, hence, after panicking for a second there, he quickly activated {Shield Wall} and used {Warrior's Will} to break free of the third stunning skill. Little did he know that Zhang Yang had leaped in grandly with {Heroic Leap} and stunned him for another 4 seconds!

Mama mia!

Zhang Yang had already used all his stunning skills for now. Since the player had used {Shield Wall} to gain an impregnable defense, he quickly summoned Endless Starlight over to have him continue the chain-stunning. A Defender has {Sanction} and {Hammer Drop} that could also stun. With two more skills coming at him, the player would surely be dead in a few moments.

The chaos had started when players of Crimson Rage had used their Inheritance Transformations skill one after the other. Even though most of them were C class Inheritance, they were at least in their Transformation states which could increase their maximum HP and attack. It was rather crucial then, during the intense initial defending stage.

AoE spells and skills filled the airspace. Those that survived could attack, and when there's an attack coming, the ones who fall were those who could not endure the massive barrage!

The entire church had turned from a holy ground to a blood fest. Every moment of every second, there would be pillars of light that blasted into the sky, indicating that players had already died and chose to revive somewhere else. Mountain Mover was not in the battle, instead, he was sitting back behind in the center plaza, far from the fight. There, he had several U.I opened as he constantly monitored players' formation, line-ups, party formations, and many other aspects that he could control to maximize survivability and attack.

Zhang Yang could hear his voice ringing in the chat page as he commandeered the flow of the battle. That was the sort of strategist that he should be. Zhang Yang could never be any prouder to have such an asset.

His prowess was emphasized during the battle at the War Canyon and back then. As such, his deeds had spread throughout China which led to many guild masters offering up a high price to have him on their side. Fortunately, Mountain Mover was a man who

does not care about money. He was having a great time in Lone Desert Smoke and everyone had even appreciated him for his work! Unlike the other guilds that would interfere with his judgment, Zhang Yang had given him full authority over the guild during a war. Hence, he showed no signs of ever jumping ship. That left Sword of Light and One Sword Stroke stumped at their own persistent offers.

Since it happened right under Zhang Yang nose, he quickly butted in and said, "Hey hey! You guys might want to have a step back there. You've already accepted the wages I've offered. Why are you still trying to steal my own asset there, huh?" Although his tone was that of joking, the other guild masters that were trying to recruit Mountain Mover felt guilty and quickly retreated.

The bloodbath continued on chaotically. More and more players were forced to use their Inheritance Transformation skills under such pressure. All but Zhang Yang, Endless Starlight, One Sword Stroke, and other stronger tanks had remained adamant about not resorting to their Transformations. Unlike them, the other tanks who were not as strong had to use their Transformations to survive under heavy fire.

Although they may have the geographical advantage, China had killed the most players, yet they had suffered the most casualties as well. Initially, they started off with over 3,000 players. Slowly over time, they had lost more and more players. After just 1 hour, they had lost so many players that their numbers were left less than 500!

Luckily, it was already 1 hour past the start. When the timer

ticked into the second hour, almost all players who had not activated their Inheritances flashed out their skills and Transformed! If they had chosen to remain in their original state, it would be a complete waste!

Zhang Yang gained a pair of radiant wings and soared into the sky as soon as he did. He already had Felice and the Phoenix use their Transformation skill earlier. Right then, with three super charged characters in the battle ground, a random B class Inheritance player in his Transformation form would surely die within a few exchange of blows with Zhang Yang!

With nothing held back, Zhang Yang unleashed all his warrior skills. {Horizontal Sweep}, {Blast Wave}, {Thunder Strike}, and other AoE skill were blasted out. Not a single God of War Skill was used then. He wanted to built up his EP as much as he could.

Right then, Han Ying Xue had also activated her Milkmaid Deity Transformation skill and healed all the players around with her "milk", Zhang Yang had no worries of charging into the front lines. His sword danced around like a dragon in the sky and slaughtered players as if they were made of soft tofu! Since the church was considered to be an Interior environment, mounts were not permitted inside. Besides S class and A class Inheritances players who had flight capabilities, other Inheritance players could only be the fight on ground level, since their Transformations did not grant them wings. Zhang Yang flew around the ceiling of the church, landing as many attacks and skills as he could. As such, he had been spamming the {Temporary Invincibility Potion}, {Mobility Potion}, accessory, and the skill {Warrior's Will} to keep himself mobile at all times.



Naturally, by flying around amongst the players with his glowing, radiant wings on his back, he had become a strawmen's target for all enemies. He had to fly back to Han Ying Xue and have her and other healers heal him urgently. He was the main attacker then, hence, he had gained the utmost healing priority there. Despite having a crazy long HP, with more than 10 healers focusing their heals on him, his HP bar was filled back instantly without much delay!

Finally, after a painful 1000 seconds later, Zhang Yang had amassed a full bar of 100 EP. He then targeted a random European player and used {Charge Up Strike.}

Charging!

The priest was stunned at his damage-less swing and jumped.

{God of War Devastation}!

SHRING!

A total of 101 swords appeared in the air around him and flew towards 101 targets, dealing 2,200,000 damage to 101 targets!

SHRING!

The Sword of Purging Devourer procced its effect and 101 swords appeared again!

Zhang Yang had earlier set his attack mode to Regional Targets only. All of his attacks would not hit players from China, hence, there was no need to hesitate at the moment of attack! Paired with Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, and other A and B Inheritance players, their combined attacks had instantly killed 89 players! 12 of them were fast enough to escape the grim reaper's grasp at the very last second by activating their life preserving skills.

Zhang Yang's feat was instantly noticed by all. What sort of power does he have to kill close to 100 players in their Transformation mode?

The attackers started to fall, not physically, but mentally. Even though they had once witnessed Zhang Yang godly powers in the War Canyon, it was only players of Japan and Korea. At then, Zhang Yang had displayed his powers to all top tier players from all 8 regions of the game server! Let none remain oblivious to his name!

In truth, some had over speculated Zhang Yang's prowess. To be able to deal such immense power, Zhang Yang would have to accumulate 100 EP! It was 1,000 seconds! Others might had a different perception. The only thing they could think off was that Zhang Yang could easily whip out 202 swords in the air and kill 101 players without a problem!

It was truly a magnificent sight to behold. When Zhang Yang activated {God of War Devastation} the invading 7 regions players were all held back. China was able to grasp the opportunity to push back and gain control of the church slowly.

90 minutes...100 minutes...120 minutes...Slowly, yet unconsciously, 2 hours had passed in a flash. From over 20,000 attacks, China was able to hack away their numbers down to only 2,500 and below. However, China had lost a great deal of fighters as well. The odds were 100 against 2,500!

120 minutes...130 minutes...150 minutes...

"It's about time." Hourglass Figure opened her inventory U.I and took out a scroll. She tore the scroll in half and tossed both parts into the sky.

[Forbidden Scroll: Ice Age] (Usable)

Use: Relives the past of the Ice Age! Deals Ice based attack to all targets within 5 kilometers of the caster. Deals 10% HP as damage per second. Damage dealt cannot exceed over 100,000 damage per instance. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Level Requirement: 100

The entire castle, in fact, the entire forest of Mar Gaia was blanketed in thick snow. Ice covered the ground they stood upon and countless ice swords formed in the ground to stab players around. As long as the players are not of the Land of Savage, everyone and everything within the area will receive damage. Even if they were players from India as well!

It was not something out of her character. She was merely being selfish as usual. In fact, within a region itself, guild wars were a common scenario. She wanted to eliminate all her competitors, both foreign and domestic!

Right then, the sky was scorched with a bright amber hue. White clouds were quickly replaced with red crimson clouds that rained down fireballs! Buildings, houses, huts, and even trees were destroyed! It was as if judgment day had come and there was nowhere safe for you!

It was another [Forbidden Scroll]. The Falling Starfire, cast by Seductive Wild Pussy of the European region!

Now that it has come to that, Captain America whipped out his own scroll and cast it out.

It was [Forbidden Scroll: Earth Shaker]!

Three [Forbidden Scrolls], three catastrophes, one chaotic battleground.

# Chapter 688: Backstabbing

---

Three [Forbidden Scrolls] were used simultaneously. Zhang Yang could only assume that they had meant to target anyone that did not belong to their own respective guilds. As such, players with at least 1 million HP would lose 300,000 HP per second. That means that, it would take only 4 seconds to be killed! As for players with more than 1 million HP, they would also experience 300,000 damage per second. What more, the damage inflicted from the [Forbidden Scroll] would not be affected any defensive means!

Even though the names of the scrolls, and the attacks differed from each other, wotj each producing different destructive animations, however, all three scrolls dealt the same amount of damage! The total damage a player receive would be 9 million damage! However, that would only apply to players who were not from Land of Savage, Judgement, and Justice League. Since each of the guild will take one less scroll-worth of damage, the total damage they would receive would be 6 million.

Even well-equipped B class Inheritance players would find themselves having only over 5,000,000 HP, at best. Tank class player would have more. Sadly, tank or not, most of the players had already been enduring the brutal battle for more than half the time. Naturally, most of the skills were used to protect themselves, even though having a healer with an Inheritance could bolster their survival rate. However, equipment aside, having even S class Transformation would boost the DPS by only 3 times. Healing would be the same. B class Inheritance players would, at most, have 2 times the healing rate. With that little of a boost, they could barely survive on their own, so how would they heal others?

As the countless of icy spikes, fireballs, and the earth shaking blows came raining, the number of survivor remaining on the field started to reduce sharply. If only one [Forbidden Scroll] was used that time, C class Inheritance players would survive at the tipping point. However, when three [Forbidden Scrolls] were used simultaneously, the destruction power could wipe out 95% of all players in the battlefield.

As for Zhang Yang, he had over 20,000,000 HP. With that vast amount of HP, he could take 6 [Forbidden Scroll]s worth of attacks and still walk it off. In fact, he had been waiting for such an attack and had all members of Lone Desert Smoke stand close to him. When he saw the drastic change in the environment, a signal or a hint that a strong attack was coming, Zhang Yang did not hesitate to use {Vanguard's Aggresion} to save everyone.

The blue barrier burst out of Zhang Yang and enveloped all members nearby. Sadly, the damage from the [Forbidden Scroll] was a direct HP deduction, not an attack, rendering Zhang Yang's efforts of protecting the guild useless. It was not only {Vanguard's Agresion}, even the skill {Shield Wall}, {Ice Barrier}, accessory skills, or any Invincibility effects were useless against the power of the [Forbidden Scroll]!

That is the power of a rare [Forbidden Scroll]!

Many had died even after they had spammed all their survival skills. This was the second occasion when multiple [Forbidden Scrolls] were used.

"F\*ck!" Zhang Yang started to be wary. Zhang Yang gathered his

senses close and charged up front. With his 20 million HP still standing strong against three simultaneous use of [Forbidden Scroll], Zhang yang took the initiative to kill the surviving players around!

Typically, those players were not soldiers. Under heavy pressure and the change of the battlefield, most of them would have already lost the will to fight. They came to fight for the Command Order, not to slaughter each other!

Many of healers had already given up on healing for their MP well had run dry. Many had chosen to use their potions and bandages instead. However, using bandages in the middle of an attack be of no use to them. Then again, even if they could heal over 50,000 HP, it would do no good to them! However, when it comes to the end of the world, a tiny drop of hope was worth grabbing on to!

Zhang Yang swiftly commanded Felice to return to the Battle Companion U.I, which allowed the little girl to dodge the attack. Unfortunately, the Phoenix would have to stay active in the field. At the very least, Zhang Yang had placed the healing responsibility to Han Ying Xue. Whenever she could, she would use her spare seconds to heal the Phoenix pet and keep it alive for as long as possible.

The only current player that dared to roam around the battlefield was Zhang Yang alone. Even Sun Xin Yu or Han Ying Xue would not dare to do the same even when they had the same S class Inheritances. The main reason was due to their class. They were considered to be "tofu" classes with inherently low HP. With Zhang

Yang leaving their vicinity, they lost a total of 28% Vitality bonus from his aura. With less than 1.2 million HP, they had no choice but to remain on the defensive.

Zhang Yang slaughtered anyone he saw on the battle field. He wanted to kill all the Inheritance players. However, that required his attack power to be extremely strong. With {Charge Up Strike}, he could pull it off. However, the skill required a 1 minute cooldown time. Hence, even though right then, his original attack power was strong, the number of players who were killed by him were just a handful. That was before the coming of the [Forbidden Scroll]. Zhang Yang borrowed the damage inflicted on players by the scrolls and could now kill the players easily!

With the God of War Transformation active, Zhang Yang was the embodiment of calamity. A natural calamity that befalls upon all players! All sort of skills were unleashed, especially {Horizontal Sweep}. The sword's effect would proc out and deal repeated blasts of deadly attacks. The sort of attack coming from Zhang Yang was like pouring oil to a bon fire! Or rather, cutting the rope of the straw bridge when someone is struggling to cross over!

It was a pity, to others, 30 seconds might be an eternity, but for Zhang Yang, 30 seconds was not long enough for him to kill more players. 30 seconds was just enough for him to cast a {God of War Crushing Strike}, enough to deal 100,000 Chaos damage to only frighten some players.

30 seconds later, the world returned to normal. The skies cleared up, the ice melted, and the earth returned to its slumbering state. However, the aftermath of the [Forbidden Scroll] was that of a



nuclear fallout. Buildings and houses were completely flattened to the ground. The surviving players were reduced from 2,500 players, to only over 100!

Naturally, China had the greatest number of survivors based on percentage. That was all due to Han Ying Xue's super healing capabilities. Her skill {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple} had restored 100% HP of all surviving players who were almost dying. Technically, players with more than 4,500,000 HP would have all their HP hacked away by the [Forbidden Scrolls]. A single use of {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple} was enough to negate the usage of the scroll!

As expected of the S class Inheritance! No! It was all thanks to Han Ying Xue, the true Milkmaid Deity!

Zhang Yang managed to survive due to his tank constitution while some others relied on Han Ying Xue's super healing to survive. Unfortunately, many C class Inheritance players had died, even with her 100% healing rate. After all, there were three [Forbidden Scroll] used on them!

So far, the remaining survivors of China were 33 players, and 19 of them were of Lone Desert Smoke members. As for the other three guilds that used their [Forbidden Scroll], they had lost approximately 80% of their own members. As such, their healers had got to work at speed in order to revigorate all the half-dead members. As for the random players, all of them were only at 50%, at most!

Zhang Yang laughed and attacked his way out of the church. With a loud, cheerful voice, Zhang Yang shouted, "Thanks for the

help!"

What in tarnation?

Hourglass Figure, Seductive Wild Pussy, and Captain America were infuriated. Based on their initial plan, the use of [Forbidden Scroll] was to reduce the number of competitors, however, their main objective was to kill the most annoying person! Zhang Yang!

Little did they know that the guilds had not formed a pact to use the [Forbidden Scrolls]. In fact, it was mere coincidence that they had brought along and used the [Forbidden Scrolls]. They were all forced into a defensive stance and had pushed everything they had on healing to survive. Their uncoordinated actions had not only caused them their demise, but also helped Zhang Yang clear off random players!

Right then, although most of the players were killed, they were but scraps. The real threat were the three guilds that used their [Forbidden Scroll]. They were the only ones capable of standing with Lone Desert Smoke on equal grounds.

In short, they formed a quick alliance and shared a common goal. To kill the strongest player in Lone Desert Smoke and settle the rest for last.

If they had a thousand players, even Zhang Yang, the famous Iron wall of China would collapse, under concentrated fire. However, the number of players surviving on the battlefield could pose no threat to Zhang Yang. With utmost confidence, Zhang

Yang welcomed them with opened arms and a wide grin on his face.

As long as Zhang Yang defeats the three remaining guilds, the battle would finally have its curtains fall.

However, the most undesirable event had occurred. A group of surviving players behind Lone Desert Smoke had launched their attack on Lost Dream, Wei Yan Er, and the rest of the guild members.

"WHAT THE F\*CK ARE YOU GUYS DOING?!" Fatty Han was greatly infuriated. To protect himself, Fatty Han had dismounted his Hunter's pet and mounted on the Phoenix! With two B class Inheritance characters combining their HP, Fatty Han had gained a strong 10 million HP limit. He was almost like Zhang Yang, an unkillable cockroach. He drew his bow and opened fire the traitors. Unfortunately, the players had their information hidden.

It was not clear to whom where the traitors but the morale of the players were dropping greatly. Wei Yan Er and the rest of Lone Desert Smoke could only roar with agony as they changed their targets from the foreigners to their own men. The other enemies saw the commotion and charged abruptly at the church. It was a matter of luck. Whether or not they could kill the person that holds the Command Order, and endure for another 30 minute to be the new owner.

Luckily, Snow Seeker and the other guild master were loyal to Zhang Yang. Instead of turning their backs, they protected Lone Desert Smoke and stopped the attack from the traitors. However,

their numbers were only down to the last 5. Even though they were strong, they were still helpless.

Zhang Yang avoided fighting with Hourglass Figure for the moment, because he wanted to kill the weakened players. There was high chance that besides the guild master, other players would have little to no HP left after being bombarded by the [Forbidden Scroll]. Despite having elongated HP, healers could not heal the great HP lost in time! It is extremely hard to heal someone when their HP is at least 3 times longer than normal! It was possible, but that required more than 10 healers to heal just a single player. There were surely had to be more attackers than healers around at then! Surely, healers will find it harder to survive in the commotion earlier!

Zhang Yang charged into the mass and targeted players with less than 20% HP. He activated {Indiscriminate} and laid down the killing blows.

{Killing Cleave}! {God of War Devastation}! {God of War Heavy Axe}!

Each of his attacks were over a million damage. There were not simply attacks that could harm. No. They were meant to kill!

"Zhan Yu! You shall die right here!" Hourglass Figure finally chased after Zhang Yang and shot him with an arrow.

The current battle greatly differs from the war in War Canyon. This time, they would have to kill Zhang Yang since the Command

Order was in his possession.

Zhang Yang grinned, "Do you really think that I can't kill you now?"

Zhang Yang flapped his wings and soared to her side. With a clean swing of his sword, Zhang Yang landed a cleave on her back.

Instead of playing chase with Zhang Yang, she stood there and fought him head on. She possessed the passive skills that removed the blind spot of a Hunter. (A Hunter cannot attack a target within 3 meters.). Her attacks were some sort of homing missiles. She shot arrows into the sky that could fly down and backward and struck Zhang Yang in his back. The attack had successfully dealt full damage, since they ignored the Defense value of the shield.

# Chapter 689: The New Territory

---

Zhang Yang was left with over 9 million HP left. Hourglass Figure planned to have Zhang Yang attack her, so that others might have the chance to attack him instead!

Zhang Yang applauded her strategy. By having an S class Inheritance, she was more than qualified to have him, another S class Inheritance holder to fight her. As for the attacks, she was more than capable of being on par with him, and with coordinated attacks, Zhang Yang could be killed.

Zhang Yang grinned and cast {Glare of the Death God}! Success!

A dark cloud formed on top of Hourglass Figure's character and crystallized into a grinning skull! Although the skill rarely ever worked on a boss, whenever it is used on a player or a monster, it would be a sure hit!

Zhang Yang snapped his fingers and called out Felice. Together, they attacked Hourglass Figure as rapidly as they could. Since {Glare of the Death God} deals damage by attack counts instead of attack damage, you might as well call out for more pairs of hands!

Devastator!

WHAM!

A large gigantic mechanical servant was summoned out and

joined the battle. Every second counted for the skill's required attacks to proc its damage. With three entities attacking Hourglass Figure, it's a 30% chance of triggering the effects!

Perhaps she was unlucky that day. After just one second, the {Glare of the Death God} was triggered, the black skull grinned and opened its jaws wide to bite down on Hourglass Figure from above, leaving her with only 1 HP left. She had nothing left to defend with. All her defensive, evasive, and invincibility skill were used up trying to survive, during judgment day. There were a few healers who rushed into the fight and healed her. However, no matter how strong their heals were, if they could not heal 20% of her total HP in that instant, it would be doom for her. As such, Zhang Yang laid down a {Killing Cleave} and ended her life.

"AH!" With her cries, Hourglass Figure was now the first S class Inheritance player to fall.

Zhang Yang flew upwards into the sky and back to Han Ying Xue's side. She healed him immediately and scolded him for coming back with only so little HP left. Zhang Yang had paid a rather steep price to have Hourglass Figure killed. His 20 million HP was hacked down to left with only 3 million HP. Han Ying Xue scolded him again and again to remind him that the Command Order was in his possession. He cannot afford to be killed, now that the countdown was almost over!

However, while Zhang Yang had retreated back to his "headquarters", it did not mean that he could not attack. {God of War Crushing Strike} could reach out by as far as 50 meters radius around him. Even though it might take some time to charge up his

EP up, each strike could deal as much as 120,000 Chaos damage. The battleground was not as large, now that many players had already perished. The best part, was that the players who still survived were all left with little HP. Taking 120,000 Chaos damage was something that they could not afford!

100...80...40...and the number still dropped. Even though Lone Desert Smoke had accepted the help from Snow Seeker, their surviving players were not doing too well. Mountain Mover does not put much time in battle and grinding. Hence, it was not strange for someone like him to not own an Inheritance. He had already been a target for assassination before the [Forbidden Scroll] was used. Since there were not much strategy to fight with left, and none was needed as well, the battleground was left with few players, but with strong killing intent.

Despite being left with only a few players, they were but the strongest players. Hence, with no time at all, Snow Seeker and the other guild masters were killed, leaving only Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er, Daffodil Daydream, and Fatty Han left on China's side. Fatty Han was able to hold out longer than he had expected since he was able to mount on the Phoenix during its Transformation status. The rest of the team were at least A class Inheritances with a strong boost of HP. On the other hand, the enemy's side still had over 30 players standing. Right then, their current alliance still holds until Zhang Yang's death. After the Command Order was dropped, the battleground will return to be a chaotic mess.

The time on the countdown timer was ticking with 18 minutes on the clock...



"KILL ZHAN YU! AIM FOR ZHAN YU ALONE!" People started to panic as the time was cutting short. Since there were little to 30 players left on the battlefield, they gathered together, banded up and aimed for Zhang Yang alone. At that point, Zhang Yang had over 7 million HP. Han Ying Xue's MP was finally drained clean after healing him with everything she had and would require some time to recharge. It was the best opportunity to kill Zhang Yang right there and then!

"Haha! Things have gotten pretty interesting, I reckon. Which one would you want to fight?" said Zhang Yang as he unleashed his last trump card. Zhang Yang activated his {Shadow Clone} technique and created 5 copies of himself! All of them shared the same image as him and 7 million HP!

Zhang Yang had already pumped {Shadow Clone} to Level 5, which allowed him to summon a total of 5 shadow clones. Accounting himself into the fray, there was a total of 6 Zhang Yangs on the field!

Which one?! All 30 pairs of eyes were instantly dazed.

Confused, baffled, or rather bamboozled! Although they knew that their AoE attacks could hit them all, targeting even a single one of them would take a lot of time! 7 million HP is not a small amount! If they are extremely unlucky, they would have to kill deal 42 million damage to determine the real one!

"HAHAHAHA!" All 6 Zhang Yang laughed with the same manner and charged at the enemies. Although the information was only known to Zhang Yang and his friends, the enemies did not know

that the shadow clones could only last for 120 seconds! There was no time to lose!

Each of the shadow clones could only deal 10% of Zhang Yang's original attack, hence, 5 shadow clones would increase Zhang Yang's overall DPS to 50%! The key point of Zhang Yang using the skill was not for its attack but for its psychological attack! The enemies did not know that the shadow clone could only deal 10% of Zhang Yang original attack. Hence, when they saw 6 Zhang Yangs coming right at them, what could they think of!? Just one of him could cause enough trouble to the heavens! Right then, there were 6 of him! How would one react to that?

Fortunately, the players there were left on the battlegrounds were veterans. They knew how to calm themselves and to formulate a plan at the very last second. If they were just amateurs or beginners, they would have sh\*t themselves when they saw 6 Zhang Yang coming at them!

Even so, their morale suffered a great fall. Wavering, the enemies could not come up with any countermeasures of dealing with the shadow clones. Wei Yan Er took the chance and struck at them! Sun Xin Yu dashed in as well. She cast {Soul Cleansing} and could kill anyone within 5 minutes! No one could run away from death's grasp then!

2 minutes' up, and four shadow clones disappeared. One of them was killed, leaving the real Zhang Yang laughing at them. Lone Desert Smoke still stood strong with no casualties, while the enemy was left with 24 players.

It was a 6 vs 24 player battle. However, albeit the disadvantage in numbers, Lone Desert Smoke stills hold the upper hand of the battle. It was due to three S class Inheritance holders! Their combined power and endurance had turned Lone Desert Smoke as solid as an impregnable iron fortress!

The main reason why they were still at a disadvantage, even though they had 24 surviving players, was due to their allegiance. They were not all from a single guild and did not share a common goal. They could kill Zhang Yang with their numbers, but at what cost? It would not make sense if they have to offer their lives for someone else's region to win the war! In the end, they were all there for a single purpose, to kill and claim the Command Order and own the new Territory!

As the number of players dropped, the doubt in their heart increased exponentially. Each player did not want to go all out and wanted to keep their trump card until they could get a hold of the Command Order. That is, if only Zhang Yang was killed. When one stops to think, they had unconsciously provided Zhang Yang and his team breathing room to counterattack. 5 ultra-strong DPS and one super-charged healer, it was a battle where Zhang Yang could not lose.

In the end, the enemy's side was left with lesser and lesser players. Captain America roared, "You all are a bunch of selfish pricks! Why are you still holding back! That's Lone Desert Smoke's 5 strongest players, right there! If we can't kill Zhan Yu, no one gets the Command Order! Use all your ultimate skills and wipe them all clean! Only after Lone Desert Smoke is defeated, we can settle the score between ourselves, afterwards! You want to lose it all now!?"

His words made sense then. Or rather, the players on the battlefield were started to get weary of the fight. Any command they receive would be complied instantly. Hence, in an instant, all 18 players left on the battlefield had unleashed their hidden skill. Han Ying Xue's MP was already drained to the last drop. With no resources left to support her team, she could only stand at the corner of the church and watch teammates' HP bars being whacked down.

Zhang Yang reacted quickly. He gulped down a bottle of [Temporary Invincibility Potion] and cast {Vanguard's Aggression} to protect all 6 of them.

"Kill!"

Zhang Yang had managed to create a short 10-second window to attack and command his team to lay it all out. Instead of targeting anyone, Zhang Yang took charge and marked one player at a time to maximized the killing rate. By then, none of the players on the field had a full HP bar. In fact, most of them had only half HP at most. Hence, Zhang Yang started weeding out the lowest HP player first and killed him within two volleys of attack.

15...13...11...

By the time the enemies had been cut down to 10, Zhang Yang was the only person amongst all six of them who had been taking damage. However, he was still holding strong. His iron-clad defense was so strong that no one was able to hurt him when he

had been killing them continuously! Having 1% HP or 99% HP does not affect a player's attack power, unlike the real world where the more damage you sustain, the less damage you could deal. Zhang Yang's character was able to take all the damage, and he forced himself to take them all for the team! With Han Ying Xue healing everyone with every drop of MP she regained, the team's destructive power had not dropped a single bit!

The end of the war was in sight. In truth, if none of the guild masters had used their [Forbidden Scrolls], it would have been extremely hard to predict how would the battle unfolds. After all, with numbers, even ants could take down an elephant. In fact, Lone Desert Smoke's powers versus the combined forces of the other region's guilds would be a landslide.

Thanks to the usage of the [Forbidden Scroll] and Han Ying Xue's super milk, the number of hostiles on the battlefield was reduced dramatically and the survivability of Lone Desert Smoke, or rather, China's defenders were extremely high! It was an unexpected turn of events. The enemies, plural, had mistakenly helped Zhang Yang to ease his burden!

A [Forbidden Scroll] is valuable but not as valuable as a Territory. However, the enemy was left burning in the war and Zhang Yang had poured petrol over them! All three players, Hourglass Figure, Seductive Wild Pussy, and Captain America had regretted their action so much that they now wished that they had sat down to discuss the attack plan!

Zhang Yang and his party had killed every single surviving member of the enemy. Even though the countdown had not ended

yet, the battle was already over. The winner only had yet to step up to the podium.

While sitting and resting, Han Ying Xue suddenly asked, "Back then, when we were left with around 20 players, who were the bastards that backstabbed us?"

She had almost lost her life if she had not forgotten about activating an accessory skill. Without Han Ying Xue in the field, Lone Desert Smoke could have lost everything in the war.

Zhang Yang scoffed coldly. "The only people I could think of are The Dominators and The Myth. However, judging by the capabilities, the only guild that was capable of pulling such a feat would be Eternal Flame!"

The guild, Eternal Flame had been extremely active for the past few months. They had been actively recruiting strong players and even hosted strong class Inheritance holders in the guild. Zhang Yang did not cough out the name so casually. He had thought about it since the guild did have potential. Members of the guild Eternal Flame had been on passive mode ever since the start of the battle. They had chosen to hide in the corner of the church and pretended to fight. Instead of taking hits, they had chosen to lay low and reserve all their HP restoration skills at bay. That was the reason why many were able to survive the attack of three simultaneous {Forbidden Scroll} activation.

"Those bastards! They had hidden away their profile info! We have no proof!" said Wei Yan E.

"Are we officers of the law?" Zhang Yang turned to Sun Xin Yu and placed his fingers on supple lips. "Are we cops? Do we need proof? This is not China. This is a game! There are no rules! If we can pinpoint the real culprit, we will wage war with them. It's that simple," said Zhang Yang as he lowered his fingers.

"That's awesome!" Wei Yan Er cried. "So, when are we gonna start a war?"

There was no one else that was as battle lusted as the little girl. Zhang Yang sighed heavily as he felt that it was fortunate for him to take over the position of guild master from her.

5 minutes later, the countdown timer disappeared and Zhang Yang was now the owner of Sauron's Castle. Zhang Yang immediately walked over to several spots to examine its compound. He then chose two areas in the castle and set up two Teleportation Points. One leads to White Jade Castle, and the other leads to Morning Town. Both Teleportation points were One-Way transports, if he had not set up the same manner of Teleportation Point in Morning Town, Zhang Yang would have to fork out a large sum of money for the Energy Crystals. These were incredibly expensive! When there's a chance for him to save some gold, Zhang Yang would go to all ends for it. He would rather spend some gold coins to reward the players who had participated in the war rather than spend them for the game developers to exploit.

# Chapter 690: Background of the Eternal Flame

---

In a Territory Conquest, everyone was logically eligible to snatch the Territory Order for themselves. The system did not say that the other China Region players could not snatch the Territory Order from Zhang Yang. Truth to be told, Zhang Yang had paid quite a substantial amount of 'price' before he got Snow Seeker and her guild to 'work' for Lone Desert Smoke.

From that point of view, Zhang Yang did not mind having Eternal Flame snatch the Territory Order from him.

However, the fact that irked Zhang Yang so much that he was infuriated was that Eternal Flame was reserving their strength while they were using other guilds as their 'shield' to protect themselves. They had waited for the Lone Desert Smoke to face the worst situation before they charged in and gave Lone Desert Smoke a stab in the back. It was infuriating, even for the others! It was not acceptable at all!

Therefore, the moment when the Territory Conquest was over, Zhang Yang gave the order to his guild to declare war over the Eternal Flame. Including the Alliances of Lone Desert Smoke, over 80,000 high Tier players were involved in hunting down the Eternal Flame.

The guildmaster of the Eternal Flame was very generous at throwing his money into the guild. The strength of the guild had grown incredibly fast because of that. However, they were not able to outgrow the strength of Lone Desert Smoke in just a few days.



Under the heavy assaults, infused with the wrath of Lone Desert Smoke, the Eternal Flame was suffering heavy casualties.

The slaughtering went on for 7 days straight!

Some would say that Lone Desert Smoke was showing everyone who was the boss. They had not attained enough evidence yet before they launched their attacks on the Eternal Flame. They suspected that Lone Desert Smoke was taking advantage over a guild that was growing stronger. Some would support the Lone Desert Smoke. They would say that the Eternal Flame was using money to buy high Tier players. The first impression that they gave was that the guild was like a marketplace. Their actions would only shame the China Region! Hence, they deemed that it was necessary for Lone Desert Smoke to hit them hard in the face.

However, there were also others that were 'passionate; watching the drama from aside. The outcome of this madness would not concern them at all after all. They were also bored at having nothing to do at the moment. So they could just enjoy a good show of a war between two powerful guilds. They could also make topics out of the battle on the forums so that they could have something interesting to discuss there.

However, the war only lasted for 7 days. Zhang Yang had ceased the assaults on the Eternal Flame after that. Everything went calm once again. However, the war ended, not because Zhang Yang wanted to. Zhang Yang put an end to the war because many guildmasters had advised him to.

Even Snow Seeker had to be frank with Zhang Yang. She told

Zhang Yang that she received a certain amount of stress from someone powerful, on the higher levels of management of the city. That someone wanted her to persuade Zhang Yang to stop the war. That someone even threatened Snow Seeker that if Zhang Yang would not stop right away, Crimson Rage would be forced to declare war on Lone Desert Smoke. Well, she was threatened with the leverage of Crimson Cosmetic Holdings's market. That someone would pull a couple of strings to cripple the market of Crimson Cosmetic Holdings.

Although Crimson Cosmetic Holdings was indeed a large-scale company that was very influential in the market, they would not have the capability to go against the power of Politics. If the officials denounce Crimson Cosmetic Holdings by reporting negative news and information about them in public, the related departments would have the tendency to launch a full investigation on Crimson Cosmetic Holdings. If that happens, any company would have huge issues later on!

Therefore, Snow Seeker had to be totally honest with Zhang Yang, that she had to follow the order for the sake of all her employees under her company.

Other than Snow Seeker, other guildmasters, such as Greensleeves Prince and Sword of Light were also expressing their stand, where they were pressurized to persuade Zhang Yang to stop oppressing the Eternal Flame. Or else, every guild would be standing against Lone Desert Smoke!

It would still be acceptable if only a few guildmasters were saying the same thing at the same time. However, Zhang Yang had over

hundreds of guildmasters saying the same thing! He could not help but feel shocked!

How powerful exactly is the person behind the Eternal Flame? Who could the mysterious Dragon Marquis really be?

Although Lone Desert Smoke was still the Number One guild in the entire China Region, Zhang Yang was not so arrogant that he would believe he could take on all guilds in the entire China Region! Therefore, he had to cease his assaults on the Eternal Flame and end the war at once. Afterwards, he sent the guild back to grinding their levels.

At least the storm had calmed down for the moment. Those who did not know about the truth would think that Lone Desert Smoke had enough of slaughtering. However, Zhang Yang had a glimpse of worry towards the Eternal Flame. Well, this guild had never appeared in his previous life before. So, which butterfly in the butterfly effect had fluttered its wings so much that the situation had changed so much?

Zhang Yang passed the responsibility of investigating the background of 'Dragon Marquis' to Sun Xin Yu. After all, she is a good detective. She also has one hell of a background. So, what kind of information couldn't she find out, then? If Sun Xin Yu is unable find out anything about this 'Dragon Marquis', then no one else should be able to do it as well!

For the next few days, Zhang Yang led his party at grinding their levels with a heavy heart. They were trying to attain Level 150 as soon as possible, so that they would not have to suffer the effects of

the Level Gap Suppression function of the game on the Level 150 – 180 maps. Previously, their top priority was to take down the Territory. They were not in a favorable position to afford any delays for that. However, it was a little different this time around. They were going over to the Spider Kingdom just to complete their quest. That quest had been left on their quest list for over a year, now. So, it would not affect them much if they waited for another few more days first before departing for the location.

Zhang Yang made some [Invincible Potions] whenever he had the time. He only placed a small number of this potion to sell at his Little Merchandize Shop. Each bottle was tagged at 200 gold pieces. That amount of value would be 50 times higher than its initial cost! It was sold as a luxurious good in the game! Apparently, this sort of potion was designed for buyers who are filthy rich and love to show off during PvP matches.

However, Zhang Yang needed the fame that the [Invincible Potion] could bring to his shop. He needed that fame to boost the sales of all the Mythical Tier equipment in his shop. As expected, the gross sales for this Little Merchandize Shop increased tremendously because of the [Invincible Potion]. Fatty Han, Hundred Shots and the rest of his gang were constantly cheering, because they would be taking a share out of the profit, after all.

The [Book of Revelation] was the one thing that Zhang Yang could not fathom.

He checked the official website and he still could not find anything about it. Furthermore, it was nothing similar to an [Inheritance Fragment] at all. If you bring the item into a new

map, this part of the [Book of Revelation] would not have an automated function where the quest notification would inform you whenever you are near to another part of the item. Of course, there was also a possibility that the maps that Zhang Yang had visited did not have any of the parts of the item. Hence, there was no notification, whatsoever.

According to Zhang Yang's understanding, if one collects all Chapters of this [Book of Revelation] and put them together according to their chapter sequence, the additional damage effect would definitely be increased. The resurrection time or the amount of HP would also receive improvements as well. However, it remained to be known if there would be any other additional effects.

The party headed over to the Mar Gaia Forest to grind their levels. There was no one else there to snatch their monsters. They could just find a spot most saturated with monsters. Then, they could just lure as many monsters as they could handle and slaughter the monsters. That could really boost their grinding efficiency to the point that others would drop their jaws if they could see what they were doing.

Practically speaking, the most important thing in grinding levels would be to pick a spot where players could farm as long as they like. Or else, it would be pointless, even if you have a one-hit-kill kind of Skill!

When 'God's Miracle' was having its two-year anniversary, Zhang Yang was the first player to hit Level 150. He remained the number one, top leading player on the leaderboard of the server. Currently,

the first 15 players according to their levels were as below:

1. Zhan Yu, Class S God of War Inheritance, Lone Desert Smoke, China Region, Level 150
2. Frost Night, Class S Shadow Dancer Inheritance, Lone Desert Smoke, China Region, Level 148
3. Heart of Destruction, Class S God or Arcane Magic Inheritance, Dark Palace, North America Region, Level 147
4. Hourglass Figure, Class S Shadow Striker Inheritance, Land of Savages, India Region, Level 147
5. God's Left Hand, Class S Apocalyptic Knight Inheritance, Paragon, Europe Region, level 147
6. Drizzler, Class A Darkness Inheritance, Lone Desert Smoke, China Region, Level 147
7. Little Snow, Class S Milkmaid Deity Inheritance, Lone Desert Smoke, China Region, Level 147
8. Daffodil Daydream, Class A Soul Breaker Inheritance, Lone desert Smoke, China Region, Level 146
9. Lost Dream, Class B Snowman Inheritance, Lone Desert Smoke, China Region, Level 146

10. Dusk Phoenix, Class A Blood Angel Inheritance, Paragon, Europe Region, Level 146

11. Captain America, Class A Titan Inheritance, Justice League, North America Region, Level 145

12. Snow Seeker, Class A Frost Phoenix Inheritance, Crimson Rage, China Region, Level 145

13. Seductive Wild Pussy, Class A Arachnid Inheritance, Judgement, Europe Region, Level 145

14. Scholar Musou, Class A Lord of Flame Inheritance, Eternal Flame, China Region, Level 145

15. Longrich, Class A Death Swamp Inheritance, Eternal Flame, China Region, Level 145

The entire list of the Leaderboard had been occupied with the names of players with high-Class Inheritances. The first 5 names on the top of the list were the names of 5 players with Class S Inheritance. If Han Ying Xue was not a Healer, she could have taken over the 6th place. When that happens, the top 6 players on the list would all be players with Class S Inheritances.

Lost Dream was the only player with Class B Inheritance to force himself into the Top 15 positions on the Leaderboard. Part of the main reason, being he always tagged along Zhang Yang and the

gang while grinding his level up. Secondly, he had also spent quite a large sum of money on purchasing [Experience Books] to feed his own Experience Point Bar. Furthermore, he was also a skillful, high Tiered player himself! That is why he had been able to become the only player with a Class B Inheritance on the Leaderboard list.

However, Zhang Yang was irked by the Leaderboard this time around. First of all, he could no longer choose to stay unranked. He could no longer keep an element of surprise to show himself off, even if he wanted to. Of course, with his current fame, he couldn't stay low, even if he wants to.

Most importantly, the Leaderboards had blatantly revealed everyone's Inheritance to the public! Although the names of the Inheritance would not reveal much information about the Inheritances, it was just annoying to see your Inheritance being listed out into the public. It felt like one's privacy and hidden triumph card is being invaded.

Zhang Yang could clearly remember that the Leaderboard in his previous life was very different from this one. Meanwhile, everyone could choose not to appear on the Leaderboards, if they choose not to be. Furthermore, the Leaderboard did not reveal everyone's secrets, such as Inheritance Names and Levels.

In other words, the details in this life compared to his previous life had changed much.

However, the fact that China Region dominated the Leaderboard was a fact that the China Region should be proud of. 9 of them had



made it onto the Leaderboard. That being said, they had dominated over 60% of the list. Their claim was much larger than the sum of other Regions combined! Meanwhile, among the 9 players, most of them were from Lone Desert Smoke! 6 of them had made it to the Leaderboard!

Nevertheless, Zhang Yang felt a little pressurized at seeing the two names that belonged to the Eternal Flame.

Scholar Musou was quite a renowned player in Zhang Yang's previous life. However, he was the ace for a guild by the name Breaking Dawn. So Zhang Yang had not expected to see that this player in Eternal Flame instead. Zhang Yang had never encountered that fellow, because he was not that powerful in his previous life. He had no chance at all of encountering that person. All he knew was that Scholar Musou was a Berserker and he became famous because of his detailed and precise controls.

On the other hand, Longrich was a name completely unfamiliar to Zhang Yang!

Well, the game was not short of skillful and powerful players, after all. Because of some unforeseen circumstances, they had remained in the shadows for the moment without having the chance to show their faces to the public. For instance, in his previous life, if Zhang Yang could have gotten some support and care from any large-scale guild in boosting his level and providing him some high Tier equipment, he could have become one of the most fearsome players in the history of the game!

Therefore, Zhang Yang was being extra careful, even though he

had not heard such a name in his previous life. Who knows, how well a player could perform with a great deal of money supporting him from behind.

# Chapter 691: Spider Kingdom

---

However, it would be pointless to be in fear all the time. Zhang Yang had never underestimated his opponents. He would not fear them either just because they were powerful as well. On the contrary, Zhang Yang had enough confidence that he would be able to triumph over his opponents, as long as his opponents were of equal level and equipment.

Furthermore, his current level and equipment Tier were the best in the entire world now. He also had an extremely powerful Battle Companion, Felice, and a Legendary Tier pet mount! Who could best his current attributes now?

Upon reaching Level 150, Zhang Yang had another new Skill Point to add to his {Shadow Clone}. With the new upgrade, he could now summon up to 6 Shadow Clones at the same time. Once he activates his {Shadow Clone}, 7 Zhang Yang would become a threatening existence that would send anyone trembling in fear!

After switching to his Demon Slayer's Ring and Dark Star Shield, Zhang Yang's Attack power did not increase much. However, his HP and Defence had increased immensely!

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 150

HP: 779,420 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 14,890

Attack: 81,479 – 101,719 ((32205-40205) \*253%)

Damage Absorption: 10,606

Critical Rate: 21%

Lucky Strike Rate: 2.9%

Currently, the Physical Attack on a player or a monster must reach over 28,147 in order to penetrate that thick Defence of Zhang Yang. On the other hand, the Magic Attack of a player or a monster must reach at least 13,257 in order to cause effective damage. These attributes did not even include his {God of War Transformation} yet. If he had another 20% damage immunity, his attributes would be even more terrifying.

Felice and Phoenix pet had also hit Level 150 and had their 'equipment' upgraded automatically. However, because it was just like upgrading a Level 140 Ethereal equipment to a Level 150 Ethereal equipment, his improvement did not even exceed 10%. Hence, it was much more normal in that sense.

After farming monsters for another couple of days, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, and Wei Yan Er finally hit the level cap of Level 150. The party no longer had any reason to stay in the Mar Gaia Forest. Instead, they made way to Spider kingdom to finally complete the

quest that had been sitting in their quest list for over a year.

The Spider Kingdom was just as its name sounded like. Not long after they set foot on the map, they could see spider webs blanketing every corner of the mountains. There were black, grey, flowery, big, small, gigantic spiders all over the place. Wei Yan Er and the ladies were very disgusted by the scenery.

Though the map's main theme centered around 'Spider', there were also other sorts of beings in the surroundings. There was also a substantial amount of wild boars and gigantic bats roaming in the forest. These monsters were acting as the predators hunting on the little spiders. However, if they ever meet giant spiders that were much larger than them, they would become the prey instead, being hunted by the gigantic spiders.

These spiders did not just weave their webs across the ground, in between the forest and in between the valleys. They were also all over the sky! Furthermore, the webs in the sky were actually more than the webs in the surroundings on the ground. The moment when a pet mount touches these webs, they would be paralyzed for over half a minute.

Therefore, the party decided to take the route on the ground. Though they had encountered a large number of spiders, it only took them approximately 1 second to kill each of the spiders. Hence, the spiders did not slow them down at all.

After progressing onwards for about half an hour, the party had entered a thick forest. There, they finally managed to see humanoid beings in the area.

The place could still be considered as a village, albeit an unconvincing one. However, the design of the buildings did not belong to humans, elves or orcs, or even dwarfs. The buildings were actually formed from layers of spider webs. Many Spider Men were crawling on the spider webs on their eight legs. Their butts were attached to strings of spider web thread. Some of the spider web threads were ended with a beast tied up, while some ended up with just items and belongings. The scenery looked amazing.

Spider Man!

[Burrow Forest Spider Man] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level 155

HP: 98,160

The unique thing about this was that these spiders with human faces were all green-named monsters. They did not automatically attack players who approached them. Instead, they would provide the players quests and some of them would even sell something special.

Zhang Yang and his gang kept their mount into their inventory and they walked on foot towards the 'village'. Instantly, their arrival attracted the attention of many Spider Men. A crowd of onlookers formed around Zhang Yang and his gang. as if they had never seen men before. Their facial expressions on their face were surprisingly humane. They were most probably wondering why

the appearance of Zhang Yang and his gang looked so bizarre to them.

"Hahaha! So ugly!"

"My lord, what kind of mutation is this? I wonder what is the origin of their species!"

"They look like freaks! They actually only have 4 limbs!"

"How unfortunate that some of the females actually have cute and pretty faces. But their butts are so small! They do not look like they are good at producing offspring!"

The Spider Men were discussing about the appearance of Zhang Yang and his gang. They were criticizing Zhang Yang and his gang from head to feet, literally.

Han Ying Xue and the other ladies frowned intensely. These Spider Men were actually comparing their fine hot bodies to the body figures of a female spider with the face of a human! If they really had such body figures that would include a butt of the size of a bathtub, these ladies would rather die!

"Outsiders!" A male Spider man crawled out from the crowd with his eight legs. He had white hair and he had a thick beard too. Zhang Yang and his gang could not help but wonder how many years have this Spider Man lived. It appeared that this Spider Man had quite the reputation among the community of Spider Man.

The others were clearing up a path so that he could walk up to Zhang Yang and his gang.

This human-faced spider was called Sandria The Wise. Although he was just a Normal Tier monster, he had a specific name on top of his head. It seemed that he was most likely the one who would give quests to the players.

Zhang Yang bowed and made a polite salute of an Adventurer, then he said, "My respected elder, we are Adventurers who hail from a faraway land called the White Jade Castle. We are in urgent of meeting the Spider God!"

Everyone in the surroundings looked at each other and burst into laughter. Sandria raised one of his legs up to calm the crowd. Then he said, "Humans, do you have any idea who are you meeting with? He is our god, the greatest among our gods! Even the true believers are not necessarily able to see him!"

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said, "My respected elder, you can just tell us where to find the Spider God! As for whether he would like to see us or not, we'll let Spider God himself decide!"

"I'm afraid that you are going to be disappointed in such regard." Sandria shook his head and said, "We can't allow you to interrupt our fatherly god even if you're here to worship him!"

Bastard! Wei Yan Er began to grind her teeth. She moved her battle axe around, facing Sandria's eight legs as if she was deciding which leg should she chop first.



"Argh ---"

Just when things were getting nowhere, a miserable scream was heard coming from afar followed by a loud rumble that shook the ground. The rumble was so loud that it could be described as deafening.

"It's Daday!" The facial expression of a face of a human-faced spider suddenly changed. Then he quickly raced towards the direction where the scream came from. However, after a brief moment, that same Spider Man turned back and screamed, "It's the Iron Back Rhinoceroses! Quickly go --- argh!"

Before he could finish his words, he also let out a miserable scream and that was it. He never got any chance to scream ever again.

"Iron Back Rhinoceros!" Everyone began to panic. They were like ants on a hot pot, beginning to scatter into the surroundings. Sandria was the only one who remained calm. Then he said, "Get onto the trees! Weave your webs as high as you can!"

"But The Wise One, how about our eggs?" one of the spiders was pointing his leg towards rows of white eggs beneath a tree.

Sandria's face became gloomy, instantly. Then he said, "There's nothing we can do about it..."

"Maybe we can do something about it!" Zhang Yang quickly cut in and said, "We shall drive away the Iron Back Rhinoceroses for you!"

The spiders revealed a sense of disdain on their faces. However, none of them were in the mood to ridicule Zhang Yang, as the situation was very critical at the moment. They quickly shot their web strings to the top of the trees and pulled themselves up from the ground. After just awhile, they had climbed up to the trees staying at a safe distance from the ground. At the same time, the rumbling of the ground was getting louder and louder. Everyone knew that the Iron Back Rhinoceroses were approaching closer by the second.

Suddenly, a row of gigantic Iron Back Rhinoceroses charged out from the forest. They were charging forward like a row of bulldozers running down everything in front of them. The trees were ran down like nothing! Those Spider Men who were on the trees that got ran over quickly escaped to other trees that were closest to them.

[Iron Back Rhinoceros] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 160

HP: 104,448

Defence: 4,260

Melee-Attack: 20,992 – 30,992

Skills:

[Battering Horn]: Uses a sharp horn to flip the target in the air, causing 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. If the target is stunned, this Skill will cause 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage.

[Brutal Trampling]: Tramples the ground and blasts all enemy targets that are within the range of 3-meter radius. Stuns all targets within the effective area for 5 seconds.

Note: The Iron Back Rhinoceroses are famous for having high Defence. However, that did not stop the Spider Man from making them into their favorite food. Hence, these Iron Back Rhinoceroses would sometimes gather together to get their revenge on the Spider Men.

"It's time to work!" Zhang Yang laughed. He did not summon out his Phoenix pet, this time. Instead, he just charged towards the monsters. With the first swing of his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. Zhang Yang activated his {Blast Wave} and caused immense damage to the Iron Back Rhinoceroses. With that strike, he also stunned the monsters for 4 seconds.

The others began to round up on the Iron Back Rhinoceroses and unleashed their attacks on the monsters. The attacks of fire, magic, and swords were raining down upon the Iron Back Rhinoceroses. Those Normal Tier monsters did not even last any longer than 3

seconds before they collapsed onto the ground and died!

The spiders hiding on the trees dropped their jaws, as they stared straight at what was happening down there. They unintentionally lower down their web strings down while they were so focused on staring at Zhang Yang and his gang slaughtering the Rhinos up. They looked just like normal humans drooling. Strings of spider threads were dangling down from the trees, looking like white hairs hanging down from the trees. The scene was oddly spectacular.

Under the heavy assaults of the party, hundreds of Iron Back Rhinoceroses did not last any longer than a few minutes. It did not take long before Zhang Yang and his gang wiped out most of the monsters. The remaining monsters realized that they were out of their league. So they quickly turned their butts around and escaped. After the Rhinos rumbled their way out of the forest, the forest returned calm and peaceful once again.

However, the peace was broken by cheers of joy after a short while. The Spider Men were sliding down to the ground from the top of the tress. Then they began to dance with their 'traditional' dance moves. Their eight legs were moving oddly smooth and their dancing was oddly satisfying to look at. Well, Zhang Yang and his gang got a chance to feast their eyes upon something today.

"Human warriors that hail from afar, I must show our gratitude for fending off those foul beasts from our village and saving our next generation!" Sandria walked up to Zhang Yang and the rest of the gang with his eight legs. Then he made a gesture that suggested he was grateful for their help.

Well, if you spiders weren't so into the meat of those Iron Back Rhinoceroses, would you all be attacked, then?

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said, "No problem at all!"

"About the... erm..." Sandria revealed an embarrassed expression on his face and said, "I know that you wanted to meet our father of god. However, telling outsiders about the whereabouts of our Spider God would be blasphemous in our religion. I still cannot tell you about the whereabouts of our Spider God. However, you can head over to the Temple of Andros to seek out some quests. Upon completing some quests, you will be accepted as one of the believers of our religion. By then, you will be able to know the whereabouts of our great Spider God!"

Phew... at least they did not pointlessly kill the monsters this time!

Zhang Yang and his gang nodded and left the odd 'village'. Then, they followed the instructions given by Sandrio and made their way over to the Temple of Andros, located by the west.

# Chapter 692: Red Dragon Pet

---

Apparently, Andros was not a location's name. It was actually the name of the Spider God. According to legend, the ancestors of this Spider Men had followed the God of Light long during the ancient times. Because the ancestor managed to perform exceptionally meritorious services for the God of Light, he was gifted with a part of the Divinity of the Gods.

When the great war among gods had ended, the gods had fallen one after another. Andros hid himself in the Spider Kingdom and lived a quiet life ever since. Of course, this location was not named as the Spider Kingdom when he first arrived. Well, this Spider 'Brother' could not stand the loneliness for long. So he 'shot' his 'junk' into a few female spiders.

Well, one female spider could lay many eggs at a time. Not long after that, a large army of spiders spawned into being, to conquer this land. They worshipped Andros like a god ever since. They even built many temples to enshrine him.

The number of temples built was so abundant that every 'village' that had Spider Men in it would come to know the existence of the Temple of Andros. The only difference between these temples were their sizes.

Zhang Yang and his gang understood that even though this land belonged to the spiders, but there were also factions among themselves. For instance, the spiders with human faces were the existence of the highest class among all of their kind. They had evolved so much that they attained intelligence just like humans.

On the other hand, gigantic spiders and other kind of spiders only had the instincts of beasts. They were just like gorillas and monkeys.

Therefore, gigantic spiders and the other type of spiders did not just attack the beasts, they also treated the Spider Men the same, hunting them down as food!

Upon leaving the forest the sky was still covered with spider webs. Zhang Yang and his gang could only travel on foot like how they came into the map. After traveling on foot for over half an hour, they saw a white temple within their sights.

That was the Temple of Andros.

After talking a bunch of crap with the Priests of the temple, Zhang Yang and his gang activated a new Reputation Meter --- Spider Kingdom. They were all deemed as Neutral for the moment. However, Zhang Yang and his gang were slightly disappointed after they took a look at the items being sold at the Reputation Shop by the temple.

It was not because everything was useless. It was because the items being sold were not as valuable as they thought they would be. For instance, the Recipe of [Level 6 Healing Potion] that Zhang Yang had an eye for requires his Reputation to be 'Admired' before he could buy the recipe. However, Zhang Yang remembered that this was not the only way of getting this recipe. He remembered seeing someone selling the potions in the Auction House in his previous life.

Polishing up 'Reputation' for a recipe that is not even 'exclusive' would not be worth the trouble and time. Everyone knew that building up Reputations would really be tiring and boring. No one would have done it if the Reputation Meter could not allow players to purchase certain rare and special items only.

Most importantly, Zhang Yang and his gang had no idea what kind of 'sequel' would they be triggering, upon completing the quest - 'Super Urgent News'. Would it even be worth their time and effort? The Priest at the temple had said it himself. They would send a few believers who were deemed to be the most sincere among them all over to the sacred location.

In this game, the most sincere hearts means the highest Reputation. Meanwhile, that sacred location should be the place where Andros was currently residing. Of course, the believers could only worship Andros from afar. However, Zhang Yang only needed to know exactly where Andros would be in order to complete the quest.

Unfortunately, only Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream had the quest 'Super Urgent News'. This quest was not sharable to the others. Fatty Han and the rest of the party who did not have the quest decided to grind their levels somewhere else.

In such circumstances, Fatty Han would say Zhang Yang and the 4 ladies were having a 5P while everyone else is gone. Of course, he had to say that in front of the ladies. Well, he paid the price of being beaten up by the ladies for saying such demeaning words. By



the time the ladies were done with him, his face was so swollen that he looked like a pig.

Since that there were no dungeons or bosses to slay, grinding anywhere else would be the same. Furthermore, this map was very suitable for players to grind their levels, mainly because there were only a few people on this map. So, they would not have to compete against each other in killing monsters.

Zhang Yang and the 4 ladies began to camp on the map and ran errands to boost their Reputations. The quests for boosting Reputation were quite simple and straightforward. For example, they only had to kill tens of specific beasts.

While the quests were easy, naturally, the Reputation Points rewarded were not abundant either. In two days, the 5 of them only managed to elevate their Reputation up to 'Friendly'. They still had a long way ahead, before they even get themselves eligible to purchase the Recipe. So, it would take even more effort before they become 'the most sincere believers'.

Zhang Yang did not mind actually. He could have 4 pretty ladies to keep him accompanied. So it would not be boring for him at all, even if he is doing the same thing repeatedly. Furthermore, Han Ying Xue kept pulling Wei Yan Er's leg from time to time. Sometimes, the little brat was so annoyed that she began to scream and shout like a little b\*tch. The atmosphere was never dull.

"Zhang Yang, I, I... I... I.... I ---" Just when they five of them were slaying monsters, Hundred Shots's voice suddenly came across the party channel. His voice was filled with joy and excitement.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh. Then he asked, "Uncle Hundred Shots, are you going to become a dad for the second time?"

"Yea... no! Argh! I've got a new baby!" Hundred Shots began to lose his words, or perhaps, his mind as well!

"Huh? Uncle Hundred Shots, didn't your wife just give birth to a baby last November? So how ---"

"Wah! Uncle Hundred Shots! You're so bad! How could you secretly keep a mistress from your wife!?"

"Looks are deceiving! Look at him! Uncle Hundred Shots looks so honest and decent! I can't believe he would actually keep a secret mistress!"

"Haih... men will go bad when they're rich... The truth is always that painful!"

"Pui! I was wrong about you, uncle Hundred Shots!"

"No! No!" Hundred Shots quickly explained himself, "I'm not having a baby girl or baby boy in real life! I'm having a baby pet for Hunters!"

"Cheh!"

Everyone sighed. Should he be so happy and excited over a new baby pet?

Zhang Yang suddenly felt a rush in his chest. Could it be, that Hundred Shot had just acquired a Red Dragon Pet like he did in his previous life? He could not hold his smile in anymore. He joked and said, "Uncle Hundred Shots, don't tell me you got a Dragon pet! That would be even luckier than having a bird sh\*t on you!"

"Huh? How did you ... You got it right!" Hundred Shot staggered for a while before he continued to talk, "I passed by a godforsaken jungle. Then I saw two monsters battling against each other. The mountains and the ground shook so heavily that I was sent flying and I fell into a cave! When I tried to get up on my feet, I saw a Dragon egg right beside me. After I took it up, it hatched and a red baby dragon came out of it!"

"A Dragon pet!"

Everyone was surprised. An accidental fall that could lead a person to a Red Dragon Pet? That is even better than a beginner's luck if you ask me!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud. No wonder Hundred Shots did not reveal any details on how he got his Red Dragon Pet in Zhang Yang's previous life. It seemed that his luck was too good to be true when he got his Red Dragon Pet. Maybe, people would laugh so hard that they might lose some teeth if they ever knew about the truth behind it.

However, it was very fortunate for Zhang Yang as well. Although he had stirred up the butterfly effect a little, things that were not supposed to happen did not happen at all. For instance, Sun Xin Yu did get her Shadow Striker Inheritance and Hundred Shots had also acquired his Red Dragon pet. Zhang Yang had finally feel relieved after all this while.

The Red Dragon pet and the Phoenix pet were basically the same. Their Tiers would automatically improve as their levels increase. However, now the Red Dragon pet was only Level 0. No one could see the Skill Descriptions for the Red Dragon just yet. Therefore, Hundred Shots immediately took his Red Dragon pet out and went to grind its level up. In a few days time, Lone Desert Smoke would get another super powerful Hunter!

The amount of Experience Point that a pet needed to level up was far lesser than the amount of Experience Point that players required to level up. So, Hundred Shots managed to level up his Red Dragon pet up to Level 146. The power of the Red Dragon pet was beginning to show its form. It was amazing!

The Red Dragon pet was also similar to the Phoenix pet in the regard of their attacks and Skills. The Red Dragon pet only had {Dragon Breath} that could only attack one target at a time. However, the attack could also be spread out widely. This Red Dragon pet was a godlike pet that could do rare 'Normal Attacks' which could bring out the effect of AoE attack! The most impressive part of this pet was that its {Dragon Breath} could cause Chaos Damage to the targets. It was slightly more powerful than the Phoenix pet, in this sense.

The Fire Damage of the Phoenix pet could be reduced with a Fire Resistance attribute. However, there was no way that the Chaos Damage would be reduced in anyway or form.

If they are going to challenge bosses that are more than 20 levels higher than them, the existence of this Red Dragon pet could be one of the most powerful supporters that they could ever have!

Furthermore, upon reaching Level 100, the Red Dragon pet had also acquired the {Godly Dragon Transformation} which was as powerful as a Class B Inheritance Transformation Skill. That Skill could boost its Maximum HP, Attack and Defence as well. Although the Phoenix pet also had a Transformation Skill that was as powerful as a Class B Inheritance Transformation Skill, the Phoenix pet would lose out because of its Fire Attack attribute. Therefore, it would be slightly weaker compared to the Red Dragon pet.

Although the Phoenix pet had {Reborn from the Ashes}, it could no longer activate its Transformation Skill upon its resurrection through the activation {Reborn from the Ashes}. Well, no matter how powerful a pet without a Transformation Skill gets, there would still be a limit there.

Initially, Hundred Shots already had a Class B Inheritance. Now that he had acquired a Red Dragon pet which also has the capability of activating a Transformation Skill that is as powerful as a Class B Inheritance Transformation Skill, Hundred Shot basically got a super boost to his strength and attributes. When he and his pet activate their Transformation Skills at the same

instant, their power level should be able to triumph over the power level of a player with Class A Inheritance while having his or her Transformation Skill activated. Hundred Shots and his Red Dragon pet might even be able to match the power level of a player with Class S Inheritance while having his or her Transformation Skill activated!

Fatty Han might not be able to match Hourglass Figure. However, when two legendary Hunters join hands together in a battle, they should become the best line-up of Hunters in the entire ‘God’s Miracle’! Sun Xin Yu had dominated the title of number one Thief all by herself. Han Ying Xue had also dominated the number one Priest title with her Milkmaid Deity Inheritance. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang was undoubtedly the champion among all Warriors. The top players of Lone Desert Smoke were basically so powerful that most of the players might lose their minds if they ever encounter them!

Meanwhile, during the next few days, someone in the guild had finally met that mysterious guildmaster of the Eternal Flame, Dragon Marquis.

That guild member of Lone Desert Smoke ran into Dragon Marquis while he was grinding his level. Of course, he was not alone. There were at least hundreds of players escorting him while aiding him in grinding his levels up. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang had finally knew the reason why Dragon Marquis was acting secretly. It was not because he wanted to stay low profile, it was because his level was too low! Currently, he was just Level 78!

However, if a person is influential enough, he could form a large

group of players to aid him in grinding his level up. They could just lure and weaken the monsters for that person. When the monsters are almost dead, the person would just have to give the monsters a final strike to earn 50% of the total Experience Points as the one who finished the monsters. Such tactic could also be applied to Level 140 players who would want to grind their levels as well. They could also let a bunch of Level 120 players do it for them. The efficiency would not be great in such a way. However, that efficiency would still be much better than the grinding efficiency of a player who would sacrifice all his time - including his sleeping time to grind his level!

So, when a bunch of Level 130 and Level 140 players are aiding a Level 80 player, his grinding efficiency would rocket through the roof!

According to the guild member, Dragon Marquis could actually level up once every two hours. That grinding efficiency was a little too scary to be true.

Actually, if Zhang Yang was willing to do it, he could have all of his high Tier guild members aiding him in grinding his levels. Furthermore, the current strength of the Lone Desert Smoke would definitely be able to boost the grinding efficiency to a level that no other guild could attain! However, it was not necessary to waste time doing that. He was currently the Number One on the World Leaderboard. Even if he hits the Level Cap of Level 300, what would be the point then? Looking down at the other players from the top, all alone would be extremely boring!

It was also fortunate that Dragon Marquis could not enter the

Chaos Realm yet, because he had not reached level 100 just yet. Or else, he would be leveling up at an even more insane rate. That is possible, because the monsters in Chaos Realm were much higher in levels, so he could obtain even more Experience Points with the aid of his guild members.

Well, it would just be a matter of time, before that guildmaster of Eternal Flame would also make it into the Chaos Realm. He might even make it up to the world ranking leaderboard, soon enough! However, it would become even harder to climb on the leaderboard when your level gets higher. Well, you would get lesser help from the other players when your level becomes much higher than theirs.

Furthermore, the players that made it up on the world ranking leaderboard were all experts at grinding their levels up. So their grinding efficiency would surely be much more efficient than all average players in the entire world. It would basically be impossible to rely on the help of many other players to grind with the aim of becoming number one on the world ranking leaderboard.



## Chapter 693: Dragon Marquis

---

Sun Xin Yu pulled some strings and discovered the real identity of Dragon Marquis from the databank of Dream Technology. It was a surprise to see Sun Xin Yu so shocked at her own discovery. Her face turned gloomy for quite some time after that.

So, this Dragon Marquis had the surname 'Zhong'. His full name was Zhong Xiu Hua. He was in fact Sun Xin Yu's playmates in her childhood --- when Sun Xin Yu was still small, she had stayed in Beijing for quite some time. This Zhong Xiu Hua was her neighbor right beside her house.

According to Sun Xin Yu, Zhong Xiu Hua had liked her ever since they first met. Meanwhile, she hated the personality of Zhong Xiu Hua. She felt that this man was a little too devious. Sometimes, even though he is angry, he would still put a smile on his face. That personality trait of his made quite a hypocrite out of him.

Later on, Sun Xin Yu and her family moved out from Beijing. However, Zhong Xiu Hua did not stop contacting her. He would call her every single day just to stay in contact with his beloved girl. Until two years ago, things began to change after Sun Xin Yu left her house and worked at the police station. Then, she had also moved into Zhang Yang's big bungalow. Ever since then, Zhong Xiu Hua no longer phoned her up on a everyday basis.

However, that did not mean that Zhong Xiu Hua had given up on hope.

Truth to be told, ever since Zhong Xiu Hua set foot in 'God's Miracle', he had been doing everything just to get close to Sun Xin Yu. According to Sun Xin Yu, Zhong Xiu Hua was a very prideful person. He could be stubborn as hell, defeating his enemies in their own turfs. He wanted his enemies to lose their balls and will to fight.

When he was recruiting players into Eternal Flame, his slogan was to 'Defeat Lone Desert Smoke'. Obviously, it was not merely a slogan for Zhong Xiu Hua. It was his actual goal! He wanted to defeat Zhang Yang and Lone Desert Smoke to prove himself as the strongest in the game.

He knew that Sun Xin Yu loved this type of game very much. So, he followed her interest and joined 'God's Miracle'. Of course, Zhong Xiu Hua had not yet found out that Sun Xin Yu was currently madly in love with Zhang Yang, that they would basically 'heat up the bed' together every night. He just thought that Sun Xin Yu liked strong people in the game. So he had set his goal to defeat Zhang Yang and become the strongest player in the entire game. He believed that by doing so, he would win Sun Xin Yu's heart over.

After listening to Sun Xin Yu's 'story', Zhang Yang could not help but frown bitterly. Then he said, "If that's the case, this Zhong Xiu Hua really is a faithful son of the beach! He still loved you after all these years!"

"Are you jealous?" Sun Xin Yu said without any expression on her face.

"Ha! Who would want to get jealous because of a piece of ice?" Zhang Yang pinched Sun Xin Yu's cheeks and squeezed a smile out of her face. Then he said, "This is really bizarre! How would a man for you, a piece of frosty ice?"

"Then, why are you still filling this piece of ice up every night?" Sun Xin Yu forced Zhang Yang's hands away from squeezing her face and rolled her eyes at him. Well, when a cold frosty girl begins to flirt, men might get 'shocked' straight down to the bone marrow, and they would feel numb from head to toe. Zhang Yang fell for her, mostly because of that. That was why he always raised his 'gun' and 'saluted' her well every night.

Zhang Yang laughed 'evilly'. Well, there was nothing to feel embarrassed about between 'husband' and 'wife'. So he said, "So after all the storytelling session, you haven't told me who Zhong Xiu Hua really is yet!"

Sun Xin Yu knitted her pretty eyebrows for a little while before she said something again, "His father is Zhong Jin Shan. So after the election, he would probably take over his father's place."

"Take over? What kind of takeover are we talking about? Is he going to become the President, then? Haha!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud.

However, Sun Xin Yu did not laugh at all. She only stared calmly at Zhang Yang as he continued laughing it off.

"What the f\*ck! For real!?" Zhang Yang realized something was

off. He immediately understood and lost his voice.

"You scared?" Sun Xin Yu's large pretty eyes became teary all of a sudden. She turned around and leaned against Zhang Yang's body, "Then, why aren't you afraid of me?"

"Hehe... that was because you forced yourself on me! I'm innocent!" Zhang Yang raised both of his hands high in the air to express that he was innocent. "So that's why when we were pressuring Eternal Flames, so many guildmasters came up to me. Now I've finally understand the reason behind all that mess!"

Knowing that Zhong Xiu Hua had such a powerful background backing him up, everything made sense now. No wonder he could pressurize so many guildmasters in the game.

However, Sun Xin Yu smiled with a disdainful expression on her face, then she said, "This Zhong Xiu Hua thinks too highly of himself. If you haven't forced his hands so tight, he would not have used his background to influence the entire network to solve his own sh\*t! Humph! His father did lay quite a bright path before him with all the political strings he had in hand. Plus, his grandfather was the previous Prime Minister of the country, and his mother is currently the President of the board for the Business Investment Fund Corporation. If it weren't because of all that, how could he have everything going his way, then! Such hypocrite is just as disgusting as the worms in the drain!"

"You seem to understand him quite well!"

"Humph! He's nothing but a spoiled brat in his family tree. He's just squandering off his parent's money just to show off!"

Zhang Yang could on shake his head and said, "He doesn't seem to be as shallow as you say he is. I think you're underestimating him a little too much! That Zhong Xiu Hua must have some complicated agenda up his sleeves. Currently, the 'God's Miracle' is becoming the largest marketplace in the world. Everyone would like to be part of the 'new market'. For instance, just look at our Territory. Ever since we entered the Chaos Realm, the Teleportation Circle has grossed over 20,000,000,000 dollars profit per month for us! Even after deducting the cost of funding our guild members and all other costs of maintaining our guild, that remaining amount of profit is all to us and only us! So, how many large-scaled companies could earn that much in the real life?"

Sun Xin Yu nodded to express that she agreed with Zhang Yang.

"Other than the Territory, there are also other kinds of tradings happening around the game. Look at the number of materials and items that are being traded on daily basis. That amount is so huge that even astronomical values cannot be used to measure them! If anyone can just profit from a small tiny part of that value, that person will be as rich as f\*ck! Other than that, there's also the advertising effect! Look at our company. The sales for our company when it comes to selling undies and panties are extremely good. All thanks to our party building up our name in the first place!"

"Humph! That company belongs to that foxy b\*tch! It has nothing to do with me!"

"Can't you two just get along already?" Zhang Yang sighed heavily.

"It's just shameful to know that you're talking bad behind others, you know?" Han Ying Xue came right up from the other side of the bed as she revealed that mesmerizing naked upper body of hers.

"Please wear a bra, b\*tch! That two chunk of your fats are dangling so low that they're about to cover your belly button!"

"You're jealous of me, aren't you Ice queen?"

...

Now that a rival of his love interest came out of nowhere, it's normal that Zhang Yang felt like having a small piece of thorn buried underneath his flesh. However, Sun Xin Yu convinced Zhang Yang that Zhong Xiu Hua would only duel him and Lone Desert Smoke in the game. Zhang Yang felt a little relieved upon hearing that. However, he would not let his guard down so easily.

Even if Zhong Xiu Hua really had a darker side hidden from Sun Xin Yu, Zhang Yang would have to be careful a little to avoid any surprise attack from him. Fortunately, he was just alone without any relatives. Even if he had relatives, he would not have to worry that his relatives would be targeted by his enemies. They were not close to each other in the first place. Meanwhile, Silky Soft Holdings had become a company that could sustain itself. Upon eliminating Wei Yan Er's relatives from the company and

reorganizing of the company, the company was transparent and clear on their finance. They had nothing to worry about, even if their company goes under investigation.

For now, Zhang Yang believed that Zhong Xiu Hua would only compete with him in the game fair and square. However, that guy is destined to lose! Well, would a spoilt brat that thinks so highly of himself willing to admit defeat after he is defeated? Especially when the reason he was fighting for involves a factor called ‘woman’!

When he loses, he would be using all sorts of dirty tricks to defeat his enemy. If he cannot defeat Zhang Yang in the game, he surely will try to push Zhang Yang to his demise in real life! After all, Zhong Xiu Hua did not only aim to get Sun Xin Yu, he also saw the great business opportunities that lay in the game. So he would not just give up, even after he is defeated. Furthermore, he had invested so much money in the game ever since he joined the game. He would not let go so easily now.

However, Zhang Yang had no reason to worry about it too much for now. Although Zhong Xiu Hua had not made any big moves yet, the Sun family was also a vital influence in the realm of politics. Even if Zhong Xiu Hua really gets the chance to take over his father’s place, he could not do much harm to the Sun family. After all, the two families were deeply rooted in the realm of politics. If the two families clash into each other, the end result would be disastrous! No one could afford such a catastrophe to happen!

As he hacked wild boars apart, Zhang Yang smiled bitterly. In his

previous life, although he was considered poor and insignificant, he was so insignificant that no one would even pay attention to him. In this life, he is so significant that he was going to have a 'duel' with a future 'President'! Not to mention that he also had a royal lady, a Princess grade woman on his bed's 'collection'! He even had another future Duchess in Luxembourg waiting to 'devour' him as her own. Zhang Yang's luck with women in this life was a little too flared up, don't you think?

Upon farming to increase their Reputation for over 10 days, Zhang Yang and the ladies had finally attained 'Revered'. They had finally earned enough Reputation points to get set on a journey to worship the Andros the Spider God.

Because Hundred Shots and the others did not have the quest on their quest list, they did not come back to join up with Zhang Yang and the ladies. After all, they would never know what sort of rewards would be waiting for them upon completing the quest. It would be pointless for them to join up with Zhang Yang and the ladies for now. Furthermore, even if Zhang Yang suddenly needs their aid, he could just conveniently use his [Party Summon Order] to summon the rest of the party.

Zhang Yang had finally obtained the Recipe for making [Level 6 Healing Potion]. The ingredients required to make the potion was not a problem at all. Zhang Yang could let his Herb Foraging Familiar collect them in no time. Zhang Yang had nothing to worry about at all. All he needed were the recipes. If he has the recipes, he could make anything up.

As he did not bring along many empty bottles on him, Zhang



Yang had to travel all the way back to the main city to make the potions. Since he had the [Lover's Charm], he could just get back to the ladies in no time.

The [Level 6 Healing Potion] could instantly heal up to a total of 60,000 HP. If Zhang Yang could transmute the potions up to Grade 10, each bottle of the potion could heal up to 120,000 HP! Currently, Zhang Yang has already increased his Lucky attribute up to 29 points. So there would be a rate of 2.9% of a Transmutation occurring in every potion made. If Zhang Yang makes more potions, more potions would undergo a Transmutation.

Sun Xin Yu and the ladies were almost Level 150 now. Zhang Yang distributed the [Level 6 Healing Potions] among his party for free. With the current fortune in his possession, he could easily afford to give those Healing Potions that were at least Grade 5 Transmutation or better. Endless Starlight and the others were surprised and overjoyed for that reason.

Although these Healing Potions were insignificant to players who have already activated their Transformation Skills. These Healing Potions would still be very practical when they are not transformed. Furthermore, players with Inheritance could only transform once in every 3 days. Most players would not activate their Transformation Skills right after the cooldown was over. They would only transform during a large battle or during a battle against an extremely powerful boss. Hence, the time that players stayed transformed wouldn't be long.

After preparing all the necessary support items, Zhang Yang

traveled back to the Spider Kingdom once again and rendezvoused with the ladies. Then, the five of them made their way to Andros's 'palace'.

Upon a few hours of rushing, they finally arrived at the entrance of a large forest. They saw that the sky was full of spiraling spider webs that hung a large palace in the middle of the sky. The scene was oddly spectacular.

However, Zhang Yang felt like an idiot all of a sudden. He regretted that they had wasted so much time to raise their Reputation. This place was huge and conspicuous. It should have been very easy to spot if they had gone around the map in the first place. There was no need for them to waste their time and effort to increase their Reputation at all. Now, Zhang Yang could only use the [Level 6 Healing Potion] Recipe to comfort himself for doing all those pointless things back then.

The entire forest was covered in spider webs. There was no way of entering the forest at all. However, the palace that Zhang Yang and the ladies wanted to go was hanging in midair. So, they hopped onto their Flying Mounts and flew straight towards the palace without wasting any more time.

"Who goes there? How dare you trespass the palace of the great Andros!" A string of spider web shot across the air at lightning speed. Zhang Yang and the ladies found themselves wound up in web. Their mounts were also tied up along with them. With another pull, they were all covered up in spider webs like a bunch of candied haws dangling around the sky before they were all spread-eagled on a large spider web.

A human-faced spider, as large as a mini mountain crawled up to the spider web from one of its sides. The eight legs were extremely black. There were countless barbs on the surface of the legs. They looked so sharp that it gave a chill up the spines of whoever saw them with their own eyes. The spider's round butt looked exactly like a gigantic concrete mixer behind a large truck! The spider's human face was full of wrinkles.

[Ganross, the Protector of the Palace] (Holy, Humanoid)

Level: 175

HP: 17,000,000,000

Note: The bloodline of Ganross is very close to the bloodline of Andros. He is extremely powerful.

# Chapter 694: Andros's Wrath

---

"Wah! You stinky eight-legged freak! Let go of me, now!" Wei Yan Er began to scream like a little b\*tch. She repeatedly tried to break the spider strings with her battle axe. However, Canross was a green named monster. Zhang Yang and the ladies had obviously triggered some sort of drama mode. No matter how hard Wei Yan Er tried, she could not do anything about the webs wrapping around her.

"You're the believers of the temple?" Canross found a piece of green marking on Zhang Yang. He took it down to have a closer look. Those were the markings that were given to Zhang Yang and the ladies by the Priest of their Temple when Zhang Yang and the ladies had worked their Reputation up to 'Revered'. Canross threw the marking back to Zhang Yang and wiggled his butt a little. The webs wrapping around them loosened up and they were able to move freely again. Wei Yan Er immediately stopped cursing like a little b\*tch. Now, she stared forward with her eyes wide open as if she had just seen some treasure.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "We have an urgent matter that needs Andros's attention!"

"Human, not anyone can meet our fatherly god, not even our own kind. So what makes you think you have what it takes to meet out father of god?" Canross backed away to a large spider web and sat on it. However, his eyes were fixed on Zhang Yang and the ladies. It was obvious that he was not willing to let them enter the palace.

Zhang Yang revealed a serious look and said, "We received a command from Catarina to pass on her last words to Andros!"

"Catarina? The banished Princess?" Canross widened his eyes. He seemed shocked. "She... she died?"

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Unfortunately, yes. She has some important words that needs to be passed to Andros. And she insisted that we must be the one who speak to him. So we must personally meet Andros to do so!"

Canross began to go into deep thoughts. After quite some time, he finally returned from his drifting thoughts and said, "Catarina... Although she was fatherly god's daughter, she was born late. I was the one who watched her grow! She used to be a naive and good-hearted little girl. But I have no idea when or why. She suddenly changed! She changed so much that she seemed to turn into another person! And now... I can't believe that she passed away!"

Canross walked around the spider web for a while before he said, "Alright, follow me!"

This gigantic human-faced spider began to lead Zhang Yang and the ladies into the palace. Though the palace in the sky was large and vast, there were very few 'residents' in the palace. There were also no signs of any maids in the surroundings. Only a few human-faced spiders were scattered around in the corners of the palace with the titles 'Sons of Andros' right on top of their heads.

This father of god had been really good at producing his

offspring. He had a large number of sons and daughters.

Obviously, Canross had quite a reputable status in the palace. As he was passing by the hall of the palace, the sons and daughters of Andros were nodding at him, expressing their respects towards him. They were also looking at Zhang Yang and the ladies with curiosity filling up their eyes.

After walking through the halls for quite some time, they finally arrived before a large palace. However, even though the building was magically hanging in the middle of the sky, but the designs on the walls and the ceilings were simple and there was nothing fancy about them at all. Instead of looking like a palace, the entire place looked more like a larger than average temple.

Upon stepping foot into the palace, Zhang Yang and the ladies saw a gigantic human-faced spider resting right in the middle of the hall. If Canross is described as the size of a small mountain, then this spider could be described as a gigantic spider of the size of a middle-sized mountain! He was extremely huge!

[Andros, Spider God] (Celestial, Humanoid)

Level: ???

HP: ???

Note: The ancestor of the Spider Men! He served the God of Light before time. He has the divine power of a god!

"What a huge spider!" Wei Yan Er began to mutter on her own. Then she whispered, "It'll definitely be awesome if I can make this spider my pet."

This little brat would usually come up with some weird notions, as usual.

"My great father of god, these humans claimed that they have Catarina's last words for you!" Canross lowered down his frontmost four legs to bow at Andros. Then he spoke politely to Andros about the situation.

"Catarina... had passed away!?" A fierce sense of fury flashed across Andros's indecipherable eyes like a lightning flashing across the sky. It gave Zhang Yang and the ladies a chill up their spines. This Celestial Tier boss fixed his eyes upon Zhang Yang and the ladies. Then he asked, "Outsiders, my daughter... did she... pass away?"

"Unfortunately, yes. My great Spider God." Zhang Yang stayed silenced a while. Then he made a polite gesture of an Adventurer and passed the dying words of Catarina over to Andros.

"What!?" Andris was infuriated that he stood up straight away, "That god damn demon! How dare he manipulate my Catarina! My poor daughter... May the God of Light shine on us all... What have I done... When Catarina needed me the most, I thought ... I banished her with my own bare hands! I thought she changed! She was possessed!?"

Unfortunately, this Celestial Tier boss only had the capability of a Celestial Tier boss should have. He was not a real God who would be all-knowing.

"Thank you, young Adventurers, hailing from a distant land!" After all, Andros had lived so long that maybe he himself had lost track of it. He calmed himself down right after he took his own brief moment to grief. Then he said, "Thank you for traveling across the distant land to pass me the news. You have enlightened me. I now realize my own fault as a father. I have doomed my own daughter!"

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Super Urgent News! You have received a reward: 5,000,000 Experience Points!’

Though the amount of Experience Points rewarded was not bad, it was not enough to cover the time and effort that they had spent to raise their Reputation!

Andros reached out with one of his long legs and touched the air right in front of him. Then he muttered vaguely in his mouth as if he was casting some spell. Countless white lights were projected out from the tip of his leg and formed a light screen in front of him. The light screen revealed a dark red demon with two horns on his head and a pair of bat-wings right behind its back, sitting on an altar, roaring into the sky.

"Pauillac The Manipulator!" Andros suddenly roared out into the sky in rage. The light screen trembled and shattered into pieces.



"My father of god, please stay calm!" Canross immediately bowed down and said.

Phew! Phew!

Andros began to gasp for air as if he was out of breath. It seemed that he was too old to even get angry! Then he looked at Zhang Yang and the ladies, "Adventurers, I've expended some of my divine power and I have identified the murderer that took my Catarina's life! However, I must stay here to keep my kingdom safe. So I cannot leave. I beg of you. Please, slay this demon for me!"

‘Ding! Andros has given you a quest: Andros's Wrath. Do you accept?’

The 5 of them looked at each other and quickly accepted the quest.

"Take this with you ---" Andros gave Zhang Yang a jade order, "This Jade pendant has a part of my power sealed inside. Use it when you are confronting Pauillac The Manipulator! Even though I can't go, I will never let this demon go!"

‘Ding! You have received an item: Andros's Jade Pendant.’

[Andros's Jade Pendant] (Consumable)

Use: Summon a shadow clone of Andros. It will help you attack Pauillac The Manipulator! You can only use it when you're within the distance of 50 meters away from Pauillac The Manipulator.

Afterwards, Andros rested his face behind two sorrowful talons and asked Zhang Yang and the ladies to leave the palace at once. The word 'asked' was to show his courtesy, he basically 'chased' Zhang Yang and the ladies away from his palace. However, it was understandable. The man had just lost his precious daughter. How would he be happy after everything that he had been through?

Zhang Yang brought up the quest list and took a good look at the quest description.

[Andros's Wrath] (Difficulty: Rank-A)

Description: Andros wants you to eliminate Pauillac The Manipulator to avenge his daughter. You can find Pauillac The Manipulator at the Dark Mist Canyon, within the map - Forest of Clouds. Take note, the demon will not go down easily. You better bring more friends before you go!

Completion: Slay Pauillac The Manipulator 0/1

"Silly Yu, this quest is only ranked as Rank-A. Could the boss only be an Ethereal Tier?" Han Ying Xue asked. If that is the case, then they would have no reason to travel so far just to get the quest done!

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Well, this quest is ranked as Rank-A instead of Rank-S, because we got this quest item!" He took out [Andros's Jade Pendant] and showed it to the ladies, This piece of jade could summon the shadow clone of that Celestial Tier boss! The boss would not be that weak. With the power of a Celestial Tier boss on their side, the difficulty of the quest would definitely plummet.

The five of them teleported back to Sauron's Castle with their scrolls. Then, they traveled from Sauron's Castle over to the Forest of Clouds. The main reason that they did not fly to their destination was because the map of Spider Kingdom was just plain f\*cking annoying. The sky was filled with spider webs that would slow them down so much that they would be able to walk faster than to fly in the sky! Furthermore, getting entangled in the spider webs was not a pleasant experience at all!

Level 150 maps were just large. It took Zhang Yang and the ladies approximately 3 hours to fly out of the Mar Gaia Forest. After that, they needed to pass through The Plagued Land as well. That took them another 7 hours before they finally entered the Forest of Clouds.

The Forest of Clouds was as its name suggested. Every part of the forest was green and lush. Meanwhile, right above the forest, mist clouded the sky. The mists looked like countless clouds shielding the forest from above. Travelling in the forest would cause poor visibility. Basically, players could not see anything that is further than 10 meters from them.

Meanwhile, the movement speed of the Flying Mounts was

extremely fast. When you realize that you are about to crash into something, it would have been too late. No brakes are that good.

Fortunately, Zhang Yang and the ladies had guidance from their small maps. So they were not worried about going towards the wrong direction. However, they would have to encounter some monsters along their journey. Sometimes, they would even run into a flock of bird monsters and start a huge battle. However, most of the monsters in each large map were only Normal Tier monsters. The monsters were destined to be slain the moment they ran into Zhang Yang and the ladies. It did not take long before Zhang Yang and the ladies wiped out the entire flock of bird monsters.

Because they had a specific destination, Zhang Yang and the ladies did not stop until they arrived at the Dark Mist Canyon.

However, the canyon seemed even more f\*cked up. The dark mist was so thick that the entire canyon looked like it was flooded with black ink! The moment when they stepped into the black mist, they could not even see their own fingers! Even the small maps were blacked out. There was no way that they could proceed forward like that. The only visible area of the canyon was the area 3 meters from the ground. Flying higher than 3 meters would mean zero visibility for them. To avoid crashing into walls, Zhang Yang and the ladies descended to the ground and went on foot.

From that point of view, the reason why the system gave players Flying Mounts was because players could travel faster that way. They did not provide players with Flying Mounts so that they could avoid battling monsters, just because they are lazy.

"I can smell the delicious blood flowing in your body!" A huge shadow emerged from the dark mist. Because the body parts above the shoulders were covered in the dark mists, Zhang Yang and the ladies had no idea how tall the monster was. They could not see what the monster looked like as well. However, they could clearly see that there were large fish-scales covering the monster's entire body. The muscles on the monster's body were bulgy as f\*ck. They looked like freaking metal rocks! There were also 7 sharp barbs right on its back. The demon also had a long tail that looked like the tail of a scorpion. It was moving around as if it was a snake.

[Dark Mist Divine Punisher] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 164

HP: 4,920,000

Defence: 6,640

Melee Attack: 42,966 – 52,966

Skills:

[Tail Sting]: Uses a tail filled with poison to sting a target, causing 100% Melee Attack of Shadow Damage to the target. The target's Attack will be reduced by 10%. Last for 15 seconds.

[Flying Bone Puncture]: Uses the bones in the back to shoot the target, causing 100% Melee Attack of Shadow Damage to the target. If the target is hit while poisoned, the target will receive another additional 50% damage.

[Dragon's Flame]: Spits a blast of flames forward, causing 20,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the effective range of the Skill once in every 3 seconds.

The monster reached out at Wei Yan Er and began attacking her with its claws, right after it appeared. With one aggressive slash straight across the body of the little brat, she received a total damage of 40,000 in an instant. The little brat was shocked, and she began to jump around in panic. Then she screamed at Zhang Yang, "Noob tank! Lure the monster to you! Now!"

Currently, Elite Tier monsters were getting outrageously powerful. Their basic attacks had reached up to 40,000 damage! Normal players could be instantly killed with one or two hits from them!

# Chapter 695: Dark Mist Canyon

---

As the levels of the players keep rising and improving, more and more equipment with higher Tiers will appear. The difference between the normal players and the top Tier players was getting wider and wider as time passed by. However, top Tier players were only one small cluster of the entire population in the game. Furthermore, they were so busy grinding their levels and killing bosses to farm for better equipment. Even if there is a PvP battle, it would only happen between players who are about the same level and Tier. Therefore, the normal players would not really be affected much.

It would be just like normal people watching two rich people fighting against each other. No matter how much money those two rich people had, it would not affect the plebians.

Wei Yan Er let out a raging roar and swung her battle axe straight at the monsters. Well, her Attacks were not weak at all. She could cause more than 70,000 with her basic attack, which was way more powerful than the Elite Tier monsters. With just one chop, the Dark Mist Divine Punisher had its chest cleaved right open. Green blood oozed right out from the cut wound like a fountain.

"You ugly piece of monster! You think I'm an easy target? You think you can bully me and walk away like nothing happened?!" Wei Yan Er continued to mutter on as she was attacking the monsters aggressively. Well, her personality and mentally was basically still that of a child. She actually believed that the monster had picked her as its first target because it thought that she was a much easier target compared to the others. Could it be because the monster saw that her breasts were small, so she was supposed to be

an easy target to pick on?

Zhang Yang laughed out loud. Then, he commanded his Phoenix pet and charged at the Dark Mist Divine Punisher. First, he activated his {Lure} to get the monster's attention over to him. Then he threw a few more Skills on the monster to maintain the aggro.

Sun Xin Yu clanked her two swords lightly against each other. Then she went straight for the back of the monster immediately. She stabbed and slashed the monster's back causing immense damage values to the monster. Ever since she had attained {Eagle Eye}, her Attack, especially her secondary weapon's attack had been boosted insanely. Due to that reason, her DPS has increased tremendously.

Although there were only 5 of them on the party currently, the damage output of the 4 of them, with the aid of Felice, Phoenix pet and Ankh the Assassin managed to empty out a total of 5,000,000 HP with ease. Why 4? Because Han Ying Xue was a Healer who needed to keep the HP bars of the other 4 party members 'well fed'. She would not be free enough to deal damage to the monster while she is busy healing the others after all.

Even though Ankh the Assassin's initial Tier was only Gray-Silver Tier, her Attribute Growth Star points are one hell of a kind if compared to the others. Now this Battle Companion has an entire set of Mythical Tier equipment, exclusive for Battle Companions only. She is currently much more powerful than Felice when she was Level 130. Unfortunately, Ankh did not have a Transformation Skill. Well, if she did, that would be a nightmare!



Felice should be the only Battle Companion with a Transformation Skill in the entire game.

After the Dark Mist Divine Punisher died, the monster unexpectedly dropped a piece of equipment! The equipment was picked up by the little brat with her fast-scanning eyes and agile hands.

[Demonic Warrior's Hood] (Ethereal, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +1,129

Strength: +323

Agility: +718

{Unidentified}

Equip: Increases both Damage and healing Efficiency by 2.1%

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 2,250.

Equip: Increases the Shadow Damage of your weapon by 30%.

Required Level: 160

Demonic Warrior's Armor Set (1/5): Demonic Warrior's Hood, {Demonic Warrior's Chest Plate}, {Demonic Warrior's Gloves}, {Demonic Warrior's Leather Greaves}, {Demonic Warrior's Boots}.

3-Piece Set: Increases the Shadow Damage of your weapon by 50%.

5-Piece Set: When hitting a target, there is a rate that a {Shadow Ball} might be triggered to cause 50,000 Shadow Damage to the target.

"Huh? This equipment is quite awesome in its own way!" Zhang Yang could not keep his joy from overflowing. Even though Hunters and Thieves basically relied on dealing Physical Damage to their targets, they would also acquire some Skills that deal Shadow Damage. It was similar to having a Frost Damage and that sort. Meanwhile, after the Inheritances were introduced to the game, Physical-type players would sometimes acquire Skills that could deal Magical damage to their targets as well. For instance, let's take a good look at Wei Yan Er. A lot of her high Attack Skills could deal Shadow Damage to her targets. Therefore, this sort of equipment was becoming more popular currently.

Wei Yan Er pouted and said, "What a waste... this is not a Heavy Armor type of equipment, and it's just a Mythical Tier!"

She had the Darkness Inheritance. Such an equipment with additional Shadow Damage would be extremely suitable for her to

have. Well, this sort of equipment would increase an additional 30% to 50% of Shadow Damage to players who equip them. If the little brat gets a few pieces of this set, her single attack could match the Attack power of Zhang Yang, or maybe she could even surpass his Attack power!

If that was true, she could show off in front of Zhang Yang like a little b\*tch! That would be a fun thing for her to do.

"You better be grateful for what you can get these days. This type of equipment can really increase your damage. I don't even have the opportunity to get this kind of equipment!" Zhang Yang laughed and said. With his current God of War Inheritance, his Skills could only either cause Physical Damage or Chaos Damage to his enemies. The game did not seem to have any equipment that would add Chaos Attack to the players.

"Cheh!" Wei Yan Er continued to look at him in ire, because Zhang Yang sounded like he was complaining and showing off at the same time.

The party was progressing forward at quite a high pace. They slew quite a number of Dark Mist Divine Punishers along the way. Although the rate of these monsters dropping any of the Demonic Warrior's Armor Set was extremely low, the number of Dark Mist Divine Punishers they encountered was quite high. When they were almost halfway through the canyon, they actually managed to collect two sets of Demonic Warrior's Armor Set. They even got two pairs of extra hoods and boots.

At that time, the monsters that they were encountering had

changed. Now, they began to encounter countless green slimy monsters --- Slimes.

[Dark Mist Slime] (Elite, Elemental)

Level: 168

HP: 5,040,000

Defence: 6,640

Magic Attack: 23,461 – 33,461

Skills:

[Putrefying Acidic Bubbles]: Spits out bubbles that dissolves everything that gets in touch with them, causing 200% Magic Attack of Nature Damage to the target. Also cause 50% reduction to target's Attack. Last for 15 seconds. The effect cannot stack. Instant activation. Cooldown: 2 seconds.

"Wah! What kind of interesting sheets are these?" Wei Yan Er instantly widened her eyes and pointed her finger at the slime that was wiggling towards her, "Noob tank! Don't kill it! I want to keep one for myself!"

"Keep your sister!" Zhang Yang humphed coldly and swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] to purge this slimy thing of this

world.

"Are you keeping my sister, now?" Han Ying Xue giggled.

Zhang Yang instantly frowned. Daffodil Daydream cut in to save his day, "We can get quite a large sum of money by selling these two sets of Demonic Warrior's Armor Sets, right?"

"That's for sure!" Zhang Yang regained his mood instantly and said, "Each piece of the set can be sold at the price of hundreds of gold pieces. Well, since players can acquire set effects by collecting enough pieces of the Armor Set, players would still purchase them, even if we sell each of the equipment pieces at the price of 10,000 gold pieces... or maybe, we can sell them in sets at 100,000 gold pieces!"

"Just look at your moneybag face! Disgusting!" Wei Yan Er immediately revealed a disdainful expression on her face. She was backed up by the other ladies as well.

"Then, I should just keep all profits to myself!" Zhang Yang purposely sighed as he was slaughtering the poor little slime up.

"No! How can you say that?!" Wei Yan Er did not want to play along anymore, "I need you to pay me my next month's salary in advance! I want to buy a new purse!"

"In advance again?" Zhang Yang turned around and gave a good rap on the little brat's skull, "The money that I paid you in advance

is more than enough to cover 3 years from now! And don't you think that I don't know about it! You even took Sun Xin Yu's share!"

"Hehe!" Wei Yan Er turned her large eyes around, pretending to be innocent. Then she began to laugh out loud and continued to smash her battle axe into the slime. She tried to act as if she had never brought anything up at all.

Zhang Yang and the other 3 ladies laughed it off.

Whenever they talked about 'shares' or 'profits', they were usually referring to the profit that they earned from Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop. Each member of Zhang Yang's party of 10 could receive 5% share of its profit. However, Zhang Yang only gave the little brat 100,000 dollars as her pocket money to prevent her from spending like a little b\*tch.

Though the little brat was very stingy, most of the time, she would not hesitate to spend all her money on luxurious items such as purses and bags. Because of her recklessness, she had overspent so much that her 'debt' to Zhang Yang could only be repaid back if she does not get a dime from Zhang Yang for one whole year.

"Pfff!" The slime had no face, nor arms or legs. Therefore, there was no telling what kind of emotion the slime had because, it could not express its emotion on a face! However, its wrath for being underestimated was clearly displayed. The slime began to spit bubbles at Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was instantly covered in green sticky liquid. Hmm... this seemed familiar...

"Aiyo! You look disgusting, noob tank!"

"What the hell! I'm trying to protect you ladies, you know? Why don't I switch places with you? Witchy Snow can surely heal you up for good! So little brat or not, anyone of you should be able to do good in my position!" Zhang Yang planned to push the responsibility of tanking the monster to the ladies.

However, the 4 ladies shook their heads at the same time. Well, if they ever get sprayed with such gross sticky substances all over them, especially their faces... there would be nothing they could do to remove the stigma off their names.

The further they walked into the canyon, the more slimes they encountered. Zhang Yang was sprayed with the green goo so often that he was completely covered in it. The four ladies were laughing and giggling all the way. Zhang Yang could not stand those ladies anymore. So when there were 4 slimes coming at them, Zhang Yang only lured 3 of them over to him and left the last one to the ladies. The slime, of course, began to spray at the ladies as aggressively as possible.

"Noob tank! You're doing this on purpose!" Upon slaying the slimes, the four ladies began to complain. A 'war' was about to be waged.

"I can't do anything about it! These monsters can reduce 50% of our Attack. The best I can do was to take three of them! Four would have been dangerous, even for me!" Zhang Yang pushed the

blames away, nice and clean.

The monsters here were indeed powerful. Reducing 50% Attack of a Tanker would have easily make a Tanker looser most of the aggro value on him. Once a normal party is OT by an Elite monster, that could end up in a disaster. The party might even get wiped out instantly! Only Zhang Yang and his powerful party would have the capability to challenge an Elite Tier monster alone.

Another 1 hour had passed, Zhang Yang and the ladies arrived at the bottom of the canyon. The dark mist was getting thinner in that area. They could finally things further ahead. All they could see was a large altar, right in front of them. The altar was approximately 50 meters high. It took the shape of a cylinder. The altar was approximately 50-meters wide.

Because of its elevated position, Zhang Yang and the ladies were not able to see what was on the altar. However, they were very sure that this altar was the same one that they saw in the light screen of Andros. Pauillac The Manipulator must be sitting on top of that altar at that instant.

Well, it was not a problem at all for Zhang Yang and the ladies to get onto the altar. They summoned their Flying Mounts and flew straight up.

However, when Zhang Yang and the ladies made it up to the top of the altar, they could not help but feel an intense chill up their spines! There was really a boss right in the middle of the altar. However, there were also at least hundreds of Elite Tier Dark Mist Divine Punishers closely knitted around boss's surroundings. With



the monsters and the boss so packed up in one spot, there was no way that players could hit the boss without getting swarmed up.

Furthermore, there was also a boss there. Any reckless move would cause certain death.

[Pauillac The Manipulator] (Holy, Demon)

Level: 175

HP: 17,000,000,000

Defence: 17,760

Magic Attack: 89,694 – 100,694

Skills:

[Mind Control]: Temporarily controls an enemy target, making the target serve Pauillac. Lasts 30 seconds. Pauillac won't use this Skill on the player with the highest aggro value.

[Shadow Decay Aura]: Cause 50,000 Shadow Damage once in every 5 seconds to all targets within the effective range.

[Shadow Arrow]: Fires a Shadow Arrow at the target causing 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage. If the target is in a stunned

state, the damage dealt on the target will be increased by another 50%. Casting time: 2 seconds.

[Shadow Blast]: Radiate out a blast of Shadow Attack into the surroundings, causing 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to all targets within the range of 50-meter radius. Targets will be stunned for 5 seconds.

[Demonic Build]: Recovers 1% HP every 30 seconds. The amount of HP recovered will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: Pauillac The Manipulator is infamous for befogging the minds of the people. He is also renowned to be a badass existence among the demon armies.

# Chapter 696: Andros's Shadow Clone

---

The boss had a Skill that could recover his own HP. Well, that had been a trend for every powerful boss that they had encountered so far, and it's quickly getting old.

"Time to get wretched fatty and the rest over here!" Han Ying Xue suggested. Well, the five of them could not do anything about the boss's {Demonic Build}. They might as well stare at the boss until the boss kills them all. Furthermore, there was also quite a large number of Elite Tier monsters guarding the boss. The situation was pretty f\*cked up.

Zhang Yang took out [Andros's Jade Pendant] and said, "Let's try out the power of this little pendant! If we can't get this done even after we use this, then we shall summon fatty and the rest over to finish the job! Let's activate our Inheritance Transformations and kick the boss's \*ss!"

"Alright!"

Zhang Yang crushed the jade pendant immediately. A radiating door of light appeared right out of nowhere, followed by the appearance of a large human-faced spider crawling out from the light door. However, the situation became awkward a little right after the spider came out. Well, Zhang Yang broke the pendant and summoned the shadow clone of Andros while they were still in the sky. So the giant human-faced spider fell straight onto the altar and crashed.

The impact of the crash was so powerful that its tremble shocked Pauillac and his army of Dark Mist Divine Punishers. Pauillac let out a raging roar immediately and his army of monsters roared after him. Then, they charged at the human-faced spider without fear nor hesitation.

"Pauillac! I will tear you into pieces!" The human-faced spider was blazing with rage. A visible shockwave was radiated out from the spider's body into the surrounding. The Elite Tier monsters were rocked so hard that they fell with their faces on the ground.

[Andros's Shadow Clone] (Holy, Summon)

Level: 180

HP: 1,000,000,000

Defense: 18,470

Melee Attack: 149,398 – 209,398

Skills:

[Web Entanglement]: Entangles all targets in the surroundings and stop them from moving. Lasts for 5 seconds. The targets will receive 50,000 damage every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds.

[Purify]: Nullifies the {Mind Control} of Pauillac.

Although 'brother' Andros was a Celestial Tier boss himself, his Shadow Clone did not seem to inherit all his power. Well, having a Holy Tier boss at their side was considered fair for Zhang Yang and the ladies to battle against Pauillac. The only thing that was not satisfying was that the Skills of this Shadow Clone were a little disappointing. The only Skill that could attack was the {Web Entanglement}. That was a little humiliating for a boss. Fortunately for them, the {Purify} would prove to be extremely useful in battling against Pauillac. As long as this Shadow Clone of Andros's does not die, Zhang Yang and the ladies should be safe from the {Mind Control} of Pauillac.

Furthermore, the body mass of Andros was initially larger than the altar itself! This Shadow Clone of Andros's is only approximately 30 meters high. It was totally not the size of its original form.

After all, the shockwave that was radiated out by Andros's Shadow Clone was merely a dramatic effect. It was not a Skill nor an attack. So the horde of Elite Tier monsters crawled back on their feet shortly after they fell. Then they continued to charge towards the Shadow Clone of the human-faced spider.

In an instance, countless spider strings shot out right from the body of Andros's Shadow Clone. The monsters were entangled and wrapped around by spider webs immediately, upon being touched by the spider strings. The effect was similar to the effect of a [Forbidden Scroll].

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Well, a shadow clone is

merely a shadow clone after all. The HP amount it has is far lower than the HP amount of the boss. Its DPS can only reach up to 80,000 damage. This shadow clone will not do much good if we don't step in soon with a full party!"

Zhang Yang quickly invited Fatty Han and the rest of his party of 10. After he landed on the altar, he immediately summoned the rest of his party members over to his location with the use of his [Party Summon Order]. If he did so before he lands, the rest of the party members that get summoned to his location would fall to their 'demise' if they were not mounted on their Flying Mounts.

"Just ignore the horde. The Shadow Clone will be able to tank them. Furthermore, it has a Skill that can hold the monsters down. All we need to do is to focus our attention on the boss!" Zhang Yang was telling his party members what to do when the boss battle began. At the same time, he activated his {God of War Transformation} getting himself ready for the boss battle. The boss that they were going up against was a Holy Tier boss. The kink in the situation that they were in right now was that they only had a few pieces of Holy Tier equipment equipped. Furthermore, there were only 10 of them in total. Without the support of an Inheritance Transformation, the DPS of the entire party could not even keep up with the boss' HP recovery rate.

Andros's Shadow Clone was filled with anger towards Pauillac. After he trapped the monsters in the surroundings, he did not attack the monsters. Instead, he moved his eight legs and charged straight at Pauillac. Andros's Shadow Clone stabbed the sharp tips of his front legs repeatedly at the boss as aggressively as he could. Even though the boss had such a tremendous amount of HP that he hardly felt anything after being poked around multiple times, but

those stabbings had left quite a number of bloody holes on the body of the boss. Green blood was spilled repeatedly every time the boss was stabbed.

"Spider God?" Pauillac was stunned for one brief moment before he could say anything. Then he said, "Are you suggesting that you're going to wage war over us, the great Demonic Army of Darkness?"

"You slew my daughter! So, you can drop the act like nothing happened!" Andros's Shadow Clone roared in rage.

Pauillac was stunned by what he heard once again. Then he suddenly burst into laughter, "So you found out about it!" This demonic boss fixed his eyes on Zhang Yang and his party with a murderous sense flash across his eyes. Then he said, "So it was you who told the Spider God about it! It's really not a coincidence that you have brought yourselves to me. I will not have to send my army to search for you! Today is the day you all die here!"

"You're the one who is going to die here today!" Andros's Shadow Clone shot out countless spider strings once again into the surroundings and trapped the monster horde. Although the damage that this {Web Entanglement} deals could not match the damage that the {Sword of Life and Death} could deal, at least it could still deal 50,000 damage to the monsters once every 3 seconds. That amount of damage dealt was considered quite bad\*ss itself! Each Elite Tier monster would only have approximately 5,000,000 HP. After receiving over 100 times that amount of damage, the monsters should all be dead in about 5 minutes.

Unfortunately, Andros's Shadow Clone could not receive any healing from Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart. Even though he had over 1,000,000,000 HP, he would not be able to sustain the damage dealt by so many monsters at the same time.

Fortunately, Zhang Yang and his party were able to use their powerful AoE Skills on the boss and the monster horde at the same time whenever they manage to accumulate enough EP. Firstly, they could reduce the time needed to clear out the monsters in the surroundings so that Andros's Shadow Clone could do more in the battle. Secondly, the party would only receive Experience Point if they contributed in slaying the monsters. If the monsters are slain by the Shadow Clone alone, none of them would be able to receive any Experience Point nor loot.

There were over hundreds of Elite Tier monsters in the surroundings. The Experience Points and the loot must be extremely valuable!

Although Zhang Yang's Attack was slightly above the Attack of Andros's Shadow Clone, Pauillac was fixed on attacking the Shadow Clone. He did not even look at Zhang Yang while he was at it. Apparently, the boss would not be affected by the Aggro system of the game before Andros's Shadow Clone goes down and die.

That was actually great news. With a 'punching bag' distracting the boss, none of them had to face the wrathful attacks of the boss for the moment.

However, Zhang Yang did not switch his shield away because he had no idea of knowing whether Andros's Shadow Clone would



hold on until the battle ends or not. So as a safety measure, it would be better for Zhang Yang to remain the number one on the aggro list of the boss. By doing so, he could prevent the boss from charging straight at Sun Xin Yu or Wei Yan Er right after Andros's Shadow Clone dies.

{God of War's Crushing Strike }! {Shadow Curtain }! {Thunder blade}!

Every 30 seconds, everyone would get 3 EP. They would pour their AoE Skills out without holding back to increase the efficiency in clearing out the monsters in the surroundings! Meanwhile, the Elite Tier monsters were trapped without being able to move at all for one-third of the time. Because they were all Melee combatants, they could only stare from one side, immobilized. Or else, Andros's Shadow Clone would succumb to a barrage or ranged attacks rather swiftly.

Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu had Class S Inheritances. Each of their AoE Skills could deal at least 100,000 damage to the monsters within the effective range of the Skill. Meanwhile, players with Class A Inheritances such as Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream would perform slightly subpar. However, they could still deal at least 80,000 damage to the monsters that were within the effective range of their Skills. Well, that amount of damage was enough to take out a quarter of the monsters' HP bars!

On the other hand, two Phoenix pets and a Red Dragon pet had joined the battle on clearing out the monster horde as well. Well, their normal attacks could deal area effect type damage. So when the three of them came into the battle, the situation became much

easier for the entire party. Especially when Andros's Shadow Clone firmly had the main aggro of the boss fixed on him. So everyone could lose themselves in causing as much damage as they could to the boss.

In just one minute, the hundreds of Elite Tier monsters were blown to bits. Zhang Yang and his party received an immense amount of Experience Points! Each monster rewarded them with a total of 5,000,000 Experience Points. Each of them could get 500,000 Experience Point for each monster slain. There were hundreds of them, right? Each of them received at least 2,000,000,000 or 3,000,000,000 Experience Points! Their Experience Bar had increased by a large chunk just by slaying these monsters!

"This is great! If they can just send a few more waves of these monsters over, I might be able to level up by the end of this battle!" Fatty Han was so joyful that he talked with drool coming out of a crooked corner of his mouth.

"Fatty, why are you leveling up that slowly? You have a Phoenix pet, a pet that is way more powerful than any pet out there! So, why are you still at Level 148? What a disgrace!"

"Little Sweetheart, you know nothing about life! Life is short and miserable. I can't put all my time in the game. I need to put myself into other things that would keep my body and my mind healthy!"

"Brother fatty, could you be the renowned 'Mr.Whirlwind' on bed that 'shoots' in less than a minute?"

"F\*ck you!"

"Andros! If the real you is here today, I profess that I would have fallen. However, you dare to send a Shadow Clone to fight me? This is not even enough to knock my teeth out! I shall control a few more of your sons and daughters and form an army of Spiders to serve our Demonic Army!" Pauillac was battling against Andros's Shadow Clone as he was teasing Andros with his poisonous tongue.

"Demon! You're not worthy of me to take you down myself!" Andros's Shadow Clone did not falter. Instead, he fought back with his tongue as well as he stabbed Pauillac repeatedly with his sharp legs. After the monsters were all out of the way, the drop rate on the HP bar of Andros's Shadow Clone was beginning to get under control. He still had over 30,000,000 HP left, which was enough for him to stay in the battle for a little longer.

--- the biggest threat posed by the boss were still his AoE Skills. Even though His single-target Skills were extremely powerful, they were not powerful enough to kill a Top Tier Tanker so easily. Or else, why would they need a Tanker in a party? Therefore, the horde of Elite Tier monsters actually posed a larger threat to Andros's Shadow Clone.

"Hahaha! Drizzler! Become my servant and serve me!" The boss suddenly roared out loud and pointed his finger at Wei Yan Er. A dark light shot right from the finger tip of the boss and entered the thick skull of the little brat. She immediately turned to attack Zhang Yang and the rest of the party members.

--- {Mind Control}!

"The divinity of light shall give without asking for any return!" Andros's Shadow Clone also roared out loudly at that instant. He reached out with one of his long legs and shot out a stream of golden light straight out from the tip of that sharp leg. The golden light sunk into the body of Wei Yan Er and nullified the {Mind Control} on her.

"Wah! Stinky boss! How dare you try to control me! I'll chop off your nose...no! Your head! Off with your head!" Wei Yan Er had once again screamed in anger, like a little b\*tch. She began to swing her battle axe at the boss, and air was swept up by the force of the swing! Every single hit landed on the boss, causing devastating damage.

"Damn you, Andros! Just wait until I wipe out these pests! I will go to your Spider Kingdom and turn every subject in your Kingdom into my slaves!"

"You shall not get the chance to do that! Today is the day you die! Right here!" Andros's Shadow Clone shot out countless spider strings towards the boss. Even though the status restriction effect of the {Wen Entanglement} was not effective on Pauillac, 50,000 damage in every 30 seconds was still considerably deadly.

"Then, I shall kill you first!" Pauillac roared out in anger as if he was in desperation. He continued to shoot his {Shadow Arrow} at Andros's Shadow Clone. Each of the arrows could deal up to 200,000 Shadow Damage on Andros. Meanwhile, even though Andros's Shadow Clone had over 30,000,000 HP left, but he only

took 150 shots of {Shadow Arrows} before he collapsed onto the ground and died. Well, one of the bigger reasons of him dying so quickly was because he could not receive any healing support from the players. So, he only held up for about 5 minutes before he had to die.

"What the f\*ck... How can that Shadow Clone be so noob? I thought he might be tougher than this?!"

# Chapter 697: Real Demonic Battle Boots

---

The most important thing about Andros's Shadow Clone was not its Attack power. It was not his Defence that allowed him to tank against the boss. It was his {Purify} that could nullify the annoying effect of {Mind Control} of Pauillac that mattered the most!

However, the system deemed that the monster horde would be more annoying than the {Mind Control} by the boss. Hence, the system provided players with a huge advantage at the start of the boss battle. Andros's Shadow Clone was meant to be there to wipe out the entire horde of Elite Tier monsters. Truth to be told, normal players would definitely find it more difficult to deal with so many Elite Tier monsters at the same time. If these monsters got the chance to swarm up on normal players, they would be as good as dead. They might even get wiped out in an instant --- not every player had an Inheritance Transformation Skill, after all.

Of course, if the number of players joining into this boss battle increased to a certain extent, they might stand a chance to push the monster horde back with numbers and slay them all. That is also one of the most used tactics in challenging a super boss in an Open World Map. The more, the merrier!

The moment when Andros's Shadow Clone dies, Zhang Yang became the one who took over the job of tanking against the boss, of course. The moment he took over the responsibility, the boss came up with a {Shadow Blast} as a greeting and stunned everyone for 5 seconds, closely followed by a series of {Shadow Arrows}!

Those who were stunned would receive an additional 50%

damage from each {Shadow Arrow}! Zhang Yang did not intend to use his {Warrior's Will} to break free from the Stun Effect on him. After activating his {Charge Up Strike}, he activated his {God of War Devastation} and caused more than 2,000,000 damage to the boss! It was a massive blow to the boss!

Even though the rest of his party members also had Skills that could break themselves free of the 'Stun Effect', none of them actually attempted to use those Skills at all. They waited out for the 5-second Stun Effect to fade. Unfortunately, now that they have lost Andros's {Purify} to counter the {Mind Control} of the boss, everyone would have to make use of their own ways of surviving. Their best way to counter Pauillac's {Mind Control} was to use their Status Restriction Skills that they could spare. Therefore, they had to be extra cautious in using their Status Restriction Skills.

As expected, in less than a couple of seconds, the boss shot out a dark light right from the tip of his finger at Han Ying Xue. That dark light had turned Han Ying Xue against her own party members, and she began to heal the boss up! Unfortunately for that, Priests did not have any Status Restriction Skills on them. All they could do was to activate the 'Invincibility Effect' of their accessories to break themselves free of the boss' {Mind Control}.

However, accessories had a cooldown period of 10 minutes. If the boss decides to pick Han Ying Xue as his next victim again, that would be the end for the party.

Now that everyone had activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills, their Maximum HP had been boosted up so

much that their amount of HPs looked unrealistically high! Even if their Healers are controlled for a period of time, they would still be able to survive for quite a while. The boss would not be able to cause any fatal blows to any one of them within such a brief moment.

Hundred Shots had finally decided to show off a little bit. He commanded his Red Dragon Pet to activate its Transformation Skill. The dragon instantly became hundreds of meters long! The dragon scales that spread over its entire body was astonishingly beautiful! The Red Dragon did not only look good on the outside, its power level was beyond imagination! Blasts of {Dragon Breaths} were flung at the boss repeatedly, ignoring any Defence, Magic Defence, and even the level of the boss! That Chaos Damage that could ignore basically anything was extremely terrifying!

Hundred Shots used to be the last one on the list of DPS ranking. Now that he had help from his Red Dragon pet, his DPS shot up to another whole new level and he became one of the top DPS players in the party now. Currently, he was ranked 3, which was just below Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu.

"Wah! Uncle Hundred Shots! How can you do this!" Wei Yan Er cried in tears. Well, this little brat has always been very competitive. Knowing that she had been beaten up by someone else and her name became number fourth on the ranking list, of course, she would not be happy about it.

Hundred Shots smiled in joy. Of course he would not argue with a little girl in the middle of a battle.



"Noob tank! I want a Phoenix pet! I want a Red Dragon pet as well! Wah!" Wei Yan Er began to act in a spoiled manner like a little b\*tch.

"You're strong enough! It's true, you know! You don't even need a Red Dragon or a Phoenix at all! You have your huge \*ss battle axe to conquer the world!" Zhang Yang attempted to trick this little brat to calm her non-existent tits.

"Really?"

"Really!"

Wei Yan Er was tricked into smiling again. She became happy again.

"You imbecilic humans, elves, orcs, or whatever you are! It's your turn to die!" The eyes of the boss began to flash with murderous intent. He continued to make the {Shadow Arrows} by running his two hands through the air. Then he threw quite a number of {Shadow Arrows} towards Zhang Yang! Each attack dealt approximately 200,000 damage to him. That amount of damage was rather deadly.

However, Zhang Yang had activated his God of War Transformation. He now had over a 40% rate of resisting a Spell-type attack. Furthermore, he had also taken quite an amount of Damage Absorption on his own. Averagely, he only received 80,000 damage from each of the {Shadow Arrows}. With the currently amount of HP he had, it was just a piece of cake for him

to take the damage head-on.

Without his Transformation Skill, Zhang Yang would have to fear Spell attacks the most. However, after he activates his Transformation Skill, he would have over 60% Damage Immunity. That had instantly made him a nemesis to Spell-type players and monsters!

It has been awhile since the boss last activated his {Mind Control}. Since he could not take down Zhang Yang and his party by merely shooting his {Shadow Arrows}, he decided to activate his {Mind Control} once again. This Skill of his had a 1 minute cooldown period. However, this Skill would pick a different person every time it is activated. That 1-minute gap had given Zhang Yang and his party members enough time to get ready for it. They would be ready to counter that Skill with their own methods by the end of the 1-minute gap. On the contrary, the boss' {Shadow Blast} - which could stun anyone within its effective range was much more annoying than {Mind Control}!

Because boss could recover its HP bar with his Skill, the party had to constantly deal damage to the boss. It would be healing approximately 3,000,000 HP for free if they ever left the boss alone for 5 seconds! That would definitely increase the time required to kill the boss.

However, the boss was activating his Skills in a fixed pattern. At first, everyone did not realize it because Pauillac seemed to act randomly, at first. Well, Zhang Yang and his party members had a lot of experience in taking down bosses all over the place in the game. As the battle continued on, all they needed to do was to pay

more attention to the behavior of the boss and made some deductions to check their suspicions out. After confirming of their suspicions, they could clearly see how the boss would behave and his pattern of attacks, of course. For instance, they found out that the boss would only use {Mind Control} once every 1 minute. Meanwhile, the boss would only use {Shadow Blast} once every 30 seconds!

Therefore, as long as they could time it right and gulp down their [Mobility Potions] at the right moment, they would only have to suffer the impact of {Shadow Blast} once every minute. By succeeding in doing so, they should be able to increase their efficiency in dealing damage to the boss.

Even though Zhang Yang no longer had the ability to ‘cheat’ by recalling back his past life, his other party members had been training and experiencing for over two years. They had encountered countless powerful monsters and bosses over the time. So they had formed a great understanding of each other. They also understood the art of battle in this game to a certain extent. They had no fear of new challenges now!

Upon solving the problems that were brought in by {Shadow Blast} and {Mind Control}, everyone would only need to mindlessly attack the boss whenever they can. After one hour of mindless slashing and chopping with their weapons, the boss’s HP bar had dropped to 20%. As the boss began to activate his Skills more frequently than he did before, the battle became harder and harder to handle. However, the boss was quite an unlucky bastard. He kept picking Wei Yan Er as his target, for some reason.

The little brat had already upgraded her {Warrior's Will} up to level 10 earlier on. She could activate her {Warrior's Will} to break herself free from the {Mind Control} every minute. Furthermore, she also had two pieces of accessories that could grant her the 'Invincibility Effect'. Hence, Wei Yan Er was the one person who would be least afraid of becoming the target of Pauillac's {Mind Control}.

With the addition of the Red Dragon pet, the firepower of the party had increased to another whole new level. After tightening their teeth and held on for another few minutes, Zhang Yang sent out his {Glare of the Death God} to try out their luck. The Skill was not resisted! It was like putting icing on a cake! With that Skill's special effect kicking in real hard, the boss finally met his end!

After screaming a few 'All Hail the Demonic Army!' and 'The Demonic Army is invincible!', the boss collapsed onto the ground and dropped a lot of loot.

"Wahahaha! Stinky boss! Who told you to keep picking on me! Now, it's already too late for you to know that you've been wrong all the time!" Wei Yan Er put her hands on her waist as she was scolding the boss. She looked so cocky as if she had just taken down the boss all by herself.

"Tsk! Little Yan Er, you've been called on the point! Come, whistle a song for me!"

The wretched fatty was instantly beaten up by the ladies without mercy at all. Well, even though the little brat was basically a little b\*tch to begin with, but she was very close to everyone else!

Everyone treated her like their own little sister. So, no one would let that wretched fatty get away from ridiculing that little brat with his foul mouth! They beat him up for good and his face was turned into the face of a pig.

"Little Yang, come be a pig with me!" The wretched fatty was talking with his tears and mucus overflowing his face. His voice was muffled.

"Open up the loot! Check the dead body of the boss!" Before Zhang Yang could open his mouth to talk, he received 'warnings' from the ladies. He was clever enough not to open his mouth because he knew. If he ever opens his mouth to support that wretched fatty, he would become the next target they were going to beat up for good.

"Oh! Nice! Woohoo!" Wei Yan Er scuttled over to the loots with her eyes so wide that they were glowing!

After picking the loot and reorganizing them a little, the little brat laid out the valuable loots that the boss dropped right in front of everyone. The valuable equipment were two Holy Tier equipment: The first one was a pair of aquamarine colored heavy armor boosts. The second piece was a white hat that was very tall and pointy. Whoever who wears it will look like a white gargoyle.

Other than the equipment, there was also one Skill Book, one Skill Point Crystal and eight pieces of Level 6 Gemstones.

Because the party had 'established' a rule previously, the Skill

Point Crystal was the first thing to be given out among the loots. Sun Xin Yu was the one who acquired it. Then everyone turned their attention towards the two pieces of Holy Tier equipment --- as usual, Zhang Yang would use his [Identifying Scrolls] to identify the equipment first.

"Haih... that Sauron dropped three pieces of Holy Tier equipment... you stinky piece of rubbish only dropped two pieces, even though you have a much higher level than Sauron? Pui!" Wei Yan Er kicked the dead body of the boss and shrugged in frustration. She seemed to be extremely dissatisfied with what she found.

"Alright. That's because Sauron was the first Holy Tier boss to be killed. So it makes sense that we would get an extra piece of equipment from that boss. Normally, a powerful boss dropping two top Tier equipment is the standard issue in this game, you know?" Zhang Yang explained. "So, hustle up! Or else we're going to open up the body of the boss for you!"

"Stinky noob tank! You always scare me with that! Pui!" Wei Yan Er began to humph like a little b\*tch again... However, she still snatched the pair of boots up and posted the attributes of it onto the party channel.

[Real Demonic Battle Boots] (Holy, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +640

Vitality: +7,935

Strength: +1,957

Agility: +826

{Level 6 Socket}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 15,870 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing efficiency by 10%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,697 Damage when being hit.

Require Level: 170

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

"Hahaha! Don't I have a pair of lucky hands?" Wei Yan Er put up the boots and rubbed on it. However, she did not act cute, trying to claim the boots this time. Instead, she passed it over to Zhang Yang and said, "Noob tank, you're still wearing Mythical Tier boots right? What a disgrace! Take this! Just take it!"

Although Endless Starlight was 'craving' for it, both of them, Wei Yan Er and himself of course, were wearing Ethereal Tier boots at the moment. Their equipment were much more powerful than Zhang Yang's. Of course he was not so thick-faced that he would take off his boots and give them to Zhang Yang in order to get the

new one! So, he only sat quietly at the side as he drooled.

Zhang Yang accepted the equipment like a boss. Without counting in his accessories, he still had 3 pieces of Mythical Tier equipment on him. Well, he was a little 'outdated' because of that.

After wearing the boots, his Maximum HP had reached 870,000 HP! Even without activating his God Of War Transformation, he was nearly breaking through the HP cap of 1 million HP!

"When did Yan Er become so mature?"

"Hehe, I did accidentally scratch your car... hehehe..."

"WHAT ---" Zhang Yang almost jumped off the roof. "You little brat! No wonder you're so obedient today! So you've done something wrong, as usual! I'm going to smack your butt until flowers bloom on them!"

Everyone laughed out loud. This little brat would always find way to get herself into trouble. It would be extremely rare to see her stay obedient for a while.

After that, Wei Yan Er pushed out another hat made of cloth.

[Marro's Sorcerer Hat] (Holy, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +128



Vitality: +15.870

Intelligence: +3,915

Spirit: +1,652

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 7,830 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing efficiency by 10%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,697 Damage when being hit.

Require Level: 170

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Note: Marro is an extremely powerful human mage. There is a town named after his own name.

Well, everyone dared not sing the praises of an understatement for condemning the design of this hat. However, it was fortunate

that players could choose whether to show the appearance of their hats and capes in the game. If worse comes to worst, whoever who gets the hat could just hide its appearance. However, who would want to pass the chance of getting this equipment after seeing the attributes that this hat could provide?

In terms of Vitality alone, a player could get an additional 160,000 HP just by wearing this hat!

## Chapter 698: Cheng Xue Yao

---

The three Cloth-Armor oriented Class players rolled for the equipment. The first equipment was claimed by Han Ying Xue. The moment she took it up, she immediately equipped it to try it out. However, her previous hat was much more attractive than this piece of a hat. Therefore, she had chosen to show the appearance of her previous hat. However, when she switched the new hat onto her head, she forgot to disable the function that would show the appearance of the hat she was wearing. Instantly, a weird lady, looking like a while gargoyle stood right in front of everyone. Everyone burst into laughter upon seeing a ridiculous hat on her head.

"Sis, let's make some more of this kind of hats and go back to your old apartment to scare some people during the night!" Wei Yan Er's eyes began to glow again. Whenever she had some weird evil plans in her mind, her eyes would glow that way. After all, she had always been into such weird things.

"What the hell is in that brain of yours!? Are you out of your mind?" Zhang Yang sighed again and again, "Post the last Skill Book now! Quickly!"

"Okay!" Although Wei Yan Er nodded, her eyes were still spinning around. It was obvious that she was still thinking about the 'sinister' plan that she mentioned, just now.

[Skill Book: Riposte]

Use: Teaches you the Skill {Riposte}.

Required Class: Warrior, Knight, Thief, Hunter

Required Level: 100

Everyone fixed their eyes on Zhang Yang after reading the name of the Skill. They were looking forward to Zhang Yang's explanation on the Skill.

Zhang Yang shook his head and told the 'truth', "I've only played the beta server this far. So I no longer have any idea about anything else in the future. Stop asking me questions already!"

Everyone said 'Oh' at the same time to express that they understood.

Without knowing the contents of the Skill, everyone rolled to see who would get it. By the end of it, Lost Dream claimed the Skill and learned it. Then he posted the Skill's description on the party chat for everyone to see.

[Riposte]: Cause 200% of both damage of the Primary Weapon and damage of Secondary Weapon combined to the target. Only can be activated when the target is blocking or dodging your attack. The effect can only last for 4 seconds or will fade upon fighting back.

"This is a very suitable Skill for taking on Tankers!" Lost Dream

was filled with joy. Guardians had their {Block} while Knights had their {Holy Shield}. Both Skills were able to create a blocking effect. Now that Lost Dream had {Riposte}, he could give a big surprise to any Tanker that he might encounter during PvP matches in the future.

"Lost Dream, do you want to try out your Skill on me then? It'll be just like exercising!" Zhang Yang waved his [Sword of Purging Devourer] around and smiled.

Lost Dream was in a dilemma to whether he should accept the challenge of Zhang Yang or not.

"I won't use Felice and the Phoenix! It'll be a fair fight!" Zhang Yang attempted to tease him a little more.

"Alright!" Lost Dream had finally tightened his teeth and agreed to accept the challenge. As a top Tier player, he also had a personal degree of achievement he would like to attain. No one would be happy to always stay under the shadow of someone greater after all. Even though Sun Xin Yu and Zhang Yang slept on the same bed every night, she would not hesitate to do what's necessary to win when it is time to compete. So what about the others, then?

By the end of it... Lost Dream became a tragic story.

Although the {Riposte} was really powerful and practical in many aspects, Lost Dream had only acquired one additional Skill after all. Furthermore, Zhang Yang's super fortified Defense was not weakened at all! It was true that both of them were in their

Transformation mode, the amount of HP they had on them was extremely abundant. Also, there was no sign of which one of them was capable of finishing the other. However, Lost Dream was still tortured by Zhang Yang pretty badly. He only had approximately a thousand points of HP when the battle ended. Zhang Yang stopped because if he continued, Lost Dream would have been killed by him. By doing that, Lost Dream would lose Experience Points for a stupid reason.

Well, one player had a Class S Inheritance while the other only had a Class B Inheritance. It was true that there only was a 5% difference between the Attack powers of both sides, before both of them activate their Inheritance Transformations. Practically speaking, the DPS of Lost Dream was just 5% weaker than the DPS of Zhang Yang in that sense. However, when both of them activated their Inheritance Transformations, the difference between the additional boost on their Attack powers became 500% and 300%. The difference was so much bigger, that it became a significant factor that led Lost Dream to his 'demise' for accepting the challenge.

"What the f\*ck! Let's battle again after our Inheritance Transformations end!" Lost Dream was irritated.

"Fine!"

The party continued on to lure the monsters and slay them to prevent any 'wastage'. After all, their Inheritance Transformations could still last for approximately 30 minutes. After their Inheritance Transformations were over, Zhang Yang and Lost Dream came together and brought on the second round of their

match. However, Lost Dream had lost again. He was so ashamed of himself to the point that he did not even dare to look at the others. After clearing up the area, everyone went back to the main city.

After disbanding the party, Zhang Yang took the 4 ladies back to the Spider Kingdom to complete their quest.

It seemed that Andros was still in great sorrow. After throwing a helmet over to them, he no longer spoke to them at all.

The attributes of this helmet would differ according the Class of the player who wears it. If Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er are the ones who pick it up, it would become a Heavy Armor. If Sun Xin Yu picks it up, it would become a Leather Armor. If Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream pick it up, it would become Cloth Armor. However, the equipment would stay as an Ethereal Tier equipment.

[Demon Slaughterer's Helmet] (Ethereal, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +320

Vitality: +7,557

Strength: +2,539

Agility: +1,102

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 15,110 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 8%

Equip: Absorbs 1,078 damage when being hit.

Required Level: 170

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

"Why did the system give us another hat?" Han Ying Xue was dissatisfied with what she got as the reward of the quest. She had just acquired a Holy Tier hat, after all. So this hat would not catch her attention at all. Instead, Daffodil Daydream was very interested in acquiring it. Although her current helmet was also an Ethereal Tier equipment, the equipment was only Level 140. Her current helmet was slightly weaker than this new helmet.

After completing the quest, the five of them went back to Sauron's castle. Then, they made their way back to the main city so that they could socket in the Level 6 Gemstones they had acquired earlier on into their equipment sockets.

The attribute boosts that a Level 6 Gemstone could provide to a



player was astonishing! Other than the cheap 400 points of Vitality, players would get additional 200 points for other attributes such as Strength, Agility, Intelligence, and Spirit. Zhang Yang had inserted a total of 3 Level 6 Strength Gemstones and increased his Strength by an additional 50%! With just Level 5 and Level 6 Strength Gemstones, his Strength had reached up to 2,100 points!

Currently, his lowest Attack would also exceed 100,000 damage. Upon activating his {Vitality Aura}, his Maximum HP had reached up to approximately 950,000 HP. He could be deemed as a humanoid monster now! If he ever wants to show off his attributes in the public channel, 99% of the players would definitely rub their eyes in disbelief.

In the eyes of the public, a top Tier player would only have a set of Level 140 Mythical Tier equipment. They would be so shocked that they would drop their jaws even if they only see a player with a total amount of 200,000 HP. If the high Tier player was holding a two-handed weapon, that player should be able to deal approximately 40,000 to 50,000 damage. There was no doubt that others would not be able to match such a high amount of damage.

That was the advantage that high-Level players would have over the other players who were lower in levels. They could wear equipment of higher level and insert gemstones that were higher in grade in their equipment as well. They could also learn Skills of higher level and drink potions of higher grades! These advantages could be combined together to create an improvement in the quality of a player.

For instance, even if Zhang Yang had a Class C Inheritance, he would have over 10,000,000 HP after activating his Transformation Skill. His Attack power would still exceed a basic damage of 200,000 because he was currently beyond Level 150. On the contrary, as the player mentioned above, even if the Level 140 player activates a Class A Inheritance Transformation Skill, the player's total amount of HP would only hit the cap of 6,000,000 HP. The player would only have over 130,000 basic damage!

In that sense, the power level of a Class C Inheritance Transformation would actually be enough to defeat a Class A Inheritance Transformation.

Therefore, the most important aspect of online games was still 'Levels'! Players could only battle on the same ground, only if their levels were on similar par. Then only, could they compete against each other in terms of Skills and equipment.

Zhang Yang was content with his current attributes. After all, he only managed to attain such powerful attributes back in his previous life when he was at level 179. Back then, he did not have any equipment with the Special attribute that allowed him to equip the equipment 20 levels before he reached the Required Level for those equipment. Currently, he had a full set of Level 170 equipment. Two of the equipment were Holy Tier equipment, while the rest of the equipment were all Ethereal Tier.

However, because Zhang Yang only had a Class B Inheritance and a one-handed weapon in his previous life, his Attack power was far lower than the Attack power he had in this life currently. Speaking of his HP, he already had equipped himself with defensive

equipment that were most important to Tankers. Furthermore, his shield was a Holy Tier equipment. In a nutshell, he is now far more powerful than he was in his previous life!

Haih... the old days were not meant to be brought up ever again!

Zhang Yang did not go lenient on himself when it came to grinding his level. One of the main reasons was that those few maniacs from the Eternal Flame were getting much more efficient in grinding their levels up for some reason. They were expressing their intentions clearly enough for everyone to know that they wanted to become Number One on the Leaderboard! Meanwhile, the other players from other Regions did not slack off either. If anyone would allow themselves to have any self-satisfaction upon their current achievement, it would only lead them down to a path that they could just stare at others overtaking them.

It was already July before anyone of them knew it. The summer in Zhou Su City has always been humid. Zhang Yang woke up early in the morning. He was already sweaty the moment he stepped foot out of his house. Upon completing his morning training, his sweat was pouring down his six-packs, making them glisten in the sunlight like shining jewels. After he took a bath and had his breakfast, Zhang Yang went to work as usual.

He walked into the company and went into the elevator. Then he took a turn towards his office as usual. However, Zhang Yang had a weird feeling today. It felt like everyone was looking at him with weird eyes today.

Did the little brat stick another note on his back again?

Zhang Yang reached out his hand to touch his back. Well, he did not find any notes. Could it be that the little brat had put something on his handkerchief so that when he uses it, his face became 'flowery' and all? That was not possible! The little brat was not at home yesterday. She was at university all the while!

Pressing on with his suspicion, Zhang Yang walked right into his office. A few minutes later, he heard some gentle knocking on his office door. The door was pushed open and a tall girl walked right into the office with a cup of hot coffee in her hands.

Zhang Yang's sixth sense was incredible!

This tall girl had the appearance on the same level as Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. She was definitely a 'disaster level' beauty. Sun Xin Yu was a cool beauty. Han Ying Xue was just plain freaking sexy. This girl looked like a juicy honeydew. Any man would feel an itch in their hearts and they would desire to rip off her clothes from head to toe to conquer her sexy hot body.

This girl was in her Office Lady uniform. Right between the opening of her collar, her fair skin, with a perfect complexion was revealed. Her bust was so compressed that her buttons were about to blow! It obviously exhibited her prideful assets. Any men in the room would have fallen into the honey pot trap!

Even though Zhang Yang's pair of eyes that had been fed with a lifetime of beautiful 'sights', he was still distracted for one brief moment by her appearance.

"Mr. Zhang, I'm a new secretary. My name is Cheng Xue Yao" This 'disastrous level' elf was putting the cup of coffee onto Zhang Yang's table. Her eyes were so mesmerizing as they revealed a diverse and complex mental apparatus.

Zhang Yang had a total of 6 'daily' secretaries. They were all basically flower vases in the office. He could still recall that there was indeed a secretary with the surname 'Lee' coming into his office to resign. She informed him that she was going to marry someone. She even dared to ask Zhang Yang if he wanted to have a 'friendly match' with her to make her last day in the office memorable.

Zhang Yang did not fire these flower vases, mainly because he was not a cold-blooded son of a b\*tch. Secondly, it was because he could use some eye candies in the office. After all, they were all considered as beauties in the office. He could feel satisfied even though he does not 'eat' them. Well, he also did not plan to hire another secretary to fill in her place so soon. He did not expect the people below him to be so persistent in filling up the empty slot in the office. It only took them two days to find a suitable candidate.

So now, Zhang Yang had finally solved the mystery. No wonder people were staring at him throughout the entire morning. Apparently, it was all because of the new girl Cheng Xue Yao. Yes, it would be true that such an angelic girl would become the center attention of many people. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had been well known to a collector of pretty women in his 'Doll House'. Hence, it made perfect sense that everyone was staring at him with strange looks.

"Mr. Zhang, I heard that you're playing 'God's Miracle' too!" Cheng Xue Yao was quite passionate in trying to make a conversation with Zhang Yang. She was giggling softly while talking to Zhang Yang. Her mesmerizing eyes were as if they were able to whisper. It was seductive.

How electrifying!

Zhang Yang was mesmerized by her watery eyes so badly as if there were countless ants crawling in his heart. The ants were really biting through his heart from inside out right now! However, this girl seemed to know how to protect herself even though she seemed so effortlessly seductive.

For example, when she was leaning over to put coffee on the table, her other hand was placed cleverly to shield Zhang Yang's eyesight from staring straight at her busts and cleavage. She did maintain a subtle distance between herself and Zhang Yang as well. The distance was just perfect, that both of them did not feel awkward at all.

# Chapter 699: Newbie

---

"Yea, I'm just messing around in the game, just for fun!" Zhang Yang said. Right after he came into his office, he had taken out his game helmet straightaway, ready to plug into the game. Before he could do that, this mesmerizingly disastrous new girl had walked right into his office.

"Mr Zhang should have reached quite a high level in the game, I assume." Chen Xue Yao was a little surprised to see that Zhang Yang was also a player for the game, "I just started playing the game a few days ago! I'm just Level 9. Please teach me how to be a good player!"

Looking at her eyes filled with excitement and expectancy, Zhang Yang was moved. So he nodded. However, she would surely become another popular female player among the men in the game. They would surely fall for her, even if she was just walking around in the game. Only if she used her real-life appearance in the game, of course. Well, she could just ask those men to help her. So why would she still need Zhang Yang's help then?

Could it be, that she knew Zhang Yang was Zhan Yu in the game?

Unlikely! Only a minority knew his true identity in real life. Well, only those who went to join the Soaring Swords competition in Shang Hai would have seen his face in person anyway. As he recalled back throughout his entire life, he did not get so bored that he would go to tell anyone about his life and his game life, at all. Wait a minute... Could this be a scheme from Liu Wei or Zhong Xiu Hua?

It was unlikely that Liu Wei would do such a thing. The reason was simple. Look at her appearance! Even Zhang Yang felt 'heaty' upon taking a look at her! Not to mention that Zhang Yang himself felt the urge to loosen his 'brother' from his pants! Well, he almost did! Would Liu Wei be able to resist at all? Liu Wei would have 'collected' this girl as his own, instead of sending her out to be a spy.

On the other hand, things would be a little bit different for Zhong Xiu Hua. His capability was far beyond Zhang Yang's imagination. He might be determined to destroy the relationship Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu had now. And the easiest way to do it was to make known to the girl that his man cheated!

Not many men could have resisted the 'temptation' that Chen Xue Yao wrought onto them. If he really did get touchy with her and she happened to have a camera somewhere to record everything, then Zhang Yang would be done for!

So could it be real, then?

Zhang Yang fell silent for a brief moment as he went into deep thought about the situation. Well, he had been through a lot just to get together with Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. They had also been through so much together that he no longer craved just for their bodies. Even though this Chen Xue Yao looked honeyed and ready for him to 'taste', but Zhang Yang believed that he could get himself in line to not turn himself into a horny beast.



If Chen Xue Yao was really sent here by Zhong Xiu Hua, then he should be able to use her to get back at Zhong Xiu Hua! Furthermore, that accusation was just in his head alone. Maybe this girl was innocent, after all? We shall see about that.

Well, coming from another perspective, even though Zhang Yang did not have any thoughts of getting in bed with Chen Xue Yao, but the love for appealing aesthetics is native to humans, after all. There was no denying in that. Zhang Yang could have an extra eye candy to himself by keeping her around the office. Other than that, if Zhang Yang decides to fire her right away, her next boss might not be a decent boss. Her future boss might use all sorts of methods of getting her to submit to him. It was infuriating even to think about that!

A while later, Chen Xue Yao brought in another brand new game helmet with her when she walked back into the office. Her round, peachy buttocks rested on the sofa and she crossed her long fair legs, sitting down on the sofa elegantly. That sexy hot movement could really get a thirsty man to drool!

"Mr. Zhang, just add me as your Friend after you log into the game!" Chen Xue Yao said.

Zhang Yang nodded and put on his game helmet. He signed in and arrived at the Sauron's Castle.

"Mr. Zhang, my in-game name is just 'Xue Yao'. Remember to add me!"

Zhang Yang brought up his Friend-list. Then he entered the name 'Xue Yao' into the system to search for her. A Friend Request was sent to her and in just a blink of an eye, she accepted his Friend Request.

He looked at the Friend-list to have a look at her avatar information: Xue Yao, Level 9, Female Elf, Cryomancer.

She really did tell him the truth. She was currently Level 9! That meant that she really did join the game very recently! The game rule have stated everyone could only have one account, one character in the game. Well, there was also a possibility to ignore a dummy account sometimes. Of course, it might be because she deleted her old account and started a new one. However, Zhang Yang could not understand her true intentions just yet.

"Huh? Mr. Zhang! You're at Level 153 now?! You're awesome!" Chen Xue Yao spoke in surprise. That really stroked his ego for a bit. However, the fact that she did not know the renowned 'Zhan Yu' had proven that she was really a rookie, a newbie!

"Just call me Zhan Yu in the game. It's a little awkward to hear someone calling me Mr. Zhang!"

"Roger, Mr, Zhang... Zhan Yu!"

Chen Xue Yao did not request for Zhang Yang to aid her in grinding her level. Instead, Zhang Yang was the one who insisted on lending her a hand. He explained to her on how to play as a Spellcaster. Then, the two of them went off separately to grind

their levels.

However, Chen Xue Yao would report her progress to Zhang Yang in excitement, every time she reached another new level. It was most probably because she did not know anyone in the game yet. However, her grinding efficiency was not really ideal, to begin with. When Zhang Yang was still at her level, he could have grind 3 levels up with the same amount of time it takes for her to gain 1 level.

Currently, the 4 ladies had become one gang. They basically did everything together. Zhang Yang could not help but wonder, weren't that witchy snow and that ice queen sworn enemies? So, how could they suddenly be able to get along in harmony all of a sudden? They're in the same party in grinding their levels? How odd!

Women's minds are indeed fascinating!

A while ago, he was requested by the four ladies to grind with them. Apparently, they had found a new spot which would spawn a large number of Elite Tier monsters. However, they could not slay the monsters without Zhang Yang shielding them from getting slaughtered by the large horde of monsters. Furthermore, their Inheritance Transformation Skills were still under cooldown period. So, they had to ask Zhang Yang for a favor.

However, Wei Yan Er kept saying that they asked him to come because they wanted to share good 'fortune' with him. They would not have shared such a good spot otherwise.

In other words, the little brat... no, the 4 ladies wanted him to feel grateful for becoming their 'errand boy'!

In that monster area, there was a narrow pathway by the side of it. Zhang Yang and his Phoenix pet could block the entire pathway if they could just stand side by side in the middle of the pathway. Sun Xin Yu and the other ladies were positioned right behind Zhang Yang and the Phoenix pet. They were the DPS players in this battle. In approximately 30 minutes, the five of them had wiped out every existence of monsters in that area. Their Experience Bars grew substantially from that.

If only there were such great number of Elite Tier monsters for them to farm for Experience Points anywhere else on the map. They would have reached a whole new level by the end of the day! Unfortunately, their 'if only' was just a distant dream that could never become true. It would not be possible to do so unless they mobilize the entire army of Lone Desert Smoke out, scouring every inch of the maps in the entire game for similar spots with large number of monsters. Then, they could just travel from one spot to another in order to claim their 'prizes'.

However, it would take quite some time for players to travel around on a large map. Though they would not suffer any loss by the end of it, it would take them approximately 4 to 5 days to grind a level. That should be the maximum speed of current stage players in grinding their level up. However, Zhang Yang and the ladies would be wasting the time of their guild members. It would be a huge loss for Lone Desert Smoke as a whole, because they would be too busy to aid Zhang Yang and the ladies to level up, instead of grinding their own levels up efficiently.

"Master Zhan Yu, can you come over and tank for us in a dungeon?" Not long after Zhang Yang parted ways with the ladies, he received a voice message from Chen Xue Yao. He was shopping at the Auction House.

Tank for them? In which dungeon?

Zhang Yang frowned a little. This girl had just reached Level 12. She could only enter some low-level dungeon at the moment! Meanwhile, even if she is going to challenge the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon, she would only need a Level 50 player with average equipment to clear it without a single problem. Even if it is a Priest or a Holy Knight, she could have cleared the dungeon with only one Level 50 player's help.

Now that she requested Zhang Yang to aid her in clearing low-level dungeons, well... Zhang Yang did not know whether he should just laugh it off or cry it off loud.

Newbie! She's just a newbie!

Furthermore, she is actually the type of newbie that knew a little about the game. She knew that she needed a tanker to tank against monsters in the dungeon. So if Zhang Yang ever tries to show off his 'knowledge' about the game, he might make a fool out of himself without even knowing if he ever misinforms her about something.

So, Zhang Yang smiled it off and decided to help out. He thought

to himself, that he had not been showing off for quite a while. If he goes to 'tank' the dungeon for Chen Xue Yao as the Number One Tanker in the entire world, she should get a shock, right?

Another reason was because he had been farming for quite a while now. Trying to do something different was what he needed. So, he accepted Chen Xue Yao's request. Upon finding out which main city to go, Zhang Yang teleported over to the main city and summoned out his Phoenix pet. Then, he flew right away to the location where Chen Xue Yao was. However, his Phoenix pet would give up his identity. It would be impossible to keep his identity as a secret if Chen Xue Yao ever sees his Phoenix pet. So, he went to the ground and switched out Whitey, long before he reached her. Then he hopped onto Whitey and the two of them raced their butts over to the girl.

"Here! Over here!" right by the entrance of the dungeon, Chen Xue Yao was waving her staff, trying to get Zhang Yang to see her. She was wearing a set of shabby equipment from head to toe. Zhang Yang felt sad for her. Other than the cape and the staff, everything was just White-Wood Tier.

Small maps would clearly show the positions of every player within a certain distance from the player in the map as long as they are not too far from each other. She was obviously a newbie, because she actually did not know about that function of the game. Instead, she was yelling and waving at Zhang Yang from afar. Obviously, she had never played 'God's Miracle' or other games that are similar to this game in her entire life.

Because of that, she did not even try to change some settings on

her appearance at all. Her face was the exact copy of her real face in real life. It was enchanting to look at. Zhang Yang could not even look at her in disdain because of her face. He only knew how to stare at her without a blink of his eyes.

"Ms. Xue Yao, is this the tanker that you summoned?" There were more than just Zhang Yang and Xue Yao on the party. There were other three male players. However, the player with the highest level was at Level 27. The other two players were only Level 22 and Level 16. Well, at least they met the requirement to challenge the dungeon that they were going into.

The player who spoke was 'Unkillable Cockroach'. He was the player who had reached Level 27. At first, he was farming equipment and Experience Points together with his colleagues in Marzerway's Lair. After hearing about a pretty low-level lady player wanting to go into the Banka Underground Tunnel, he quit Marzerway's Lair and joined Chen Xue Yao's party.

After seeing Chen Xue Yao with his own eyes, he instantly got electrocuted. Why would he want any equipment when a mesmerizing existence like Chen Xue Yao is standing right in front of him? If the system did not have the Anti-harassment System, he would have satisfied his itch by pushing himself onto her, even though they were in the game.

To get the attention of Chen Xue Yao, he even purposely brought along another low-level player with him. However, it was really hard to get a high-leveled player, these days. Same goes for locating low-level players. It was not because the number of low-level players was too small. It was because normal guilds normally

do not recruit low-level players. That was because the player's standard could not be determined when their levels are too low. Furthermore, it would be uncourteous to kick people out of the guild once they had joined.

Even though the three of them were also newbies in 'God's Miracle', but they seemed to have played other similar games, just that their levels were a little low for now. They were not really newbies to begin with. They had never expected Chen Xue Yao to find a super high-level Tanker to join them.

Players could only get a pet mount once they attain Level 30. None of them believed that Zhang Yang was just Level 30, even though he had hidden his character information. Well, they could tell that Zhang Yang could crush everything in the dungeon all alone. There would not be any 'tanking' or whatsoever!

Newbies!

However, the three male players were much happier when Chen Xue Yao was much more noob. That being said, they could show off quite a number of things in front of her. Unfortunately, they were irked by this 'newcomer' that Chen Xue Yao summoned over. He actually hid his character information from them! Pui! Was he trying to act like he was some sort of professional player? Not to mention that Level 100 players were all over the place now. So, what was his true intention in trying to hide his information from the others, then? Beware getting struck by lightning for trying to act cool! Those were the thoughts that ran through the minds of three jealous male players.



At the earlier stage of the game, players would be able to see character information of other players when they were joined into the same party. Their Names, Races, levels, and Classes were all visible to their own party members. However, ever since the Chaos Realm had been unlocked, the game had changed some of its functionalities. Now, the character information of a player would only become visible when he or she enters the land of their enemy Regions. Or else, the character information of a player would stay hidden even after they were join the same party. Only friends on the Friend List could see the character information of the player or the other way around.

Therefore, Zhang Yang's character information remained hidden, even after Chen Xue Yao added him into her party.

# Chapter 700: Snowbark

---

If they had known that Chen Xue Yao would summon a high-level Tanker to aid them, they would have suggested looking for a Tanker themselves. If Unkillable Cockroach's colleague could bring him to farm the Level 20 dungeon, then they would not have problems clearing this dungeon at all.

At first, the three male players were competing against each other to see who could win the girl over. They were trying to show off their strong suites one after another. A fight almost exploded among them, even. However, when Zhang Yang showed himself, the three of them agreed on to stand on the same line to repel their 'strongest competitor'.

"This is the CEO of the company where I work at!" Chen Xue Yao smiled sweetly at them.

Is this some sort of joke? A hidden story between the boss and his secretary? Damn!

The three of them revealed a strong sense of jealousy on their faces. A thousand thoughts were racing through their minds at the same instant. Like a knave who uses his own yardstick to measure the motive of an upright man, some filthy people might have imagined others to be just like themselves.

Although Whitey could not match Phoenix pet at all, it did not take long before it reached the entrance of the dungeon. After seeing that the place was empty, Zhang Yang sighed with all sorts

of feelings welling up in his mind. Two years ago when the Banka Underground Tunnel was first unlocked, this place used to be so crowded that it looked like a bank or an Auction house. There was no need to worry that one could not find a party to enter the dungeon.

Zhang Yang had currently reached Level 153, and he was leading the Number One guild in the entire game server. Furthermore, he had conquered a total of 3 Territories. Not to mention, he was no longer the newbie who freshly joined. He had become one of the best players, no... the best player in the entire game server! Now that he changed so much, he could not help but to feel emotional when he saw that everything here still remained the same, except there was no crowd here.

"Banka Underground Tunnel is a 10-player scale dungeon. Why don't we look for another high Level player first before we start?" Unkillable Cockroach gave Zhang Yang an unfriendly stare. Then, he suddenly stopped moving. It was most probably that he was sending private messages to look for players.

Zhang Yang was shocked for a brief moment. Then he understood --- over the greatest beauty hangs the greatest ruin! Some girls were just too pretty to be true. As long as you stay by her side, you would catch some fire unintentionally and you might even get yourself burned! Zhang Yang did not mind and he smiled it off. Well, he was here to show off, anyway. So he just had to continue what he was trying to do.

Unkillable Cockroach asked Chen Xue Yao to add another player called 'SuikaTaro' into their party. That guy was complaining

about them asking him to come. Well, he was about to hit Level 100 and he was just one step before entering Chaos Realm. If he was not Unkillable Cockroach's colleague, he would not have come here, even though they paid him 1,000 gold pieces.

Unkillable Cockroach instantly taunted Zhang Yang by staring at him. Can you hear him? Our friend is about to hit Level 100! So don't you think that you're the only one with high level now!

Zhang Yang was bored. So he took out all sorts of materials and began to make potions. When Unkillable Cockroache and his friends saw Zhang Yang making potions such as [Armor Piercing Potions], [Invincibility Potion] and [Level 6 Healing Potions], they began to drool. Although they had not reached the Required Level to consume those potions just yet, they knew enough to know that these potions were extremely valuable!

--- Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop had turned into a second Auction House in the server. Countless players would visit his shop to make purchase of things they required on a daily basis. Whatever valuable and good, anyone who had set foot into his Little Merchandize Shop would know. The items that were demanded the most would surely be [Armor Piercing Potions] and [Temporary Invincibility Potions].

Zhang Yang was also a Grandmaster grade Alchemist. He could make 10 Potions in one single process. If he could perform the process once in every second, he could have made 600 potions in just one minute!

The three of them were drooling because they knew that one

bottle of that [Temporary Invincibility Potion] could cost up to 500 gold pieces. With that price tag, the items was still out of stock very often! If they could just get the potions that Zhang Yang made to the market and sell them, how much money could they make out of them?

Hundreds of thousands gold pieces? Or maybe Millions?

How can this fellow be so rich!

Zhang Yang had never been short on ingredients required to make potions. He would constantly let his Herb Foraging Familiar out to gather the ingredients. Of course, he did not do that in this dungeon. The reason was simple. The Herb Foraging Familiar was paid, according to time. The herbs and other ingredients that could be found on this map were definitely of low Tier. Zhang Yang would not be able to even cover the cost of summoning the Herb Foraging Familiar in that case.

Since making potions required time and patience, Zhang Yang was willing to wait for that 'VIP' SuikaTaro to come over. After waiting for approximately 25 minutes, SuikoTaro finally came together with his white ram pet mount. The moment when he saw Chen Xue Yao, his arrogant face instantly vanished. Instead, his eyes was glowing violently, as he was staring at Chen Xue Yao with a sense of horniness on his face.

"Haha! So you guys want to repeat clearing this dungeon, right? No problem! Even though the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon would only refresh once in every 3 days, we can still enter the Normal Mode and the Hard Mode repeatedly without any

restrictions, whatsoever!" Although SuikoTaro was talking, his eyes were fixed on Chen Xue Yao.

Chen Xue Yao had a glimpse of doubt on her face. Well, she was indeed a true newbie here. She only knew that Tankers were meant to tank the monsters out front, and the Healers would be healing from the rear. The DPS players would be dealing damage from whichever angle, suitable according to the situation of the battle. However, she basically had zero knowledge of levels and equipment. Hence, she felt strange upon hearing SuikoTaro, a Thief, saying that out loud.

They began their farming with the Normal Mode. Zhang Yang did not try to snatch SuikoTaro's opportunity of showing himself off. He only let Whitey handle the monsters while he was making potions at the rear. Time was precious. There was no way that he would waste his time killing low-level monsters.

With a Level 99 Thief and Whitey's support attacks, their progress was so efficient that they could not believe it themselves. Well, Whitey was basically abandoned in Zhang Yang's inventory. It was only Level 124 currently. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had ripped off most of its Skills. So, Whitey could only deal a limited amount of damage.

--- Because Whitey did not have any AoE Skill, SuikoTaro could lure a bunch of monsters and wiped them out with his {Blades of Fan}. So, Whitey's damage was just simply not enough when it was compared to SuikoTaro's.

SuikoTaro felt like a boss because he was clearing the entire

dungeon like a boss, literally! Meanwhile, he continued to brag about himself while he was clearing out the monsters. Well, he was trying to butter himself nicely so that Chen Xue Yao could have a good impression about him. As he talked nonstop in front of the girl, the other 3 male players were beginning to feel irritated.

"Brother Liu, the new manager of that department is a rich and handsome man! Many girls have fallen for him, you know? You better make sure your wife doesn't get hooked away!" Unkillable Cockroach said. Firstly, he said it out loud was to stop SuikoTaro from bragging on about himself. Secondly, he wanted to inform Chen Xue Yao that this man already had a wife.

SuikoTaro was very unhappy about it. So he said, "Pui! Even though he's tall and rich and handsome, but what else can he do? My wife had told me once before! That man is just looking good on the outside! That little brother of his beneath his pants is just 2 inches long!"

"Haha!" The men were laughing together.

However, they stopped all of a sudden. The situation became awkward all of a sudden.

How would his wife know how long is the other man's 'little brother'? Obviously, SuikoTaro had been put on a green cap. In other words, his wife cheated on him with that man that they were talking about.

For the next few minutes, everyone stayed quiet while clearing

up the monsters in the surroundings.

Because only Chen Xue Yao and another Thief called 'DodoRyu' had a need to farm the dungeon, everything that was dropped from the monsters were given to either of them only. So, there was no snatching or quarreling among them, because they tend to resolve that matter in a civilized manner. Well, Chen Xue Yao had no idea whether an item or an equipment was good or bad. The others had to explain things one by one so that she could understand things bit by bit. Through that, she finally understood that Intelligence Attribute could boost one's Spell attack power, and Spirit Attribute could increase the rate of MP recovery.

After clearing up the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon, the four men that were basically drugged by the mesmerizing appearance of Chen Xue Yao were tapping on their chests suggesting that they would be more than willing to aid her in grinding her level. They even tried to boast that they could help her level up another 20 levels more. Upon doing so, they would then take her to the Marzerway's Lair for another farming session. Zhang Yang rubbed his nose a little bit. Well, he was almost done with making potions. There was no point that he should stay behind for all this.

Unfortunately for him, he did not have a chance to show off in front of Chen Xue Yao.

After Zhang Yang made up his mind to leave, they walked out of the dungeon. Suddenly, Zhang Yang noticed that there was another bunch of players arrived at the entrance of the dungeon. They were carrying the title of 'The Myth! Their leader was a Spellcaster wearing fancy clothes named 'Snowbark'. He was



currently at Level 142. He was the most powerful one among that bunch of players.

Zhang Yang instantly felt a rage blazing right in his heart. This Snowbark, was one of the two second graded generals that served under Liu Wei in his previous life. During his previous life when he was leading Clear Water, this Snowbark and the other second graded general called 'All Beetles' would always lead their own party to slaughter the members of Clear Water who were trying to grind their levels. They worked together, trying to bully Zhang Yang's guild members by using the advantages of having high levels.

During that period of time, Clear Water hated Liu Wei, Snowbark and All Beetles the most for that reason. Some had even made puppets with their names on them, trying to curse them.

"The Myth is grinding here! Anyone who is not one of us should get lost now!" One of them spoke arrogantly.

What a bunch of arrogant sons of b\*tches! Everyone could make their room for the dungeon. It would not bother them at all if there were others there to clear the dungeon as well. These people were actually trying to clear everyone out of the dungeon for their own joy? That was not a normal kind of arrogance anymore!

However, Zhang Yang had never really cared about the people from The Myth. Meanwhile, SuikaTaro and the others had no balls at all to be so cocky in front of those people. Although The Myth was not considered as one of the top Tier guild, under the showering of Liu Wei's money, the guild still managed to grow into

one of the large-scale guild. Well, they were still too powerful for SuikaTaro and his friends to take these people on/

Furthermore, casting aside the name of the guild, that Snowbark was Level 142, currently. If he wanted to, he could have instantly taken out SuikaTaro and his friends by just moving his fingers. So SuikaTaro and his friends were not daring enough to 'bark' back at them even if they wanted to.

"Hold on!" A Berserker fixed his eyes on Chen Xue Yao and widened his eyes. Then he said, "Brother Snow, look at that chick!"

"What a decent, fine looking chick!"

"What the f\*ck! That \*ss and those tits! Her top is going to rip at any moment! Look at that!"

"If I can rub my d\*ck in between her two tits, that would be heaven!"

Foul and indecent words were heard talking right out of those idiots' mouths. People of The Myth were fixing their perverted eyes on Xue Yao. They looked like hungry wolves which were staring at a harmless lamb!

"Leave the girl behind and you guys, get lost!" Snowbark spoke in disdain.

"Quickly! Into the dungeon!" SuikaTaro was not an idiot. He

knew that as long as they get back into the dungeon, they would be safe from these group of goons. No matter how powerful they were, there would be no way for them to pursue them.

They quickly went back into the dungeon one after another. When they were in the dungeon, all they needed to do was to take out their [Teleportation Scrolls], and they could just go back to the main city or Territory.

"Huh? Where's Zhan Yu?" Xue Yao was doing a headcount. She was surprised when she realized that Zhang Yang was not with them. Then she said, "Oh no! Zhan Yu hasn't come through yet! He must have been cut off by those hoodlums! We must get back and help him!"

"Zhan Yu?" the other 4 players began to laugh, "Sister Xue Yao, you're cheated! Zhan Yu is known as the Number One player in the entire server, the best player in the entire world! How can that fool be really him?!"

"That's right! He thought he can hide his character information so that he can disguise himself as Zhan Yu? What a naive man he is!"

"No wonder he did not even try to do anything while we were busting our \*sses, trying to clear the dungeon! So, he was actually scared that we might see through him!"

"Sister Xue Yao, this cheater deserves to be killed! We don't have to care about him at all. Since we've completed the dungeon, we

can go back to the main city to hand in the quest. We can take you to another place to grind your level!"

"Furthermore, if he is the real Zhan Yu, he could have taken out them all without a problem at all! He won't need our help at all!"

The four of them were trying to talk Chen Xue Yao out of helping Zhang Yang. From their point of view, Zhang Yang was just like them. The reason he approached Chen Xue Yao was to get her to sleep with him in bed.

# Table of Contents

[MMORPG: Rebirth of the Legendary Guardian](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 601: Liu Wei's Torture](#)

[Chapter 602: Hachilles](#)

[Chapter 603: A Close Call](#)

[Chapter 604: Armor Piercing Potion](#)

[Chapter 605: Finding Alice](#)

[Chapter 606: The Black-Hearted Goblin](#)

[Chapter 607: Saving the Villagers](#)

[Chapter 608: Sosh](#)

[Chapter 609: Eat Your Way to Level Up!](#)

[Chapter 610: Level 120](#)

[Chapter 611: The Dark Knight](#)

[Chapter 612: The First Step to Acquiring Phoenix Pet](#)

[Chapter 613: Hunt for the Mello Ram](#)

[Chapter 614: Metamorphosis](#)

[Chapter 615: Darkness Inheritance](#)

[Chapter 616: High Priestess Chiffony](#)

[Chapter 617: Possession](#)

[Chapter 618: Milkmaid Deity](#)

[Chapter 619: The Secret](#)

[Chapter 620: Blazing Fire Phoenix](#)

[Chapter 621: Death Arbiter](#)

[Chapter 622: One Sword Stroke Versus Death Arbiter](#)

[Chapter 623: Fight with Everything You Have!](#)

[Chapter 624: Phoenix Transformation](#)

[Chapter 625: A Torturous Torture](#)

[Chapter 626: World League Championship](#)

[Chapter 627: Quarterfinals](#)

[Chapter 628: A 'Different' Tactic](#)

[Chapter 629: A Wild Pussy has appear!](#)

[Chapter 630: How to Treat Your guest](#)

[Chapter 631: Reverse Play](#)

[Chapter 632: Semifinal](#)

[Chapter 633: Let the Finals begin!](#)

[Chapter 634: Full Recovery Potion](#)  
[Chapter 635: Absolute Slaughter!](#)  
[Chapter 636: Gurant's Thumb Ring](#)  
[Chapter 637: The Soul Breaker](#)  
[Chapter 638: War of Nations](#)  
[Chapter 639: Game of Thrones](#)  
[Chapter 640: The Curtains Fall Perfectly](#)  
[Chapter 641: Gagaro's Mist](#)  
[Chapter 642: Contest on the Bridge](#)  
[Chapter 643: Mist Skeleton King](#)  
[Chapter 644: Resurrection Monolith](#)  
[Chapter 645: The Mist Blood Zombie](#)  
[Chapter 646: The Zombie Lord](#)  
[Chapter 647: Necromancer](#)  
[Chapter 648: The Necromancer Garces](#)  
[Chapter 649: Mist Death Knight](#)  
[Chapter 650: Death Knight, Ishildur](#)  
[Chapter 651: Blood Driven Madness](#)  
[Chapter 652: Ghastly Frost Dragon](#)  
[Chapter 653: A Decisive Battle with the Ghost Dragon](#)  
[Chapter 654: Dragon Slayer Battle Axe](#)  
[Chapter 655: Identifying Scroll](#)  
[Chapter 656: Light of the Rainbow](#)  
[Chapter 657: Gathering the Feathers](#)  
[Chapter 658: Hartens](#)  
[Chapter 659: A Vulture](#)  
[Chapter 660: Phony Crap](#)  
[Chapter 661: Deep Sleep](#)  
[Chapter 662: Brain Dead](#)  
[Chapter 663: Death Moon Pirates](#)  
[Chapter 664: Mythical Dense Water](#)  
[Chapter 665: The Dark Magician Brosh](#)  
[Chapter 666: Abyssal Blast](#)  
[Chapter 667: Breaking the Third Seal](#)  
[Chapter 668: Another Serious Blood Loss](#)  
[Chapter 669: Felice's Advancement](#)  
[Chapter 670: Charge Up Strike](#)  
[Chapter 671: Exposing the Atrocious Side](#)  
[Chapter 672: One Trouble after Another](#)

[Chapter 673: A Bottled Up Battle](#)  
[Chapter 674: Strike Back on the Japan-Korea Region](#)  
[Chapter 675: The True Pushing Technique](#)  
[Chapter 676: Eternal Flame](#)  
[Chapter 677: Mar Gaia Forest](#)  
[Chapter 678: Getting Back The One Ring](#)  
[Chapter 679: The Dark Rider](#)  
[Chapter 680: The One Ring](#)  
[Chapter 681: Sauron's Castle](#)  
[Chapter 682: Orc Leader Grandlar](#)  
[Chapter 683: The Dark One, Sauron](#)  
[Chapter 684: Dark Star Shield](#)  
[Chapter 685: Legendary Tier](#)  
[Chapter 686: The Fight for Sauron's Castle](#)  
[Chapter 687: Spamming the Forbidden Scroll](#)  
[Chapter 688: Backstabbing](#)  
[Chapter 689: The New Territory](#)  
[Chapter 690: Background of the Eternal Flame](#)  
[Chapter 691: Spider Kingdom](#)  
[Chapter 692: Red Dragon Pet](#)  
[Chapter 693: Dragon Marquis](#)  
[Chapter 694: Andros's Wrath](#)  
[Chapter 695: Dark Mist Canyon](#)  
[Chapter 696: Andros's Shadow Clone](#)  
[Chapter 697: Real Demonic Battle Boots](#)  
[Chapter 698: Cheng Xue Yao](#)  
[Chapter 699: Newbie](#)  
[Chapter 700: Snowbark](#)